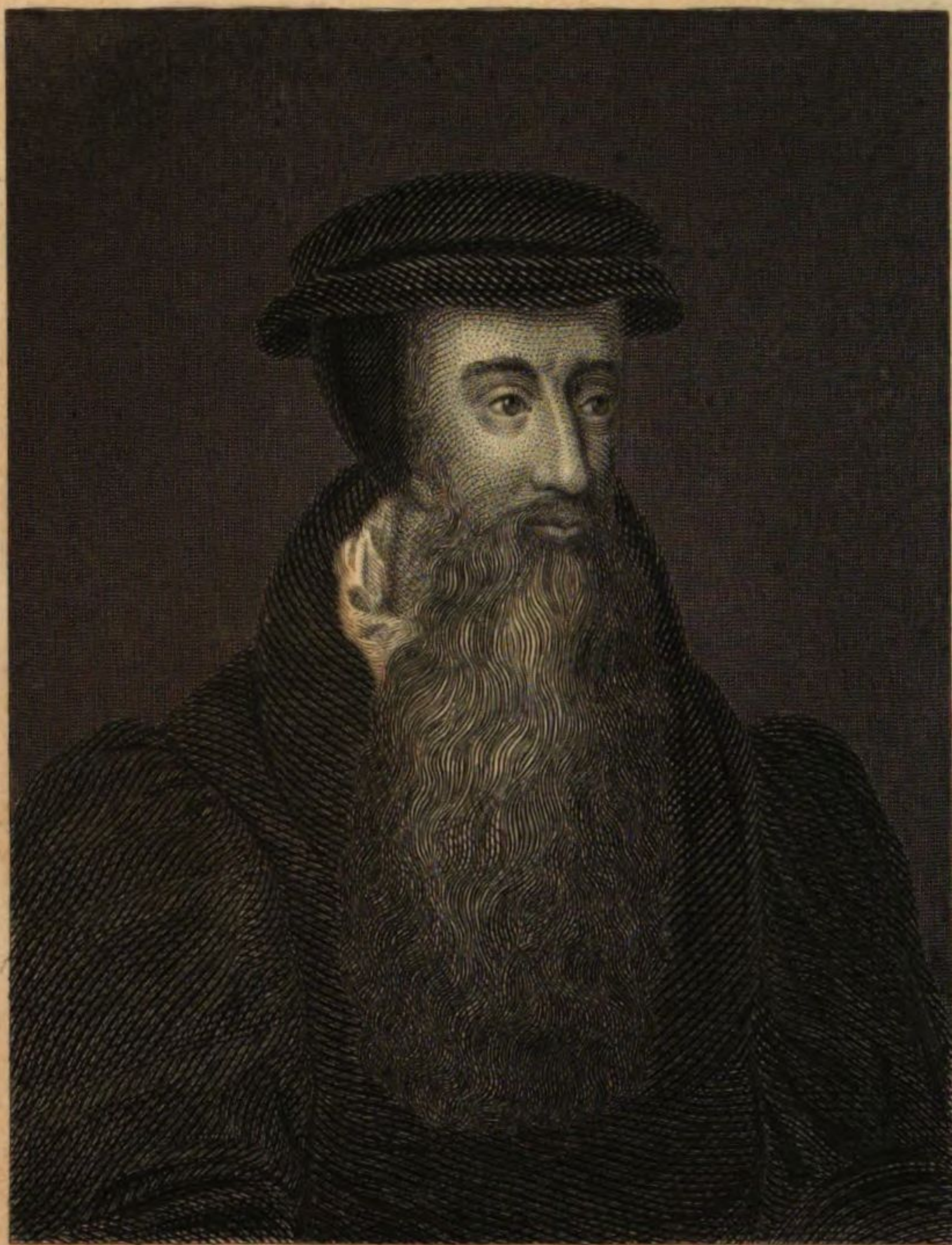


Knox, Thom.,

ogr.
587 nc



ENG^d BY R. BELL.

JOHN KNOX.

From the original Painting.

THE
LIFE OF JOHN KNOX,

BY

THOMAS M'CRIE, D.D.

EDITED BY

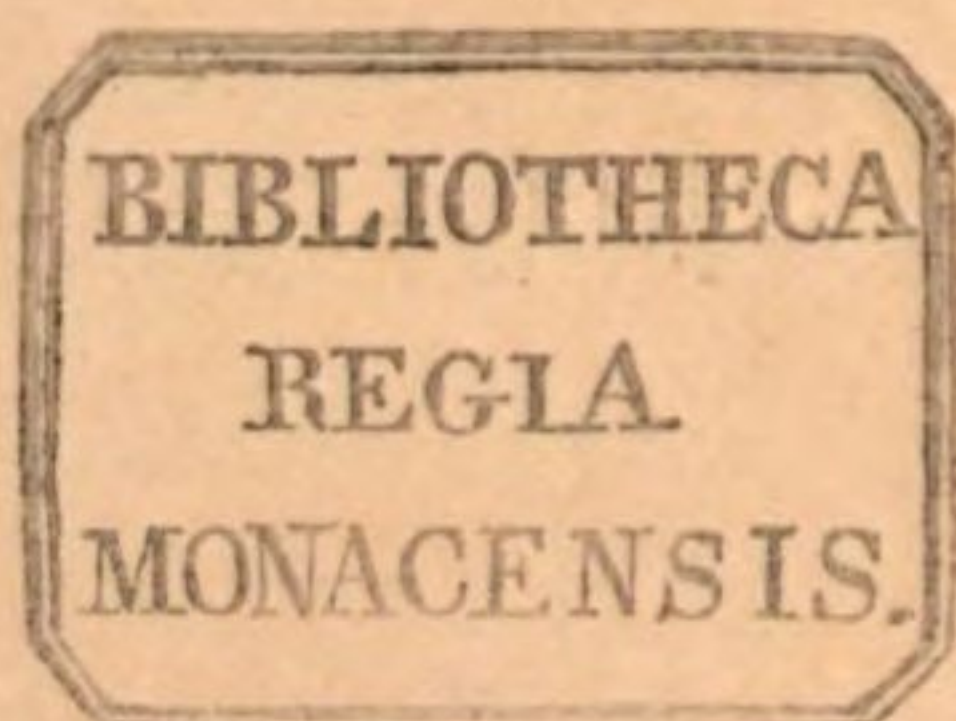
ANDREW CRICHTON, LL.D.



The house of John Knox, High Street, Edinburgh.

Drawn & Engraved by T. Dobbie 1840.

JAMES CLARKE & CO. EDINBURGH.



BIBLIOTHECA

REGIA

MONACENSIS.

THE
LIFE OF JOHN KNOX:

CONTAINING

ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE HISTORY

OF THE

REFORMATION IN SCOTLAND.

WITH

BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES OF THE PRINCIPAL REFORMERS, AND
SKETCHES OF THE PROGRESS OF LITERATURE IN SCOTLAND.

BY

THOMAS M'CRIE, D.D

WITH

NUMEROUS ADDITIONS, AND A MEMOIR OF DR. M'CRIE,

BY

ANDREW CRICHTON, LL.D.

LONDON:

HENRY G. BOHN, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.

MDCCCXLVII.

BIBLIOTHECA
REGIA
MONACENSIS.

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

EDITOR'S PREFACE.

THE acknowledged importance of the following Work, and the benefit it has conferred on the public, by setting in a more correct light than we had hitherto possessed, the life and actions of our Great REFORMER, may be deemed a sufficient apology, if such were necessary, for undertaking a new Edition.

To the learned and industrious Dr. M'Crie, belongs the merit of having cleared away from the history of the Scottish Reformation, and from the memory of its illustrious instruments—especially JOHN KNOX—the errors and misrepresentations which had almost universally prevailed for nearly two centuries, and which rendered the ordinary accounts of these men and their times a distorted caricature rather than a genuine narrative. It was then proved satisfactorily to the world, how very incorrect the general opinion was of some of the most distinguished agents of the Reformation in

Scotland, and how unfounded were the charges under which they had laboured, merely for want of critical attention to the real facts of their biography. When the scattered fragments of their history were brought together, and examined by the light of truth—when the film of calumny and prejudice which had so long enveloped their character, was stripped off, the public beheld with a feeling of surprise, as if awakened by a new discovery, that the Fathers and Founders of our Presbyterian Church, were not those fierce bigots and rude barbarians, whom the ignorance or malice of party-writers had asserted them to be; but men of profound and elegant learning, of enlightened views, and well acquainted with the principles of civil government and religious liberty. Among those who suffered by this injustice to their memory, there was none, perhaps, more wronged than John Knox; and it was not until his true merits were exhibited, and his character vindicated by Dr. M'Crie, that the cloud of obloquy and vulgar error which obscured his name, was fairly and finally dispelled.

But, independently of the intrinsic value of the Work, as a defence of our great Reformer, and an interesting narrative of the Reformation in Scotland, it derives a kind of incidental importance from the peculiar circumstances of our own times. The controversies which have lately arisen, and which now agitate this kingdom with almost unprecedented violence, respect-

ing the union between Church and State, and the power of the Civil Magistrate in matters of religion, have naturally directed attention, and attached a more than usual importance to the writings and sentiments of the founders of our ecclesiastical polity. It is there that the elements of the present question—the solution of the knotty problem for fixing the limits of the respective jurisdictions, must be sought for, because then were first developed the germs of mental emancipation from the iron yoke of Papal tyranny; then was clearly drawn, if not permanently adjusted, the boundary line between the encroachments of secular and spiritual despotism, and the freedom of thought and conscience which distinguishes the professors of true Christianity from the slaves of Romish superstition. The opinions of the early Reformers on this subject, both in England and Scotland, are fully and candidly stated by Dr. M'Crie in his *LIFE of KNOX*.

In addition to these motives for a republication of the Work, there remains another inducement,—the propriety of giving it in a cheaper and more accessible form, so as to bring it within the reach of the ordinary class of readers. This is a matter of paramount consequence, in an age when cheap literature forms so essential an element in our intellectual economy.

In order to render the present Edition as complete as possible, a very considerable number of Corrections, Improvements, and Additions have been introduced, both

in the TEXT and in the NOTES. Some points in the life and history of Knox, which his biographer left doubtful, from not having the means to ascertain them, have here been established on evidence brought to light by subsequent researches. Hitherto it has been unknown by what means our Reformer effected his liberation from the French galleys in 1549. Dr. M'Crie has stated a variety of conjectures, but confesses himself unable to determine how Knox obtained his freedom. That mystery is now solved, and it has been discovered that he was indebted for his release to the personal interposition of Edward VI. of England with the King of France.

Another obscure passage in his Life, related to his offer of promotion in the English Church. Knox himself states that he had refused a Bishopric; and Dr. M'Crie thinks it probable that Newcastle, which was then proposed to be erected by dividing the extensive diocese of Durham into two, was the See destined for our Reformer: this is now found to be an error, and it is ascertained that the Bishopric of Rochester was that intended for Knox, could he have been prevailed upon to accept it. For these important facts in the Life of our Reformer, we are indebted to the recent investigations of a distinguished living historian, Mr. PATRICK FRASER TYTLER, in the State Paper Office.

Among the numerous Additions embodied in the text, a few of the more important may be noticed. The

first is an extended account of the Parliament of 1560 at Edinburgh, which abolished Popery, and established the Protestant religion; the next relates more fully the debate between Secretary Maitland and Knox, on the manner of his praying for the Queen, and on his doctrine concerning resistance to civil rulers; a third is the picturesque sketch of Knox's personal appearance towards the close of his life, which is given in James Melvill's Diary. These curious and important particulars, Dr. M'Crie had very much abridged: it is hoped however, that their introduction will not be considered among the least valuable improvements of the present edition. It would be unnecessary here to enumerate farther all the corrections and additions that have been made: it may suffice to state, that nothing which fell under the Editor's review has been omitted, that could serve to illustrate or give increased interest to any event connected with the history of our National Reformer.

The NOTES and APPENDIX contain a vast treasury of useful and recondite information. These have not only been kept *entire*, but are augmented by the accession of various supplementary facts.

The Editor has prefixed a BIOGRAPHICAL MEMOIR of Dr. M'Crie, which will be found to comprise the more prominent and interesting events of his life. The Volume is also embellished with a *Portrait of the Reformer*, and a *View of the House* in which he resided

in Edinburgh. The INDEX has been carefully revised and corrected, so as to include reference to the supplementary matter in the text.

In Conclusion, it ought to be stated, that the present is not a mere reprint of the First Edition, which contained many inaccuracies; but that care has been taken to supply all those illustrations which subsequent researches have brought to light, including a variety of facts not contained in any previous Edition; and that, with all these additions and improvements, the Work will be obtained at a much lower price than the cheapest complete edition that has yet been published.

EDINBURGH, *March*, 1840.

MEMOIR OF DR. M'CRIE.

THE Reverend Dr. THOMAS M'CRIE, so well known by his *Life of John Knox*, and other historical productions, was a native of Berwickshire. He was born in November 1772, in the town of Dunse, where his father and grandfather had resided. If compared with the celebrity which his name has acquired in the literature of Europe, his origin may be regarded as humble; his parents having belonged to that class which may be called respectable rather than affluent. What he says in reference to the pedigree of our great Reformer, applies with equal justice to himself: "Obscurity of birth can reflect no dishonour on the man who has raised himself to distinction by his virtues and talents; and though his parents were neither great nor opulent, they were able to give their son a liberal education."

His father, Thomas M'Crie, was a linen weaver, and rather eminent for his superior skill in the manufacture of napery. He likewise dealt in flax, garden and agricultural seeds, &c. and was proprietor of one or two houses in the town, and of a piece of land in the neighbourhood, which he sold to Hay of Dunse Castle, as it lay contiguous to that gentleman's estate. He afterwards purchased a property or farm, in the parish of Coldingham, which he let on lease; so that in respect to worldly matters, he appears to have been in good circumstances. This latter property he retained till his death, when it was sold. His wife's name (mother of the Biographer of Knox) was Mary Hood,

daughter of a respectable farmer in the vicinity of Dunse. The family consisted of four sons and two daughters. The eldest was Thomas, the subject of this Memoir; of the remaining brothers, John died in Dunbar, James in Dunse, and George in the West Indies. By a second marriage, there was one daughter, who married and resided in her native place. The character borne by the father, was that of a man of strict moral principles, of unblemished integrity in business transactions, and firmly attached to the communion of Original Seceders from the Church of Scotland, then known by the name of Anti-Burghers. He was a member (we believe an elder) of the congregation at that time under the pastoral charge of Mr. Thomson in Dunse.

Trained under the paternal roof, and deeply imbued, both by precept and example, with the peculiar tenets of the denomination to which he belonged, the foundation was thus early laid in the mind of Dr. M'Crie, of that unflinching adherence to his original principles, which he maintained with Roman heroism throughout the whole course of his public life. When many of his brethren in the same faith separated from him,—when a portion of his own flock deserted him,—when he was persecuted, excommunicated from the religious body with whom he was in communion, and had to bear the scorn and obloquy of suffering for opinions deemed trifling in themselves, and marring the general harmony of the Secession by keeping up factious and narrow-minded differences: he continued, nevertheless, firm in his attachment to his own creed, and the convictions of his own judgment; braving the trials and difficulties he had to encounter, with a moral courage that might have done honour to the first Christian martyrs. This feature in our author's religious character, is to be ascribed to the force of early impressions acting on a mind naturally strong, and conscious of the single-hearted honesty of its own views. The lessons he imbibed in his father's house, of reverence for the belief in which he was nurtured from infancy, he practised before the world, and carried with him unsullied to the grave.

The simple unsophisticated piety of the parents, which seems to have been largely communicated to the son, may

be illustrated by a homely anecdote. It is well known, that among Dissenters, as was the case among our Coven-anting forefathers, all such recreations as dancing, music, and card-playing, are held in abhorrence, and laid under the ban of the Church, as tending to corrupt morals, and exceedingly sinful to be tolerated in any community of professing Christians. Some youths, acquaintances of the family, happening to be rather suddenly interrupted while engaged in this sort of contraband amusement, in their hurry to conceal the offence, slipped the pack of cards into the pocket of a coat which was hanging in the room, and which offered the only receptacle at hand for preventing immediate discovery. The horror and amazement of the stern Seceder may be conceived, when, on a visit a few days thereafter to the house of his pastor, in drawing out his pocket-handkerchief, the floor was strewn with the implements of iniquity, the artful devices of Satan for entrapping and ruining the souls of men. The mystery was easily cleared up, but the very possibility of such an accident might have endangered the reputation of any other member of the congregation whose character for probity and piety was less firmly established than that of Thomas M'Crie.

Another anecdote has been told on the authority of our biographer himself. When first leaving home, and setting out in the world, probably to attend his studies at college, he was accompanied part of the way by his mother, whose heart doubtless was swelling with those emotions of maternal pride and anxiety which such an interesting occasion was apt to call forth ;—pride that she had a son dedicated to the holy ministry, and anxiety that he might prove himself worthy of the high vocation. Before parting, she took him aside into a field off the road, and kneeling down together in prayer, she solemnly devoted him to God, as Hannah did Samuel ; and it may be said of her as of the “ Hebrew woman,” that the gift was accepted, for he “ ministered at the altar almost from his youth,” and was “ raised from the dust to sit among princes.” The affectionate parent could not then foresee the destiny of her wayfaring child, or anticipate even in her utmost hopes the rank he was to hold, not in his own profession only, which was com-

paratively obscure, but in the great temple of letters; where his name will stand recorded, illumined by the torch of the Protestant Reformation, as long as the English language is read or understood. It is, however, upon the whole a wise dispensation of Providence that conceals from mortals the events of the future; for as evil greatly preponderates in the world, such knowledge would cause a larger amount of pain than of pleasure, and even destroy happiness by taking from it what constitutes its principal charm—our ignorance what is to be.

The rudiments of his education our author received at the excellent grammar school of his native town, first under Mr. Dick, and afterwards under his successor, Mr. White. The acknowledged efficiency of our parochial system of education, and the general celebrity which our burgh schools have long enjoyed as first-rate classical academies, may be taken as a guarantee that no boy can pass through the common ordeal of these seminaries, without bringing with him a competent share of scholarship, and the means of attaining, if pursued, the highest literary eminence.

On leaving the school at Dunse, which must have been about the year 1787, he prosecuted his academical studies in the University of Edinburgh. It may be proper to observe, that with regard to the admission of Dissenters, the constitution of the Scottish Universities differs entirely from those in the sister kingdom. In Scotland, no religious tests are exacted, no subscription of articles of faith is required. The literary, philosophical, and medical classes, are open to all comers; and it is not until the student enters the Divinity Hall, that any inquiry is made into his creed, or any evidence demanded for ascertaining his adherence to the standards and government of the Presbyterian Church. The reason of this is obvious. Enrolment in our college albums, is nothing more than a simple matriculation; it confers on the student none of those rights and privileges over the management, patronage, or property of the University, as is the case at Oxford and Cambridge, where all are obliged to subscribe the Thirty-nine Articles, because conformity to the Church of England is made the

title and condition upon which certain important civil and academical rights are acquired and exercised. With us, the *Civis Academicus* is entitled to no such privileges, and hence religious tests are dispensed with until his studies in theology commence.

At the time when Mr. M'Crie attended the University, the Humanity Class was taught by Dr. John Hill, the Greek by Mr. Andrew Dalzell, Logic by Dr. James Finlayson, Mathematics by Mr. John Playfair, Moral Philosophy by Dugald Stewart, and Natural Philosophy by Mr. John Robison. His name stands on the matriculation books, as having attended the advanced classes of Dr. Hill and Mr. Dalzell in the session 1788–89; and in 1790–91 he completed his curriculum under Professors Stewart and Robison. We are not aware that any evidences or specimens exist of the proficiency which the future historian of the Reformation made in philosophy or the classics; for we believe the method now adopted of calling forth the talents and energies of the student by means of essays and prizes, was not then in use. But judging from his habitual industry, as well as from the powers and capacities of his genius, there can be no doubt that his attainments were in all respects highly creditable both to himself and his teachers.

It was about this period of his life, that he was employed a short time as usher in a school at Linton, in East-Lothian; and afterwards in the Grammar School at Musselburgh. In the autumn of 1791, he went to Brechin as assistant to Mr. Gray, a Dissenting clergyman who kept a private academy or boarding-house; he likewise opened a school in that town in connexion with the congregation of the Associate Anti-Burghers. In these avocations he was employed about three years; excepting the short time required annually for attending his theological studies at Whitburn. The practice was then, as now, quite common among students intending for the ministry, both in the Church and the Secession, to engage in the duties of tuition, publicly as well as privately—a practice which has the double advantage of improving their scholarship, and adding to their finances. When assistant at East-Linton, our author must have been very young, as it is recorded of him, that during the in-

tervals of school hours, he used to join in the games and amusements of his pupils.

Having finished his academical education at the University of Edinburgh, he commenced the study of Divinity in the year 1791, under Mr. Archibald Bruce, who was then Secession minister at Whitburn in West-Lothian, and Theological Professor in connexion with the General Associate or Antiburgher Synod. This reverend functionary appears to have been as decided in his adherence to the original views of his sect, as was his illustrious pupil; for we find that when a schism afterwards took place with the general body of that communion, he was among the few who preferred separation to what they conscientiously believed to be a dereliction of principle. It belongs not to the province of this Memoir to enter deeply into a discussion of the questions as to the power of the civil magistrate, which then had begun afresh to agitate the Secession Church, and which led to heats and divisions that threw both the the courts and the congregations of that body into a ferment of bitter and protracted controversy. It will be enough to state the main points at issue, and explain briefly the general views of the contending parties.

To those who have even but a cursory acquaintance with the ecclesiastical history of Scotland during the last century, it must be well known, that at the first outbreaking of the Secession in 1732, those ministers who had withdrawn from the establishment, in consequence of the sentence of ejection pronounced against them by the Commission of the General Assembly, protested that they did not dissent from the principles and constitution of the Church of Scotland, to which they declared themselves firmly attached, but from the arbitrary power claimed and exercised by the Church Courts, which had thrown them out from ministerial communion. They deplored the necessity which had driven them to this step; and expressed their willingness, on certain terms, to return again to the bosom of the Church, to whose doctrines and standards, as contained in the Westminster Catechism and Confession of Faith, they adhered. Their terms not being promptly complied with, the ejected ministers, eight in number, formed themselves into an Ec-

clesiastical Court, which they named the Associated Presbytery; and still continued to preach, as if no sentence had passed against them. They also published what they called an Act, Declaration, and Testimony to the doctrine, worship, government, and discipline of the Church of Scotland, and against several instances of alleged defection from these standards, both in former and in their own times.

Their numbers increased considerably; and in 1745, they erected themselves into three different presbyteries under one synod, when a very unprofitable dispute split them into two parties. The cause of this schism was the Burgess oath in some of the royal burghs, which contained a clause, binding the swearer to profess the religion established by law, and to abide in and defend the same. This oath, one part of the Dissenters thought they might lawfully take, as it seemed to them no way contrary to the principles upon which the Secession was formed. Some, on the other hand, contended that the swearing the above clause was a virtual renunciation of their testimony; and the consequence was, that after a keen controversy, the body divided; those who asserted the lawfulness of the oath, took the name of Burghers; while the section who condemned it were called Anti-Burghers. As each party claimed to itself the constitution of the Associate Synod, the Anti-Burghers excommunicated the Burghers, on the ground of their sinful laxity of principle, and contumacy in refusing to be converted. This rupture took place in 1747, and continued till the year 1820, when a re-union was effected. During the whole of that long period, the parties remained under the jurisdiction of their respective synods, and held separate communion; although much of their early asperity had been laid aside.

The Anti-Burghers, as may readily be supposed, considered their opponents as too regardless of principle, and not sufficiently stedfast to their testimony; while the Burghers maintained that their nonjuring brethren were too rigid, and had introduced new terms of communion into the society. Down to the time when the subject of our Memoir appeared in the ecclesiastical arena, the question concerning the power of the civil magistrate in matters of religion, had continued to agitate the Secession; and when the alarm

caused by the French Revolution called upon every loyal man to defend and maintain the British constitution against all, at home or abroad, who might attempt its subversion, a new impulse was given to the controversy. One portion of the Seceders professed scruples of conscience to subscribe any declaration of unqualified attachment to the British constitution, as composed of King, Lords, and Commons; on the ground, that such an act might ensnare them into an implied approval of the English hierarchy, with all its prelatie usurpations; and an acquiescence in the spiritual supremacy claimed and exercised by the sovereign, as head of the Church, and an essential branch of the constitution.

Besides these political objections, another "rock of offence" was contained in the language of the Confession of Faith upon this subject; which was objected to by many, as ascribing to the civil magistrate a power in matters spiritual that did not belong to him, especially in giving him authority "to suppress blasphemies and heresies; to prevent or reform all corruptions and abuses in worship and discipline; to call to account persons publishing erroneous opinions; and to exercise control over the deliberations of Synods;" for the Confession (chap. xxiii. sect. 3.) expressly says, the magistrate "hath power to call Synods, to be present at them, and to provide that whatsoever is transacted in them, be according to the mind of God." The precise extent of the secular jurisdiction implied in this clause, gave rise to much disputation; and conscientious scruples were entertained about giving an unlimited assent to those passages where similar language is employed. So early as 1743, (in their controversy with Mr. Nairn,) the Associate Presbytery, in their declaration and defence of their principles concerning civil government, had explained that "the great and sole end of the magisterial office is the glory of God;" that its cognizance extends civilly "only over men's good and evil works;" which power it ought to exercise for the public good, "without assuming any lordship immediately over men's consciences, or making any encroachment upon the special privileges or business of the Church."

This explanation was intended to satisfy those who de-

murred to the giving an unqualified answer to one of the questions (the second) put to probationers before receiving license, and to ministers and elders before being ordained; namely, "Do you sincerely own and believe the whole doctrine contained in the Confession of Faith?" &c. An affirmative answer to this question, without any limitations, was considered as implying that entrants into these offices gave a full assent to the doctrine as to the power of the magistrate in suppressing heresies, and controlling the proceedings of Synods. In cases of more tender consciences, the qualifying exposition referred to, was understood to provide a remedy; and when candidates for the ministry expressed a wish to any of the judicatories, to know in what sense they were to understand the two doubtful declarations, they were uniformly told, "that they were to understand them only in such a sense as corresponded with the explanation given in the Presbytery's answer to Mr. Nairn."

There were some, however, who viewed this distinction as too casuistical, and thought that in a matter so important, a mere verbal interpretation was not quite satisfactory. They disliked the idea of having even the appearance of assenting to one thing and believing another; of taking qualifying exceptions to the Confession, in their private transactions with the Presbytery, and yet asserting their belief "in the whole doctrine," at their ordination, and in presence of the people. The General Synod saw the propriety of removing this ambiguity, and at their meeting in 1791, an overture on the subject was transmitted from the Glasgow Presbytery; but excepting the appointing of a committee, nothing was done in the matter for a considerable time afterwards.

It was at this stage of the controversy, that "a reference from the Presbytery of Edinburgh brought before the Synod the case of two licentiates who were about to be ordained, and who declared that their doubts concerning the doctrine taught in the Confession of Faith, regarding the power of the magistrate in matters of religion, were so strong that they had not freedom to give an unlimited answer to the second question in the formula, and would not submit to ordination unless the moderator of the pres-

bytery was allowed, when proposing the question, to intimate that they were not to be understood as giving their sentiments on that point." The two young men, whose scruples were so unbending as to render necessary this particular application to the General Synod, were Mr. Thomas M'Crie, and Mr. William M'Ewen; the former being about to be ordained at Edinburgh, and the other at Howgate.—The case had been considered in the Presbytery of Edinburgh, but being a subordinate court, they did not think themselves at liberty to grant the dispensation claimed, or to make any alteration in the public profession of the religious society to which they belonged. It was on this ground that the matter was referred to the Synod, in May 1796, when a committee was appointed to deliberate what ought to be done for removing the difficulties of the two candidates for ordination. A declaratory act was immediately adopted, (May 3d,) which, after recapitulating the interpretation as to the power of the civil magistrate, already laid down in their declaration and defence, and avowing their adherence to the doctrine on that point, concluded by insisting that the second question of the formula should be answered, "as the said Confession was revised and approved by an act of Assembly 1647, and according to the declaration of the General Associate Synod of 1796."

This resolution so far overcame the scruples of Mr. M'Crie and his friend, that they consented (May 26th) to receive ordination. Our author then became pastor to the Secession congregation which met in the Potterrow; and there he continued for ten years to perform the duties of his office, until the controversy, which raged with increasing keenness, rendered a breach of connexion with the Synod unavoidable. The Rev. Mr. Chalmers at Haddington delivered the sermon and address at his ordination.

From the period when Mr. M'Crie entered on his ministry, till the time of his separation from the majority of his brethren, the Associate Church Courts became the arena of fierce and furious disputation; of harangues offensive and defensive; and multitudes of dissents and protests entered upon the records by both the Burgher and Anti-Burgher sections, each professing to occupy more scriptu-

ral ground than the other, and to lift a purer testimony for the truth. The great bone of contention was still the civil magistrate, and those passages in the Confession touching his interference in matters ecclesiastical.

One main branch of this "weighty work," was the remodelling and extending the Testimony, so as to adapt it to present circumstances; to make a more explicit avowal on certain debateable points which they alleged conveyed a meaning different from that held by the great majority of the Synod; and also to include a denunciation of those errors and corruptions which had sprung up, both within and without the Church, since the original declaration of their sentiments. With regard to the Westminster Confession, they acknowledged it as a rule of faith distinct from the Scripture, but declared that their adherence to it was not to preclude them "from embracing, upon due deliberation, any further lights which might afterwards arise from the Word of God, about any article of divine faith." On the cardinal point of magisterial jurisdiction, the new Testimony took very decided ground. It explicitly condemned the connexion between Church and State, employing language similar to that which the Voluntary controversy has now rendered familiar to the public.

On various other matters, regulations were laid down; amongst which was an enactment allowing presbyteries to admit on trial for license, in the *interim*, those students of Divinity who had passed the Hall, "even though they did not join in the bond for renewing the Covenant." The "Acknowledgment of Sins," and the "Engagement to Duties," likewise occupied much discussion, so that it may easily be imagined the Synod had enough of business on hand. The new Narrative and Testimony which they were drawing up, included all the controversial points on divinity and church government, that had been debated in this country for successive generations. The Acknowledgment of Sins contained a summary account of all the defections and errors that had prevailed in the different sections of the Church since the period of the Reformation, so that it was not without good reason that they termed it "a weighty work." It employed them eight years, having

begun in October 1796, and ended in May 1804, when the revised Testimony was adopted.

At different stages of the process, dissents and protests were given in by Messrs. Bruce, M'Crie, and one or two others. The Declaration of 1796, concerning the power of the civil magistrate, the enactment allowing students to be taken on trials, who had not joined in the bond for renewing the Covenant, and sundry other changes "introduced in a rash and scandalous manner," were strongly opposed by the dissenting minority. During 1800, and the two following years, they continued to remonstrate and protest; and committees were appointed to answer them, but all their efforts were unable to remove the scruples of the dissentient brethren.

At length, in the month of May, 1806, they presented the following paper, virtually declaring a separation from the Synod; in which, indeed, they never again took their seats:

"We, the subscribers, do protest, in our own name, and in name of all who may see meet to adhere, against these deeds, as now made final; and that every one of us shall be free from the operation of these acts, and from all obligation of being responsible to this, or inferior judicatories, from acting in opposition to them, so far as they are inconsistent with our former profession and engagements, holding any power that may be claimed or exercised by this Synod, for compelling us to conformity to these new principles and constitution, as unwarrantable; and that we shall account any censure that may be inflicted on us, or on any adhering to us, of such a tendency; or for restraining or hindering us in the discharge of any duty or office we may have a call to perform, individually or conjunctly, in maintaining our common profession, or fulfilling our solemn engagements. We protest we must hold our right to the exercise of ministerial and judicial powers, full and entire, whether we shall see it expedient to avail ourselves of the right protested for or not, in our state of separation and exclusion from present communion with the prevailing party in this Synod, in their present course, into which, to our grief, we are reluctantly driven; which suspension of wonted fellowship in the Lord, and in the truth, we hope and pray, may be but temporary and short. We renew the declaration made last year against any intention or course that may increase lamentable divisions, or promote any schismatical separation from the Reformed and Covenanted Church of Scotland, the Original Secession Testimony, or the Associate

Synod, in adherence to it. The multiplication of sects and schisms we consider as among the prevailing evils of the age, against which we have solemnly avowed, as well as against other evils ; and it is one great reason for our not concurring with our brethren in this new scheme, that it is of a schismatical tendency, and inconsistent with the promoting of a covenanted conjunction and uniformity. We shall endeavour to have the great end of an union among evangelical ministers and Christians in view, and will be ready to encourage correspondence with any belonging to this Synod, or other denominations, who still profess regard to the Westminster standards of uniformity, and Presbyterian principles, with a view to have subsisting differences removed in a Scriptural manner.

“ In the mean time, we think we have reason to complain, that our brethren, with whom we have been joined in close and comfortable communion, have, on their part, broken the brotherly covenant, and laid a great bar in the way of promoting such a desirable union and uniformity ; and we would remind them of the clause of the oath they had sworn, never to give themselves to indifference or lukewarmness, in the public cause, but encourage one another in prosecuting the end of their solemn covenant.

“ And we leave the consequences of these our contendings and desires to Him who has the disposal of all events, who sits above the floods, and who often hath stretched out his glorious arm in these isles of the sea, in behalf of the cause of Reformation, for which we have all been professing to appear, and who hath said, ‘ Now will I arise, now will I be exalted, now will I lift up myself, when he seeth their strength is gone, and there is none shut up or left.’ May he speedily arise, and have mercy upon Zion.

“ ARCHD. BRUCE, minister at Whitburn.

“ JAMES AITKEN, minister at Kirriemuir.

“ JAMES HOG, minister at Kelso.

“ THOS. M'CRIE, minister at Edinburgh.”

The consideration of this paper, and of certain other matters, was postponed until next Synod, which met at Glasgow on the 26th of August. Without waiting, however, for the result of any deliberation on their protest, the four dissentient brethren met at Whitburn on the same day that the Court assembled at Glasgow ; and after solemn conference and prayer, they constituted themselves into a presbytery, under the name of the Constitutional Associate Presbytery ; indicating by that designation, their strict adherence to the original principles of the Secession. Professor Bruce acted as moderator on the occasion, and Mr

M'Crie was appointed to officiate as clerk. The reasons they assigned for this proceeding were similar to those already stated in their remonstrances and protests.

A Deed of Constitution was afterwards drawn up and published, wherein they charge the Synod with defection in adopting a new Testimony and Declaration of principles, in altering the creed for public covenanting, and in authorizing a new formula of questions for entrants into office, "by which (they complain) some important doctrines in the Confession of Faith, and different articles in their Testimony and principles, formerly subscribed, are renounced and dropped, and opposite sectarian errors introduced." The chief and most objectionable of these innovations were specified in the following passage :—" Particularly the duty and warrantableness of civil rulers employing their authority in an active support of the interests of religion and the kingdom of Christ, and in promoting Reformation (which was an eminent part of the Testimony and contendings of the Church of Scotland in behalf of the Reformation of our native land, civil and ecclesiastical, explicitly approved by the Secession,) are, by the new deeds, denied and set aside ; as also, that all covenants of a religious nature, entered into by nations in their public capacity, or in conjunction with churches, and in so far the national Covenant of Scotland, and the Solemn League and Covenant of the three kingdoms, in their proper import, matter, and form, as well as in the manner of ratifying and enjoining them, are either directly or by native consequences condemned."

In this charter of their institution, the protesting brethren find and declare that the General Associate Synod, and such inferior judicatories as concur with it, can no longer be acknowledged as faithful or rightly constituted Courts of Christ ; that they can take no share with them in the exercise of government and discipline ; that it is therefore " warrantable and needful for them to associate together, not only for the administration of the Word and Sacraments, and for occasional consultations, but also for the regular exercise of government and discipline, as Providence may give them opportunity." Their acting in this capacity, they farther declared to be necessary for supporting

the public cause for which they were contending ; as otherwise various articles of the Reformation Testimony would be in great danger of being dropped, and lost for the present in the Associate body."

With regard to other Presbyterian bodies, who profess adherence to the whole doctrine of the Westminster Confession and other subordinate standards, they affirmed "that there are none with whom they have freedom to form a junction at present, so that they reckon themselves shut up to the necessity of meeting apart ; waiting for the time of healing, if haply some bars and offences subsisting among the remaining friends of evangelical truth, may be removed." Finally, in vindication of their separation, they pleaded their ordination vows, in which they declare, "they acknowledged Presbyterian Church government and discipline to be of divine institution ; and promised never to endeavour, directly or indirectly, the prejudice or subversion thereof ; but that they would, to the utmost of their power in their station, during all the days of their life, maintain, support, and defend the same against every other form of government." From these reasons, which the protesting brethren assigned for erecting themselves into a separate Presbytery, a sufficiently distinct idea may be formed of the various grounds upon which they renounced their connexion with the general body.

When the Synod met at Glasgow, the case of Messrs. Bruce and M'Crie was brought before them by a reference from the Presbytery of Edinburgh, complaining, that though duly summoned to attend their meetings, they had not obeyed, but had sent in letters containing answers to the charges preferred against them, of holding sentiments in opposition to the principles of the General Synod, and tending to produce schism in the Association. Along with that reference, there was produced a document from Mr. M'Crie's congregation, craving that the Synod would consider in what way they (the congregation) "might, consistent with truth, still enjoy the labours of their minister in connexion with the Synod ;" and representing "the necessity of a speedy deliverance from their present distracted condition." Another portion of the congregation also

presented a paper, remonstrating against the statement of the Synod's principles, as set forth in the Narrative and Testimony. These documents gave rise to a considerable discussion, and at first the Court came to a decision to delay passing censure on Mr. M'Crie; but on the second week of their meeting, they reversed the previous sentence; and the question being put, "Depose," or "Suspend," the former was carried by a majority of votes; and accordingly Mr. M'Crie was deposed from the office of the ministry, (Sept. 2d.) "and suspended from all communion in the sealing ordinances of the church." Soon afterwards Messrs. Bruce and Chalmers at Haddington, were also deposed; and the like sentence would have been pronounced on Mr. Hog at Kelso, had not the proceedings against him been terminated by his death. The office of theological teacher which Mr. Bruce had held, was bestowed on Mr. Paxton, minister at Kilmaurs, who commenced his labours as professor of divinity in September 1807.

Such is a brief account of the proceedings that led to an important schism in the Secession. In respect of numbers, the division occasioned by this dispute may be considered insignificant, as not more than five ministers left the Synod, exclusive of Mr. Whytock at Dalkeith, who died during the progress of the controversy. Their adherents, however, gradually increased; and at present the Associate Synod of Original Seceders, as they now designate themselves, comprehends four presbyteries, and between thirty and forty ministers.

Mr. Bruce, it may not be improper here to add, died on the 18th of February 1816. The affecting terms in which Dr. M'Crie alluded to that event, in writing to a friend, showed how deeply he felt the loss, and revered the character of his early instructor. "I cannot," says he, in addressing the late Rev. Mr. Aitken of Kirriemuir, who was one of the five deposed ministers, "describe to you the situation in which I am. My heart felt for some time as a stone, and even yet, when I have recovered somewhat from the shock, there remaineth no strength in me. The early reverence which I felt for him as a teacher, mellowed by the familiarity and intimacy to which I have since been

admitted with him—the increasing knowledge I had of his worth and talents—the interest which he condescended to take in my affairs, and which he allowed me to take in his—and the benefit which I derived from his conversation and his correspondence, have all contributed to make the stroke in some respects more heavy to me than perhaps it is to any of his brethren ; and gave him a place in my affections, of which I was not fully aware, until I was told that I could no longer call him by the name of friend or father. My heart breaks when I think of the poor little flock of students, from whose head the Lord hath taken away their master.”

The proceedings in the Secession, as narrated above, and which ended in the separation of the remonstrating brethren, occupied a considerable share of public attention at the time, under the familiar name of the “ Old and New Light” controversy. The main points of difference between the parties, have been stated at sufficient length to enable the reader to comprehend the nature of the questions so long and so keenly contested. The deposed ministers regarded themselves in the honourable light of witnesses for the truth,—as martyrs suffering in a righteous cause. They complained of the conduct of the Synod at Glasgow, as rash and violent. They denounced the treatment they had received, as in the highest degree tyrannical and unjust. A narrative was drawn up by Mr. M'Crie of the whole proceedings adopted against them ; and in that document, speaking of the causes of their rupture with the Synod, they declare that “ additional grounds had been given for their separation, by the violent measures which have been pursued during the course of this year, in attempting to suppress due ministerial freedom, and violating justice, constitutional principles, and Presbyterian order ; and in the processes managed by the associate judicatories, and the censures which they have pretended to inflict upon the protesting ministers, merely for adherence to their profession, and taking measures to support it, after it was relinquished by the Synod, against which censures they had previously protested, and continue to protest, as null and void ; and such as, with respect to grounds, manner, and certain

circumstances accompanying them, will be found unequalled in the Presbyterian Church, &c. By their conduct in this matter, the guilt of the judicatories has been highly aggravated; they have crowned their defection by persecuting those who opposed it, and have aimed a deadly stroke not only against the character and usefulness of a few ministers, but against the public cause, for which they were contending.*

In his Statement, setting forth the grounds of separation, Mr. M'Crie charged the Synod with departing from the standards of the Church of Scotland, and introducing new terms of communion, inasmuch as their recent Narrative and Testimony was very different from the original Secession Testimony. "The latter," says he, "was formally and specifically a Testimony for the religious profession of the Reformed Church of Scotland, or for the true religion as attained by and fixed in that Church;" whereas the New Testimony "is drawn up upon the principle that the Church's Testimony ought to be taken immediately from the Scriptures, without reference to the attainments of former times, &c. Besides, it contains doctrines that are contradictory to those of the Confession of Faith, and which were never received into the confession, or form of communion of this or any other Presbyterian Church. In all these respects, it is different from the original Testimony of Seceders, and cannot be looked upon as a Testimony for the doctrine, &c. of the Church of Scotland, in any other sense than as it may contain materially the same truths, in most instances, with her Confession and Catechism; which is true as to the Confessions, or declared principles of different religious bodies, and even of those of independent persuasions."

On the great point of controversy—the power of the civil magistrate—Mr. M'Crie and his adherents maintained opinions very different from those avowed by the Synod in their Testimony, which held the connection between Church and State to be unlawful. While asserting the spiritual

* Declaration appended to Mr. M'Crie's Statement of Difference, &c. p. 216. See also Review of the Proceedings of the General Associate Synod, by Professor Bruce.

Headship of Christ to its full extent, and the right of his ministers to exercise their functions in the proper line of their office, independently of any earthly prince or legislature, our author, speaking in his own name and in that of his brethren, goes on to say : “ But in full consistency with these principles, they think they can maintain that civil authority may be lawfully and beneficially employed in the advancement of religion and the kingdom of Christ. The care of religion, in the general view of it, belongs to the magistrate’s office ; and it is his duty to watch over its external interests, and to exert himself in his station, to preserve upon the minds of his subjects an impression of its obligations and sacredness, and to suppress irreligion, impiety, profanity, and blasphemy. It is also the duty of civil rulers, and must be their interest, to exert themselves to introduce the Gospel into their dominions, where it may be but partially enjoyed, and by salutary laws and encouragements, to provide them with the means of instruction, and a settled dispensation of ordinances ; especially in poor and desolate, or in ignorant and irreligious parts of the country ; all which they may do, without propagating Christianity by the sword, or forcing a profession of religion upon their subjects by penal laws. When religion has become corrupt, after it has been received and established in a nation, and has degenerated into a system of falsehood, superstition, idolatry, and tyranny, carried on by churchmen, aided by the civil powers ; and where various abuses of this kind are interwoven with the civil constitution and administration, an eminent exercise of civil authority is requisite for the reformation of these ; not by the abolition of all laws respecting religion, as a matter which civil government has no concern with, and by leaving every thing to individual exertion or voluntary associations, which only breed anarchy and endless disorder, but by magistrates taking an active part in prosecuting a public reformation, removing external hindrances, correcting public and established abuses, allowing, and in some cases calling together and supporting ecclesiastical assemblies, for settling the internal affairs of the Church and of religion, ‘ that unity and peace may be preserved,’

as was done by the rulers of different countries, at the period of the Reformation from Popery, and in Britain at the time of the Westminster Assembly. In an ordinary state of matters, they also judge that it is the duty of civil rulers to maintain and support the interests of religion, by publicly recognizing and countenancing its institutions, giving the legal sanction to a public profession or confession of its faith, a particular form of worship, and ecclesiastical discipline, which are ratified as national ; and by making public and permanent provision for the religious instruction of their subjects, and the maintenance of divine ordinances among them."*

A broad and clear line of demarcation is here laid down between the principles avowed by Mr. M'Crie and his brethren on this head, and the doctrine of the remodelled Secession Testimony, which disallowed the union betwixt Church and State. This difference appeared to them to be a "practical point of deep and serious consideration," which amply justified them in breaking off all connection with the Synod. They had no idea of going the length of contending for the entire emancipation of the Church of Christ from the authority of the State ; or of substituting the voluntary contributions of the congregation, for a public and permanent provision to maintain the stated ordinances of religion.

However widely opinions may differ as to the sufficiency of the reasons advanced by the minority for seceding from the communion of their brethren, there can be no doubt as to the sincere, conscientious, and honest motives of those who felt themselves compelled to withdraw. That the Synod could not pass, without judicial notice, the conduct of those members who had called in question its orthodoxy and declined its jurisdiction, will be readily admitted ; but whether the extreme sentence of deposition, in the circumstances of the case, was a prudent or a necessary step, is a matter upon which the judgment of the public will not be so unanimous. That in the case of Mr. M'Crie, "the sentence was too hastily pronounced," is confessed

* M'Crie's Statement of the Difference, &c., pp. 79-80.

even by his opponents. A recent historian of the Secession Church says, in commenting upon this schism, "whether he (Mr. M'Crie,) chose to avail himself of it or not, an opportunity ought at least to have been given, of making such explanation or vindication of his conduct, as might appear to himself proper. A summons had indeed been given him by the Presbytery to appear before the Synod, and he refused to obey it; but he had a right to expect that the Synod, before pronouncing upon him the sentence of deposition, should have summoned him before them to answer for that part of his conduct, on account of which such sentence was pronounced."*

The stern, unflinching character of Mr. M'Crie, in this act of separation, cannot be fully appreciated, without taking into account the important sacrifices that he made. Not only had he to brave the obloquy of being denounced as factious and schismatical, but he had to encounter the melancholy prospect of being left without the means of subsistence, and compelled perhaps to earn a livelihood by resorting to some less honourable avocation. The despondency of his mind must have pressed upon him the more acutely that he was now settled in life, and become the father of a family. Soon after his ordination, he had married Miss Dickson, the daughter of a respectable farmer in the vicinity of his native town, and by her he had five children, four sons and one daughter. The writer of a short biographical notice at the time of his death, in alluding to this trying incident in his life, says, "perhaps no man with so unblemished a character, ever fell so low in general contempt as our townsman did, when excommunicated from the religious body to which he belonged, and set adrift on the wide world with a wife and family, because his judgment was too acute not to see the whole mischief involved in the New Light doctrines of the body that expelled him, and his honesty too downright for a moment to conceal the convictions of that judgment. He was actually the only evangelical minister in Edinburgh who was not asked to join the committee of the Bible Society when first institut-

* M'Kerrow's History of the Secession Church, vol. ii. p. 148.

ed here ; so blind were we all to his true character, and the sterling value of his opinions. But more than Roman courage was required for the result. Christian faith led him boldly to take his own course, heedless alike of the smiles and frowns of the world around him. Upheld and led by that unerring principle, his fame has, in the course of less than thirty years, so grown with his usefulness, that in both respects he has left all his former despisers infinitely behind.”*

Independently of these considerations, another source of perplexity arose from his connexion with the flock among whom he ministered. One part of them, including several of the elders, were disposed still to adhere to the Synod ; the rest preferred to cleave, through good and through bad report, to their beloved pastor. In consequence of this division, a dispute arose as to the right of property in the chapel where they met for worship.† Those who followed Mr. M'Crie, claimed it on the ground, that they constituted the majority of the male members, to whom, by the trust-deed, the property was alleged to belong : the opposite party also claimed it, on the ground of their remaining in communion with the General Associate Synod. Mutual bills of suspension were presented to the Court of Session, and shortly afterwards two actions of declarator were raised, in which each party concluded that the property ought to belong to them. The litigation was continued for nearly three years, when at length the Court found (24th February 1809) the party adhering to the Synod entitled to the property of the chapel ; but the defenders obtained pecuniary compensation.

Meantime, Mr. M'Crie had been interdicted from officiating, except one-half of the day, to those members of the congregation who remained attached to him ; and when the law-suit was decided, he obtained a temporary accommodation for his flock in the Cameronian Meeting-house, Lady Lawson's Wynd ; and afterwards in Carrubber's Close, until the new chapel was erected in Davie Street, which was

* Edinburgh Christian Instructor for September 1835.

† The congregation was formed in 1791, and the chapel in Potterrow built in 1792, but Mr. M'Crie was their first settled minister.

opened in May 1813, and continued to be the scene of his ministerial labours till the time of his death.

Hitherto the name of Mr. M'Crie was scarcely known beyond the precincts of his own communion, or in connexion with the disputes that had led to his separation from them. He was soon, however, to burst from this obscurity, and take that place in the literature of the age which has extended his fame to every region of the globe. It was while tried in the furnace of so many worldly perplexities, that he collected the materials, and achieved the completion of his immortal work the *LIFE* of JOHN KNOX. Adversities so complicated and so discouraging, must have overwhelmed a mind endowed with less fortitude and perseverance than his; but so far from crushing or distracting his spirit, they served only as a school for training him to those habits of patient industry, deep research, and acute discrimination, for which all his writings are distinguished. The controversies in which he had been engaged with the Synod, and the necessity that obliged him to examine and defend the grounds of his own principles, naturally directed his studies back to the times and opinions of the Fathers of the Protestant Reformation. There lay the elements out of which the fabric of Presbyterian doctrine and discipline had been constructed; and there were to be found the models to guide future inquirers respecting the constitution and government of the Church of Scotland. These models, our author's subsequent writings show that he had carefully and deeply investigated; and such are the apparently capricious turns in human fate, that the same controversy which threatened to reduce him to want and misery, became the source of his future greatness—the basis on which were reared so many splendid monuments to his literary fame.

From the time of his disunion with the Synod, until the appearance of his first great work, he had been in the habit of contributing to the periodicals of the day, biographical notices of some of the Fathers and early leaders of our Church; and it was while prosecuting these investigations, that he seems to have formed the design of drawing up memorials of our national Reformer, “in which his personal history (to quote the words of the PREFACE) might be

combined with illustrations of the progress of that great undertaking, in the advancement of which he acted so conspicuous a part." His original intention seems to have been to write a Life of Alexander Henderson, who was Moderator of the famous General Assembly held at Glasgow in 1638; and a sketch of this eminent divine, from his pen, appeared in a monthly publication, in connexion with the Secession, called "The Christian Magazine," of which Mr. M'Crie was editor for some time about 1805 or 1806. This work was enriched with a very considerable number of his articles; and so early as 1802, it contained a translation of part of Smeton's Life and Death of John Knox, from the Latin published in 1579, most probably furnished by Mr. M'Crie. His contributions to this periodical, which shall be afterwards noticed, were chiefly historical and biographical sketches. He also published occasionally during this period, able pamphlets on some of the gravest and most difficult subjects of theological and ecclesiastical inquiry.

The LIFE of KNOX, in which he must have spent several years, was published in November 1811. It placed him at once in the first rank of authorship. There are certainly few examples of any modern writer emerging at once from obscurity, to the possession of such high and lasting celebrity. So little was he known at that time, even in Edinburgh, except to those who took an immediate interest in the controversies of the Secession, that the great Coryphæus of criticism, the Edinburgh Review, which professed to extend its quarterly inspection over the world of letters, was then unconscious of the name of M'Crie. "It affords us very great pleasure," says the reviewer of Knox, "to bear this public testimony to the merits of a writer who has been hitherto unknown, we believe, to the literary public either of this or the neighbouring country; of whom, or of whose existence, at least, though residing in the same city with ourselves, it never was our fortune to have heard, till his volume was put into our hands; and who, in his first emergence from the humble obscurity in which he has pursued the studies, and performed the duties of his profession, has presented the world with a work which may put

so many of his contemporaries to the blush, for the big promises they have broken, and the vast opportunities they have neglected."*

It would exceed the limits within which a biographical sketch of this kind is necessarily circumscribed, to enter into any critical dissertation on the merits or defects of the *Life of Knox*. Though it did not altogether escape censure, it had the rare fortune of meeting a more than usual share of public applause. The *Edinburgh Review*, though its opinions may perhaps have been favourably biassed by its advocacy of similar sentiments as to political and religious freedom, spoke of the work in a strain of high panegyric ; as " a book which has afforded us more amusement and more instruction, than any thing we ever read upon the subject ; and which, independently of its theological merits, we do not hesitate to pronounce by far the best piece of history that has appeared since the commencement of our critical career. It is extremely accurate, learned, and concise, and at the same time, very full of spirit and animation ; exhibiting, as it appears to us, a rare union of the patient research and solid judgment which characterize the more laborious class of historians, with the boldness of thinking and force of imagination which is sometimes substituted in their place." The reviewer finds fault with the style and diction of the author, as abounding in Scotticisms, and frequently deficient in verbal elegance and purity. This censure is not perhaps altogether unfounded ; but they are trivial blemishes, and far more than redeemed by the vigour, vivacity, and accuracy for which the work is particularly distinguished.

A writer of opposite principles in the *Quarterly Review*, though he accuses our biographer of palliating the ruder features in Knox's character, and wanting in due candour and courtesy towards the sister establishment of Episcopacy, bestows a high encomium, nevertheless, on the author's talents, industry, and power of discrimination as a historian. " He is a warm but an honest man. With great power of expression, as well as considerable heat of

* *Edinburgh Review*, July 1812. The able critique upon *Knox's Life* is generally ascribed to Mr. Jeffrey, the editor.

temper, he never descends to railing. He detests the Church of Rome; he loves not the Church of England; but he exposes the enormities of the former with fidelity and force, though not with malignity; and he censures what he conceives to be imperfect in the reformation of the latter, with an effect that would have been lessened by indecent invective. A vein of sarcastic wit alone now and then betrays him, as it did his master, into undue asperity as well as levity of expression.”*

The reviewer, after avowing his opinion that neither Luther, nor Calvin, nor Erasmus has yet found a biographer equal to M'Crie, proceeds with his critical remarks on our author's character and manner:—“compact and vigorous, often coarse but never affected, we can scarcely forbear to wonder by what effort of taste and discrimination the style of Dr. M'Crie has been preserved so nearly unpolluted by the disgusting and circumlocutory nonsense of his contemporaries. There is no puling about “the interesting sufferer,”—“the patient saint,”—“the angelic preacher.” Knox is plain Knox—in acting and in suffering always a hero; and his story is told as a hero would wish that it should be told,—with simplicity, precision, and force. The author's materials are both ample and original; and to these he has brought a power of combining and enlivening them, peculiar to himself. He has many points of resemblance to his hero: a fortitude of mind which, on subjects exploded and derided, dares to look modern prejudices in the face; a natural and happy eloquence, with a power of discussion on questions of casuistry and of politics, not inferior to that of the great leader of the Reformation in Scotland; though restrained by a decorum of expression to which the Reformer's age, as well as himself, were strangers.”

The justness of these observations will be allowed by every dispassionate reader of Knox's Life. Nor is the complaint of the Quarterly reviewer without some foundation, that our author entertained unreasonable prejudices against Episcopacy, and spoke of surplices and rochets with a

* Quarterly Review, July 1813.

vehemence of indignation scarcely to have been expected in a man of his enlarged understanding. But this fact is to be accounted for by his thorough conviction in the rectitude of his own principles, as well as by the belief which he cherished in common with the Scottish Reformers, that the Presbyterian polity was of divine institution, and ought to be maintained and defended against every other form of church government.

There are some other prepossessions of our biographer, which cannot perhaps be so satisfactorily explained or vindicated. His unbounded admiration for the character of Knox, and the overwhelming importance he attached to his services, as instrumental in working out the civil and religious liberties of his country, led him to touch with too gentle a hand some of the rougher points in his history, and to stretch the mantle of a too charitable construction over actions and doctrines that admit of no defence, and cannot be justified even by the unsettled and barbarous state of society in which they were perpetrated. The arguments of Knox, drawn from heathen antiquity, to palliate the assassination of Cardinal Beaton, the ill-timed merriment he displays in relating that foul deed, and the countenance which his comments upon that act were calculated to give, in a fierce age, to promote murder or unrestrained vengeance,—deserved, upon the whole, a severer reprehension, a more decided condemnation than they have found in the pages of his biographer. Allowing that the Cardinal's death was a benefit to his country; that it prevented, in all human likelihood, a long course of bloodshed and cruel persecution; and that by one desperate blow it removed the great impediment to the Reformation; still the manner, the motives of its accomplishment, must be reprobated as an assumption of power to inflict punishment on a heinous offender, which ought never to be wrested from the hands of the civil magistrate. It was the supplanting of law and justice by the wild revenge of brutal passion, and misguided opinion.

No one who knew Dr. M'Crie, can for a moment suppose that he advocated such pernicious doctrines, or meant to encourage the commission of such atrocious crimes.

The mere suspicion of such a possibility would have revolted every feeling of his heart, every principle of his nature. All that can be said therefore is, that his condemnation of that individual act is not sufficiently explicit—that in his anxiety to vindicate the conduct of his hero, he has attempted to draw a distinction between that particular crime and ordinary acts of private assassination ; and to show that we may disapprove of the deed, while we scruple to load the memory of the actors with an aggravated charge of murder.

The lenient pen of the biographer appears in the description of another important event in Knox's life—his interviews with Queen Mary. It has been the fashion with some, to represent our Reformer on that occasion, as a savage whom the tears of beauty could not melt, or the winning smiles of majesty soften into good manners. To these charges of rudeness and irreverence towards his sovereign, our historian has replied in terms flattering to Knox, and measured rather by his own views of the politeness due to a Popish Queen from the leader of the Protestant Reformation, than by the courtesy and respect which every subject, however exalted, owes to the royal presence. It is true that Knox addressed Mary with a plainness to which crowned heads are seldom accustomed ; but that he did not exceed the limits of courtly etiquette, or officiously intermeddle in matters touching the conscience and domestic concerns of his sovereign, will hardly be maintained by any who have read his own account of the different conferences he had with the Queen in public audience.

The best, indeed the only apology that can be offered for Knox's harsh demeanour in the presence of Mary, is the license of the age ; and the prevailing impression that the power and authority divinely bestowed on the inspired prophets, under the Old Testament dispensation, were conferred on the ministers and preachers of the Reformed doctrines.

In vindicating the character of our Reformer from the charge of having inflicted an irreparable injury on literature, by causing the destruction of the monastic libraries, Mr. M'Crie was eminently successful. The evidence he

adduced of the miserable poverty of those reputed treasures of knowledge, completely put to silence all complaints and accusations about the losses which learning had sustained from the Vandal fury of the Protestant Reformers. We do not, however, think our author entitled to equal praise, in his reflections upon the violent and needless demolition of the cathedrals, and other sacred edifices throughout the country. It may have been good policy to pull down the images and monuments of idolatry ; and perhaps the maxim of the Reformer was true—that the best way to keep the Popish rooks from returning, was to destroy their nests. Yet this will not justify the havoc committed on so many noble buildings ; nor does it afford matter for jocular and sarcastic exultation, that posterity, instead of blaming Knox, are indebted to him for having ministered to the gratification of the antiquary and the artist, by producing so many picturesque ruins.

Of the share which our Reformer took in some of the political intrigues of the time, especially in applying to the Court of Elizabeth for troops to assist the Congregation, when such aid could not be granted without dishonour, and in breach of the treaty between the two kingdoms, Mr. M'Crie speaks with becoming reprehension, and in the stern language of an impartial historian. But it is unnecessary to dwell longer on the merits or faults of this popular work, which has long ago taken its niche in the temple of European literature. Its excellences are universally acknowledged, while its defects are but as telescopic spots on the solar brightness of its author's fame.

The full amount of the benefit conferred by this production on Scotland, and the cause of the Reformed religion, can only be estimated by a comparison of the ignorance and prejudice in which the true character and history of the Reformers were previously enveloped. Among those who suffered by this misfortune, there was none perhaps to whom a harder measure of injustice had been dealt than John Knox. On the Continent, he was seen chiefly through the medium of Popish calumnies. In England, no honours, no veneration, attended his memory ; “ his apostolic zeal and sanctity, his heroic courage, his learning, talents, and

accomplishments, were coldly forgotten, while a thousand tongues were ready to pour out their censure or derision on his fierceness, his ambition, and his bigotry." Among his own countrymen, similiar delusions prevailed. He was known, less as an enlightened Reformer than as a violent and gloomy fanatic, equally a foe to polite learning and innocent enjoyment. How totally incorrect and unfair these representations were, it remained for Mr. M'Crie to demonstrate. Under his hands, our great Reformer became not merely a new character, but a new creature. The clouds of obloquy and vulgar error that obscured his name, were completely and for ever dissipated. The disjointed fragments that lay buried in rubbish or scattered in libraries and manuscripts, were collected, and garnished, and framed into a magnificent monument.

But the justice done to the memory of our national Reformer, was not the only benefit which the Life of Knox conferred on this country. It removed many misconceptions as to the literature and accomplishments of our countrymen in the sixteenth century. Until that time, the first instruments of the Reformation in Scotland were generally regarded as Goths and barbarians—men of strong mind, of ardent zeal, of rude and powerful eloquence. But Mr. M'Crie proved that they were sound and elegant scholars—men who, in the midst of popular ignorance, and under an unsettled government, sacrificed to the muses and the graces of antiquity, till they learned to compose in the Latin tongue with an ease and classic purity, unknown since the days of Augustus.

It must have been peculiarly gratifying to the Author of the Life of Knox, to find that the measure of popularity and respect awarded to him by the public, was commensurate with the merits and value of the work. The University of Edinburgh conferred on him the degree of Doctor in Divinity, (Feb. 3, 1813,) an honour the more distinguished in the case of Mr. M'Crie, and equally creditable to his Alma Mater, since it was one of the first instances of such a title having been bestowed on any beyond the pale of the Established Church. The book was in every body's hands, its praises were in every body's mouth; and the humble

pastor of a Secession congregation, scarcely known beyond the precincts of his own religious communion, rose at once to the pinnacle of literary fame, and took his place in the first rank of historical writers.

At an interval of eight years, appeared another important volume from the pen of Dr. M'Crie, the *Life of Andrew Melville*, who may be called the second founder of our Presbyterian Church polity. This work, though it possesses a less attractive title, is in no respect inferior, either in point of ability or of interest, to the biography of Knox. "It is indeed, (as a very competent judge has remarked,) the more curious and instructive production of the two; abounding with an endless variety of facts, illustrative of the progress of religion and learning, not only in Scotland, but in other nations. As Melville was the most active instrument in maturing the ecclesiastical constitution of his country, and introducing that efficient system of general and scriptural education, which diffused such inestimable benefits over the whole mass of the population, the perusal of the work furnishes the surest means of becoming fully acquainted with all the peculiarities of the Presbyterian Establishment; while it imparts a vast store of instruction nowhere else to be found, on many collateral topics of the deepest interest. That the value of this book has never yet been sufficiently appreciated, is one of the many proofs of the frivolous taste of the age, which, having been accustomed to prefer superficial and showy acquirements, cannot be expected to derive gratification from the results of that elaborate research, which by its very magnitude, is apt to repel rather than to invite a closer intimacy. The subjects which are discussed by Dr. M'Crie in these volumes, throw the most important light on the principle of religious establishments; a question which no man was more capable of solving, and which he was accustomed to treat in a manner more favourable to popular claims, than speculative men in general have been accustomed to regard as being altogether consistent with the legitimate exercise of ecclesiastical authority, or with the implied alliance between the Church and any state in which republican principles do not predominate." *

* Blackwood's Magazine, Sept. 1835.

The opinion entertained of Melville by Dr. M'Crie was that, next to Knox, there was no man to whom Scotland was so deeply indebted. If the first Reformer was the great instrument of purifying and establishing the national religion, the second was the means of preserving its independence. Like his precursor, Melville was exposed to the calumnies of evil tongues. By the writers on Episcopacy, he was assailed in language rivalling in bitterness of abuse that employed by the Popish defamers of the first Protestant preachers. From their misrepresentations, others were led to regard him as the mere fiery and bigotted advocate of the peculiar forms of Presbyterianism. But the fallacy of these views was completely dissipated by his biographer, who proved that the ecclesiastical questions, for the settlement of which he laboured and suffered, related not to matters only of form and ceremony, but that they involved the alternative,—whether the Church should be maintained in all the liberty and power with which her spiritual Head had endowed her, or be trammelled and manacled by arbitrary authority. As Dr. M'Crie remarks, “the immediate object of King James, by the changes which he made in the government of the Church, was to constitute himself dictator in all matters of religion; and his ultimate object was, by means of the bishops, to overturn the civil liberties of the nation, and to become absolute master of the consciences, properties, and lives of all his subjects in the three kingdoms. It was a contest, therefore, that involved all that is dear to men and Christians—all that is valuable in liberty, and sacred in religion. Melville was the first to discover and denounce the scheme that was planned for the overthrow of these; and he persisted in opposing its execution at the expense of deprivation of office, imprisonment, and perpetual proscription from his native country.” Considering the strong current of illiberal feeling against so obnoxious an individual, it required some degree of moral courage to defend his character, and the justness of his claims on posterity. But in this qualification, no one excelled Dr. M'Crie; the copious notices of Scottish literature contained in the *Life of Melville*, while they enhanced its value in the estimation of a certain class of readers, tended probably to obstruct the general popularity of the work; and hence the vindi-

cation of Melville in the public mind, was not altogether so triumphant as that of Knox had been ; although his claims to the gratitude of his countrymen, have been set on a basis as durable as the monument erected by the same hand to his more illustrious predecessor in the work of Scotland's Reformation.

The value of the Lives of Knox and Melville has not yet been appreciated to its full extent ; but this defect is perhaps to be ascribed more to the high price, which has acted as a barrier against their wider perusal, than to any want of desire or curiosity, on the part of the religious public, to become acquainted with the early historical character and transactions of the Church of Scotland. No two works have done more important service to the cause of our great Reformation. They have rescued, as has been already said, from unmerited obloquy the lives and actions of our leading Reformers. They have shown what a debt of gratitude is owing to their venerated author, not only on the score of Protestantism, but also of liberty and learning. They have dispelled the erroneous impressions produced on the minds of the last century by the statements of Hume and other historians, respecting the fierce and barbarous character of those who founded our Presbyterian Church polity ; in short, they have thrown a flood of light on the transactions of the most interesting epoch in her civil or ecclesiastical annals.

In connection with these more elaborate works, an occurrence ought to be mentioned, which formed a kind of episode in Dr. M'Crie's literary career. The author of *Waverley*, whose fame was then rising to its meridian splendour, had happened to select as the theme of one of his most popular novels—*Old Mortality*—that well-known portion of Scottish history, comprehending the cruel and bloody persecution of the Covenanters under the Second Charles. So long as the Great Unknown was content to deal with civil rebellion ; to depict the manners and customs of our peasantry, in *Guy Mannering* ; or to amuse his readers with the foibles of the *Antiquary*, or the daring exploits of *Rob Roy*, no offence was taken at his portraiture of our national character. But when he ventured to

trespass within the sacred pale of the Covenant, to depict our martyrs, in their glorious struggle for religious freedom, as fanatics, and bigots, and rebels, it was soon discovered that he had trodden on ground not to be intruded upon with impunity—that he had made encroachments upon the hallowed sympathies and recollections of Scotchmen, which even the apology of fiction could not extenuate or justify. Clergymen and laymen pressed into the arena, to vindicate the memory of the Covenanters from the aspersions cast upon them by the anonymous author of the *Tales of my Landlord*.

In this patriotic enterprise, Dr. M'Crie far outstript all his competitors. In the review of *Old Mortality*, which appeared in the *Christian Instructor* for January, February, and March 1817, he analysed with amazing accuracy and minuteness of research, the ingenious tissue of wit, ridicule, and misrepresentation, in which the author hath clothed those characters and incidents in history, which composed the scenes and personages of his fictitious narrative. Indeed, if any thing could be objected to at all in this laudable vindication of historic truth and calumniated virtue, it was the overwhelming accumulation of learning, and zeal, and sifting exposure, which was brought to bear, in refuting statements, and descriptions, and exaggerations, that were partly designed to be imaginative. Scott's pictures of the Covenanters were expressly intended to be caricatures; his liberties with dates, and facts, were indulgences which he claimed as a legitimate right of the novelist, and not meant to be scrutinized by the line and plummet of real transactions. To judge of such delinquences, therefore, by the ordinary standards of authenticity, is to condemn fiction by a rule which ought in fairness to be applied only to true history. At the same time, it cannot be denied that truth suffers by caricature; that the best of characters may be disfigured or made odious by surrounding them with false embellishments. In this way, even the novelist has it in his power to do much mischief, from the engaging drapery in which he clothes his misrepresentations; and it was chiefly through this artifice, by softening the atrocities of persecution, investing tyrants and oppressors with

the attributes of heroes, and traducing the principles and character of the conscientious Presbyterians, that the popular tale of *Old Mortality* was likely to disseminate erroneous views of the Covenanters and their times.

To stem the current of obloquy, the more dangerous from the lively and fascinating strain of humour in which it was conveyed, Dr. M'Crie boldly entered the field of combat; and never were exertions crowned with more signal success. Like Neale and Calamy, who defended the Non-Conformists of England, he gallantly rescued the honest fame of our brave and pious ancestors, when held up to buffoonery, and made a jest and laughing-stock for the amusement of novel readers.

In closing his elaborate review, Dr. M'Crie thus sums up the results of his critical dissertation:—"We flatter ourselves that we have satisfactorily established the two leading positions that we advanced at the beginning of the review—the gross partiality which the author has shown to the persecutors of the Presbyterians, and the injustice he has done to the victims of persecution. We have produced undeniable proofs of the former, in his withholding a just view of the severities and cruelties which they perpetrated; softening them in the representations which he has given, and exhibiting the character of some of the chief oppressors, in such a light as to recommend them to the admiration of his readers. We have examined his representation of the Presbyterians or Covenanters, and have found it in numerous instances to be unfair, false, and grossly exaggerated. Instead of being the ignorant, foolish, and violent fanatics which he has held them out to be, we have shown that information was extensively diffused among them; that they were a sober and religious people; that their contendings and sufferings were directed to the support of the kindred cause of religion and liberty; and that the instances of extravagance and violence really committed, were confined to a few, and extorted by grievous and insufferable oppression. These faults we have exposed with freedom, and sometimes with feelings of indignation, but, we trust, without passion or irritation, and without the slightest wish to lower the talents or the fame of the author, far-

ther than was unavoidable in doing justice to the cause which we were bound to advocate, and to the memory of the men who suffered in its defence."

So generally was the historian of Knox associated with the vindication of religion against any wanton or profane attacks upon that subject in the literature of the day, that when the celebrated lampoon appeared in the seventh number of Blackwood's Magazine, under the title of " Translation from an ancient Chaldee Manuscript," which gave great offence to many, as an impious parody on Scripture, a series of letters was addressed, under the fictitious name of Calvinus, to Dr. M'Crie, and the Rev. Andrew Thomson, complaining of the scandal thus cast on the oracles of divine Revelation, by turning their sacred language into a source of merriment, and a vehicle of party abuse.

The substance of the charge against the biographer of Knox was, that he was a contributor to the Magazine, thereby associating his name and character with the said obnoxious performance. " An article, (says Calvinus,) to which your name is subscribed, is inserted in the body of the work, almost in immediate contact with the insult to that religion of which you are so distinguished an ornament; and it has pretty generally gone abroad, that you mean, occasionally, to contribute to stock this Foundling Hospital of Wit with your productions, and thus grant to its management the implied certificate of your approbation. Nay, the parodist seems to have imagined that he could blind your eyes and pervert your judgment by the gift of his commendation; and, accordingly, in place of revilement from the scorner, (which your function teaches you to expect, and your character enables you to despise,) you, the historian of Knox, and the champion of the Covenanters, are accosted from the scorner's chair with the accents of good-fellowship, and described in the record of this impiety as an ally; while your humbler fellow-labourer in defence of the Covenanters, is lampooned beside you, and expressly lampooned as '*a man that feareth God!*' Now, Sir, highly as I venerate and admire your character, if I had thought that in this instance you had erred so far as to have for one moment consented to 'fellowship with

the unfruitful works of darkness,' or permitted yourself to 'have pleasure in them that do them,' I should have said so without shrinking, and with as little apprehension of doing wrong, as of incurring your resentment. But I am as fully convinced as I am of my own existence, that not a breath of the scandal created by this performance can justly light on you ; that the only error you have committed, is that of embarking rather too hastily in an adventure the nature of which you did not understand ; and that your recent contribution to the Magazine, was bestowed without the slightest previous surmise on your part, of the company into which it was to be introduced ; and that nobody can feel more indignant than yourself, at so perfidious an attempt to dignify the profane by raising them to your level, or to degrade you by depression to theirs."

In the latter part of this censure, (which was wholly unmerited,) the inference of Calvinus is perfectly correct, that not a breath of the scandal merited by the performance alluded to, could justly light on the historian of Knox and the champion of the Covenanters. Nothing could be more natural than for Dr. M'Crie to give a contribution to a Magazine then newly started, the proprietor of which was his own publisher, and had the powerful rivalry of a long-established periodical to contend against. But this implied no certificate of his approval of everything that appeared in that production ; far less could it associate his name or his character in any insult to religion, or any encouragement to profanity and impiety. It is the editor, not the contributors to a periodical, that must be held responsible for its contents ; and the only course that either can adopt, when they conceive a breach of decency or propriety has been committed, is to withdraw their support from the publication.*

It so happened, however, that the articles furnished by Dr. M'Crie were strictly connected with his own literary researches. The one which appeared in the same num-

* It ought to be mentioned, to the honour of Mr. Blackwood, that in consequence of the offence taken at the Chaldee MSS. which was merely intended as a *jeux d'esprit*, it was suppressed immediately, with an apology that if what had happened could have been anticipated, the obnoxious article never would have appeared

ber with the imaginary Translation, (October 1817,) was merely a short letter which he had addressed to a friend, with extracts from a manuscript of Bishop Leslie's History of Scotland, in the possession of the Earl of Leven and Melville. Another article of his also, purely literary, was published in the third number, (June 1817,) some months before the Chaldee manuscript made its appearance. It gave a very interesting account of a MS. which had lately come into his possession, having been rescued by him from the hands of a merchant who had purchased it for waste paper. This document was described as "a quarto volume, (of which nearly 300 pages remain,) bound in vellum, and written in a fine hand, about the beginning of the eighteenth century; it was entitled, "The History of Scotland, from the year 1660." On looking into the contents, Dr. M'Crie was led to suppose it to be part of a History of Scotland by Sir George M'Kenzie of Rosehaugh, who was Lord Advocate of Scotland in the reign of Charles II. and author of several treatises, professional and political, in reference to the affairs of his own times.

That conjecture proved to be correct, and in 1821 this curious fragment of Scottish history was published. In the preface, a relation is given of the singular circumstances in which the original work was rescued from destruction. "In the year 1817, (according to this account,) a large mass of papers was sold to a shop-keeper in Edinburgh; from these, his curiosity induced him to select a manuscript volume, which appeared to him to be something of an historical nature; and by another and equal piece of good fortune, he communicated this volume to Dr. M'Crie, the well-known author of the Lives of Knox and Melville. On examining this volume, Dr. M'Crie discovered that it was the composition of Sir George M'Kenzie, and that it must be a portion of that history of his own times which had been so long a desideratum in Scottish literature. Of this the intrinsic evidence was obvious and complete; and the manuscript, though written by one of the ordinary transcribers of that age, was distinctly identified, by numerous corrections and additions in the well-known hand-writing of Sir George M'Kenzie himself."

Such being the accidental connexion of Dr. M'Crie with Blackwood's Magazine, and considering the importance of the literary treasure, of whose discovery he then for the first time communicated his suspicions to the world, it will hardly be thought reasonable that he should be condemned as having done aught unworthy of his fame, or inconsistent with his clerical character; far less that he should have been seated in the same chair with scorers and parodists of Scripture, or placed in any degree of affinity with the odium or criminality that attached to the Chaldee manuscript. In fact, the censures of Calvinus, however laudable his anxiety for the interests of religion might be, showed that his main object was to damage the reputation of the periodical in question, by representing it as undeserving the countenance or aid of the avowed supporters of moral and Christian purity. This conclusion will be found borne out by his Letters, which betray all the jealousy and asperity of a partisan writer.

The works and labours of Dr. M'Crie, already mentioned, related to the ecclesiastical history of his own country; but he soon gave proof to the world that his researches into the origin and early struggles of Protestantism, had taken a much wider range. In 1827 appeared his "History of the Progress and Suppression of the Reformation in Italy in the 16th century; including a Sketch of the History of the Reformation in the Grisons;" and two years afterwards, he published his History of the Reformation in Spain. In these productions, the biographer of Knox and Melville showed that he was no bigotted sectarian, whose intellectual pursuits had been limited and wasted in narrow-minded controversies with his brethren of the Secession. If his former works had left any room for suspicions of this nature, they must have been entirely dispelled by these volumes, in which the author displayed a familiar acquaintance with the literature of Europe, and a sympathy with the struggles of Protestantism, in countries most adverse to its success. It may, perhaps, be proper to notice here, that in the summer of 1821, Dr. M'Crie had paid a short visit to the Continent, partly on the score of health—his eyes having been affected by incessant application to study;

but chiefly in quest of materials for a Life of Calvin, which he had long meditated. In this tour he visited Amsterdam and Rotterdam, where he preached in the Scotch Church; but the greater portion of his time was spent in making extracts from the manuscripts and works which he found in the libraries at Leyden.

Dr. M'Crie states, in his Preface, that he was long convinced the Reformed opinions had spread to a much greater extent in Italy than was commonly supposed. This conviction he had made public, and at the same time expressed a wish that some individual who had leisure, would pursue the inquiry, and fill up what he considered a blank in the history of the Reformation. The task devolved upon himself; and he brought to its accomplishment, many qualifications in which others might have been found deficient. Besides the ordinary resources of books, he had enjoyed the opportunity, during the visit which he made to Holland, of examining several curious and valuable works—particularly in the library of the venerable Mons. Chevalier, one of the pastors of the French Reformed Church at Amsterdam, who not only gave him free access to his stores, but politely transmitted to him a number of extracts, which he had not time to make during his short stay in that city.

Accordingly, his work abounds with rare and valuable information upon matters which had hitherto attracted less public attention in the Reformed states of Europe than their importance deserved. The secular history of the Italian peninsula is familiar to every well educated reader; but seldom has there been heard of one who laboured to diffuse the knowledge of evangelical truth over the darkened regions that formed the central dominion of superstition and priestcraft; and who, like the Covenanters in Scotland, were doomed, for conscience sake, to suffer exile, imprisonment, and martyrdom. Yet the number of them was not small, nor were their labours unworthy of remembrance. The Reformers and martyrs of Italy were lost sight of amidst the pleasures and intrigues of courts, or the splendour of arts and letters. In reviving their forgotten annals, therefore, Dr. M'Crie may be said to lead us over ground that was almost untrodden before, and to have

opened up hidden vaults and chambers filled with Christian monuments, in the great pyramid of the Reformation.

The works of Luther easily found their way into the Papal States, where attention had already been drawn to Germany by the contest which Reuchlin maintained for Hebrew literature ; and scarcely had the Court of Rome decided, or rather evaded, that controversy, when the new dispute respecting Indulgences was brought under its review. The writings of the Reformers were at first circulated openly, and afterwards under fictitious names. The influence which these produced, was aided by the attention bestowed on sacred literature ; and the impressions then made on the minds of the learned, were strengthened by their intercourse with men of letters in other countries. Of the various editions of the Scriptures, both in the original language and in translations, which were published in Italy about the era of the Reformation, Dr. M'Crie has given a minute and interesting account.

It would be out of place here to detail the causes that led to the diffusion of the Reformed doctrines in Italy, or to follow our historian through the various cities and provinces in which he traces the progress of scriptural opinions. In Modena, Florence, Bologna, Faenza, Milan, Venice, Pisa, Lucca, Locarno, Sienna, Naples, Istria, and even Sicily, the preachers of the truth made converts, and in some instances established churches. In the language of a Popish writer, " the whole of Italy was infected with the Lutheran heresy, which had been extensively embraced both by statesmen and ecclesiastics." But the dawn that purpled the moral horizon, the morning that rose bright, and promised to scatter the thick mists of ignorance and idolatry which so long had settled on that land, was soon overcast. The clouds gathered, the storm arose ; in the year 1542, the Court of Rome took the alarm at the dangers that surrounded it ; and from that period, till the close of the century, exile and imprisonment, the axe and the stake, torture and death, thinned the ranks of the hapless Protestants. We must leave it to Dr. M'Crie to narrate the melancholy tale of persecution, treachery, and barbarous cruelty, exhibited in the suppression of the Refor-

mation. The Waldenses, and the martyrs in the valleys of Piedmont, have had their noble struggles commemorated ; but it remained for our author to do justice to another class of persecuted Protestants of the Alps,—the Italian refugees who settled in the Grisons, on the south-east border of Switzerland, amidst those gigantic mountains, covered with perpetual snow, that tower above the source of the Rhine. This formed an interesting episode in the narrative of the Reformation in Italy.

Dr. M'Crie stated, that he had originally proposed to embody in the preceding volume, some account of the progress and suppression of the Reformation in Spain ; this, however, was found to be impracticable, and accordingly it was reserved for a separate publication, which appeared in 1829.* It formed an appropriate sequel to the work on Italy, and completed what the author intended as a contribution to the history of that memorable revolution in the sixteenth century, which more or less affected all the nations of Europe.

The introduction of the Reformed opinions into Spain, was effected by means similar to those which marked their rise and propagation in other Roman Catholic countries. The labours of Erasmus and Luther were extending the knowledge of truth and the principles of freedom over the Continent ; but in the Peninsula, their beneficial operation was checked by the most vigorous opposition ; and with the aid of the terrible Inquisition, the cloud of ignorance and superstition that had been dispelled from other parts of Europe, established its dark and pestilential influence on the devoted realms of Spain. So early as 1521, that tribunal had forbidden the perusal of all Protestant writings ; and this prohibition was soon extended to every work that seemed fitted, in the remotest degree, to enlighten mankind. The translations of Scripture, above all, were interdicted under the severest penalties ; even the geography of Pomponius Mela was proscribed ; and to complete the entire restriction on religious or mental enlightenment, a law

* So far back as 1804, he had contributed to the Christian Magazine some articles on the Progress and Suppression of the Reformation in Spain, with an account of Spanish Protestant martyrs.

of Philip II. in 1558, decreed the punishment of death and confiscation of goods against all who should buy, keep, read, or look at the books prohibited by the Holy Office.

The doctrines of the Reformation, however, made considerable progress ; and preachers were found bold enough, in the cause of truth, to set at defiance the tortures of persecution and the fires of martyrdom. But the organised system of cunning and cruelty, the *autos da fe* in which hundreds were annually burnt, and thousands quietly consigned to dungeons and death, speedily arrested the dissemination of Protestant opinions. No argument was permitted, no appeal was listened to ; the taint of heresy could only be wiped out with blood, and whoever incurred this fatal suspicion, was committed to the torments of the Inquisition or the silence of the grave. Within the short space of half a century from the year 1559, more than one hundred and twenty persons, many of them females, were annually burnt in the Fifteen Courts of the Inquisition in Spain ; and for the same period, Llorente calculates the number of victims to these sanguinary tribunals, without including those who died from the effects of torture, or who were privately executed, at upwards of three hundred and forty-one thousand ; of whom nearly thirty-two thousand were publicly burnt. The houses in which Lutheran doctrines had been taught, were razed to the ground, and the memory and posterity of the unhappy sufferers were declared to be infamous. By means of these relentless persecutions, which almost freeze the blood to contemplate even in the pages of history, the reign of Popery and arbitrary power triumphed in Spain ; and the Reformation was suppressed, not by confuting its principles, but by the extirpation of its professors.

In these works, as in those connected with Scottish history, Dr. M'Crie displayed an inexhaustible fund of learning, of minute and exact information, such as could only have been amassed by years of severe and patient industry. The same spirit, too, pervades them all—a conviction that Popery is a system opposed to the religion of the Bible, and hostile to the liberty and happiness of man. Nor do they bear the slightest trace of sectarian narrowness, or

national prejudices. The author's Christianity takes a more comprehensive range. The artificial divisions of states and kingdoms, the separation of mountains and oceans, had no effect in impairing or interrupting his philanthropy. Wherever men lived and laboured, or suffered and died to communicate the knowledge of a purer faith, the various shades of opinion on minor subjects, never abated his esteem, or cooled his zeal to honour their memory. The Protestants of Seville and Valladolid, of Naples and Ferrara, of Frankfurt and Geneva, were equally the objects of his veneration and sympathy, as those of London and Newcastle, Edinburgh or St. Andrew's. He honoured them all alike, whether as noble martyrs to the truth, or as the instruments and examples of the regeneration of the world.

It ought to have been mentioned that in 1825, he produced a volume, containing some interesting fragments of the history of the Covenanters. This work, which he edited, and illustrated with valuable notes and biographical sketches, was the *Memoirs of Mr. William Veitch and George Brysson*, written by themselves; a *Narrative of the Rising suppressed at Pentland*, written by Colonel James Wallace; and a *Narrative of the Rising suppressed at Bothwell Bridge*, written by James Ure of Shargarton. The *Life of Veitch*, who became minister first of Peebles, and then of Dumfries, after the Revolution, besides detailing his own adventures, which were not a little romantic, includes an account of the escape of the Earl of Argyle after his condemnation, and of the expedition to Scotland, in concert with that of the Duke of Monmouth to England, to oppose King James, which ended in the capture and execution of both of these unfortunate noblemen. The *Narratives of Colonel Wallace and Mr. Ure* refer to events well known, and constituting two of the darkest pages in the heroic contendings of the Covenanters.

Most of Dr. M'Crie's other writings and publications were more immediately connected with his pastoral office; or with the controversies of the time, in reference to Secession principles. To the former class, belong his *Lectures on the Book of Esther*; and a volume of posthumous sermons which appeared in 1836. Among his earlier pro-

ductions, was a Discourse, published in 1797, on "The Duty of Christian Societies towards each other, in relation to the measures for Propagating the Gospel, which at present engage the attention of the Religious World." This sermon was preached in the Meeting-house in Potterrow, on occasion of a collection for promoting a mission to Kentucky; and it is alleged that the author afterwards regretted its publication, as he had changed his views in reference to some opinions which he then entertained. A variety of articles, as has been already stated, were furnished by him to the Christian Magazine, and several other periodicals. It is not easy to ascertain exactly the number or titles of these contributions, as most of them were anonymous. It is understood, however, that the following may be ascribed to his pen, being furnished to the Christian Magazine about the commencement of the century. Between 1803 and 1806, he continued a series of papers in that work, under the assumed name of *Philistor*, (a lover of History,) viz.—"The History of the New Testament, confirmed and illustrated by passages of Josephus, the Jewish historian,"—"Memoir of Mr. John Murray, minister of Dunfermline,"—"Sketch of the Progress of the Reformation in Spain, with an Account of Spanish Protestant martyrs,"—"Suppression of the Reformation in Spain, &c."—"Illustrations of Scripture as to the grinding and parching of Corn,"—"On the Origin of the Taborites,"—"Life of John Wickliffe,"—"Life of John Huss,"—"Martyrdom of Jerome of Prague,"—"Martyrs in Britain, from the time of Wickliffe to the Reformation,"—"Influence of the opinions of Wickliffe upon the English Reformation,"—"Life of Theodore Beza,"—"Life of Dr. Andrew Rivet,"—"Life of Patrick Hamilton, the Proto-Martyr of the Reformation in Scotland,"—"The Life of Francis Lambert of Avignon,"—"Account of Bugenhagen, a German Reformer,"—"Life of Alexander Henderson, one of the Commissioners from the Church of Scotland to the Assembly of Divines at Westminster,"—"Historical Notices respecting learned Scottish Divines in England and foreign parts, during the sixteenth century."

From the simple enumeration of these earlier produc-

tions, it is easy to perceive in what way Dr. M'Crie had acquired that rich fund of literary and ecclesiastical information for which his subsequent works were so distinguished. It likewise shows that the peculiar bent of his genius was turned towards subjects illustrative of martyrology, and the progress of the Reformation throughout Europe. It is impossible for us to specify his contributions to other periodicals, such as the *Christian Instructor*, the *Presbyterian Review*, &c. but they are all characterized by the same master-mind. In *Blackwood's Magazine*, for March 1831, he paid an eloquent tribute to the memory of Dr. Andrew Thomson, a man to whom he bore a strong resemblance in the boldness of his character, and the uncompromising firmness of his principles. He also furnished to the *Edinburgh Review*, for April 1830, an article on the *Memoirs of Sir James Turner*, one of the notorious persecutors of the Covenanters. That curious work was printed from an original manuscript for the members of the Bannatyne Club. He was earnestly importuned to become the editor of Wodrow's *History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland*, and even to write a new work on that sanguinary period of our annals. But neither of these tasks were undertaken. The edition of Wodrow was superintended by Dr. Burns of Paisley, and appeared in four volumes octavo, enriched with a variety of notes and illustrations.

For the latter years of his life, he was engaged in a work which, if at all approaching to a complete state, will be second only to the biography of Knox in importance. This was the life of Calvin, of whose character, opinions, and labours, we yet possess no account worthy to be compared with that of our own two illustrious Reformers; although the writings and sentiments of John Calvin had a powerful influence on the Reformation, not merely in his own country, but in various parts of Europe, and especially in Scotland. We are not aware what progress Dr. M'Crie had made in this work at the time of his death; but it appears to have been sufficiently advanced to admit of publication. A well-informed writer, in allusion to this subject, says, "through his own indefatigable industry, aided by the activity and intelligence of one of his sons, a

youth of great promise, who has spent many months at Geneva, he had accumulated such a mass of materials, and had made such progress in the composition, as to give good grounds for expecting that the work will soon be given to the world, in a state of maturity that will amply sustain the high reputation which has been earned by the splendid and successful exertions of a laborious life." It may be stated, in addition to this information, that the earlier portion of Calvin's life, down to the period of his entering on the scene of his pastoral duties at Geneva, is understood to have been nearly completed; while, for the remaining period, a large mass of documents had been collected, which will enable the editor to give the public the benefit of this most important biographical work, upon which the lamented author was, amidst numerous interruptions, assiduously engaged at the time when his earthly labours were brought to a premature and unexpected close. His son John, upon whom he had devolved the task of collecting materials, transcribing Calvin's original letters, &c. and who, for that purpose, resided several months in Geneva, was cut off in the prime of life, having held for some time the office of Rector of the Normal School in the city of Glasgow.

Turning from Dr. M'Crie's literary labours to his private and domestic life, it may well excite our surprise, how he could devote so much of his time to the public, and yet discharge the onerous duties which his official situations devolved upon him, as pastor of a large congregation, and Professor of Divinity to the body of Seceders with whom he was connected. Such, however, were the powers of his superior mind and indefatigable application, that he accomplished one and all of his numerous avocations faithfully and efficiently. The writer of a short obituary notice at the time of his death, says, in allusion to this diversity of employment, "the wonder is, that any physical strength could have held out so long under such incessant pressure. Times past, and times present—interests the most remote, and interests close at hand—counsels to churches and nations, and counsels to the humblest members of a humble flock—correspondence with the living, and fatiguing researches into the cross lights and casual glances at forgotten facts,

in the letters of the long-departed dead—languages dead and living—opinions old and new—parties, schools, and sects of all times and descriptions—well may we stand aghast at the contemplation of demands so manifold and various on the time and thoughts of this withal thoroughly domestic man and faithful Christian minister.” It has been incidentally noticed, that Dr. M’Crie held the office of Professor of Divinity to the body of the Secession with whom he was connected. To this situation he had succeeded on the death of Mr. Bruce, and he commenced his lectures in 1817. He continued to discharge the duties of the chair with great ability till 1827, when he resigned it to Professor Paxton, in consequence of the re-union of those members of the Anti-Burgher Synod, who had protested against and declined participating in the union of 1820, between the two main bodies of the Dissenters. The difference of sentiment appeared so trivial between these dissentients and the Constitutional Associate Presbytery, that a junction was proposed and effected in May 1827—the Articles of Agreement, and the Overtures of a Testimony, &c. being drawn up by Dr. M’Crie on the one side, and Professor Paxton on the other.

The effect of these protracted and sedentary occupations must, no doubt, have tended to weaken and undermine a constitution which does not seem to have been naturally robust. In his latter days, his appearance was that of a laborious, plodding, hard-wrought student; yet his general health was never so far impaired as to incapacitate him for the discharge of his official duties. For some days before his death, he had been complaining; but was so far from being seriously indisposed, that he not only preached the whole of the preceding Sabbath, but went out on Tuesday to take his usual forenoon’s walk. Towards the evening, however, he was taken alarmingly ill, and between ten and eleven o’clock he fell into a stupor from which no medical means had any effect in recovering him. He expired next day about noon, being Wednesday the 5th of August, 1835. This event took place at his house, Salisbury Place, Newington, and spread a deep and general feeling of grief and regret; all classes uniting in deploring the

loss which the cause of Christian truth, and the literature not of Scotland only but of Europe, had sustained by the sudden decease of him who had been the bold advocate of the one, as he was the bright ornament of the other. His death may be considered premature, as he was only in the sixty-fourth year of his age. He was buried in Greyfriars' Churchyard; and as it happened that the Commission of the General Assembly was met on the day of the funeral, (May 12th,) a deputation, consisting of the Moderator and several of the leading members, on the motion of Dr. Cook, joined the procession, as a mark of respect due to one who had done so much for the Church by his writings, and by his consistent adherence to her establishment.*

The leading features of Dr. M'Crie's character, both public and private, were strongly marked. Some might suppose that a man whose days and nights had so long been passed in arduous and abstruse investigations, and whose opinions, always decided and often unfashionable, were defended with uncompromising firmness, would possess little aptitude for ingratiating himself with people of ordinary attainments. No conjecture could be more groundless. In private life he was bland and amiable, far beyond what strangers might have been led to infer from the sternness of his principles on controverted points of ecclesiastical polity. In the family circle, and in all the relationships of society, none displayed more than he did of the milk of human kindness. To that native modesty and simplicity of disposition, which is the sure indication of a great mind, he added an unaffected benevolence and cordiality, which could not fail to gain the hearts of the youngest and least experienced of those who applied to him for counsel or for

* Nor was this the only testimony of respect which the Church of Scotland showed to Dr. M'Crie. The writer of this Biographical Notice happened to be present in the General Assembly, several years after the publication of Knox's Life; and, as a keen debate was expected on some popular topic of the day, the galleries were crowded to excess. Many who could not gain admission there, found their way into those seats in the body of the house usually appropriated to ministers not being members. Complaints being made by the clergymen thus excluded, it was found necessary to order the house to be cleared of strangers. When it was discovered that among the strangers was Dr. M'Crie, the Assembly rose up spontaneously, and the clerk, Dr. Mac-knight, was requested to announce, that the author of the Life of John Knox should remain in his place.

comfort. He was peculiarly accessible to all who were addicted to studies akin to his own, and was ever ready to refer them to the best sources of information. Indeed, none could behold without esteeming his affability and gentleness to all with whom he held intercourse—his unostentatious piety—his homely wisdom—the uniform cheerfulness of his temper and conversation, which neither bodily pain nor mental anxiety seemed capable of disturbing. He was often in the course of his life brought into circumstances fitted to put the strength of his Christian principles to the test, and he as often showed that he could rise above the vexations of hostility and persecution—that neither personal ease, nor the ambition of worldly applause, was so dear to him as truth and a good conscience.

If his private character was irreproachable and eminently exemplary, it was but a living illustration of what he so ably taught from the pulpit and the press. As a minister of the gospel, he was diligent, faithful, and conscientious. Amidst all his attentions to the claims of private friendship, and the pursuits of those historical labours which shortened his days, he never lost sight of the prominent value of the pastoral office to which he had originally devoted his talents; in the exposition of divine truth, he was perspicuous and convincing, bringing forth things new and old from the treasury of his theological learning, which was extensive in every department, but especially so in that most essential branch which furnishes the best aids for the skilful and profitable interpretation of Scripture. His style of preaching was not that which is commonly called popular, nor was his eloquence of the kind that has of late years become fashionable in Scotland: His discourses were remarkable for their solid sterling worth, rather than for their showy qualities. A rich and exalted tone of doctrine, a calm and affectionate earnestness, a chaste yet forcible simplicity of diction, and a skilfulness of practical application to the hearts and consciences of his hearers; these were the prominent characteristics of his ordinary pulpit administrations.

Though a seceder from the Church of Scotland, he did not, like the great body of Dissenters from whom he had

separated, convert that disunion into a ground of hostility and persecution against her ; far less did he seek, on that account, to compass the entire overthrow of her establishment. To her doctrine, worship, discipline, and government, he was warmly attached ; and that attachment he retained undiminished until the day of his death. While he regretted the existence of certain evils and abuses in her system of administration, which still prevented him from joining her communion, he looked forward with hope to see the time when those barriers of separation should be removed. In a sermon, preached in May 1834, in reference to ecclesiastical proceedings, he says, " Nothing on earth would give more joy to my heart than to see sure and decided symptoms of reformation in the National Church of Scotland. I would go seven times to the top of her highest mountain to look out for the harbinger of her relief, though each time I should have to return with the message—' there is nothing ;' provided at last I could hail the appearance of ' the little cloud out of the sea like a man's hand,' the sure prelude of the plentiful rain which shall refresh the weary inheritance, make her wilderness an Eden, and her desert as a garden of the Lord."

The recent proceedings in the Church Courts, for giving more effect to the popular will in the choice and settlement of their pastors, had but his partial approbation. The celebrated Veto Act, which the Liberal party introduced in 1834, with a view to limit the power, if not to frustrate and indirectly supplant the rights of patrons, he regarded with cold suspicion, as a worthless boon, so long as lay patronage was permitted to exist. His sagacity foresaw the collision that must inevitably arise, and which has now arisen with a violence of contention that sets the courts of law at defiance, and threatens another Secession—from the attempt to bring two incompatible and repugnant rights to work together in a system of harmonious parish settlements. While the advocates of the Veto boasted that they had muzzled the monster of patronage, the more clear-sighted Dissenter told them they were mistaken,—“ they had only muffled him, but they had muzzled the people.” In alluding to the Veto Act, in the sermon already quoted, he

says, " The decision on Calls, so much applauded by many, together with its strange but not unsuitable accompaniments, I can look upon in no other light but as an attempt to gull the people with a show of privilege, while it subjects them to be fettered at every step in the exercise of it, and involves them in the inextricable meshes of legal chicanery ; and this boon is presented to them by the hands of those who have scornfully thrown out and rejected their petitions for relief from a grievance (patronage) of which the Church of Scotland has always complained." This was the language of Dr. M'Crie in 1834 ; and looking to what has since taken place—to what is now (in 1840) the position of the Church, with her Veto Act declared illegal by the House of Lords—her law-suits for damages for refusing to comply with the decisions of the Civil Courts—her interdicts in the matter of parish settlements—the suspension of numbers of her clergy—her non-intrusion agitation which shakes the Establishment to its base ;—looking to these facts, we cannot but feel surprised at the accuracy with which his sagacious mind predicted the futility of attempting to introduce the free exercise of popular rights, so long as the law of patronage was left unrescinded.

On the whole, in whatever light we view this eminent man—whether we regard his personal character or his literary talents—whether we look upon his writings as connected with the spread of the Reformation in Europe, or with that interesting period in the history of the Church of Scotland ;—it will be admitted that he was a man of no ordinary attainments, endowed with a singular acuteness of intellect, and habits of indefatigable research. His fame as an author has extended far beyond the limits of his own country ; and his works will continue to be read, probably with increasing admiration, wherever men are found to take an interest in the cause of Reformed Christianity, or in the memory of the sufferers for religious liberty.

CONTENTS.

	Page
EDITOR'S PREFACE,	iii
MEMOIR OF DR. M'CRIE,	ix
PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION,	lxv

PERIOD FIRST.

Birth and parentage of Knox—his education—state of literature in Scotland—introduction of the study of the Greek language—opinions of John Major—their influence on Knox and Buchanan—Knox addicted to scholastic philosophy, and teaches it at St. Andrew's—is advanced to clerical orders—change in his studies and sentiments—state of religion in Scotland—necessity of a reformation—gratitude due to the Reformers—introduction of Reformed doctrines into Scotland—Patrick Hamilton, the martyr—exiles for religion—Reformation promoted by the diffusion of the Scriptures—by poetry—embraced by persons of rank—its state at the death of James V. Pp. 1—22

PERIOD SECOND.

Knox retires from St. Andrew's, and joins the Reformers—is persecuted by Cardinal Beatoun, and degraded from the priesthood—Guillaume—Rough—Wishart—preachers to whose instructions he was indebted—favoured by the Regent Arran—Knox enters the family of Langniddrie as tutor—Cardinal Beatoun assassinated—Knox persecuted by his successor Archbishop Hamilton—obliged to conceal himself, and takes refuge in the castle of St. Andrew's—his sentiments regarding the assassination of Beatoun—Sir David Lindsay of the Mount—Balnaves of Halhill—John Rough—Knox called by them to the ministry—his first sermon against Popery—his disputation before a convention of the clergy—success of his labours—is taken prisoner, and confined in the French galleys—his fortitude of mind under captivity—he writes a confession of his faith—extract from his dedication to a treatise of Balnaves—his humane advice to his fellow prisoners—he is liberated. Pp. 22—44

PERIOD THIRD.

Knox arrives in England—state of the Reformation there—is sent by the Privy Council to preach at Berwick—his exertions and success—character of Tonsal, bishop of Durham—Knox defends his doctrines before him—is removed to Newcastle, and made chaplain to Edward VI.—consulted in the revisal of the Liturgy and Articles—makes proposals of marriage to Marjory Bowes—receives the approbation of the Privy Council—incurs the displeasure of the Duke of Northumberland—is honourably acquitted by the Privy Council—preaches in London—declines to accept a benefice—refuses the bishopric of Rochester—disapproves of the worship and government of the Church of England—sentiments of the English Reformers agree with his—plan of Edward VI. for improving the Church of England—state of his Court—boldness and honesty of the royal chaplains—Knox's sermons at Court—his distress at the death of Edward—he returns to the north of England at the accession of Mary—his prayer for the Queen—marries Marjory Bowes—some of her relations displeased at the marriage—Roman Catholic religion restored by English parliament—Knox continues to preach—his letters are intercepted—he is forced to abscond, and retires to Dieppe in France. Pp. 44—71

PERIOD FOURTH.

Knox's uneasy reflections on his flight—letters to his friends in England—his solemn review of his conduct in the ministry—visits Switzerland—returns to Dieppe—visits Geneva—forms an intimate friendship with the celebrated Calvin—returns to Dieppe—distressing news from England—his Admonition—apology for the severity of its language—fixes his residence at Geneva—his means of subsistence—called to be minister to English exiles at Frankfort—dissensions among them about the English Liturgy—his moderation in that—harmony restored—disorderly conduct of the sticklers for the Liturgy—rebuked by Knox—he is accused of high treason—turns his thoughts to his native country—state of the Protestant Church in Scotland from the time he left it—triumph of the Popish clergy—Queen Dowager made Regent—she privately favours the Protestants—William Harlow—John Willock—Knox visits his wife at Berwick—preaches privately at Edinburgh—letter to Mrs. Bowes—persuades the Protestants to desist from hearing mass—dispenses the Sacrament of the Supper in different parts of the kingdom—Popish clergy endeavour to apprehend him—summon him—Knox preaches more publicly—Earl of Glencairn—his letter to the Queen Regent—receives a call from the English congregation at Geneva—leaves Scotland—Popish clergy condemn him as a heretic, and burn his effigy—his Appellation from the sentence—summary of the doctrine which he had taught—estimate of the advantages which the Reformation derived from this visit—important instructions which he left behind him for his Protestant brethren in Scotland—reaches Geneva. . Pp. 72—111

PERIOD FIFTH.

Happiness which Knox enjoyed at Geneva—his passionate desire to preach the Gospel in his native country—receives an invitation from the Protestant nobles in Scotland—leaves Geneva, and proceeds to Dieppe in France—receives discouraging news there from his friends in Scotland—his animated letter to the nobility—severe persecution of the Protestants in France—Knox preaches in Rochelle—his reasons for not proceeding to Scotland—writes to the Protestants there—warns them against the Anabaptists—his letter to the nobility—his prudent advice regarding resistance to the government—he returns to Geneva, and assists in translating the Bible into English—publishes his letter to the Queen Regent—his Appellation—First Blast of the Trumpet—reasons which led to this publication against female government—Aylmer's answer to it—Knox receives a second invitation from the nobility in Scotland—progress of the Reformation there—formation of private congregations—Protestant preachers—Martyrdom of Walter Milne—important effects of this—Protestants petition the Regent—her fair promises—accession of Elizabeth—Knox leaves Geneva for Scotland—is refused a passage through England—grounds for this refusal—Knox's reflections on it—he writes to Cecil from Dieppe—arrives in Scotland—Critical situation of affairs on his arrival—dissimulation of the Queen Regent—her determination to suppress the Reformation—Knox joins his brethren who were summoned to stand trial—preaches at Perth—demolition of the monasteries in that city—not justly imputed to him—Regent threatens the destruction of Perth—Protestants defend themselves—a treaty between the Regent and Protestant lords, and violated by the Queen—the name of the Congregation given to the Protestant association—Lords of The Congregation invite Knox to preach at St. Andrew's—threatened by the Archbishop—intrepidity of Knox—he preaches—magistrates and inhabitants agree to demolish the monasteries and images, and to set up the Reformed worship—their example followed in other parts of the kingdom—Protestants of Edinburgh fix on Knox as their minister—he travels through the country—effects of his preaching—state of his mind—his family arrive in Scotland—French troops come to the assistance of the Queen Regent—Knox persuades the Congregation to seek assistance from England—apologizes to Elizabeth for his book against female government—is invited to England—undertakes a journey to Berwick—is successful in the negociation—reasons for his taking an active part in this affair—embarrassment in which this involved him—prejudices of the English Court against him—their confidence in his honesty—his activity and imminent dangers—Lords of the Congregation consult on deposition of the Regent—

Knox advises her suspension—influence of the Reformation on civil liberty—political principles of Knox—essentially those on which British liberty rests—disasters of the Congregation—their courage revived by the eloquence of Knox—his exertions in Fife—an English army joins the forces of the Congregation—expedition of the French against Glasgow—death of the Queen Regent—war ended by a treaty—contrast between the Popish and Protestant clergy in their conduct during the civil war—the Reformed religion is established by Parliament—retrospective view of the advancement of the Reformation. Pp. 111—182

PERIOD SIXTH.

Knox resumes his situation in Edinburgh—employed in composing the Protestant Confession of Faith—the First Book of Discipline—approved and subscribed by greater part of Privy Council—sketch of the form and order of the Reformed Church of Scotland—laudable attention to education—literary hours in a Scotch Minister's Family—Hebrew language introduced—cultivation of the vernacular tongue—first General Assembly—Knox loses his wife—his anxiety for the safety of the Reformed Church—Queen Mary arrives in Scotland—her education, and her fixed determination to restore Popery—alarm excited by her setting up of Mass—behaviour of Knox on this occasion—remarks on this—hostile intentions of the Queen against Knox—first interview between them—his opinion of her character—his austerity and vehemence useful—zeal of the Protestant nobility abates—he vindicates the freedom of the Ecclesiastical Assemblies— inveighs against the inadequate provision made for the Protestant ministry—his own stipend—attention of the Town Council of Edinburgh to his support—he instals two superintendents—employed in reconciling the nobility—the Queen offended at one of his sermons—second interview between them—his great labours in Edinburgh—obtains John Craig for a colleague—curious incidents in the life of John Craig, *note*—the Prior of St. Andrew's created Earl of Murray, and made prime minister—insurrection under Huntly—conduct of Knox on that occasion—Quentin Kennedy—dispute between him and Knox—Ninian Wingate—excommunication of Paul Methven—reflections on the severity of Protestant discipline—third interview between Knox and the Queen—artifice of Mary—she prevails on the Parliament not to ratify the Protestant religion—indignation of Knox at this—breach between him and Earl of Murray—his sermon at the dissolution of Parliament—fourth interview between him and the Queen—she bursts into tears—apology for the sternness of his behaviour—slander against his character—is accused of high treason—influence used to intimidate him—his trial—indignation of the Queen at his acquittal.—Pp. 182—240

PERIOD SEVENTH.

New attempts to induce Knox to make submission to the Queen—the courtiers accuse him of usurping a papal power—the General Assembly approve of his conduct—he marries a daughter of Lord Ochiltree—slandrous reflections of the Papists on this alliance—dissensions between the Court and Protestant preachers—apology for the liberty of the pulpit—debate between Knox and Secretary Maitland—the Queen marries Lord Darnley—friendship renewed between Knox and the Earl of Murray—he does not take part in Murray's insurrection—the King takes offence at one of his sermons, and Knox is inhibited from preaching—remonstrance of the Town Council against this—Christopher Goodman leaves St. Andrew's—petition for Knox's translation to that town refused by Assembly—a fast proclaimed for the dangers which threaten the Church—measures taken by the Queen to restore Popery—assassination of Rizzio—Knox banished from Edinburgh—resolves to visit his sons in England—is strongly recommended by General Assembly—from whom he was charged with a letter to the bishops of England—Archbishop Hamilton restored to his ancient jurisdiction—spirited letter of Knox on that occasion—the King murdered by Bothwell—the Queen's participation in the murder—her marriage to Bothwell—noble behaviour of John Craig on that occasion—the Queen resigns the Crown to her son—Knox returns to Edinburgh, and preaches at the coronation of James VI.—his opinion concerning the punishment of Mary—the Earl of Murray made Regent—state of the Protestant Church under his Regency—Knox cherishes the desire of retiring from public life—the king.

dom embroiled by the escape of the Queen—the Regent assassinated by Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh—national grief at this event—character of Murray—Knox bewails his loss—fabricated conference between them—Thomas Maitland exults over the death of the Regent—Knox's denunciation against him—his pathetic sermon before the Regent's funeral—is struck with apoplexy. Pp. 240—273

PERIOD EIGHTH.

Knox recovers from the apoplectic stroke—is involved in a quarrel with Kircaldy of Grange, who joins the Queen's party—interposition of the gentlemen of the west in Knox's favour—anonymous libels against him—his spirited answer from the pulpit—Edinburgh occupied by the Queen's party—danger to which Knox is exposed—prevailed upon to retire to St. Andrew's—civil war—hostility of the Queen's faction against him—he is opposed by their adherents at St. Andrew's—Archibald Hamilton—scheme for altering the polity of the Church—Tulchan bishops—not approved of by General Assembly—Knox refuses to instal Douglas in the Archbishopric of St. Andrew's—gradual decay of his health—striking description of his appearance and pulpit eloquence by James Melville—he publishes an answer to a Scotch Jesuit called Tyrie—ardently desires his dissolution—his last letter to the General Assembly—is invited back, and returns to Edinburgh—requests a smaller place of worship, his voice being so enfeebled that he could not be heard in St. Giles's—a new place of worship fitted up for him—Craig removed from Edinburgh—Lawson chosen as successor to Knox—massacre of St. Bartholomew in France inflicts a deep wound on his exhausted spirit—Knox's denunciation against the French King—preaches in the Tolbooth Church—his last sermon—his sickness—interesting interview with his session—his message to Kircaldy—his religious advices, meditations, and comfort in his last illness—his death—funeral—opinions entertained respecting him by Scottish Protestants—by divines of the Church of England—origin and causes of prejudices against him—his character—reflections on the prophecies ascribed to him—account of his family—sufferings of John Welch, his son-in-law—interview between Mrs. Welch and James VI.—character of Knox's writings—conclusion. Pp. 273—362

NOTES.—Period First,	Page 333
Second,	345
Third,	351
Fourth,	361
Fifth,	363
Sixth,	380
Seventh,	402
Eighth,	412

APPENDIX,	425
-----------	-----

SUPPLEMENT,	443
-------------	-----

HISTORICAL REMARKS on Knox's Implication in Rizzio's Murder,	451
---	-----

VINDICATION OF JOHN KNOX from Implication in Rizzio's Murder,	454
--	-----

INDEX,	471
--------	-----

PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION.

THE Reformation from Popery marks an epoch unquestionably the most important in the History of modern Europe. The effects of the change which it produced, in religion, in manners, in politics, and in literature, continue to be felt at the present day. Nothing, surely, can be more interesting than an investigation of the history of that period, and of those men who were the instruments, under Providence, of accomplishing a revolution which has proved so beneficial to mankind.

Though many able writers have employed their talents in tracing the causes and consequences of the Reformation, and though the leading facts respecting its progress in Scotland have been repeatedly stated, it occurred to me that the subject was by no means exhausted. I was confirmed in this opinion by a more minute examination of the ecclesiastical history of this country, which I began for my own satisfaction several years ago. While I was pleased at finding that there existed such ample materials for illustrating the history of the Scottish Reformation, I could not but regret that no one had undertaken to digest and exhibit the information on this subject which lay hid in manuscripts, and in books which are now little known or consulted. Not presuming, however, that I had the ability or the leisure requisite for executing a task of such difficulty and extent, I formed the design of drawing up memorials of our national Reformer, in which his personal history might be combined with illustrations of the progress of that great undertaking, in the advancement of which he acted so conspicuous a part.

A work of this kind seemed to be wanting. The name of Knox, indeed, often occurs in the general histories of the period, and some of our historians have drawn, with their usual ability, the leading traits of a character with which they could not fail to be struck; but it was foreign to their object to detail the events of his life, and it was not to be expected that they would bestow that minute and critical attention on his history which is necessary to form a complete and accurate idea of his character. Memoirs of his life have been prefixed to editions of some of his works, and inserted in biographical collections and periodical publications; but, in many instances, their authors were destitute of proper information, and in others they were precluded, by the limits to which they were confined, from entering into those minute statements, which are so useful for illustrating individual character, and render biography both pleasing and instructive. Nor can it escape observation, that a number of writers have been guilty of great injustice to the memory of our Reformer, and, from prejudice, from ignorance, or from inattention, have exhibited a distorted caricature instead of a genuine portrait.

I was encouraged to prosecute my design, in consequence of my possessing a manuscript volume of Knox's Letters, which throw considerable light upon his character and history. The advantages which I have derived from this volume will appear in the course of the work, where it is quoted under the general title of *MS. Letters*.*

The other MSS. which I have chiefly made use of, are Calderwood's large History of the Church of Scotland, Row's History, and Wodrow's Collections. Calderwood's History, besides much valuable information respecting the early period of the Reformation, contains a collection of letters written by Knox between 1559 and 1572, which, together with those in my possession, extend over twenty years of the most active period of his life. I have carefully consulted this history as far as it relates to the period of which I write. The copy which I quote most frequently, belongs to the Church of Scotland. In the

* See an Account of this MS. in p. 4.

Advocates' Library, besides a complete copy of that work, there is a folio volume of it, reaching to the end of the year 1572. It was written in 1634, and has a number of interlineations and marginal alterations, differing from the other copies, which, if not made by the author's own hand, were most probably done under his eye. I have sometimes quoted this copy. The reader will easily discern when this is the case, as the references to it are made merely by the year under which the transaction is recorded, the volume not being paged.

Row, in composing the early part of his *Historie of the Kirk*, had the assistance of Memoirs written by David Ferguson, his father-in-law, who was admitted minister of Dunfermline at the establishment of the Reformation. Copies of this History seem to have been taken before the author had put the finishing hand to it, which may account for the additional matter to be found in some of them. I have occasionally quoted the copy which belongs to the Divinity Library in Edinburgh, but more frequently one transcribed in 1726, which is more full than any other copy that I have had access to see.

The industrious Wodrow had amassed a valuable collection of MSS. relating to the ecclesiastical history of Scotland, the greater part of which is now deposited in our public libraries. In the library of the University of Glasgow, there are a number of volumes in folio, containing collections which he had made for illustrating the lives of the Scottish Reformers, and Divines of the sixteenth century. These have supplied me with some interesting facts. They are quoted under the name of *Wodrow's MS. in Bibl. Coll. Glas.*

For the transactions of the General Assembly I have consulted the Register, commonly called the *Book of the Universal Kirk*. There are several copies of this MS. in the country. That which is followed in this work, and which is the oldest that I have examined, belongs to the Advocates' Library.

I have endeavoured to avail myself of the printed histories of the period, and of books published in the age of the Reformation, which often incidentally mention facts which are not recorded by historians. In the Advocates' Library, which contains an invaluable treasure of information respecting Scottish

affairs, I had the opportunity of examining the original editions of most of the Reformer's works. The rarest of all his tracts is the narrative of his Disputation with the Abbot of Crossraguel, which scarcely any writer since Knox's time seems to have seen. After I had given up all hope of procuring a sight of this curious tract, I was accidentally informed that a copy of it was in the library of Alexander Boswell, Esq. of Auchinleck, who very politely communicated it to me.

In pointing out the sources which I have consulted, I wish not to be understood as intimating that the reader may expect, in the following work, much information which is absolutely new. Those who engage in researches of this kind must lay their account with finding the result of their discoveries reduced within a small compass, and should be prepared to expect that many of their readers will only glance with a cursory eye what they procured with great, perhaps with unnecessary labour. The principal facts respecting the Reformation and the Reformer are already known. I flatter myself, however, that I have been able to place some of them in a new and more just light, and to bring forward others which have not hitherto been generally known.

The reader will find the authorities, upon which I have proceeded in the statement of facts, carefully marked ; but my object was rather to be select than numerous in my references. When I had occasion to introduce facts which have been often repeated in histories, and are already established and unquestionable, I did not reckon it necessary to be so particular in producing the authorities.

After so many writers of biography have incurred the charge either of uninteresting generality, or of tedious prolixity, it would betray great arrogance were I to presume that I had approached the due medium. I have particularly felt the difficulty, in writing the life of a public character, of observing the line which divides biography from general history. Desirous of giving unity to the narrative, and at the same time anxious to convey information respecting the ecclesiastical and literary history of the period, I have separated a number of facts and illustrations of this description, and placed them in notes at the end of the Life. I am not without apprehensions that I may have ex-

ceeded in the number or length of these notes, and that some readers may think that in attempting to relieve one part of the work I have overloaded another.

No apology, I trust, will be deemed necessary for the freedom with which I have expressed my sentiments on the public questions which naturally occurred in the course of the narrative. Some of these are at variance with opinions which are popular in the present age ; but it does not follow from this that they are false, or that they should have been suppressed. I have not become the indiscriminate panegyrist of the Reformer, but neither have I been deterred, by the apprehension of incurring this charge, from vindicating him, wherever I considered his conduct to be justifiable, or for apologizing for him against uncandid and exaggerated censures. The attacks which have been made on his character from so many quarters, and the attempts to wound the Reformation through him, must be my excuse for having so often adopted the language of apology.

In the Appendix I have inserted a number of Knox's letters, and other papers relative to that period, none of which, as far as I know, have formerly been published. Several others, intended for insertion in the same place, have been kept back, as the work has swelled to a greater size than was expected. A very scarce Poem, written in commendation of the Reformer, and published in the year after his death, is reprinted in the Supplement. It confirms several facts contained in the Life.

The Portrait prefixed is engraved from a painting in the possession of the Right Honourable Lord Torphichen, with the use of which his Lordship, in the most obliging manner, favoured the publishers. There is every reason to think that it is a genuine likeness, as it strikingly agrees with the print of our Reformer, which Beza, who was personally acquainted with him, published in his *Icones*. I have now before me a small brass medal struck in memory of Knox. On the one side of it is a bust of him ; on the other side is the following inscription in Roman capitals : JOANNES KNOXUS SCOTUS THEOLOGUS ECCLESIAE EDIMBURGENSIS PASTOR. OBIT EDIMBURGI AN. 1572. ÆT. 57. It appears to have been executed at a period much later than the Reformer's death. There is an error of ten years as

to his age ; and as Beza has fallen into the same mistake, it is not improbable that the inscription was copied from his *Icones*, and that the medal was struck on the continent.

When the printing of the following Life was finished, and I was employed in correcting the Notes at the end, a *History of the Reformation in Scotland* by Dr. Cook of Laurencekirk, was published. After what I have already said, I need scarcely add, that the appearance of such a work gave me great satisfaction. The author is a friend to civil and religious liberty ; he has done justice to the talents and character of the Reformers, and evinced much industry and impartiality in examining the authorities from which he has taken his materials. Had he had more full access to the sources of information, he would no doubt have done greater justice to the subject, and rendered his work still more worthy of public favour ; but I trust that it will be useful in correcting mistakes and prejudices which are extremely common, and in exciting attention to a branch of our national history which has been long neglected. Where our subject coincides, I have in general observed an agreement in the narrative, and sometimes in the reflections : in several instances, however, we differ materially in the statement of facts, in the judgment which we have expressed about them, and in the delineation of character. The judicious reader will decide on which side the truth lies, by comparing the reasons which we have advanced, and the authorities to which we have appealed.

C

THE LIFE OF JOHN KNOX.

PERIOD FIRST.

FROM HIS BIRTH, IN THE YEAR 1505, TO HIS EMBRACING
THE REFORMED RELIGION IN 1542.

JOHN KNOX was born in the year one thousand five hundred and five. The place of his nativity has been disputed. That he was born at Gifford, a village in East Lothian, has been the most prevailing opinion; but the tradition of the country fixes his birth-place at Haddington, the principal town of the county. The house in which he is said to have been born is still shown by the inhabitants, in one of the suburbs of the town, called the Gifford-Gate.* This house, with some adjoining acres of land (now belonging to the Earl of Wemyss) continued to be possessed, until about the middle of the last century, by a family of the name of Knox who claimed kindred with the Reformer. The opinion, however, that he was born in the village of Gifford, seems the more probable, as being supported by the oldest and most credible writers.

The name of his mother was Sinclair.† His father was descended from an ancient and respectable family, who

* See Note A.—Period First.

† In letters written by the Reformer, in times of persecution or war, when there was a risk of their being intercepted, he was accustomed to subscribe, "John Sinclair." Under

this signature at one of them, in the collection of his letters in my possession, is the following note: "yis was his mother's surname, wlk he wrait in time of trubill." MS. Letters, p. 346.

possessed the lands of Knock, Ranferly, and Craigends, in the shire of Renfrew. The descendants of this family have been accustomed to enumerate, among the honours of their house, that it gave birth to the Scottish Reformer, a bishop of Raphoe, and a bishop of the Isles.* At what particular period his ancestors removed from their original seat, and settled in Lothian, I have not been able exactly to ascertain.†

Obscurity of parentage can reflect no dishonour upon one who has raised himself to distinction by his virtues and talents. But the assertion of some writers that our Reformer's parents were in poor circumstances, is contradicted by facts. Though not opulent, they were able to give their son a liberal education, which, in that age, was far from being common.‡ In his youth he was put to the grammar-school of Haddington; and after having acquired the principles of the Latin language there, he was sent by his father, in the year 1521, to the university of Glasgow.§

* Nisbet's Heraldry, p. 180. Crawford's Renfrew, by Semple, Part II. p. 30, 139. Account of Knox, prefixed to his History, Edit. 1732, page ii. Keith's Scottish Bishops, p. 177.

† David Buchanan, *ut supra*, says that "his father was a brother's son of the house of Ranferlie." The account which the Reformer himself gave of his ancestors, in a conversation with the Earl of Bothwell, implies that they had settled in East Lothian as early as the days of his great-grandfather: "My Lord, (says he,) my great-grandfather, gudeschir, and father, ave served your Lordchip's predecessours, and some of them have dyed under their standards; and this is a pairt of the obligatioun of our Scottish kindnes." — *Historie of the Reformatioun*, p. 306. Ed. 1732.

‡ Dr. Mackenzie says, the Reformer was "the son of a poor countryman, as we are informed by those who knew him very well: his parents, though in a mean condition, put their son to the grammar-school of Haddington; where, after he had learned his grammar, he served for some time the laird of Langniddrie's children, who, being sent by their parents to the university of St. Andrew's, he thereby had occasion of learning his philosophy." *Lives of Scottish Writers*, vol. iii. p. 111. As his authorities for these assertions, the Doctor has printed on the margin, "Dr. Hamilton, Dr. Baillie, and many others," Popish writers, who, regardless of their own character, fabricated or retailed such tales as they thought most discreditable

to the Reformer, many of which Mackenzie himself is obliged to pronounce "ridiculous stories that are altogether improbable," p. 132. Dr. Baillie was Alexander Baillie, a Benedictine Monk in the Scottish Monastery of Wirtsburgh; and as he wrote in the year 1628, it is ridiculous to talk of his being well acquainted either with the Reformer or his father. Hamilton, (the earliest authority,) instead of supporting Mackenzie's assertions, informs us, so far as his language is intelligible, that Knox was in priest's orders before he undertook the care of children: "quo victum sibi pararet magis quam ut deo serviret (Simonis illius magi huc usque sequutus vestigia) presbyter primum fieri de more quamvis illiteratus tum in privatis ædibus puerorum in vulgaribus literis formandorum curam capere coactus est." *De Confusione Calv. Sectæ*, p. 64.—The fact is, that Knox entered into the family of Langniddrie as tutor, after he had finished his education at the university; and as late as 1547, he was employed in teaching the young men their grammar. *Historie*, p. 67.

§ The Author of the Life of Knox, depending on the testimony of the earliest and most credible writers, had stated that Knox studied and took the degree of Master of Arts at St. Andrew's. Subsequent inquiries, however, brought to light evidence which showed that the common statement is erroneous. In the "*Annales Universitatis Glasguensis*," the name "*Johannes Knox*" occurs among the *Incorporati*, or

The state of learning in Scotland at that period, and the progress which it made in the subsequent part of the century, have not been examined with the attention which they deserve, and which has been bestowed on contemporaneous matters of inferior importance. There were unquestionably learned Scotsmen in the early part of the sixteenth century; but most of them owed their chief acquirements to the advantage of a foreign education. Those improvements, which the revival of literature had introduced into the schools of Italy and France, were long in reaching the universities of Scotland, though originally formed upon their model; and when they did arrive, they were regarded with a suspicious eye, more especially by the clergy. The principal branches cultivated in our universities, were the Aristotelian philosophy, scholastic theology, with canon and civil law.* The schools erected in the principal towns of the kingdom, afforded the means of instruction in the Latin tongue, the knowledge of which, in some degree, was requisite for enabling the clergy to perform the religious service.† But the Greek language, long after it had been enthusiastically studied on the continent, and after it had become a fixed branch of education in the neighbouring kingdom, continued to be almost unknown in Scotland. Individuals acquired the knowledge of it abroad; but the

those who were matriculated in the year 1522; and that this was the Reformer there can be no doubt, as he was then seventeen years of age. And, moreover, Major was at that time Principal of the University of Glasgow, under whom all the ancient accounts agree that Knox studied. In the Records of the University of Glasgow, Major is uniformly called Joannes Majoris. It appears from Dr. Lee's extracts, published in the second edition of Dr. Irving's *Memoirs of Buchanan*, (p. 373,) that Major was incorporated into the University of St. Andrew's on the 9th of June, 1523. He is there designed "Doctor Theologus Parisiensis, et Thesaurius Capellæ Regiæ;" and in an instrument of seisin, belonging to that seminary, he is styled "Vicarius de Dunloppie Glasg." The fact of his removal to St. Andrew's at this time, may perhaps account for the mistake of the writers referred to, who, not being aware that Major had then taught in Glasgow, seem to have concluded that Knox studied under that celebrated professor at St. Andrew's.

* Boetii Vitæ Episcoporum. Murthlac. et Aberdeen. fol. xxix. coll. cum fol. xxvi.—xxviii. Impress. anno 1522. This little work is of great value, and contains almost the only authentic notices which we possess, as to the state of learning in Scotland, about the beginning of the sixteenth century. Mackenzie, the copier of the fabulous Dempster, (who gives an account of learned men that never existed, and of books that no man ever saw or could see), talks of almost every writer whom he mentions, as finishing "the course of his studies in the Belles Lettres and Philosophy" in one of the Scots Universities. These are merely words of course. Some of the Aristotelian rules concerning rhetoric were taught by the professor of scholastic philosophy; but until the Reformation, there does not appear to have been any stated lectures of this kind read. At that period, a course of rhetoric was appointed to be taught in the colleges. First Book of Discipline, p. 40, 42. edit. 1621.

† See Note B.

first attempts to teach it in this country were of a private nature, and exposed their patrons to the suspicion of heresy. The town of Montrose is distinguished by being the first place, so far as I have been able to discover, in which Greek was taught in Scotland; and John Erskine of Dun is entitled to the honour of being regarded as the first of his countrymen who patronized the study of that polite and useful language. As early as the year 1534, that enlightened and public-spirited baron, on returning from his travels, brought with him a Frenchman, skilled in the Greek tongue, whom he settled in Montrose; and, upon his removal, he liberally encouraged others to come from France and succeed to his place. From this private seminary many Greek scholars proceeded, and the knowledge of the language was gradually diffused throughout the kingdom.* After this statement I need scarcely add, that the Oriental tongues were at that time utterly unknown in Scotland. It was not until the establishment of the Reformation that Hebrew began to be studied; and John Row was the first who taught it, having opened a class for this purpose in the year 1560, immediately upon his settlement as minister in Perth.† From that time the knowledge of Greek and the Eastern languages advanced among our countrymen with a rapid pace.‡

Knox acquired the Greek language before he had reached middle age; but we find him acknowledging, as late as the year 1550, that he was ignorant of Hebrew, a defect in his education which he exceedingly lamented, and which he afterwards got supplied during his exile on the Continent.§

John Mair, better known by his Latin name, MAJOR, was professor of philosophy and theology at Glasgow when Knox attended the university. The minds of young men, and their future train of thinking, often receive an important direction from the master under whom they are

* Life of John Erskine of Dun, p. 2, apud Wodrow MSS. in Glas. Coll. Lib. The industrious collector had access to some of Erskine's papers, when employed in compiling his life.

† Row's *Historie of the Kirk of Scotland*, MS. p. 372 373.

‡ See Note C.

§ "In the Hebrew tounge (says he, in his defence before the Bishop of Durham) I confess myself ignorant, but have, as God knoweth, fervent thirst to have sum entrance thairin." MS. Letters, p. 16

first trained to study, especially if his reputation be high. Major was at that time deemed an oracle in the sciences which he taught; and as he was the preceptor of Knox and the celebrated scholar Buchanan, it may be proper to advert to some of his opinions. He had received the greater part of his education in France, and acted for some time as a professor in the university of Paris. In that situation, he had acquired a more liberal habit of thinking and expressing himself on certain subjects, than had yet been adopted in his native country, and other parts of Europe. He had imbibed the sentiments concerning ecclesiastical polity, maintained by John Gerson, Peter D'Ailly, and others who defended the decrees of the Council of Constance, and the liberties of the Gallican Church, against the assertors of the incontrollable authority of the Sovereign Pontiff. He taught that a General Council was superior to the Pope, and might judge, rebuke, restrain, and even depose him from his dignity; he denied the temporal supremacy of the Bishop of Rome, and his right to inaugurate or dethrone princes; he maintained that ecclesiastical censures and even papal excommunications had no force, if pronounced on invalid or irrelevant grounds; he held that tithes were not of divine right, but merely of human appointment; he censured the avarice, ambition, and secular pomp of the Court of Rome and the Episcopal order; he was no warm friend of the regular clergy; and advised the reduction of monasteries and holidays.*

His opinions respecting civil government, were analogous to those which he held as to ecclesiastical polity. He taught that the authority of kings and princes was originally derived from the people; that the former are not superior to the latter, collectively considered; that if rulers become tyrannical, or employ their power for the destruction of their subjects, they may lawfully be controlled by them,

* These sentiments are collected from his *Commentary on the Third Book of the Master of Sentences*, and from his *Exposition of Matthew's Gospel*; printed in Latin at Paris, the former anno 1517, and the latter anno 1518. Dempster, Dupin, and other writers, mention that Major, after being made Doctor of Divinity, in 1505, removed to Paris, owing to the confusions of his native country. On

his return from France, he went to Glasgow, and for several years held the situation of Principal and Professor of Divinity in the University of that city. In 1523, as already mentioned, he was incorporated into the University of St. Andrew's; and it is probable that at this time he taught in St. Mary's College. It was not until 1533 that he became Provost or Principal of St. Salvador's.

and, proving incorrigible, may be deposed by the community as the superior power ; and that tyrants may be judicially proceeded against, even to capital punishment.

The affinity between these and the political principles afterwards avowed by Knox, and defended by the classic pen of Buchanan, is too striking to require illustration. Though Major was not the first Scottish writer who had expressed some of these sentiments, it is highly probable that the oral instructions and writings of their master first suggested to them those principles which they adopted, and which were confirmed by subsequent reading and reflection ; so that the opinions of this celebrated professor contributed in some measure to bring about those important changes, which were afterwards effected by his no less distinguished pupils. Nor would his sentiments regarding Church polity, with respect to religious and ecclesiastical subjects, fail to have their due share of influence upon the train of their thoughts.

But though, in these respects, the opinions of the Major were more free and rational than those generally entertained at that time ; it must be confessed, that the portion of instruction which his scholars could derive from him was extremely small, if we allow his publications to be a fair specimen of his academical prelections. Many of the questions which he discusses are utterly useless and trifling ; the rest are rendered disgusting by the most servile adherence to all the minutiae of the scholastic mode of reasoning. The reader of his works must be content with painfully picking a grain of truth from the rubbish of many pages ; nor will the drudgery be compensated by those discoveries of inventive genius and acute discrimination, for which the writings of Aquinas, and some others of that subtle school, may still deserve to be consulted. Major is entitled to praise, for exposing to his countrymen several of the more glaring errors and abuses of his time ; but his mind was deeply tinctured with superstition, and he defended some of the absurdest tenets of Popery by the most ridiculous and puerile arguments.* His talents were moderate ; with

* Lord Hailes, having given an example of this, adds, " After this, can Buchanan be censured for saying that he was " solo cognomine Major ?" Provincial Councils of the Scottish

the writings of the ancients, he appears to have been acquainted only through the medium of the collectors of the middle ages ; nor does he ever hazard an opinion, or pursue a speculation, beyond what he found marked out by some approved doctor of the church. Add to this, that his style is, to an uncommon degree, harsh and forbidding ; “ exile, aridum, conscissum, ac minutum.”

Knox and Buchanan soon became disgusted with such studies, and began to seek entertainment more gratifying to their ardent and inquisitive minds. Having set out in search of knowledge, they released themselves from the trammels, and overleaped the boundaries, prescribed to them by their timid conductor. Each following the native bent of his genius and inclination, they separated in the prosecution of their studies. Buchanan, indulging in a more excursive range, explored the extensive fields of literature, and wandered in the flowery mead of poesy ; while Knox, passing through the avenues of secular learning, devoted himself to the study of divine truth, and the labours of the sacred ministry. Both, however, kept uniformly in view the advancement of true religion and liberty, with the love of which they were equally smitten ; and as they suffered a long and painful exile, and were exposed to many dangers during their lives, for adherence to this kindred cause, so their memories have not been divided in the profuse but honourable obloquy with which they have been aspersed by its enemies, or in the deserved and grateful recollections of its genuine friends.*

But we must not suppose, that Knox was able at once to divest himself of the prejudices of his education, and of the times. Barren and repulsive as the scholastic studies

Clergy, page 11. By the way, it was Major who first said this of himself. It was the sight of these words, “ Joannes, solo cognomine, Major,” in the dedicatory epistle to his writings, that drew from Buchanan the satirical lines, which have been so often appealed to by his enemies, as infallible proof of the badness of his heart. If fault there was in this, we may certainly make the apology which his learned editor produces for him in another case, “ non tam hominis vitium, quam poetæ.” Poets and wits cannot always spare their best friends.

* Buchanan always mentions Knox in terms of high respect, Oper. a Ruddiman, p. 313, 321, 366. And the Reformer, in his Historie, has borne testimony to the virtues as well as splendid talents of Buchanan: “ That notable man, Mr. George Bucquhanane — remanis alyve to this day, in the yeir of God, 1566 years, to the glory of God, to the gret honour of this natioun, and to the comfort of thame that delyte in letters and vertew. That singulare wark of David’s Psalmes, in Latin meetere and poesie, besyd mony uther, can witness the rare graices of God gevin to that man.” Hist. p. 24.

appear to our ideas, there was something in the intricate and subtle sophistry then in vogue, calculated to fascinate the youthful and ingenious mind. It had a shew of wisdom; it exercised, although it did not satisfy the understanding; it even gave play to the imagination, while it exceedingly flattered the pride of the adept. Nor was it easy for the person who had suffered himself to be drawn in, to break through, or extricate himself from the mazy labyrinth. Accordingly, Knox continued for some time captivated with these studies, and prosecuted them with great success. After he was created Master of Arts, he taught philosophy, most probably as an assistant, or regent of one of the classes in the University.* His class became celebrated; and he was considered as equalling, if not excelling, his master, in the subtleties of the dialectic art.† About the same time, without any interest, except what his own merits procured him, he was advanced to clerical orders, and ordained a priest, before he reached the age fixed by the canons of the church.‡ This must have taken place previous to the year 1530, at which time he was twenty-five years old—the canonical age for receiving ordination in the Church of Rome.

* It was not unusual in the universities, at that period, to select some of the students who had been laureated, and made the greatest proficiency, and to employ them as assistants to the professors. Boetii Vitæ Episcop. Aberd. fol. xxix. xxx. D. Buchanan's Life of Knox. M'Kenzie's Lives, iii. p. 111. It is doubtful, however, whether Knox was made Master of Arts, though the common opinion is followed in the text.

† "In hac igitur Anthroptologia egregie versatus Cnoxus, eandem et magna autoritate docuit: visusque fuit magistro suo (si qua in subtilitate felicitas,) in quibusdam felicior." Verheiden Effigies et Elogia Præstant. Theolog. p. 92. Hagæcomit. anno 1602. Beza Icones Ee. iij. Melch. Adami Vitæ Theolog. Exter. p. 137. Francofurti, anno 1618.

‡ Some have hesitated to admit that Knox was in priest's orders in the Church of Rome: I think it unquestionable. The fact is attested both by Protestant and Popish writers. Beza says, "Cnoxus, igitur (ut manifeste appareat totum hoc admirabile Domini opus esse,) ad Joannis illius Majoris, celeberrimi inter Sophistas nominis, veluti pedes in Sanct-andræ oppido educatus, atque adeo SACERDOS FACTUS, appertaque celebri schola, quum jam videretur illo suo præceptore nihil inferior Sophista futurus, lucem tamen in te-

nebris et sibi et aliis accendit, "Icones Illustr. Viror. Ee. iij, Comp. Spotswood's History, p. 265. Lond. 1677. Ninian Winzet, in certain letters sent by him to Knox in the year 1561, says, "Ye renunce and estemis that ordinationun null or erar wikit, be the quhilk sumtyme ye war callit Schir Johne." And again: "We can persave, be your awin allegiance, na power that ever ye had, except it quhilk was gevin to you in the sacrament of ordinationun, be auctoritie of priesthed. Quhilk auctoritie give ye esteme as nochtis, be reasoun it was gevin to you (as ye speik) by ane Papist Bischope," &c. Winzet's Letteris and Tractatis, apud Keith, Append. p. 212, 213. Winzet's drift was to prove that Knox had no lawful call to the ministry; consequently, he would never have mentioned his Popish ordination, if the fact had not been notorious and undeniable. Nicol Burne, arguing on the same point, urges that, though he had received the power of orders, he wanted that of jurisdiction. Disputation concerning the Contraversit Headdis of Religion, p. 128. Paris 1581. And in a scurrilous poem against the ministers of Scotland, printed at the end of that book, he calls him,

———— that fals apostat *priest*,
Enemie to Christ, and mannis salvatioun,
Your Maister Knox.

It was not long, however, till his studies received a new direction, which led to a complete revolution in his religious sentiments, and had an important influence on the whole of his future life. Not satisfied with the excerpts from ancient authors, which he found in the writings of the scholastic divines and canonists, he resolved to have recourse to the original works. In them he found a method of investigating and communicating truth, to which he had hitherto been a stranger; the simplicity of which recommended itself to his mind, in spite of the prejudices of education, and the pride of superior attainments in his own favourite art. Among the fathers of the Christian Church, Jerom and Augustine attracted his particular attention. By the writings of the former, he was led to the scriptures as the only pure fountain of divine truth, and instructed in the utility of studying them in the original languages. In the works of the latter, he found religious sentiments very opposite to those taught in the Romish Church, who, while she retained his name as a saint in her calendar, had banished his doctrine, as heretical, from her pulpits. From this time he renounced the study of scholastic theology; and although not yet completely emancipated from superstition, his mind was fitted for improving the means which Providence had prepared, for leading him to a fuller and more comprehensive view of the system of evangelical religion. It was about the year 1535, when this favourable change of his sentiments commenced; but it does not appear that he professed himself a Protestant until 1542.*

As I am now to enter upon that period of Knox's life in which he renounced the Roman Catholic communion, and commenced Reformer, it may not be improper to take a survey of the state of the church and of religion at that time in Scotland. Without an adequate knowledge of this, it is impossible to form a just estimate of the necessity and importance of that Reformation, in the advancement of which he laboured with so great zeal; and nothing has

* *Bezae Icones. Verheid. Effigies. Melch. ut sup. A. Spotswood Hist. p. 265. Ed. 1677.*

contributed so much to give currency, among Protestants, to prejudices against his character and actions, as ignorance and a superficial consideration of the enormous and almost incredible abuses which then reigned in the church. This must be my apology, for what otherwise might be deemed a superfluous and disproportionate digression.

THE corruptions by which the Christian religion was universally debased, before the Reformation, had grown to a greater height in Scotland than in any other nation within the pale of the Western Church. Superstition and religious imposture, in their grossest forms, gained an easy admission among a rude and ignorant people. By means of these, the clergy attained to an exorbitant degree of opulence and power, which were accompanied, as they always have been, with the corruption of their order, and of the whole system of religion.

The full half of the wealth of the nation belonged to the clergy, and the greater part of this was in the hands of a few of their number, who had the command of the whole body. Avarice, ambition, and the love of secular pomp, reigned among the superior orders. Bishops and abbots rivalled the first nobility in magnificence, and preceded them in honours: they were Privy-Councillors and Lords of Session, as well as of Parliament, and had long engrossed the principal offices of state. A vacant bishopric or abbacy called forth powerful competitors, who contended for it as for a principality or a petty kingdom; it was obtained by similar arts, and not unfrequently taken possession of by the same weapons.* Inferior benefices were openly put to sale, or bestowed on the illiterate and unworthy minions of courtiers; on dice-players, strolling bards, and the bastards of bishops.† Pluralities were multiplied without bounds; and benefices, given *in commendam*, were kept

* During the minority of James V. the celebrated Gawin Douglas was recommended by the Queen to the Archbishopric of St. Andrew's; but John Hepburn, prior of the regular canons, opposed the nomination, and took the Archiepiscopal palace by storm. Douglas afterwards laid siege to the cathedral of Dunkeld, and carried it, more by the thunder of

his cannon, than the dread of the excommunication which he threatened to fulminate against his antagonist. Buch. Hist. xiii. 44. Spots. 61. Life of Gawin Douglas, prefixed to his translation of the *Æneid*.

† Sir David Lindsay's Works, by Chalmers, I. 344. II. 237, 238. Winzet and Kennedy, apud Keith, App. 488, 504.

vacant during the life of the commendatory, sometimes during several lives,* to the deprivation of extensive parishes of all provision of religious service; if a deprivation it could be called, at a time when the cure of souls was no longer regarded as attached to livings, originally endowed for that purpose. There was not such a thing known as for a bishop to preach; indeed I scarcely recollect a single instance of it mentioned in history, from the erection of the regular Scottish episcopate down to the period of the Reformation.† The practice had even gone into desuetude among all the secular clergy, and was wholly devolved on the mendicant monks, who employed it for the most mercenary purposes.‡

The lives of the clergy, exempted from secular jurisdiction, and corrupted by wealth and idleness, were become a scandal to religion, and an outrage on decency. While they professed chastity, and prohibited, under the severest penalties, any of the ecclesiastical order from contracting lawful wedlock, the bishops set the example of the most shameless profligacy before the inferior clergy; avowedly kept their harlots; provided their natural sons with benefices; and gave their daughters in marriage to the sons of the nobility and principal gentry, many of whom were so mean as to contaminate the blood of their families by such base alliances, for the sake of the rich doweries which they brought.§

* The Popes were accustomed to grant liberty to the commendatories to dispose of benefices which they held by this tenure, to others who should succeed to them after their death. Introduction to Scot's Biography, apud Wodrow MSS. vol. 9. p. 171; in Bibl. Coll. Glas.—Solate as anno 1534, Clement VII. granted, in commendam, to his nephew Hypolitus Cardinal de Medici, "all the benefices in the world," secular and regular, dignities and parsonages, simple and with cure, being vacant, for six months; with power to dispose of all their fruits, and convert them to his own use. Father Paul's History of the Council of Trent, lib. i. p. 251. Lond. anno 1620.

† One exception occurs, and must not be omitted. When George Wishart was preaching in Ayr, Dunbar, Archbishop of Glasgow, took possession of the pulpit, in order to exclude the Reformer. Some of Wishart's more zealous hearers would have dispossessed the bishop but the Reformer would not suffer

them. "The bishope preichit to his jackmen, and to sum auld boisses of the toun. The soun of all his sermone was, They sey, we sould preiche: Quhy not? Better lait thryve nor nevir thryve. Had us still for your bishope, and we sall provyde better the nixt tyme." Knox, Historie, p. 44.

‡ War not the preiching of the begging freiris, Tint war the faith amang the seculeiris.

Lindsay, ut supra, i. 343. comp. ii. 101.

§ Lord Hailes' Notes on Ancient Scottish Poems, p. 249, 250, 297, 309. We need not to appeal to the testimony of the Reformers, or to satirical poems published at the time, in proof of the extreme profligacy of the Popish clergy. The truth is registered in the Acts of Parliament, in the decrees of their own councils, (Wilkin. Concil. tom. 4. p. 46—60. Keith's Hist. pref. 11.) in the records of legitimation. (Lord Hailes, ut supra, p. 249, 250.) and in the confessions of their own writers, (Kennedy

Through the blind devotion and munificence of princes and nobles, monasteries, those nurseries of superstition and idleness, had greatly multiplied in the nation ; and though they had universally degenerated, and were notoriously become the haunts of lewdness and debauchery, it was deemed impious and sacrilegious to reduce their number, abridge their privileges, or alienate their funds.* The kingdom swarmed with ignorant, idle, luxurious monks, who, like locusts, devoured the fruits of the earth, and filled the air with pestilential infection ; friars, white, black, and grey ; canons, regular and of St. Anthony ; Carmelites, Carthusians, Cordeliers, Dominicans, Franciscan Conventuals and Observantines, Jacobins, Premonstratensians ; monks of Tyrone and of Vallis Caulium ; Hospitallers, or Holy Knights of St. John of Jerusalem ; nuns of St. Austin, St. Clare, St. Scholastica, and St. Catherine of Sienna, with canonesses of various clans.†

The ignorance of the clergy respecting religion, was as gross as the dissoluteness of their morals. Even bishops were not ashamed to confess that they were unacquainted with the canon of their faith, and had never read any part of the sacred Scriptures, except what they met with in their missals.‡ Under such pastors the people perished for lack of knowledge. That book which was able to make them

and Winget, apud Keith, Append. 202, 205-7. Lesley, *Histor.* p. 232. Father Alexander Baillie's *True Information of the Unhallowed Offspring, &c. of our Scottish-Calvinian Gospel*, p. 15, 16. Wirtzburg, anno 1628.

* In consequence of a very powerful confederacy against the religious knights, called Templars, and upon charges of the most flagitious crimes, that order was suppressed by a General Council, anno 1312 ; but their possessions were conferred upon another order of sacred knights. The plenitude of Papal power was stretched to the very utmost in this dread attempt. " *Quanquam* (says his Holiness in the Bull,) *de jure non possumus, tamen ad plenitudinem potestatis dictum ordinem reprobamus.*" Walsingham, *Histor. Angl.* p. 99. When the Gilbertine monks retired from Scotland, because the air of the country did not agree with them, their revenues were, upon their resignation, transferred to the monastery of Paisley Keith's *Scot. Bish.* p. 266.

† See Note D.

‡ Fox, p. 1153, printed anno 1596. Chalmers's *Lindsay*, ii. 62, 63, 64. Lord Hailes, *Provincial Councils of the Scottish Clergy*, p.

30. Sir Ralph Sadler's testimony to the clergy as the only men of learning about the court of James V. may seem to contradict what I have asserted. But Sadler speaks merely of their talents for political management, and in the same letters gives a proof of their ignorance in other respects. The clergy at that time made law their principal study, and endeavoured to qualify themselves for offices of state. This, however, engaged their whole attention, and they were grossly ignorant in their own profession. Sadler's *State Papers*, i. 47, 48. Edin. 1809. Knox, *Historie*, p. 18.

Andrew Forman, bishop of Murray, and Papal legate for Scotland, being obliged to say grace at an entertainment which he gave to the Pope and Cardinals in Rome, blundered so in his Latin, that his Holiness and their Eminences lost their gravity, which so disconcerted the bishop, that he concluded the blessing, by giving " *All the false carills to the devil, in nomine patris, filii, et sancti spiritus ;*" to which the company, not understanding his Scoto-Latin, said Amen. " The holy bishop (says Pitscottie) was not a good scholar, and had not good Latin." *History*, p. 106.

wise unto salvation, and intended to be equally accessible to “Jew and Greek, Barbarian and Scythian, bond and free,” was locked up from them, and the use of it, in their own tongue, prohibited under the heaviest penalties. The religious service was mumbled over in a dead language, which many of the priests did not understand, and some of them could scarcely read; and the greatest care was taken to prevent even catechisms composed and approved by the clergy, from coming into the hands of the laity.*

Scotland, from her local situation, had been less exposed to disturbance from the encroaching ambition, vexatious exactions, and fulminating anathemas of the Vatican court, than the countries in the immediate vicinity of Rome. But, from the same cause, it was more easy for the domestic clergy to keep up on the minds of the people that excessive veneration for the Holy See, which could not be long felt by those who had the opportunity of witnessing its vices and worldly politics.† The burdens which attended a state of dependence upon a remote foreign jurisdiction, were severely felt. Though the Popes did not enjoy the power of presenting to the Scottish prelacies, they wanted not numerous pretexts for interfering with them. The most important causes of a civil nature, which the ecclesiastical courts had contrived to bring within their jurisdiction, were frequently carried to Rome. Large sums of money were annually exported out of the kingdom, for the confirmation of benefices, the conducting of appeals, and for many other purposes; in exchange for which were received leaden bulls, woollen palls, wooden images, plenty of old bones, with similar articles of precious consecrated mummary.‡

* Lord Hailes' Provincial Councils of the Scottish Clergy, p. 36. Wilkins, Con. t. iv. 72.

† Luther often mentioned to his familiar acquaintances the advantage which he derived from a visit to Rome in 1510; and used to say that he would not exchange that journey for 1000 florins; so much did it contribute to open his eyes to the corruptions of the Romish court, and to weaken his prejudices. Melchior. Adami Vitæ Germ Theol. p. 104. Erasmus had a sensation of the same kind, although weaker. John Rough, one of the Scottish Reformers, felt in a similar way, after visiting Rome. Fox, 1841.

‡ Notwithstanding laws repeatedly made

to restrain persons from going to Rome, to obtain benefices, the practice was greatly on the increase about the time of the Reformation.

It is schort tyme sen ony benefice
Was sped in Rome, except great bishoprics;
But now, for ane unworthie vickarage,
A priest will rin to Rome in pilgrimage.
Ane carill quhilk was never at the scule
Well rin to Rome, and keep ane bischop's
mule:

And syne cum hame with mony colorit crack,
With ane burdin of benefices on his back.

Chalmers's Lindsay, ii. 80.

Of the doctrine of Christianity, scarcely any thing remained but the name. Instead of being directed to offer up their adorations to one God, the people were taught to divide them among an innumerable company of inferior deities. A plurality of mediators shared the honour of procuring the divine favour with the "One Mediator between God and man;" and more petitions were presented to the Virgin Mary and other saints, than to "Him whom the Father heareth always." The sacrifice of the Mass was represented as procuring forgiveness of sins to the living and the dead, to the infinite disparagement of the sacrifice by which Jesus Christ expiated sin, and procured everlasting redemption; and the consciences of men were withdrawn from faith in the merits of their Saviour, to a delusive reliance upon priestly absolutions, Papal pardons, and voluntary penances. Instead of being instructed to demonstrate the sincerity of their faith and repentance, by forsaking their sins, and to testify their love to God and man, by observing the ordinances of worship authorised by Scripture, and practising the duties of morality, they were taught, that if they regularly said their *Aves* and *Credos*, confessed themselves to a priest, purchased a mass, went in pilgrimage to the shrine of some celebrated saint, or performed some prescribed act of bodily mortification,—if they refrained from flesh on Fridays, and punctually paid their tithes and church-offerings, their salvation was infallibly secured in due time; while those who were so rich or so pious as to build a chapel or an altar, and to endow it for the support of a priest, to perform masses, obits, and dirges, procured a relaxation of the pains of purgatory for themselves or their relations, according to the extent of their performances. It is difficult for us to conceive how empty, ridiculous, and wretched those harangues were, which the monks delivered for sermons. Legendary tales concerning the founder of some religious order, his wonderful sanctity, the miracles which he performed, his combats with the devil, his watchings, fastings, flagellations; the virtues of holy water, chrism, crossing, and exorcism; the horrors of purgatory, with the numbers released from it by the intercession of some powerful saint; these, with low jests, table-

talk, and fireside scandal, formed the favourite topics of these preachers, and were served up to the people instead of the pure, salutary, and sublime doctrines of the Bible.*

The beds of the dying were besieged, and their last moments disturbed by avaricious priests, who laboured to extort bequests to themselves or to the church. Not satisfied with the exacting of tithes from the living, a demand was made upon the dead: no sooner had a poor husbandman breathed his last, than the rapacious vicar came and carried off his corpse-present,† which he repeated as often as death visited the family. Ecclesiastical censures were fulminated against those who were reluctant in making these payments, or who shewed themselves disobedient to the clergy; and for a little money, they were prostituted on the most trifling occasions.‡ Divine service was neglected, and the churches almost deserted; so that, except on festival days, the places of worship, in many parts of the country, served only as sanctuaries for malefactors, places of traffic, or resorts for pastime.§

Persecution, and the suppression of free inquiry, were the only weapons by which its interested supporters were able to defend this system of corruption and imposture. Every avenue by which truth might enter was carefully guarded. Learning was branded as the parent of heresy. The most frightful pictures were drawn of those who had separated from the Romish church, and held up before the eyes of the people, to deter them from imitating their example. If any person had attained a degree of illumination amidst the general darkness, and began to hint dissatisfaction with the conduct of the clergy, or to propose the correction of abuses, he was immediately stigmatized as a heretic, and if he did not secure his safety by flight, was immured in a dungeon, or committed to the flames; and when at last, in spite of all their precautions, the light which was shining around did break in and spread through the nation, they

* Knox, 14-16. Spotswood, 64, 69. Ruth. App. 205. Dalyell's *Cursory Remarks*, prefixed to *Scottish Poems of the Sixteenth Century*, I. 16-18. Chalmers's *Lindsay*, I. 211.

† See Note E.

‡ Knox, *Historie*, p. 14.

§ Dalyell's *Cursory Remarks*, ut supra, i. 28.

prepared to adopt the most desperate and bloody measures for its suppression.

From this imperfect sketch of the state of religion in this country, we may see how false the representation is which some person would impose on us ; as if Popery were a system, erroneous indeed, but purely speculative ; superstitious, but harmless ; provided it had not been occasionally accompanied with intolerance and cruelty. The very reverse is the truth. It may be safely said, that there is not one of its erroneous tenets, or of its superstitious practices, which was not either originally contrived, or artfully accommodated, to advance and support some practical abuse ; to aggrandize the ecclesiastical order, secure to them immunity from civil jurisdiction, sanctify their encroachments upon secular authorities, vindicate their usurpations upon the consciences of men, cherish implicit obedience to the decisions of the church, and extinguish free inquiry and liberal science.

It was a system not more repugnant to the religion of the Bible, than incompatible with the legitimate rights of princes, the independence, liberty, and prosperity of kingdoms ; a system not more destructive to the souls of men, than to social and domestic happiness, and the principles of sound morality. Considerations from every quarter combined in calling aloud for a radical and complete reform. The exertions of all descriptions of persons, of the man of letters, the patriot, the prince, as well as the Christian, each acting in his own sphere for his own interests, with a joint concurrence of all, as in a common cause, were urgently required for the extirpation of abuses, of which all had reason to complain, and effectuating a revolution, in the advantages of which all would participate. There was, however, no reasonable prospect of accomplishing this, without exposing, in the first place, the falsehood of those notions which have been called speculative. It was principally by means of these that superstition had established its empire over the minds of men ; behind them the Romish ecclesiastics had intrenched themselves, and defended their usurped prerogatives and possessions ; and

had any prince or legislature endeavoured to deprive them of these, while the body of the people remained unenlightened, they would soon have found reason to repent the hazardous attempt. To the revival of the primitive doctrines and institutions of Christianity, by the preaching and writings of the Reformers, and to those controversies by which the Popish errors were confuted from Scripture, (for which many modern philosophers seem to have so thorough a contempt,) we are chiefly indebted for the overthrow of superstition, ignorance, and despotism; and for the blessings, political and religious, which we enjoy, all of which may be traced to the Reformation from Popery.

How grateful should we be to divine Providence for this happy revolution! For, those persons do but “sport with their own imaginations,” who flatter themselves that it must have taken place in the ordinary course of human affairs, and overlook the many convincing proofs of the superintending direction of superior wisdom, in the whole combination of circumstances which contributed to bring about the Reformation in this country, as well as throughout Europe. How much are we indebted to those men, who, under God, were the instruments in effecting it; who cheerfully jeopardized their lives to achieve a design which involved the felicity of millions unborn; who boldly attacked the system of error and corruption, fortified by popular credulity, by custom, and laws fenced with the most dreadful penalties; and having forced the stronghold of superstition, and penetrated the recesses of its temple, tore aside the veil which concealed that monstrous idol which the whole world had so long worshipped, and dissolving the magic spell by which the human mind was bound, restored it to liberty! How criminal must those be, who, sitting at ease under the vines and figtrees, planted by the unwearied labours, and watered by the blood of these patriots, discover their disesteem of the invaluable privileges which they inherit, or their ignorance of the expense at which they were purchased, by the most unworthy treatment of those to whom they owe them; mis-

represent their actions, calumniate their motives, and cruelly lacerate their memories !*

The reformed doctrine had made considerable progress in Scotland before it was embraced by Knox. Patrick Hamilton, a youth of royal descent,† obtained the honour, not conferred upon many of his rank, of first announcing its glad tidings to his countrymen, and sealing them with his blood. He was born in the year 1504, and being destined for the church, had the abbacy of Ferne conferred upon him in his childhood. But as early as the year 1526, previous to the breach of Henry VIII. with the Romish See, a gleam of light was, by some unknown means,‡ imparted to the mind of that noble youth, amidst the darkness which brooded around him. The freedom with which he censured the corruptions of the church, and disparaged the philosophy then taught in the schools, having rendered him an object of suspicion to the clergy, he resolved to leave Scotland. Attracted by the fame of Luther, he repaired with three attendants to Wittemberg; and, after remaining a short time with that German Reformer, he was recommended to prosecute the study of the Scriptures in the university of Marpurg, under the direction of Francis Lambert of Avignon, a learned and pious divine, who, having sacrificed a lucrative situation at home, from love

* Patriots have toil'd, and in their country's
cause

Bled nobly; and their deeds, as they deserve,
Receive proud recompence. - - -

But fairer wreaths are due, tho' never paid,
To those who, posted at the shrine of truth,
Have fallen in her defence. - - -

- - - - - Their blood is shed,
In confirmation of the noblest claim,
Our claim to feed upon immortal truth,
To walk with God, to be divinely free,
To soar, and to anticipate the skies.
Yet few remember them. - - - -

- - - - - With their names
No bard embalms and sanctifies his song:
And history, so warm on meaner themes,
Is cold on this. She execrates indeed
The tyranny that doom'd them to the fire,
But gives the glorious sufferers little praise.

Cowper, Task, Book V.

In the margin, Cowper names Hume as chargeable with the injustice which he so feelingly upbraids. While it is painful to think that other historians, since Hume, have ex-

posed themselves to the same censure, it is pleasing to reflect, that Cowper is not the only poet who has "sanctified," and, I trust, "embalmed his song" with the praises of these patriots.

† His father, Sir Patrick Hamilton of Kincaivil, was a son of Lord Hamilton, who married a sister of King James III. His mother was a daughter of John, Duke of Albany, brother to the same monarch. There are some interesting particulars respecting his trial, in Pitscottie's History; but that author is mistaken as to the year of his martyrdom, p. 133-135. Pinkerton, History of Scotland, ii. 45, 46, 289.

‡ There was an act of Parliament, as early as 17th July, 1525, prohibiting ships from bringing any books of Luther into Scotland, which had always "bene clene of all sic filth and vice." Robertson's Records of Parliament, p. 552. This renders it highly probable, that such books had already been introduced into this country.

to the reformed religion, had been placed by Philip, Landgrave of Hesse, at the head of that newly-erected Protestant seminary. Lambert, as well as Luther and Melancthon, were highly pleased with the zeal of the young Scotsman; but while inhaling the lessons of truth in that retreat, he was seized with such an irresistible desire to communicate to his countrymen the knowledge which he had received, that he left Marpurg, contrary to the remonstrances of his acquaintances, especially of his affectionate master, who in vain represented to him the danger to which he would be exposed, and returned to Scotland, accompanied only by a single attendant.* His freedom in exposing the reigning corruptions, soon drew upon him the jealousy of the Popish clergy, who decoyed him to St. Andrew's, under pretence of wishing a conference with him. By order of Archbishop Beatoun, he was thrown into prison, condemned as holding heretical opinions, and burnt at the stake on the last day of February, 1528, in the 24th year of his age. The murder of Hamilton was afterwards avenged in the blood of the nephew and successor of his persecutor; and the flames in which he expired were, "in the course of one generation, to enlighten all Scotland, and to consume, with avenging fury, the Catholic superstition, the Papal power, and the Prelacy itself."†

The cruel death of a person of rank, and the sufferings which he bore with the most undaunted fortitude and Christian patience, excited a general inquiry into his opinions among the learned, as well as the vulgar, in St. Andrew's. Under the connivance of John Winram,‡ the Subprior, they secretly spread among the noviciates of the abbey. Gawin Logie, Principal of St. Leonard's College, was so successful in instilling them into the minds of his students, that it became proverbial to say of any one suspected of Lutheranism, that "he had drunk of St. Leonard's well."§ The clergy, alarmed at the progress of the new opinions, which were not confined to St. Andrew's,

* F. Lamberti Aveniensis, Comment. in Apocalyp. Præf. Ox. 1528.

† Pinkerton. Fox, 888. Pitscottie, Hist. of Scot.

‡ In 1546, Winram having spoken to the

bishops in favour of George Wishart, Cardinal Beatoun upbraided him, saying, "Well, Sir, and you, we know what a man you are, seven years ago." Pitscottie, 189.

§ Cald. MS. i. 69.

adopted the most rigorous measures for their extirpation. Strict inquisition was made after heretics; the flames of persecution were kindled in all quarters of the country; and from 1530 to 1540, many innocent and excellent men suffered the most cruel death.* Several purchased their lives by recantation. Numbers made their escape to England and the Continent; among whom were the following learned men, Gawin Logie, Alexander Seatoun, Alexander Aless, John M'Bee, John Fife, John Macdowal, John Mackbray, George Buchanan, James Harrison, and Robert Richardson.† Few of these exiles returned to their native land, and many of them found, in the universities of Denmark, Germany, France, and even Portugal, employment for those talents which their bigotted countrymen were incapable of appreciating.

These violent proceedings could not arrest the progress of truth, which was accelerated by various causes, the most important of which unquestionably was the circulation of the Scriptures in the vernacular language. By means of merchants, especially those who carried on trade from Dundee, Leith, and Montrose, with England and the Continent, Tindall's Translations of the Scriptures, and many Protestant books, were imported, and circulated through the nation.‡ Poetry lent her aid to the opposers of ignorance and superstition, and contributed greatly to the advancement of the Reformation, in this, as well as in other countries.§ Sir David Lindsay of the Mount, a favourite of James V. and an excellent poet, lashed the vices of the clergy, and exposed to ridicule many of the absurdities and superstitions of Popery, in the most popular and poignant satires. His satirical play, which, though professing to correct the abuses of all estates, was principally levelled against those of the church, was repeatedly acted before the royal family, the court, and vast assemblies of people, to the great mortification, and still greater damage of the clergy; and copies of it were in the hands of ploughmen, artisans, and children. The royal poet was followed by

* See Note F.

† See Note G.

‡ Wodrow, MSS. Bibl. Coll. Glas. vol. 1, 2.
Cald. MS. i. 85. Knox, Hist. 22.§ Row, Historie, MS. p. 3, 4. Cald. MS.
i. 108.

others who wrote in the same strain, but more avowedly asserting the Protestant doctrines. The bishops repeatedly procured the enactment of laws against the circulation of seditious rhymes and blasphemous ballads; but metrical epistles, moralities, and psalms, in the Scottish language, were every where disseminated and read with avidity, notwithstanding prohibitory statutes and legal prosecutions.*

In the year 1540, the reformed doctrine could number among its converts, besides a multitude of the common people, many persons of rank and external respectability: of these were William, Earl of Glencairn; his son Alexander, Lord Kilmaurs; William, Earl of Errol; William, Lord Ruthven; his daughter Liliass, married to the Master of Drummond; John Stewart, son of Lord Methven; Sir James Sandilands, Sir David Lindsay, Erskine of Dun, Melville of Raith, Balnaves of Halhill, Straiton of Laurieston, with William Johnston, and Robert Alexander, advocates.† These names deserve more consideration from the early period at which they were enrolled as friends of the reformed religion. It has often been alleged, that the desire of sharing in the rich spoils of the Popish church, together with the intrigues of the Court of England, engaged the Scottish nobles on the side of the Reformation. And there is reason to think, that, at a later period, this was, to a certain extent, true. But at the time of which we now speak, the prospect of overturning the established church was too distant and uncertain to induce persons, merely from avarice or cupidity, to take a step by which they exposed their lives and fortunes to the most imminent hazard; nor had the English monarch then extended his influence in Scotland, by the arts which he afterwards employed.

From the year 1540 to the end of 1542, the numbers of the reformed rapidly increased. Twice did the clergy attempt to cut them off by one desperate blow. They presented to the king a list, containing the names of some hundreds, possessed of property and wealth, whom they denounced as heretics; and endeavoured to procure his

* See Note H.

† Cald. MS. i. p. 103, 119. Sadler, i. 47. Knox, 21, 24.

consent to their condemnation, by flattering him with the immense riches which would accrue to him from the forfeiture of their estates. The first time the proposal was made, James rejected it, with strong marks of displeasure; but so violent was the antipathy which he at last conceived against his nobility, and so much had he fallen under the influence of the clergy, that it is highly probable he would have yielded to their solicitations, had not the disastrous issue of the expedition which he had undertaken against the English at Solway Moss, put an end to his unhappy life, on the 14th of December, 1542.*

PERIOD SECOND.

FROM HIS EMBRACING THE REFORMED RELIGION IN THE YEAR 1542, TO HIS RELEASE FROM THE FRENCH GALLEYS IN 1549.

WHILE this fermentation of opinion was spreading through the nation, Knox, from the state in which his mind was, could not remain long unaffected. The reformed doctrines had been imbibed by several of his acquaintances, and they were the topic of common conversation and dispute among the learned and inquisitive at the university.† His change

* Sadler's State Papers, i. 94. Knox, 27, 28. Pitscottie, p. 164. Knox says that the roll contained "mo than ane hundreth landit men, besides utheris of meener degre, amongis quhome was the Lord Hamiltoun, then second persoun of the realme." Sadler says, eighteen score noblemen and gentlemen, all well minded to God's word, which then they durst not avow;" among whom were the Earl of Arran, the Earl of Cassils, and the Earl Marishal. Pitscottie says, "seventeen score;" but he includes, in his account, not only "Earls, Lords, Barons, Gentlemen," but also "honest burgesses and craftsmen."

† In the act of Parliament, anno 1525, "for eschewing of heresy," renewed 1535, prohibiting the importation of books containing heretical opinions, or the rehearsing and dis-

puting about them, an exception was made as to "clerks in the schools," that they might confute them. Robertson's Records of Parliament, p. 552, 595-6. In this device, the patrons of the Romish church were outwitted, for a number of these clerks were, by the perusal of the books, and by disputation, induced to embrace the Protestant tenets. The act of 1525 had special reference to the doctrines of Luther, or other Protestant books, which seem to have been imported by foreigners trading with the ports of Scotland. One clause enacted, that "na maner of persoun, stranger, that happenis to arrive with thare schip within ony port of this realme, bring with them any bukis or workis of the said Luther, his discipulis, or servandis, disputis or rehearsis his heresies, &c. under the pane of

of views first discovered itself in his philosophical lectures at St. Andrew's, in which he began to forsake the scholastic path, and to recommend to his pupils a more rational and useful method of study. Even this innovation excited against him violent suspicions of heresy, which were confirmed when he proceeded to reprehend the corruptions which prevailed in the church. It was impossible for him after this to remain in safety at St. Andrew's, which was wholly under the power of Cardinal Beautoun, the most determined supporter of the Romish church, and an enemy of all reform. Accordingly he left that place, and retired to the south of Scotland, where, within a short time, he avowed his full belief of the Protestant doctrine. Provoked by his defection, and alarmed lest he should draw others after him, the clergy were anxious to rid themselves of such an adversary. Having passed sentence against him as a heretic, and degraded him from the priesthood, (says Beza,) the Cardinal employed assassins to way-lay him, by whose hands he must have fallen, had not Providence placed him under the protection of Douglas, laird of Langniddrie.*

Thomas Guillaume, or Williams,† was very useful to Knox, in leading him to a more perfect acquaintance with the truth, which was now making considerable progress under the patronage of the Regent, and in consequence of an act of parliament, in 1542-3, declaring it lawful for all his Majesty's lieges to read the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue. One effect of this permission was, that the errors of Popery, which had hitherto been assailed in books imported from England or the Continent, were now attacked

escheting of thare schipis and guidis, and putting of thaire personis in presoun." Another clause was added in 1527, intended as a stronger check on the progress of the reformed opinions, and extending the penalties of the act to natives of Scotland.

* Beza, in mentioning the sentence of condemnation and degradation here, may have confounded the transactions in the Cardinal's lifetime, with what happened anno 1556. But there is no reason for questioning the main fact as related by him. *Icones*, Ee. iij.

† He was born in Athelstoneford, a village of East Lothian. Calderwood says that he was Provincial of the order of Dominicans, or Blackfriars, in Scotland. MS. vol. i. p. 118.

But a late author informs us, that the chartulary of the Blackfriars' monastery at Perth mentions John Grierson as having been Provincial from the year 1525 to the time of the Reformation. *Scott's History of the Reformers*, p. 96. Williams not only preached against Popery, but translated the New Testament. "This same ziere (1543), in Scotland, begane the gospell to display its beames, and Guillamus, a Dominican friar, translates the New Testament in the vulgar tounge, and publickly preaches against the Popes authority; he is wincked at by the Regent, and supported by these noblemen that returned from England." *Balfour's Annales of Scotland*, tom. i. p. 277.

in publications issued from the Scottish press.* Williams was a friar of eminence, and along with John Rough, † acted as chaplain to the Earl of Arran, during the short time that he favoured the Reformation, at the beginning of his regency, by whom he was employed in preaching in different parts of the kingdom. But the person to whom our Reformer was most indebted, was George Wishart, a gentleman of the house of Pittarow, in Mearns. Being driven into banishment by the Bishop of Brechin, for teaching the Greek New Testament in Montrose, he had resided for some years at the University of Cambridge. In the year 1544 he returned to his native country, in the company of the commissioners, who had been sent to negotiate a treaty with Henry VIII. of England. Seldom do we meet in ecclesiastical history with a character so amiable and interesting as that of George Wishart. Excelling the rest of his countrymen at that period in learning, of the most persuasive eloquence, irreproachable in life, courteous and affable in manners, his fervent piety, zeal, and courage in the cause of truth, were tempered with uncommon meekness, modesty, patience, prudence, and charity.‡ In his tour of preaching through Scotland, he was usually accompanied by some of the principal gentry; and the people who flocked to hear him were ravished with his discourses. To this teacher Knox attached himself, and profited greatly by his sermons, and private instructions. During his last visit to Lothian, Knox waited constantly on his person, and bore the sword, which was carried before him, from the time that an attempt was made to assassinate him at Dundee. Wishart was highly pleased with the zeal and talents of Knox, and seems to have presaged his future usefulness, at the same time that he laboured under a strong presentiment of his own approaching martyrdom. On the night in which he was apprehended by Bothwell, at the instigation of the Cardinal, he directed the sword to be

* Knox, 33, 34. Life, prefixed to his History of the Reformation, anno 1644.

† He was born about anno 1510; and having been deprived of some property, to which he considered himself as entitled, he in disgust left his relations, and entered a monastery in Stirling, when he was only seventeen years of age. The governor procured a dis-

pensation for him to leave the monastery, and become one of his chaplains. He visited Rome twice, and was very much shocked with what he witnessed in that city, which he had been taught to regard as the fountain of sanctity. Fox, 1340.

‡ See Note A.—Period Second.

taken from Knox ; and while the latter insisted for liberty to accompany him to Ormiston, he dismissed him with this reply, “ Nay, returne to your bairnes, (meaning his pupils,) and God blis you: ane is sufficient for a sacrifice.”

Having relinquished all thoughts of officiating in that Church which had invested him with clerical orders, Knox had entered as tutor into the family of Hugh Douglas of Long Niddrie, a gentleman in East Lothian, who had embraced the reformed doctrines. John Cockburn of Ormiston, a neighbouring gentleman of the same persuasion, also put his son under his tuition. These young men were instructed by him in the principles of religion, as well as of the learned languages. He managed their religious instruction in such a way as to allow the rest of the family, and the people of the neighbourhood, to reap advantage from it. He catechised them publicly in a chapel at Long Niddrie, in which he also read to them, at stated times, a chapter of the Bible, accompanied with explanatory remarks. The memory of this fact has been preserved by tradition, and the chapel, the ruins of which are still apparent, is popularly called *John Knox's kirk*.*

It was not to be expected that he would long be suffered to continue this employment, under a government which was now entirely at the devotion of Cardinal Beatoun, who had gained over to his measures the timid and irresolute Regent. But in the midst of his cruelties, and while he was planning still more desperate deeds,† the Cardinal was himself suddenly cut off. A conspiracy was formed against his life ; and a small, but determined band, (some of whom seem to have been instigated by resentment for private injuries, and the influence of the English Court, others animated by a desire to revenge his cruelties, and deliver their country from his oppression,) seized upon the Castle of St. Andrew's, in which he resided, and put him to death, on the 29th of May, 1546.

* Chalmers's Caledonia, ii. 526. comp. Knox, Historie, 67.

† In his progress through the kingdom with the Governor, he instigated him “to hang (at Perth) four honest men, for eating of a goose on Friday; and drowned a young woman, because she refused to pray to our lady in her birth.” Pitscottie, 188. Knox says,

that the woman “having a soucking babe upoun hir briest, was drounit.” Historie, 40. Petrie's History of the Church of Scotland, part ii. p. 182. He had planned the destruction of the principal gentlemen of Fife, as appeared by documents found after his death. Knox, 63, 64.

The death of Beatoun did not, however, free Knox from persecution. John Hamilton, an illegitimate brother of the Regent, who was nominated to the vacant bishopric, sought his life with as great eagerness as his predecessor. He was obliged to conceal himself, and to remove from place to place, to provide for his safety. Wearied with this mode of living, and apprehensive that he would some day fall into the hands of his enemies, he came to the resolution of leaving Scotland. He had no desire to go to England, which might seem to have afforded the most ready and natural asylum for those who fled from the persecution of the Scottish prelates; because, although "the Pope's name was suppressed" in that kingdom, "his laws and corruptions remained in full vigour."* His determination was to visit Germany, and prosecute his studies in some of the Protestant universities, until he should see a favourable change in the state of his native country. But the lairds of Long Niddrie and Ormiston, who were extremely reluctant to part with him, prevailed with him to relinquish his purpose of foreign travel, and take refuge, along with their sons, in the castle of St. Andrew's, which continued for some time to be held by the conspirators,† who, with the assistance they obtained from England, contrived to baffle the efforts of the Regent, who had laid siege to it, not so much to avenge the Cardinal's murder, as to release his eldest son, then a prisoner in the castle.‡

Writers, unfriendly to our Reformer, have endeavoured to fix an accusation upon him, respecting the assassination

* All the Scottish Protestants were displeased with the half-reform introduced by Henry VIII. This circumstance contributed not a little to cool their zeal for the alliance with England. His ambassador, Sir Ralph Sadler, found himself in a very awkward predicament on this as well as on other accounts; for the Papists were displeased that Henry had gone so far, the Protestants that he did not go farther. The latter disrelished, in particular, the restrictions which he had imposed upon the reading and interpretation of the Scriptures, and which he urged the Regent to imitate in Scotland. They had no desire for the King's Book, which lay as a drug in the ambassador's hands. Sadler's State Papers, i. 264-5, comp. p. 128. Sir John Borthwick, (who fled to England, anno 1539

or 1540), ridicules the Scottish clergy for making it an article of accusation against him, that he had approved of "all those heresies, commonly called the heresies of England;" because, (says he) what religion at that time was used in England, the like the whole realm of Scotland did embrace; in this point only the Englishmen differed from the Scottes, that they had cast off the yoke of Antichrist, the other not. Idols were worshipped of both nations; the profanating of the supper and baptisme was like unto them both.—Truly, it is most false, that I had subscribed unto such kinde of heresies." Fox, 1149, 1150.

† Knox, Historie, p. 67.

‡ Act. Parl. Scot. ii. 471, 477-9. Keith, 50, 51. Knox, 66, 67. Buchanan, i. 296.

of Cardinal Beatoun. Some have ignorantly asserted that he was one of the conspirators.* Others, better informed, have argued that he made himself accessory to their crime, by taking shelter among them.† With more plausibility, others have appealed to his writings as a proof that he vindicated the deed of the conspirators as laudable, or at least innocent. I know that some of Knox's vindicators have denied this charge, and maintain that he justified it only in so far as it was the work of God, or a just retribution in Providence for the crimes of which the Cardinal had been guilty, without approving the conduct of those who were the instruments of punishing him.‡ The just judgment of Heaven is, I acknowledge, the chief thing to which he directs the attention of his reader; at the same time, I think no one who carefully reads what he has written on this subject,§ can doubt that he justified the action of the conspirators. The truth is, he held the opinion, that persons who, by the commission of flagrant crimes, had forfeited their lives, according to the law of God, and the just laws of society, such as notorious murderers and tyrants, might warrantably be put to death by private individuals; provided all redress, in the ordinary course of justice, was rendered impossible, in consequence of the offenders having usurped the executive authority, or being systematically protected by oppressive rulers. This was an opinion of the same kind with that of *tyrannicide*, held by so many of the ancients, and defended by Buchanan in his dialogue, *De jure regni apud Scotos*. It is a principle, I confess, of dangerous application, extremely liable to be abused by factious, fanatical, and desperate men, as a pretext for perpetrating the most nefarious deeds. It would be unjust, however,

* The author of a book entitled "The Image of both Churches," &c. says, (p. 136) referring, as his authority, to Knox's *Historie*, p. 372, "Yet there is ane aduise of Knox which is to be recorded with admiration, 'It wear good, that rewards wear publickly appointed by the peopl for such as kill tyrants, as well as for those that kill wolfs.'" It is hardly necessary to say that no such "advice" is contained there, or in any other part of the *History*.

† "Quorum se societate, non multo post implicarat Joannes Knoxus, Calvinistarum,

minister, qui se evangelicæ perfectionis cumulum assecutum non arbitrabatur nisi in Cardinalis ac sacerdotis sanguine ac cæde triumphasset." Leslæus de rebus gestis Scotorum, lib. x. The bishop should have recollected, that the violence of his friends drove "the Calvinistic minister" to this "pinnacle of evangelical perfection."

‡ Principal Baillie's *Historical Vindication of the Government of the Church of Scotland*, p. 42.

§ *Historie*, 86.

on this account, to confound it with the principle, which, by giving to individuals a liberty to revenge their own quarrels, legitimates assassination, a practice which was exceedingly common in that age. I may add, that there have been instances of persons, not invested with public authority, executing punishment upon flagitious offenders, as to which we may scruple to load the memory of the actors with an aggravated charge of murder, although we cannot approve of their conduct.*

Knox entered the Castle of St. Andrew's at the time of Easter 1547, and conducted the education of his pupils after his accustomed manner. In the chapel within the Castle, he read to them his lectures upon the Scriptures, beginning at the place in the Gospel according to John, where he had left off at Long Niddrie. He also catechised them in the parish church belonging to the city. A number of persons attended both these exercises.

Among those who had taken refuge in the Castle, (though not engaged in the conspiracy against the Cardinal), were Sir David Lindsay of the Mount, Henry Balnaves of Halhill,† and John Rough, who, since his dismissal by the Regent, when the latter apostatized from the reformed faith, had lurked in Kyle. These persons were so much pleased with Knox's doctrine and mode of teaching, that they urged him to preach publicly to the people, and to become colleague to

* It is surprising how much prejudice will blind and distort the judgment, even of men of learning. A modern author, speaking of the assassination of Cardinal Beaton, calls it "the foulest crime which ever stained a country, except, perhaps, the similar murder of Archbishop Sharpe, within the same shire, in the subsequent century, by similar miscreants." Chalmers's Lindsay, vol. i. p. 34, 35. What must the reader think who hears the assassination of two bloody persecutors, aggravated above the murder of the brave Coligni, the generous Henry IV. of France, and the patriotic Prince of Orange! There are some authors who can narrate in cold blood the murder of multitudes of innocent persons, under the consecrated cloak of authority, who "burst into indignation," at the mention of the rare fact of a person, who, goaded by oppression, and reduced to despair, has been driven to the extremity of taking vengeance on the proud and tyrannical author of his wrongs.

Mr. Hume's remark on Knox's Narrative of

the Cardinal's Assassination, is considered in Note B.‡

† Henry Balnaves had raised himself, by his talents and probity, from an obscure station to the first honours of the State, and was justly regarded as one of the principal supporters of the reformed cause in Scotland. Born of poor parents in the town of Kirkcaldy, when yet a boy he travelled to the Continent, and, hearing of a free school in Cologne, procured admission to it, and received a liberal education, together with instruction in Protestant principles. Returning to his native country, he applied himself to the study of law, and acted for some time as a procurator at St. Andrew's. Notwithstanding the jealousy of the clergy, who hated him on account of his religious sentiments, his reputation introduced him to the Court; and he was employed on important embassies, both by James V. and the Earl of Arran, during the first part of whose regency he was Secretary of State. Cald. MS. i. 119. Sadler's State Papers, i. 83. Knox, 35.

Rough, who then acted as chaplain to the garrison. But he resisted all their solicitations, assigning as a reason that he did not consider himself as having a call to this employment, and would not be guilty of intrusion.* They did not, however, desist from their purpose ; but, having consulted with their brethren, came to a resolution, without his knowledge, that a call should be publicly given him, in the name of the whole, to become one of their ministers.

Accordingly, on a day fixed for the purpose, Rough preached a sermon on the election of ministers, in which he declared the power which a congregation, however small, had over any one in whom they perceived gifts suited to the office, and how dangerous it was for such a person to reject the call of those who desired instruction. Sermon being ended, the preacher turned to Knox, who was present, and addressed him in these words : “ Brother, you shall not be offended, although I speak unto you that which I have in charge, even from all those that are here present, which is this : In the name of God, and of his Son Jesus Christ, and in the name of all that presently call you by my mouth, I charge you that you refuse not this holy vocation, but as you tender the glory of God, the increase of Christ’s kingdom, the edification of your brethren, and the comfort of me, whom you understand well enough to be oppressed by the multitude of labours, that you take upon you the public office and charge of preaching, even as you look to avoid God’s heavy displeasure, and desire that he shall multiply his graces unto you.” Then addressing himself to the congregation, he said, “ Was not this your charge unto me ? and do ye not approve this vocation ?” They all answered, “ It was ; and we approve it.” Abashed and overwhelmed by this unexpected and solemn charge, Knox was unable to speak, but bursting into tears, retired from the assembly, and shut himself up in his chamber. “ His countenance and behaviour from that day, till the day that he was compelled to present himself in the public place of preaching, did sufficiently declare the grief and trouble of his heart ; for no man saw any sign of mirth

* His words were, that he “ wald not rin quhair God had not callit him.”

from him, neither had he pleasure to accompany any man for many days together.”*

This scene cannot fail to interest such as are impressed with the weight of the ministerial function, and will awaken a train of feelings in the breasts of those who have been intrusted with the Gospel. It revives the memory of those early days of the Church, when persons did not rush forward to the altar, nor beg to “be put into one of the priest’s offices, to eat a piece of bread;” when men of piety and talents, deeply impressed with the awful responsibility of the office, and their own insufficiency, were, with great difficulty, induced to take on those orders, which they had long desired, and for which they had laboured to qualify themselves. What a glaring contrast to this was exhibited in the conduct of the herd which at this time filled the stalls of the Popish Church! The behaviour of Knox also reproves those who become preachers of their own accord; who, from vague and enthusiastic desires of doing good, or a fond conceit of their own gifts, trample upon good order, and thrust themselves into a sacred public employment, without any regular call.

We are not, however, to imagine that his distress of mind, and the reluctance which he discovered in complying with the call which he had now received, proceeded from consciousness of its invalidity, by the defect of certain external formalities which had been usual in the church, or which, in ordinary cases, might be observed with propriety, in the installation of persons into sacred offices. These, as far as warranted by Scripture, or conducive to the preservation of decent order, he did not condemn; his judgment respecting them may be learned from the early practice of the Scottish Reformed Church, in the organization of which he had so active a share. In common with all the original reformers, he rejected the necessity of episcopal ordination, as totally unauthorised by the laws of Christ; nor did he regard the imposition of the hands of presbyters as a rite essential to the validity of orders, or of necessary observance in all circumstances of the Church.

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 68.

The Papists, indeed, did not fail to declaim on this topic, representing Knox, and other reformed ministers, as destitute of all lawful vocation.* In the same strain did many hierarchical writers of the English Church afterwards learn to talk; not scrupling, by their extravagant doctrine of the absolute necessity of ordination by the hands of a bishop, who derived his powers, by uninterrupted succession from the Apostles, to invalidate and nullify the orders of all the reformed churches except their own; a doctrine which has been revived in the present enlightened age, and unblushingly avowed and defended, with the greater part of its absurd, illiberal, and horrid consequences.† I will not say that Knox paid no respect whatever to his early ordination in the Popish Church, (although, if we may credit the testimony of his adversaries, this was his opinion;)‡ but I have little doubt that he looked upon the charge which he received at St. Andrew's, as principally constituting his call to the ministry.

His distress of mind on the present occasion, proceeded from a higher source than the deficiency of some external formalities in his call. He had now very different thoughts as to the importance of the ministerial office, from what he had entertained when ceremoniously invested with orders. The care of immortal souls, of whom he must give an account to the Chief Bishop; the charge of declaring "the whole counsel of God, keeping nothing back," however ungrateful to his hearers, and of "preaching in season and out of season;" the manner of life, afflictions, persecutions, imprisonment, exile, and violent death, to which the preachers of the Protestant doctrine were exposed; the hazard of his sinking under these hardships, and "making shipwreck of faith and a good conscience;" these, with similar considerations, rushed into his mind, and filled it with agitation

* The objection of the Roman Catholics to the legality of our Reformer's vocation was, that although he had received the power of order, he wanted that of jurisdiction; these two being distinct, according to the Canon law. "The power of ordere is not sufficient to ane man to preache, bot he man have also jurisdictione over thame to whom he preaches. Johann Kmnnox, resavit never sic jurisdictione fra the Roman kirk to preache in the realme

of Scotland; thairfoir suppoise he receavit from it the ordere of priestheade, yet he had na pouar to preache, nor to lauchfullie administrat the Sacramentes." Nicol Burne's Disputation concerning the Contraversit Headdis of Religion, p. 128. Paris, anno 1581.

† See Note C.

‡ Ninian Winzet, apud Keith's History, App. p. 212. 213. Burne's Disputation, p. 128.

and anxiety. At length, satisfied that he had the call of God to engage in this work, he composed his mind to a reliance on Him who had engaged to make his "strength perfect in the weakness" of his servants, and resolved, with the apostle, "not to count his life dear, that he might finish with joy the ministry which he received of the Lord, to testify the gospel of the grace of God." Often did he afterwards reflect with lively emotion upon this very interesting step of his life, and never, in the midst of his greatest sufferings, did he see reason to repent the choice which he had so deliberately made.

An occurrence which took place about this time contributed to fix his wavering resolution, and induced an earlier compliance with the call of the congregation than he might otherwise have been disposed to yield. Though sound in doctrine, Rough's literary acquirements were moderate. Of this circumstance, the patrons of the established religion in the university and abbey took advantage; among others, Dean John Annand* had long proved vexatious to him, by stating objections to the doctrine which he preached, and entangling him with sophisms, or garbled quotations from the Fathers. Knox had assisted the preacher with his pen; and by his superior skill in logic and the writings of the Fathers, exposed Annand's fallacies, and confuted the Popish errors. One day, at a public disputation in the parish church, in the presence of a great number of people, Annand, being driven from all his defences, fled, as his last refuge, to the infallible authority of the Church, which, he alleged, after the tenets of the Lutherans had been condemned as heretical, had rendered all further disputation unnecessary. To this argument Knox's reply was, that before they could submit to such a summary determination of the matters in controversy, it was previously requisite to ascertain the true church by the marks given in Scripture, lest

* The friars were accustomed, about this time, to assume the dignified title of Dean, although they did not hold that place in the church which entitled them to the name.—

"All monk'ry, ye may hear and sie,
Are callit Denis for dignite;
Howbeit his mother milk the kow,
He mon be callit Dene Androw.

Chalmers's Lindsay, iii. 103.

Dean Annand, however, was not a friar, but a person of considerable repute in the university. He was Principal of St. Leonard's College in 1544, and held that office for several years after.

“they should blindly receive, as their spiritual mother, a harlot instead of the immaculate spouse of Jesus Christ.” “For, (continued he,) as for your Roman Church as it is now corrupted, wherein stands the hope of your victory, I no more doubt that it is the synagogue of Satan, and the head thereof, called the Pope, to be that MAN OF SIN, of whom the Apostle speaks, than I doubt that Jesus Christ suffered by the procurement of the visible Church of Jerusalem. Yea, I offer myself, by word or writing, to prove the Roman Church this day farther degenerate from the purity which was in the days of the Apostles, than were the Church of the Jews from the ordinances given by Moses, when they consented to the innocent death of Jesus Christ.” This was a bold charge; but the minds of the people were prepared to listen to the proof. They exclaimed, that if this was true, they had been miserably deceived, and insisted, as they could not all read his writings, that he should ascend the pulpit, and give them an opportunity of hearing the probation of what he had so confidently affirmed. The request was reasonable, and the challenge was not to be retracted. The following Sunday was fixed for making good his promise.

On the day appointed, he appeared in the pulpit of the parish church, and gave out Daniel vii. 24, 25. as his text. After an introduction, in which he explained the vision, and shewed that the four empires, emblematically represented by four different animals, were the Babylonian, Persian, Grecian, and Roman, out of the ruins of the last of which empires the power described in his text arose, he proceeded to show that this was applicable to no other power but the degenerate Romish Church. He compared the parallel passages in the New Testament, and shewed that the king mentioned in his text was the same elsewhere called the Man of Sin, the Antichrist, the Babylonian harlot; and that this did not mean any single person, but a body or multitude of people under a wicked head, including a multitude of persons, occupying the same station. In support of his assertion that the Papal power was Antichristian, he described it under the three heads of life, doctrine, and laws. He depicted the lives of the Popes from ecclesiastical history, and contrasted their doctrine and laws

with those of the New Testament, particularly in the articles of justification, holidays, abstinence from meats, and from marriage. He quoted from the Canon law the blasphemous titles and prerogatives ascribed to the Pope, as an additional proof that he was described in his text.* In conclusion, he signified, that if any present thought that he had misquoted, or misinterpreted the testimonies which he had produced from the Scriptures, history, or writings of the doctors of the Church, he was ready, upon their coming to him, in the presence of witnesses, to give them satisfaction. There were among the audience, his former preceptor, Major, the members of the University, the Sub-prior of the Abbey, and a great number of canons and friars of different orders.

This sermon, delivered with a great portion of that popular eloquence for which Knox was afterwards so celebrated, made great noise, and excited much speculation among all classes.† The reformed preachers who had preceded him, not excepting Wishart, had contented themselves with refuting some of the grosser errors of the established religion. Knox struck at the root of Popery, by boldly pronouncing the Pope to be Antichrist, and the whole system erroneous and antisciptural. The report of the sermon, and of the effects produced by it, was soon conveyed to Hamilton, the bishop-elect of St. Andrew's, who wrote to Winram, the Sub-prior, and Vicar-general during the vacancy of the See, that he was surprised he should allow such heretical and schismatical doctrines to be taught without opposition. Winram was at bottom friendly to the reformed tenets; but he durst not altogether disregard this admonition, and, therefore, appointed a convention of the most learned men to be held in St. Leonard's

* The doctrine which the preacher delivered at this time was afterwards put into "ornate meeter," by one of his hearers, Sir D. Lindsay, who, in his "Monarchie," finished in 1553, has given a particular account of the rise and corruptions of Popery, under the name of the "fifth spirituale and papal monarchie." Chalmers's Lindsay, iii. 86-116.

† "Sum said, Utheris hued the branches of Papistry, bot he straike at the rute, to destroye the whole. Utheris said, gif the doctors and magistri nostri defend not now the Pope and his autoritie, which in their owin presence is so manifestlie impugnit, the devill

have my part of him and his lawes bothe. Utheris said, Mr. George Wisheart spak never so plainlie, and yet he was brunt; even so will he be in the end; utheris said, the tyrannie of the Cardinal maid not his cause the better, nether yet the suffering of Godis servand maid his cause the wors.—And thairfoir we wald counsail yow and thame to provyde better defences than fyre and sword; for it may be that allisye shall be disappointed: men now have uther eyes than they had then. This answer gave the Laird of Nydrie." Knox, *Historie*, p. 70.

Yards, to which he summoned the preachers, Knox and Rough, who appeared before the assembly. Nine articles drawn from their sermons were exhibited, "the strangeness of which (the Sub-prior said) had moved him to call for them to hear their answers."

Knox conducted the defence for himself and his colleague, expressing his satisfaction at appearing before an auditory so honourable, modest, and grave. As he was not a stranger to the report concerning the private sentiments of Winram, and nothing was more abhorrent to his own mind than dissimulation, he, before commencing his defence, obtested him to deal uprightly in a matter of such magnitude; if he advanced any thing, he said, which was contrary to Scripture, he desired the Sub-prior to oppose it, that the people might not be deceived; but if he was convinced that what he taught was true and Scriptural, it was his duty to give it the sanction of his authority. To this Winram cautiously replied, that he did not come there as a judge, and would neither approve nor condemn; he wished a free conference, and if Knox pleased, he would reason with him a little. Accordingly, he proceeded to state some objections to one of the propositions maintained by Knox, "that in the worship of God, and especially in the administration of the sacraments, the rule prescribed in the Scriptures is to be observed, without addition or diminution; and that the Church has no right to devise religious ceremonies, and impose significations upon them." After maintaining the argument for a short time, the Sub-prior devolved it on a grey-friar, named Arbuckill, who took it up with great confidence, but was soon forced to yield with disgrace. He rashly engaged to prove the divine institution of ceremonies; and being pushed by his antagonist from the Gospels and Acts to the Epistles, and from one Epistle to another, he was driven at last to affirm, "that the Apostles had not received the Holy Ghost when they wrote the Epistles, but they afterwards received him, and ordained ceremonies." The extravagance of this assertion was ridiculed even by his own party. "Father! (exclaimed the Sub-prior) what say ye? God forbid that ye say that; for then farewell the ground of our faith!" The friar, abashed and confounded, attempted to correct his error, but in vain. Knox could

not afterwards bring him to the argument upon any of the articles ; and when he resolved all into the authority of the Church, his opponent urged that the Church had no power to act contrary to the express directions of Scripture, which enjoined an exact conformity to the divine laws respecting worship. “ If so, (said Arbuckill) you will leave us no Church.” “ Yes, (rejoined Knox, sarcastically,) in David I read of the church of malignants, *Odi ecclesiam malignantium* ; this church you may have without the word, and fighting against it. Of this church if you will be, I cannot hinder you ; but as for me, I will be of no other church but that which has Jesus Christ for pastor, hears his voice, and will not hear the voice of a stranger.” For purgatory the friar had no better authority than that of Virgil in the sixth *Æneid* ; and the pains of it according to him were—*a bad wife*.*

“ Solventur risu tabulæ ; tu missus abibis.”

Instructed by the issue of this convention, the Papists avoided for the future all disputation, which tended only to injure their cause. Had the Castle of St. Andrew's been in their power, they would soon have silenced these troublesome preachers ; but as matters stood, more moderate and crafty measures were necessary. The plan adopted for counteracting the popular preaching of Knox and Rough was politic. Orders were issued, that all the learned men in the Abbey and University should preach by turns every Sunday in the parish church. By this means the reformed preachers were excluded on those days, when the greatest audiences attended ; and it was expected that the diligence of the established clergy would conciliate the affections of the people. To avoid offence or occasion of speculation, they were directed not to touch, in their sermons, upon any of the controverted points. Knox easily saw through this artifice, but contented himself, in the sermons which he still delivered on week days, with expressing a wish that they would shew themselves equally diligent in places where their labours were more necessary. At the same time, he rejoiced (he said) that Christ was

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 70. 74.

preached, and nothing publicly spoken against the truth ; if any thing of this kind should be advanced, he requested the people to suspend their judgment, until they should have an opportunity of hearing him in reply.

His labours were so successful during the few months that he preached at St. Andrew's, that, besides those in the Castle, a great number of the inhabitants of the town renounced Popery, and made profession of the Protestant faith, by participating of the Lord's Supper, which he administered to them in the manner afterwards practised in the reformed church of Scotland.* The gratification which he felt in these first fruits of his ministry, was in some degree abated by instances of vicious conduct in those under his charge, some of whom were guilty of those acts of licentiousness too common among soldiery placed in similar circumstances. From the time that he was chosen to be their preacher, he openly rebuked these disorders, and when he perceived that his admonition failed in putting a stop to them, he did not conceal his apprehensions of the issue of the enterprise in which they were engaged.†

In the end of June, 1547, a French fleet, with a considerable body of land forces, under the command of Leo Strozzi, appeared before St. Andrew's, to assist the governor in the reduction of the Castle. It was invested both by sea and land ; and being disappointed of the expected aid from England, the besieged, after a brave and vigorous resistance, were under the necessity of capitulating to the French commander on the last day of July.‡ The terms of the capitulation were honourable ; the lives of all that were in the Castle were to be spared ; they were to be trans-

* This was the first time that the Sacrament of the Supper was dispensed in the reformed way in Scotland, unless we except the instance by George Wishart, in the same castle, immediately before his death ; which was in a private manner, as narrated by Buchanan, *Hist. lib. xv. Oper. Rudd. tom. i. 293-94. Pitscottie, 189, fol. edit.* Those who preceded Knox appear to have contented themselves with preaching ; and such as embraced their doctrine had most probably continued to receive the Sacraments from the Popish clergy, or at least, from such of them as were most friendly to a reformation.

† Buchan. *Hist. lib. xv. p. 296. ut supra. Pitscottie, 191. Knox, 76.*

‡ Sir James Balfour, in his "*Annales of Scotland*," under the year 1547, says, "Peiter Strozzi, Prior of Capua, is this zeire sent by the Frenche King with 16 gallayes to Scotland ; he arriues at St. Andrewes, and enters the toune, in despyte of all the oppositione thesse of the castle could make. The Regent now blocks vpe the castle both by sea and land ; and shortly thereafter hes it randred to him, one conditione to haue ther liues saued, if so it should pleis the Frenche King : so that one the 5 day of Aguste, the castle being randred, the Prior of Capua shippes himselue, and with him 15 prissoners for France, with the best of all the moueables of the castle."

ported to France, and if they did not choose to enter into the service of the French king, were to be conveyed to any country which they might prefer, except Scotland. John Rough had left the Castle previous to the commencement of the siege, and retired to England.* Knox, although he did not expect that the garrison would be able to hold out, could not prevail upon himself to desert his charge, and resolved to share with his brethren the hazard of the siege. He was conveyed along with the rest on board the fleet, which, in a few days, set sail for France, arrived at Fecamp, and going up the Seine, anchored before Rouen. The capitulation was violated, and they were all detained prisoners of war, at the solicitation of the Pope and Scottish clergy. The principal gentlemen were incarcerated in Rouen, Cherbourg, Brest, and Mont St. Michel. Knox, with some others, was confined on board the galleys, bound with chains, and in addition to the rigours of ordinary captivity, treated with all the indignities offered to heretics.†

From Rouen they sailed to Nantes, and lay upon the Loire during the following winter. Solicitations, threatenings, and violence, were all employed to make the prisoners recant their religion, or at least countenance the Popish worship. But so great was their abhorrence of its idolatry, that not a single individual of the whole company, on land or water, could be induced to symbolise with its rites in the smallest degree. While the prison-ships lay on the Loire, mass was frequently said, and *Salve Regina* sung on board, or on the shore within their hearing. On these occasions they were brought out, and threatened with torture if they did not give the usual signs of reverence; but instead of complying, they covered their heads as soon as the service began. Knox has related in his History a hu-

* Rough continued to preach in England until the death of Edward VI. when he retired to Norden in Friesland. There he was obliged to support himself and his wife, (whom he had married in England,) by knitting caps, stockings, &c. Having come over to London in the course of his trade, he heard of a congregation of Protestants which met secretly in that city, to whom he joined himself, and was elected their pastor. A few weeks after this, the conventicle was discovered by the treachery of one of their own number, and Rough

was carried before Bishop Bonner, by whose orders he was committed to the flames on the 22d of December, 1557. An account of his examination, and two of his letters, breathing the true spirit of a Christian martyr, may be seen in Fox, p. 1840-1842.

† Archibald Hamilton says he was condemned to work at the oar;—"impellendis longarum navium remis, cum reliquis adjudicatur." Dial. de Confus. Calv. Sectæ, p. 64. Bainavis Confess. Epist. Dedic.

morous incident which took place on one of these occasions, and although he has not named the person concerned in it, most probably it was himself. One day a fine painted image of the Virgin was brought into one of the galleys, and presented to a Scots prisoner to kiss. He desired the bearer not to trouble him, for such idols were accursed, and he would not touch it. The officers roughly replied, "But you shall;" at the same time putting it forward, and thrusting it towards his mouth. Upon this the prisoner took hold of the image, and watching his opportunity, threw it into the river, saying, *Lat our Ladie now save hirself: sche is lycht anoughe, lat hir leirne to swyme.* After this they were no more troubled with these disagreeable importunities.*

The galleys in which they were confined, returned to Scotland in summer 1548, as near as I can collect, and continued for a considerable time on the east coast, to watch for English vessels. Knox's health was now greatly impaired by the severity of his confinement, and he was seized with a fever, during which his life was despaired of by all in the ship.† But even in this state, his fortitude of mind remained unsubdued,‡ and he comforted his fellow prisoners with hopes of release. To their anxious desponding inquiries, (natural to men in their situation,) "if he thought they would ever obtain their liberty," his uniform answer was, "God will deliver us to his glory, even in this life." While they lay on the coast between Dundee and St. Andrew's, Mr. (afterwards Sir) James Balfour, who was confined in the same ship, desired him to look to the land, and see if he knew it. Though at that time very sick, he replied, "Yes, I know it well; for I see the steeple of that place (St. Andrew's) where God first opened my mouth in public to his glory; and I am fully persuaded, how weak soever I now appear, that I shall not depart this life till that my tongue shall glorify his godly name in the same place." This striking reply Sir James repeated, in the

* Knox, Historie, p.33.

† MS. Letters, p. 53.

‡ One of his most bitter adversaries has borne an involuntary but complimentary testimony to his magnanimity at this time. "Ubi

longo maris tædio, et laboris molestia extenuatum quidem, et subactum corpus fuit; sed animi elatio eum subinde rerum magnorum spe extimulans, nihilo magis tunc quam prius quiescere potuit." Hamiltonii Dial. ut sup.

presence of many witnesses, a number of years before Knox returned to Scotland, and when there was very little prospect of his words being verified.*

We must not, however, think that he possessed this elevation and tranquillity of mind during the whole time of his imprisonment. When first thrown into cruel bonds, insulted by his enemies, and without any apparent prospect of release, he was not a stranger to the anguish of despondency, so pathetically described by the Royal Psalmist of Israel.† He felt that conflict in his spirit with which all good men are acquainted; and which becomes peculiarly sharp when joined with corporal affliction. But having had recourse to prayer, the never-failing refuge of the oppressed, he was relieved from all his fears; and reposing upon the promise and providence of the God whom he served, attained to “the confidence and rejoicing of hope.” Those who wish a more particular account of the state of his mind at this time, will find it in the notes, extracted from a rare work on prayer, composed by him chiefly from the suggestions of his own experience.‡

When free from fever, he relieved the tedious hours of captivity, by committing to writing a confession of his faith, containing the substance of what he had taught at St. Andrew's, with a particular account of the disputation which he maintained in St. Leonard's Yards. This he found means to convey to his religious acquaintances in Scotland, accompanied with an earnest exhortation to persevere in the faith which they had professed, whatever persecutions they might suffer for its sake.§ To this confession I find him afterwards referring, in the defence of his doctrine before the Bishop of Durham. “Let no man think, that because I am in the realm of England, therefore so boldly I speak. No: God hath taken that suspicion from me. For the body lying in most painful bands, in the midst of cruel tyrants, his mercy and goodness provided that the hand should write and bear witness to the confession of the heart, more abundantly than ever yet the tongue spake.” ||

* Historie, p. 74.

† Psalm xlii.

‡ See Note D.

§ Knox, Historie, p. 74. This confession appears to have been lost.

|| MS. Letters, p. 40.

Notwithstanding the rigour of their confinement, the prisoners, though separated, found opportunities of occasionally corresponding with one another. Henry Balnaves of Halhill, composed in his prison a treatise on *Justification*, and the *Works and Conversation of a Justified Man*. This being conveyed to Knox, probably after his second return in the galleys from Scotland, he was so much pleased with it, that he divided it into chapters, added some marginal notes, and a concise epitome of its contents. To the whole he prefixed a recommendatory dedication, intending that it should be published for the use of the brethren in Scotland, as soon as an opportunity offered.* The reader will not, I am persuaded, be displeased to breathe a little of the pious and heroic spirit which animated this undaunted confessor, when "his feet lay fast in irons," as expressed by him in this dedication; from which I shall quote more freely, as the book is rare.

It is thus inscribed:† "John Knox, the bound servant of Jesus Christ, unto his best beloved brethren of the congregation of the Castle of St. Andrew's, and to all professors of Christ's true evangel, desireth grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, with perpetual consolation of the Holy Spirit." After mentioning a number of instances in which the name of God was magnified, and the interests of religion advanced, by the exile of those who were driven from their native countries by tyranny, as in the examples of Joseph, Moses, Daniel, and the primitive Christians—he goes on thus: "Which thing shall openly declare this godly work subsequent. The counsel of Satan in the persecution‡ of us, first, was to stop the wholesome

* The manuscript, there is reason to think, was conveyed to Scotland about this time, but it fell aside, and was long considered as lost. After Knox's death, it was discovered by his servant, Richard Bannatyne, in the house of Ormiston, and was printed anno 1584, by Thomas Vaultroulier, in 12mo. with the title of "Confession of Faith, &c. by Henry Balnaves of Halhill, one of the Lords of Council and Session of Scotland."—David Buchan, in his edition of Knox's History, anno 1644, among his other alterations and interpolations, makes Knox to say that this work was published at the time he wrote the History; which may be numbered among the anachronisms in that edition, which for some time discredited the

authenticity of the history, and led many to deny that Knox was its author. But in the genuine editions, Knox expresses the very reverse. "In the presoun, he (Balnaves) wrait a maist profitabill treatise of justifioun, and of the warkis and conversatioun of a justified man: but how it was suppressit we knaw not." *Historie*, p. 83. Edin. anno 1732. See also p. 181. of the first edition, 8vo. printed at London about the year 1584.

† I have not altered the orthography of the printed work, which is evidently different from what it must have been in the MS.

‡ It is "perfection" in the printed copy, which is plainly a mistake.

wind of Christ's evangel to blow upon the parts where we converse and dwell ; and, secondly, so to oppress ourselves by corporal affliction and worldly calamities, that no place should we find to godly study. But by the great mercy and infinite goodness of God our Father, shall these his counsels be frustrate and vain. For, in despite of him and all his wicked members, shall yet that same word (O Lord ! this I speak, confiding in thy holy promise) openly be proclaimed in that same country. And how that our merciful Father, amongst these tempestuous storms, by* all men's expectation, hath provided some rest for us, this present work shall testify, which was sent to me in Roane, lying in irons, and sore troubled by corporal infirmity, in a galley named Nostre Dame, by an honourable brother, Mr. Henry Balnaves of Halhill, for the present holden as prisoner (though unjustly) in the old palace of Roane.† Which work, after I had once again read, to the great comfort and consolation of my spirit, by counsel and advice of the foresaid noble and faithful man, author of the said work, I thought expedient it should be digested in chapters, &c. Which thing I have done as imbecility of ingine,‡ and incommmodity of place, would permit ; not so much to illustrate the work, (which in the self is godly and perfect,) as, together with the foresaid noble man and faithful brother, to give my confession of the article of justification therein contained.§ And I beseech you, beloved brethren, earnestly to consider, if we deny any thing presently (or yet conceal and hide) which any time before we professed in that article. And now we have not the Castle of St. Andrew's to be our defence, as some of our enemies falsely accused us, saying, if we wanted our walls, we would not speak so boldly. But blessed be that Lord whose infinite goodness and wisdom hath taken from us the occasion of that slander, and hath shewn unto us, that the serpent hath power only to sting the heel, that is, to molest and trouble the flesh, but not to move the spirit from constant adhering to Christ Jesus, nor public professing of his true word. O blessed be thou, Eternal Father !

* i. e. beyond.

† Rouen, not Roanne, is the place meant.

‡ i. e. genius or wit.

§ See Note E.

which, by thy only mercy, has preserved us to this day, and provided that the confession of our faith (which ever we desired all men to have known) should, by this treatise, come plainly to light. Continue, O Lord, and grant unto us, that as now with pen and ink, so shortly we may confess with voice and tongue the same before thy congregation; upon whom look, O Lord God, with the eyes of thy mercy, and suffer no more darkness to prevail. I pray you pardon me, beloved brethren, that on this manner I digress; vehemency of spirit (the Lord knoweth I lie not) compelleth me thereto."

The prisoners in Mont St. Michel consulted Knox as to the lawfulness of attempting to escape by breaking their prison, which was opposed by some of their number, lest their escape should subject their brethren who remained in confinement to more severe treatment. He returned for answer, that such fears were not a sufficient reason for relinquishing the design, and that they might, with a safe conscience, effect their escape, provided it could be done "without the blood of any shed or spilt; but to shed any man's blood for their freedom, he would never consent."* The attempt was accordingly made by them, and successfully executed, "without harm done to the person of any, and without touching any thing that appertained to the king, the captain, or the house."†

At length, after enduring a tedious and severe imprisonment of nineteen months, Knox obtained his liberty. This happened in the month of February 1549, according to the modern computation.‡ By what means his liberation was procured, I cannot certainly determine. One account says, that the galley in which he was confined was

* This is the man whom a high church historian has represented as maintaining the principles of the ancient Zealots or Sicarii, and one who taught that any person who met a Papist might kill him! Collier's Eccles. Hist. ii. 545.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 84-85.

‡ In one of his letters, preserved by Calderwood, Knox says that he was 19 months in the French galleys. Cald. MS. vol. i. 526. In the printed Calderwood, the period of his confinement is limited to nine months, a mistake which has been copied by several writers. It is proper that the reader of that book should

be aware, that it consists merely of excerpts from Calderwood's History, (which still remains in manuscript,) and, though it has been useful, is not always accurate in what it contains. Knox, in a conference with Mary of Scotland, told the Queen that he was five years resident in England, (*Historie*, 289.) Now, as he came to England immediately after he obtained his liberty, and left it (as we shall afterwards see) in the end of January or beginning of February, 1554, this exactly accords with the date of his liberation, which is given above from Calderwood's MS.

taken in the channel by the English.* According to another account, he was liberated by order of the King of France, because it appeared, on examination, that he was not concerned in the murder of Cardinal Beaton, nor accessory to other crimes committed by those who held the Castle of St. Andrew's.† Others say, that his acquaintances purchased his liberty, induced by the hopes which they cherished of great things to be accomplished by him.‡ It is not improbable, however, that he owed his liberty to the circumstance of the French Court having now accomplished their great object in Scotland, by the consent of the Parliament to the marriage of their young Queen with the Dauphin, and by obtaining possession of her person; after which they felt less inclined to revenge the quarrels of the Scottish clergy.

PERIOD THIRD.

FROM HIS RELEASE FROM THE FRENCH GALLEYS IN 1549, TO
HIS DEPARTURE OUT OF ENGLAND IN 1554.

UPON regaining his liberty, Knox immediately repaired to England. The objections which he had formerly entertained against a residence in that kingdom, were now in a great measure removed. Henry VIII. had died in the year 1547; and Archbishop Cranmer, released from the severe restraint under which he had been held by his tyrannical and capricious master, exerted himself with much zeal in advancing the Reformation. In this he was cordially supported by those who governed the kingdom during the minority of Edward VI. But the undertaking was extensive and difficult, and in carrying it on, he found a great

* This is mentioned in a MS. in my possession; but little weight can be given to it, as it is written in a modern hand, and no authority is produced.

† Petrie's Church History, part ii. p. 184.
See Note F.—Period Second.

‡ Hamiltonii Dialog. ut supra.

deficiency of ecclesiastical coadjutors. The greater part of the incumbent bishops, though they externally complied with the alterations introduced by authority, remained attached to the old religion, and secretly thwarted, instead of seconding, the measures of the Primate. The mass of the people were sunk in wretched ignorance of religion, and from ignorance, were addicted to those superstitions to which they had been always accustomed: while the inferior clergy, in general, were as unwilling as they were unable to undertake their instruction.* This evil was not corrected at the commencement of the English Reformation; on the contrary, it was considerably aggravated by a ruinous measure then adopted. When Henry suppressed the monasteries, and seized their revenues, pensions were allotted to the monks during life; but to ease the royal treasury of this burden, small benefices in the gift of the crown were conferred upon them, instead of their pensions. The nobles, who procured monastic lands under the same burden, imitated the monarch's example. By this means, a great part of the inferior livings were occupied by ignorant and superstitious monks, who were long a dead weight on the English Church, and contributed not a little to the sudden relapse of the nation to Popery, in the reign of Queen Mary.†

In order to remedy these evils, Cranmer, with the concurrence of the Protector and the Privy Council, had invited learned Protestants to come from Germany into England, and placed Peter Martyr, Martin Bucer, Paul Fagius, and Emanuel Tremellius, as professors in the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge. This was a wise measure, as it secured a future supply of useful preachers, trained up by these able masters. But the necessity was urgent, and demanded immediate provision. For this purpose, it was judged expedient, instead of fixing a number of orthodox and popular preachers in particular charges, to employ

* Peter Martyr, in a letter, dated Oxford, 1st July, 1550, laments the paucity of useful preachers in England. "*Doleo plus quam dici possit, tanto ubique in Anglia verbi Dei penuria laborari; et eos qui oves Christi doctrina pascere tenentur, cum usque eo remisse agant, ut officium facere prorsus recusent, nescio quo fletu, quibusve lachrymis deplorari*

possit. Verum confido fore ut meliora simus visuri." Martyri Epist. apud Loc. Commun. p. 760. Geneva, 1624.

† Burnet's Hist. of the Reformat. ii. 24. The suppression of the chantries, in the reign of Edward VI. had similar effects. Strype's Memorials of the Reformation, ii. 446.

them in itinerating through different parts of the kingdom, where the clergy were most illiterate or disaffected, and the inhabitants most addicted to superstition.

In these circumstances, our zealous countryman did not remain long unemployed. The reputation which he had gained by his preaching at St. Andrew's was not unknown in England, and his late sufferings recommended him to Cranmer and the Council. He was accordingly, soon after his arrival in England, sent down from London, by their authority, to preach in Berwick; a situation the more acceptable to him, as it afforded him an opportunity to ascertain the state of religion in his native country, to correspond with his friends, and impart to them his advice.*

The Council had every reason to be pleased with the choice which they had made of a northern preacher. He had long thirsted for the opportunity which he now enjoyed. His captivity, during which he had felt the powerful support which the Protestant doctrine yielded to his mind, had inflamed his love for the truth, and his zeal against Popery. He spared neither time nor bodily strength in the instruction of those to whom he was sent. Regarding the worship of the Popish Church as grossly idolatrous, and its doctrine as damnable, he attacked both with the utmost fervour, and exerted himself in drawing his hearers from them, with as much eagerness as in saving their lives from a devouring flame or flood. Nor were his labours fruitless: during the two years that he continued in Berwick, numbers were, by his ministry, converted from error and ignorance, and a general reformation of manners became visible among the soldiers of the garrison, who had formerly been noted for turbulence and licentiousness.†

The popularity and success of a Protestant preacher were very galling to the clergy in that quarter, who were, almost to a man, bigoted Papists, and enjoyed the patronage of the bishop of the diocese. Tonsal, Bishop of Durham, like his friend Sir Thomas More, was one of those men of whom it is extremely difficult to give a correct idea, qualities of an opposite kind being apparently blended

* Strype's Memor. of Reform. iii. 235.
Knox, Historie, 85, 289.

† Knox, Historie, p. 289.

in his character. Surpassing all his brethren in polite learning, he was the patron of bigotry and superstition. Displaying, in private life, that moderation and suavity of manners which liberal studies usually inspire,* he was accessory to the public measures of a reign disgraced throughout by the most shocking barbarities. Claiming our praise for honesty, by opposing in Parliament innovations which, in his judgment, he condemned, he again forfeited it by the most tame acquiescence and pliant conformity; thereby maintaining his station amidst all the revolutions of religion during three successive reigns. He had paid little attention to the science immediately connected with his profession, and most probably was indifferent to the controversies then agitated; but living in an age in which it was necessary for every man to choose his side, he adhered to those opinions which had been long established, and were friendly to the power and splendour of the ecclesiastical order. As if anxious to atone for his fault, in forwarding those measures which produced a breach between England and the Roman See, he opposed in Parliament all the subsequent changes. Opposition awakened his zeal; he became at last a strenuous advocate for the Popish tenets; and wrote a book in defence of transubstantiation, of which says bishop Burnet, "the Latin style is better than the divinity."

The labours of a preacher within his diocese, who exerted himself to overthrow what the bishop wished to support, must have been very disagreeable to Tonsal. As Knox acted under the sanction of the Protector and Council, he durst not inhibit him; but he was disposed to listen to and encourage informations lodged by the clergy against the doctrine which he taught. Although the town of Berwick was Knox's principal station during the years 1549 and 1550, it is probable that he was appointed to preach occasionally in the adjacent country. Whether, in the course of his itinerancy, he had, in the beginning of 1550, gone as far as Newcastle, and preached in that town, or

* Sir Thomas More, in one of his letters to Erasmus, gives the following character of Tonsal: "Ut nemo est omnibus bonis literis instructor, nemo vita moribusque severior ita nemo est usquam in convictu jucundior."

whether he was called up to it, in consequence of complaints against his sermons delivered at Berwick, does not clearly appear. It is however certain, that a charge was exhibited against him before the bishop, for teaching that the sacrifice of the mass was idolatrous ; and a day was appointed for him publicly to assign his reasons for this opinion.

Accordingly, on the 4th of April, 1550, a great assembly being convened in Newcastle, among whom were the members of the council,* the Bishop of Durham, and the learned men of his cathedral, Knox delivered, in their presence, an ample defence of the doctrine, against which complaints had been made. After an appropriate exordium, in which he stated to the audience the occasion and design of his appearance before them, and cautioned them against the powerful prejudices of education and custom in favour of erroneous opinions and practices in religion, he proceeded to establish the doctrine which he had taught. The mode in which he treated the subject was well adapted to his auditory, which was composed of the illiterate as well as the learned. He proposed his arguments in the syllogistic form, according to the practice of the schools, but illustrated them with a plainness level to the meanest capacity among his hearers. Passing over the more gross notions, and the shameful traffic in masses, extremely common at that time, and which were already falling of their own accord before the light of truth ; he boldly assailed the fabric of idolatry, and engaged to prove that the mass, “in her most high degree, and most honest garments,” was an idol struck from the inventive brain of superstition, which had supplanted the sacrament of the Supper, and engrossed the honour due to the person and sacrifice of Jesus Christ. “Spare no arrows,” was the motto which Knox wore on his standard ; the authority of Scripture, and the force of reasoning, grave reproof, and pointed irony, were in their turn em-

* Besides the great council which managed the affairs of the kingdom under the Protector, a number of the privy councillors who belonged to this part of the country, composed a subordinate board, called “the council of the north.” The members here referred to

probably belonged to this council, and not to the town-council of Newcastle. If I am right in this conjecture, Knox might owe to them, and not to the bishop, the liberty of this public defence.

ployed by him. In the course of this defence, he did not restrain those sallies of raillery, which the fooleries of the Popish superstition irresistibly provoke, even from those who are deeply impressed with its pernicious tendency. Before concluding, he adverted to certain doctrines which had been taught in that place on the preceding Sunday, the falsehood of which he was prepared to demonstrate; but he would, in the first place, he said, submit to the preacher the notes of the sermon which he had taken down, that he might correct them as he saw proper; for his object was not to misrepresent or captiously entrap a speaker, by catching at words unadvisedly uttered, but to defend the truth, and warn his hearers against errors destructive to their souls. The defence, as drawn up by Knox himself, is now before me in manuscript, and the reader who wishes a more particular account of its contents will find it in the notes.*

This defence had the effect of extending Knox's fame through the North of England, while it completely silenced the bishop and his learned coadjutors.† He continued to preach at Berwick during the remaining part of this year, and in the following, was removed to Newcastle, and placed in a sphere of greater usefulness. In December 1551, the Privy Council conferred on him a mark of their approbation, by appointing him one of King Edward's chaplains in ordinary. "It was appointed (says his Majesty, in a Journal of important transactions which he wrote with his own hand) that I should have six chaplains ordinary, of which two ever to be present, and four absent in preaching; one year, two in Wales, two in Lancashire and Derby; next year, two in the marches of Scotland, and two in Yorkshire; the third year, two in Norfolk and Essex, and two in Kent and Sussex. These six to be Bill,

* See Note A. — Period Third.

† The compiler of the account of Knox, prefixed to the edition of his History, printed anno 1732, says, that the MS. containing the Defence, bears that it "quite silenced" the bishop and his doctors. But that writer does not appear to have ever seen the MS. which contains nothing of the kind. The fact is, however, attested by the Bishop of Ossory, who had good opportunities of knowing its truth,

and who is accurate in his account of other circumstances relative to it. His words are, "Et 4 die Aprilis ejusdem anni [1550] aperiens in concione opinionem, ejus idolatrias et horrendas blasphemias, tam solidis argumentis, abominationem esse probabat, ut, cum omnibus sciolis, Saturnius ille somniator, [Dunelmensis] refragare non possit." Baleus, De Script. Scot. et Hibern, Art. Knoxus.

Harle,* Perne, Grindal, Bradford, and ———.”† The name of the sixth has been dashed out of the Journal, but the industrious Strype has shewn that it was Knox.‡ “These it seems (says Bishop Burnet) were the most zealous and readiest preachers, who were sent about as itinerants, to supply the defects of the greatest part of the clergy, who were generally very faulty.”§ An annual salary of £40 was allotted to each of the chaplains.||

In the course of this year, Knox was consulted about the Book of Common Prayer, which was undergoing a revision. On that occasion, it is probable that he was called up for a short time to London. Although the persons who had the chief direction of ecclesiastical affairs were not disposed, or did not think it yet expedient, to introduce that thorough reform which he judged necessary, in order to reduce the worship of the English Church to the Scripture model, his representations were not altogether disregarded. He had influence to procure an important change on the communion office, completely excluding the notion of the corporeal presence of Christ in the sacrament, and guarding against the adoration of the elements, too much countenanced by the practice of kneeling at their reception, which was still continued.¶ Knox speaks of these amendments with great satisfaction, in his *Admonition to the Professors of the Truth in England*. “Also God gave boldness and knowledge to the Court of Parliament to take away the *round clipped god*, wherein standeth all the holiness of the Papists, and to command common bread to be

* John Harle or Harley, was afterwards made Bishop of Hereford, May 26, 1553. Strype's Cranmer, p. 301. A late writer has confounded this Englishman with William Harlowe, who was minister of St. Cuthbert's Church, near Edinburgh. Scott's History of the Reformers in Scotland, p. 242.

† King Edward's Journal, apud Burnet, ii. Records, p. 42.

‡ Memorials of the Reformation, ii. 297. Memor. of Cranmer, p. 292. Burnet, iii. 212. Records, 420, 422.

§ Burnet ii. 171.

|| Strype's Memor. of Reform. ut supra. Life of Grindal, p. 7. Mr. Strype says, that the number of chaplains was afterwards reduced to four, Bradford and Knox being dropped from the list. But we find both of these preaching in their turn before the Court, in

the year 1553. In the Council-book a warrant was granted, October 27, 1552, to four gentlemen to pay to Knox, “His Majesty's preacher in the north, forty pounds, as his Majesty's reward.” Strype's Cranmer, 292. This salary he retained until the death of Edward; for in a letter wrote by him at the time he left England, he says: “Ather the Queens Majestie, or sum Thesaurer will be 40 pounds rycher by me, sae meikle lack I of the deutie of my patentis; but that littil trubilis me.” MS. Letters, p. 286. The biographer of Sir David Lindsay, (Chalmers's Lindsay, i. 32.) has stated that Knox was in the pay of England as early as 1547; but this appears to be a mistake; as it is not likely he could be known to the English Council before he entered the Castle of St. Andrew's.

¶ See Note B.—Period Third.

used at the Lord's table, and also to take away the most part of superstitions (kneeling at the Lord's table excepted) which before profaned Christ's true religion." These alterations gave great offence to the Papists. In a disputation with Latimer, after the accession of Queen Mary, the Prolocutor, Dr. Weston, complained of our countryman's influence in procuring them. "A *runnagate Scot* did take away the adoration or worshipping of Christ in the sacrament, by whose procurement that heresie was put into the last communion-book; so much prevailed that one man's authoritie at that time.*" In the following year, he was employed in revising the *Articles of Religion*, previous to their ratification by Parliament.†

During his residence at Berwick, Knox had formed an acquaintance with Miss Marjory Bowes, a young lady who afterwards became his wife. She belonged to the honourable family of Bowes, and was nearly allied to Sir Robert Bowes, a distinguished courtier during the reigns of Henry VIII. and his son Edward.‡ Before he left Berwick, he had paid his addresses to this young lady, and met with a favourable reception. Her mother also was friendly to the match; but owing to some reason, most probably the presumed aversion of her father, it was deemed prudent to delay the consummating of the union. But having come under a formal promise to her, he considered himself, from that time, as sacredly bound; and in his letters to Mrs. Bowes, he always addressed her by the name of *Mother*.§

Without derogating from the praise justly due to those worthy men who were at this time employed in dissemi-

* Fox, p. 1326. Strype questions the truth of Weston's statement, and says that Knox "was hardly come into England (at least any further than Newcastle) at this time." *Annals*, iii. 117. But we have already seen that he arrived in England as early as the beginning of anno 1549.

† October 2, (1552) a letter was directed to Mess. Harley, Bill, Horn, Grindal, Pern, and Knox, to consider certain articles exhibited to the King's Majesty, to be subscribed by all such as shall be admitted to be preachers or ministers in any part of the realm; and to make report of their opinions touching the same." Council book, apud Strype's *Cranmer*, p. 273. Their report was returned before the 20th November, *ibid.* p. 301. Burnet says the order was given Octob. 20. *History*, iii. 212.

The articles agreed to at this time were 42 in number. In 1562 they were reduced to 39, as they still continue.

‡ Her father was Richard Bowes, youngest son of Sir Ralph Bowes of Streatlam, and her mother was one of the daughters and co-heirs of Sir Roger Aske of Aske in Yorkshire.

§ From this appellation in the MS. letters, I concluded that Knox was married to Miss Bowes before he left Berwick, until I met with a book printed by him, to which one of his letters to Mrs. Bowes was added. On the margin of this, opposite to a place in which he had named her mother, is this note: "I had maid faithful promise, before witnes, to Marjorie Bowes her daughter, so as she tuke me for sone, I hartly embrased her as my mother." Knox's Answer to Tyrie the Jesuit. F. ii.

nating religious truth through England, I may say, that our countryman was not behind the first of them, in the unwearied assiduity with which he laboured in the stations assigned to him. From an early period, his mind seems to have presaged, that the golden opportunity enjoyed would not be of long duration. He was eager to "redeem the time," and indefatigable both in his studies and teaching. In addition to his ordinary services on Sabbath, he preached regularly on week days, frequently on every day of the week.* Besides the portion of time which he allowed to study, he was often employed in conversing with persons who applied to him for advice on religious subjects.† The Council were not insensible to the value of his services, and conferred on him several marks of approbation. They wrote different letters to the governors and principal inhabitants of the places where he preached, recommending him to their notice and protection.‡ They secured him in the regular payment of his salary, until such time as he should be provided with a benefice.§ It was also out of respect to him, that, in September 1552, they granted a patent to his brother, William Knox, a merchant, giving him liberty, for a limited time, to trade to any port of England, in a vessel of a hundred tons burden.¶

But the things which recommended Knox to the Council, drew upon him the hatred of a numerous and powerful party in the northern counties, who remained addicted to Popery. Irritated by his boldness and success in attacking their superstition, and sensible that it would be vain,

* MS. Letters, p. 265, 276.

† Ibid. Passim.

* They wrote a letter in his commendation, Dec. 9, 1552, to Lord Wharton, Deputy Warden of the Borders. When he was employed in Buckinghamshire, during the following year, in order to secure greater acceptance and respect to him in that county, they wrote in his favour to Lords Russel and Windsor, the Justices of the Peace, and other gentlemen. Strype's Cranmer, p. 292.

§ Strype's Memor. of the Reformation, ii. 533.

¶ Bishop Burnet, and Mr. Strype, (Memor. of Reform. ii. 299.) who record this fact, conjecture that the patentee was a relation of our Reformer. That he was his brother, is evident from Knox's letters, which mention his being in England about this time. In a let-

ter written in 1553, he says: "My brother, Williame Knox, is presentlie with me. What ye wald haif frome Scotland, let me know this Monunday at nycht; for hie must depart on Tyisday." MS. p. 271. The same person seems to be meant in the following extract from another letter: "My brother hath communicat his haill hart with me; and I persave the mychtie operation of God. And sa lat us be establissit in his infinit gudnes and maist sure promissis." MS. 266.

William Knox afterwards became a preacher, and was minister of Cockpen, in Mid-Lothian, after the establishment of the Reformation in Scotland. No fewer than fourteen ministers of the Church of Scotland are numbered amongst his descendants.--Genealogical Account of the Knoxes, apud Scott's History of the Reformers in Scotland, p. 152.

and even dangerous to prefer an accusation against him on that ground, they watched for an opportunity of catching at something in his discourses or behaviour, which they might improve to his disadvantage. He had long observed with great anxiety the impatience with which the Papists submitted to the present government, and their eager desires for any change which might lead to the overthrow of the Protestant religion; desires which were expressed by them in the north, without that reserve which prudence dictated in places adjacent to the seat of authority. He had witnessed the joy with which they received the news of the Protector's fall, and was no stranger to the satisfaction with which they circulated prognostications as to the speedy demise of the king. In a sermon preached by him about Christmas 1552, he gave vent to his feelings on this subject; and lamenting the obstinacy of the Papists, asserted, that such as were enemies to the gospel then preached in England, were secret traitors to the crown and commonwealth, thirsted for nothing more than his Majesty's death, and cared not who should reign over them, provided they got their idolatry again erected. This free speech was immediately laid hold of by his enemies, and transmitted, with many aggravations, to some great men about court, secretly in their interest, who thereupon preferred a charge against him, for high offences, before the Privy Council.*

In taking this step, they were not a little encouraged by their knowledge of the sentiments of the Duke of Northumberland, who had lately come down to his charge as Warden General of the Northern Marches.† This ambitious and unprincipled nobleman had employed his affected zeal for the reformed religion as a stirrup to mount to the highest preferment in the state, which he had recently secured by the ruin of the Duke of Somerset, the Protector of the kingdom. Knox had offended him by publicly lamenting

* MS. Letters, p. 193. Knox's Admonition to the Professors of the Truth in England, p. 61; apud History, Edin. 1644, 4to.

† The Earl of Warwick, now created Duke of Northumberland, was appointed Warden-

General of the Northern Marches in Oct. 1551. But having important objects to secure at Court, he excused himself from going north until June, 1552. Strype's Memor. of the Reformation, ii. 282, 339.

the fall of Somerset as threatening danger to the Reformation, of which he had always shewn himself a zealous friend, whatever his faults might have been in other respects.* Nor could the freedom which the preacher used, in reproof from the pulpit the vices of great as well as small, fail to be displeasing to a man of Northumberland's character. On these accounts, he was desirous to have Knox removed from that quarter, and had actually applied for this, by a letter to the Council, previous to the occurrence just mentioned; alleging, as a pretext, that great numbers of Scotsmen resorted unto him: as if any real danger was to be apprehended from this intercourse with a man, of whose fidelity the existing government had so many strong pledges, and who uniformly employed all his influence to remove the prejudices of his countrymen against England.†

In consequence of the charges exhibited against him to the Council, he received a citation to repair immediately to London, and answer for his conduct. The following extract of a letter, addressed to Miss Bowes,‡ will shew the state of his mind upon receiving this summons. "Urgent necessity will not suffer that I testify my mind unto you. My Lord of Westmoreland§ has written unto me this Wednesday, at six of the clock at night, immediately thereafter to repair unto him, as I will answer at my peril. I could not obtain license to remain the time of the sermon upon the morrow. Blessed be God who does ratify and confirm the truth of his word from time to time, as our weakness shall require! Your adversary, sister, doth labour that you should doubt whether this be the word of God or not. If

* MS. Letters, p. 112, 173. Knox considered that the Papists had a secret hand in fomenting those dissensions which led to the condemnation and execution of the Protector. His suspicions were not ill founded. See Strype's Memor. of the Reform. ii. 306-7.

† The Duke's letter was dated Nov. 23, 1552. Hayne's State Papers, i. 136. Brand's History of Newcastle, p. 304. Redpath's Border History, p. 577.

‡ A great number of his letters in the MS. are superscribed "To his Sister." It appears from internal evidence that this was a daughter of Mrs. Bowes, but whether the young lady whom he married, or a sister of hers, I cannot

say with certainty. One letter has this superscription, "To Mariorie Bowes, who was his first wife." In it he addresses her by the name of Sister, and at the close says, "I think this be the first letter that ever I wrait to you." MS. p. 335. But there is no date by which to compare it with other letters.

§ Henry Nevyl, Earl of Westmoreland, was, by the interest of the Duke of Northumberland, admitted a member of the Privy Council, anno 1552. He was also a member of the Council for the North, and Lord Lieutenant of the bishopric of Durham. His private character was indifferent. Strype's Memor. of the Reform. ii. 401, 457-9.

there had never been testimonial of the undoubted truth thereof before these our ages, may not such things as we see daily come to pass prove the verity thereof? Doth it not affirm, that it shall be preached, and yet contemned and lightly regarded by many; that the true professors thereof shall be hated by father, mother, and others of the contrary religion; that the most faithful shall be persecuted? And cometh not all these things to pass in ourselves? Rejoice, sister, for the same word that forespeaketh trouble doth certify us of the glory consequent. As for myself, albeit the extremity should now apprehend me, it is not come unlooked for. But alas! I fear that yet I be not ripe nor able to glorify Christ by my death; but what lacketh now, God shall perform in his own time.—Be sure I will not forget you and your company, so long as mortal man may remember any earthly creature.”*

Upon reaching London, he found that his enemies had been uncommonly industrious in exciting prejudices against him, by transmitting the most false and calumnious information. But the Council, after hearing his defences, were convinced of their malice, and honourably acquitted him. He was employed to preach before the Court, and gave great satisfaction, particularly to his Majesty, who contracted a favour for him, and was very desirous to have him promoted in the Church.† It was resolved by the Council that he should preach in London and the southern counties, during the year 1553; but he was allowed to return for a short time to Newcastle, either to settle his affairs, or as a public testimony of his innocence. In a letter to his sister, (Miss Bowes,) dated Newcastle, 23d March, 1553, we find him writing as follows: “Look farther of this matter in the other letter,‡ written unto you at such time as many thought I should never write after to man. Heinous were the delations laid against me, and many are the lies that are made to the Council. But God one day shall destroy all lying tongues, and shall deliver his servants

* MS. Letters, p. 267-9.

‡ The letter last quoted. MS. p. 273-4.

† Ibid. p. 112. Melchior Adam, Vit. Ext. compared with p. 268. Theol. p. 137.

from calamity. I look but one day or other to fall in their hands ; for more and more rageth the members of the devil against me. This assault of Satan has been to his confusion, and to the glory of God. And therefore, sister, cease not to praise God, and to call for my comfort ; for great is the multitude of enemies, whom every one the Lord shall confound. I intend not to depart from Newcastle before Easter."

The vigour of his constitution had been greatly impaired by his confinement in the French galleys, which, together with his labours in England, had brought on a gravel. In the course of the year 1553, he endured several violent attacks of this acute disorder, accompanied with severe pain in his head and stomach. " My daily labours must now increase, (says he, in the letter last quoted,) and therefore spare me as much as you may. My old malady troubles me sore, and nothing is more contrarious to my health than writing. Think not that I weary to visit you ; but unless my pain shall cease, I will altogether become unprofitable. Work, O Lord, even as pleaseth thy infinite goodness, and relax the troubles, at thy own pleasure, of such as seeketh thy glory to shine, Amen."* In another letter to the same correspondent, he writes: " The pain of my head and stomach troubles me greatly. Daily I find my body decay ; but the providence of my God shall not be frustrate. I am charged to be at Widdrington upon Sunday, where I think I shall also remain Monday. The Spirit of the Lord Jesus rest with you. Desire such faithful as with whom ye communicate your mind, to pray that, at the pleasure of our good God, my dolour, both of body and spirit, may be relieved somewhat ; for presently it is very bitter. Never found I the spirit, I praise my God, so abundant where God's glory ought to be declared ; and therefore I am sure there abides something that yet we see not."† " Your messenger (says he, in another letter) found me in bed, after a sore trouble and most dolorous night ; and so dolour may complain to dolour when we

* MS. p. 276.

† MS. p. 260-1.

two meet. But the infinite goodness of God, who never despiseth the petitions of a sore troubled heart, shall, at his good pleasure, put end to these pains that we presently suffer, and in place thereof shall crown us with glory and immortality for ever. But, dear sister, I am even of mind with faithful Job, yet most sore tormented, that my pain shall have no end in this life. The power of God may, against the purpose of my heart, alter such things as appear not to be altered, as he did unto Job; but dolour and pain, with sore anguish, cries the contrary. And this is more plain than ever I spake, to let you know ye have a fellow and companion in trouble: and thus rest in Christ, for the head of the serpent is already broken down, and he is stinging us upon the heel.”*

About the beginning of April, 1553, he returned to London. In the month of February preceding, Archbishop Cranmer had been desired by the Council to present him to the vacant living of All-Hallows, in that city.† This proposal, which originated in the personal favour of the young King, was very disagreeable to Northumberland, who exerted himself privately to hinder his preferment. The interference of the Duke was, however, unnecessary on the present occasion; for when the living was offered to him, Knox declined it, and when questioned as to his reasons, readily acknowledged, that he had not freedom in his mind to accept of a fixed charge in the present state of the English Church. His refusal, with the reason assigned, having given offence, he was, on the 14th of April, called before the Privy Council. There were present the Archbishop of Canterbury, Goodrick Bishop of Ely and Lord Chancellor, the Earls of Bedford, Northampton and Shrewsbury, the Lords Treasurer and Chamberlain, with the two Secretaries. They asked him, Why he had refused the benefice provided for him in London? He answered, that he was fully satisfied that he could be more useful to the Church in another situation. Being interrogated, If it was his opinion, that no person could lawfully serve in ecclesiastical ministrations, according to the present laws of that

* MS. p. 262.

† Strype's Cranmer, p. 292.

realm? he frankly replied, That there were many things which needed reformation, without which, ministers could not, in his opinion, discharge their office conscientiously in the sight of God; for no minister, according to the existing laws, had power to prevent the unworthy from participating of the sacraments, which was “a chief point of his office.” He was asked, If kneeling at the Lord’s table was not indifferent? He replied, that Christ’s action on that occasion was most perfect, and in it no such posture was used; that it was most safe to follow his example; and that kneeling was an addition and invention of men. On this article, there was a smart dispute between him and some of the Lords of the Council. After long reasoning, he was told, that they had not sent for him with any bad design, but were sorry to understand that he was of a contrary judgment to the common order. He said, he was sorry that the common order was contrary to Christ’s institution. The Council dismissed him with soft speeches, advising him to endeavour to bring his mind to communicate according to the established rites, and to use all means for removing the scruples he entertained for some of the forms of their Church.*

If honours and emoluments could have biassed the independent mind of our countryman, he must have been induced to become a full conformist to the English Church. At the special request of Edward VI. and with the concurrence of his Council, he was offered a bishopric; but the same reasons which prevented him from accepting the living of All-Hallows, determined him to reject this still more tempting offer. The fact is attested by Beza, who adds, that his refusal was accompanied with a censure of the episcopal office, as destitute of divine authority, and not even exercised, in England, according to the ecclesiastical canons.† Knox himself speaks, in one of his treatises, of the “high promotions” offered to him by Edward;‡ and

* The account of this examination before the Council is taken from a letter of Knox, the substance of which has been inserted in Calderwood’s MS. and by Strype (Memor. of the Reform. vol. ii. p. 400.)

† Bezae Icones, Ee. liij. Verbeideni Effigies, p. 92, 93. Melch. Adam. p. 137.

‡ MS. Letters, p. 73.

we shall find him, at a later period of his life, expressly asserting that he had refused a bishopric.*

It may be proper, in this place, to give a more particular account of Knox's sentiments respecting the English Church. It is well known, that the Reformation of religion was conducted in England in a very different way from what was afterwards adopted in Scotland, both as to worship and ecclesiastical polity. In England, the papal supremacy was transferred to the prince; the hierarchy, being subjected to the civil power, was suffered to remain, and the principal forms of the ancient worship, after removing the grosser superstitions, were retained; whereas, in Scotland, all of these were discarded, as destitute of divine authority, unprofitable, burdensome, or savouring of Popery; and the worship and government of the Church were reduced to the primitive standard of scriptural simplicity. The influence of Knox in recommending this establishment to his countrymen, is universally allowed; but, as he officiated for a considerable time in the Church of England, and on this account was supposed to have been pleased with its constitution, it has been usually said that he contracted a dislike to it during his exile on the continent, and having then imbibed the sentiments of Calvin, carried them along with him to his native country, and organized the Scottish Church after the Geneva model. This statement is inaccurate. His objections to the English liturgy were increased and strengthened during his residence on the Continent, but they existed before that time. His judgment respecting ecclesiastical government and discipline was matured during that period, but his radical sentiments on these heads were formed long before he saw Calvin, or had any intercourse with the foreign reformers. At Geneva he saw a Church, which, *upon the whole*, corresponded with his idea of the divinely authorized pattern; but he did not indiscriminately

* Tonsal being sequestered upon a charge of misprison of treason, the Council had come to a resolution, about this time, to divide his extensive diocese into two bishoprics, the seat of one of which was to be at Durham, and of the other at Newcastle. Ridley, Bishop of London, was to be translated to the former,

and it is not improbable that Knox was intended for the latter. "He was offered a bishopric (says Brand,) probably the new-founded one at Newcastle, which he refused—*revera noluit episcopari.*" History of Newcastle, p. 304. Surtees's Durham, i. p. 79.

approve, nor servilely imitate either that, or any other existing establishment.*

As early as the year 1547, he taught, in his first sermons at St. Andrew's, that no mortal man could be head of the Church; that there were no true bishops, but such as preached personally without a substitute; that in religion men are bound to regulate themselves by divine laws; and that the sacraments ought to be administered exactly according to the institution and example of Christ. We have seen that, in a solemn disputation in the same place, he maintained that the Church has no authority, on pretext of decorating divine service, to devise ceremonies, and impose significations of their own upon them.† This position he also defended in the year 1550 at Newcastle, and in his subsequent appearance before the Privy Council at London. It was impossible that the English Church, in any of the shapes which it assumed, could stand the test of these principles. The ecclesiastical supremacy, the various orders and dependencies of the hierarchy, crossing in baptism, and kneeling in the eucharist, with other ceremonies; the theatrical dress, the mimical gestures, the vain repetitions used in religious service, were all cashiered and repudiated by the cardinal principle, to which he steadily adhered, namely, that in the Church of Christ, and especially in the acts of worship, every thing ought to be arranged and conducted, not by the pleasure and appointment of men, but according to the dictates of inspired wisdom and authority.

He rejoiced that liberty and encouragement were given to preach the pure word of God throughout the extensive realm of England; that idolatry and gross superstition were suppressed; and that the rulers were disposed to support the Reformation, and even to carry it farther than had yet been done. Considering the character of the greater part of the clergy, the extreme paucity of useful preachers, and other hindrances to the introduction of the primitive order

* The Churches of Geneva and Scotland did not agree in all points. Holidays have always been, except at the commencement of the Reformation, observed by the former, but were rejected by the latter, from the very first

establishment of the Reformation. Other things in which they differed might easily be mentioned.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 72-74.

and discipline of the Church, he acquiesced in the authority exercised by a part of the bishops, under the direction of the Privy Council, and endeavoured to strengthen their hands, in the advancement of the common cause, by diligent preaching in the stations which were assigned to him. But he could not be induced to contradict or conceal his decided sentiments, and cautiously avoided coming under engagements, by which he must have approved of what he was convinced to be unlawful, or injurious to the interests of religion. Upon these principles, he never submitted to the unlimited use of the liturgy, during the time that he was in England,* refused to become a bishop, and declined accepting a fixed charge. When he perceived that the progress of the Reformation was arrested, by the influence of a Popish faction and the dictates of a temporizing policy; that abuses, which had formerly been acknowledged, began to be vindicated and stiffly maintained; above all, when he saw, after the accession of Elizabeth, that a retrograde course was taken, and a yoke of ceremonies, more grievous than that which the most sincere Protestants had formerly complained of, was imposed and enforced by arbitrary statutes, he judged it necessary to speak in a tone of more decided and severe reprehension.

Among other things which he censured in the English ecclesiastical establishment, were the continuing to employ a great number of ignorant and insufficient priests, who had been accustomed to nothing but saying mass, and singing the litany; the general substitution of the reading of homilies, the mumbling of prayers, or the chaunting of matins and even-song, in the place of preaching; the formal celebration of the sacraments, unaccompanied with instruction to the people; the scandalous prevalence of pluralities; and the total want of ecclesiastical discipline.

* Cald. MS. i. 250. During the reign of Edward, and even the first years of his sister Elizabeth's, absolute conformity to the liturgy was not pressed upon ministers. Strype's Annals, i. 419, 432. Burnet, iii. 305, 311. Hutchinson's Antiq. of Durham, i. 453. Archbishop Parker, in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, administered the elements to the communicants standing, in the Cathedral Church of Canterbury. Her Majesty's Commissioners

appointed the communion to be received in the same posture in Coventry; and the practice was continued in that town as late, at least, as the year 1608. Certain demands propounded unto Richard, Archbishop of Canterbury, &c. p. 45. anno 1605. Removal of Imputations laid upon Ministers of Devon and Cornwall, p. 51. anno 1606. A dispute upon the Question of Kneeling, p. 131. anno 1608.

He was of opinion that the clergy ought not to be entangled, and diverted from the duties of their offices, by holding civil places; that the bishops should lay aside their secular titles and dignities; that the bishoprics should be divided, so that in every city or large town, there might be placed a godly and learned man, with others joined with him for the management of ecclesiastical matters; and that schools for the education of youth should be universally erected through the nation.*

Nor did the principal persons who were active in effecting the English Reformation, differ widely from Knox in these sentiments; although they might not have the same conviction of their importance, and the expediency of reducing them to practice. We should mistake exceedingly, if we supposed that they were men of the same principles and temper with many who succeeded to their places, or that they were satisfied with the pitch to which they had carried the Reformation of the English Church, and regarded it as a paragon and perfect pattern to other churches. They were strangers to those extravagant and illiberal notions which were afterwards adopted by the fond admirers of the hierarchy and liturgy. They would have laughed at the man who could have seriously asserted, that the ceremonies constituted any part of "the beauty of holiness," or that the imposition of the hands of a bishop was essential to the validity of ordination; they would not have owned that person as a Protestant who would have ventured to insinuate, that where these were wanting, there was no Christian ministry, no ordinances, no church, and perhaps—no salvation! Many things which their successors have applauded, they barely tolerated; and they would have been happy if the circumstances of their time would have permitted them to introduce alterations, which have since been cried down as puritanical innovations. Strange as it may appear to some, I am not afraid of exceeding the truth when I say, that if the first English Reformers (including the Protestant Bishops) had been left to their own

* This statement of his sentiments is drawn from his *Brief Exhortation to England for the speedy embracing of Christ's gospel*; printed at Geneva, anno 1559, and at the end of his

History, Edinburgh, 1644, 4to. and from his letters to Mrs. Locke, dated 6th April, and 15th Oct. 1599, apud Cald. MS. i. 380, 491.

choice, if they had not been held back by the dead weight of a large mass of Popishly-affected clergy in the reign of Edward, and restrained by the supreme civil authority on the accession of Elizabeth, they would have brought the government and worship of the Church of England, nearly to the pattern of the other Reformed Churches. If the reader doubts this, he may consult the evidence produced in the notes.*

Such, in particular, was the earnest wish of his Majesty Edward VI. a prince who, besides his other rare qualities, had an unfeigned reverence for the Word of God, and a disposition to comply with its prescriptions, in preference to custom and established usages, who shewed himself uniformly inclined to give relief to his conscientious subjects, and sincerely bent on promoting the union of all the friends of the Reformed religion at home and abroad. Of his intentions on this head, there remain the most unquestionable and satisfactory documents.† Had his life been spared, there is every reason to think that he would have accomplished the rectification or removal of those evils in the English Church, which the most steady and enlightened Protestants have lamented. Had his sister Elizabeth been of the same spirit with him, and prosecuted the plan which he laid down, she would have united all the friends of the Reformation, the great supporters of her authority; she would have weakened the interest of the Roman Catholics, whom all her accommodating measures could not gain, nor prevent from repeatedly conspiring against her life and crown; she would have put an end to those dissensions among her Protestant subjects which continued during the whole of her reign, which she bequeathed as a legacy to her successors, and which, being fomented and exasperated by the severities employed for their suppression, at length burst forth to the temporary overthrow of the hierarchy, and of the monarchy (which patronized its exorbitancies, and resisted a reform, which had been previously attempted upon sober and enlightened principles;) dissensions which subsist to this day, and though softened by the par-

* See Note D.—Period Third.

† See Note E.—Period Third.

tial lenitive of a toleration, have gradually alienated from the communion of that Church a large proportion of the population of the nation ; and which, if a timeous and salutary remedy be not applied, may ultimately undermine the foundations of the English establishment.

During the time that Knox was in London, he had full opportunity for observing the state of the Court ; and the observations which he made filled his mind with the most anxious forebodings. Of the piety and sincerity of the young King, he entertained not the smallest doubt. Personal acquaintance heightened the idea which he had conceived of his character from report, and enabled him to add his testimony to the tribute of praise, which all who knew that prince have so cheerfully paid to his uncommon virtues and endowments.* But the principal courtiers, by whom he was at that time surrounded, were persons of a very different description, and gave proofs, too unequivocal to be mistaken, of indifference to all religion, and readiness to fall in with and forward the re-establishment of the ancient superstition, whenever a change of rulers might afford an opportunity of proposing or carrying such a measure. The health of Edward, which had long been declining, growing gradually worse, so that no hope of his recovery remained, they were eager only about the aggrandizing of their families, and providing for the security of their places and fortunes.

The royal chaplains were men of a very different stamp from those who have usually occupied that place in the courts of princes. They were no time-serving, supple, smooth-tongued parasites ; they were not afraid of forfeiting their pensions, or of alarming the consciences, and wounding the delicate ears of their royal and noble auditors, by denouncing the vices which they committed, and the judgments of heaven to which they exposed themselves. The freedom used by the venerable Latimer is well known from his printed sermons, which, for their homely honesty,

* " We had (says he, in his letter to the faithful in London, Newcastle, and Berwick) ane King of sa godlie disposition towardis vertew, and the treuth of God, that nane frome the beginning passit him, and (to my know-

ledge) none of his yeiris did ever mache him, in that behalf; gif hie myght haif bene lord of his awn will." MS. Letters, p. 119. He has passed a more full encomium upon this Prince, in his Historie, p. 89.

artless simplicity, native humour, and genuine pictures of the manners of the age, continue still to be read with interest. Grindal, Lever, and Bradford, who were superior to him in learning, evinced the same fidelity and courage. They censured the ambition, avarice, luxury, oppression, and irreligion which reigned in the Court. As long as their sovereign was able to give personal attendance on the sermons, the preachers were treated with exterior decency and respect; but after he was confined to his chamber by a consumptive cough, the resentment of the courtiers vented itself openly in the most contumelious speeches and insolent behaviour.* Those who are acquainted with our countryman's character, will readily conceive that the sermons delivered by him at Court, were not less bold and free than those of his colleagues. We may form a judgment of them, from the account which he has given of the last sermon which he preached before his Majesty, in which he directed several piercing glances of reproof at the haughty premier, and his crafty relation, the Marquis of Winchester, Lord High Treasurer, both of whom were among his hearers.†

On the 6th of July, 1553, Edward VI. departed this life, to the unspeakable grief of all the lovers of learning, virtue, and the Protestant religion; and a black cloud spread over England, which, after hovering a while, burst into a dreadful hurricane that raged during five years with the most destructive fury. Knox was at this time in London.‡ He received the afflicting tidings of his Majesty's decease with becoming fortitude, and resignation to the sovereign will of Heaven. The event did not meet him unprepared: he had long anticipated it, with its probable consequences; the prospect had produced the keenest an-

* See Note F.—Period Third.

† His text was John xiii. 18. "He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me." It had been often seen, he said, that the most excellent and godly princes were surrounded with false and ungodly officers and counsellors. Having enquired into the reasons of this, and illustrated the fact from the scripture examples of Achitophel under King David, Shebna under Hezekiah, and Judas under Jesus Christ, he added: "What wonder is it, then, that a young and innocent

king be deceived, by crafty, covetous, wicked and ungodly counsellors? I am greatly afraid that Achitophel be counsellor, that Judas bear the purse, and that Shebna be scribe, comptroller, and treasurer." MS. Letters, p. 175-177, and Admonition, p. 52, 54, apud History, Edin. 1644. 4to.

‡ One of his letters to Mrs. Bowes is dated London, 23d June, 1553. MS. Letters, p. 249. And from other letters it appears he was still there in the following month.

guish in his breast, and drawn tears from his eyes ; and he had frequently introduced the subject into his public discourses, and confidential conversations with his friends. Writing to Mrs. Bowes, some time after this, he says : “ How oft have you and I talked of these present days, till neither of us both could refrain tears, when no such appearance then was seen of man ! How oft have I said unto to you, that I looked daily for trouble, and that I wondered at it, that so long I should escape it ! What moved me to refuse (and that with displeasure of all men, even of those that best loved me) those high promotions that were offered by him whom God hath taken from us for our offences ? Assuredly the foresight of trouble to come. How oft have I said unto you, that the time would not be long that England would give me bread ! Advise with the last letter that I wrote unto your brother-in-law, and consider what is therein contained.”*

He remained in London until the 19th of July, when Mary was proclaimed Queen, only nine days after the same ceremony had been performed in that city, for the amiable and unfortunate Lady Jane Grey. He was so affected with the thoughtless demonstrations of joy given by the inhabitants at an event which threatened such danger to the religious faith which they still avowed, that he could not refrain from publicly testifying his displeasure, and warning them in his sermons of the calamities which they had reason to apprehend.† Immediately after this, he seems to have withdrawn from London, and retired to the north, being justly apprehensive of the measures which might be pursued by the new government.‡

To induce the Protestants to submit peaceably to her government, Mary amused them for some time with proclamations, in which she promised not to do violence to their consciences. Though aware of the bigotry of the Queen, and the spirit of the religion to which she was devoted, the Protestant ministers reckoned it their duty to

* MS. p. 73, 74, also p. 250.

† In his “ Letter to the faithful in London, &c.” he puts them in mind of the premonitions which he had given on different occasions, and, among others, of “ what was spoken in Londone in ma places nor ane, when fyreis

of joy and ryatous banketting wer at the proclamation of Marie your quene.” MS. p. 112, 113.

‡ One of his letters is dated, Carlisle, 26th July, 1553. MS. p. 270.

improve this respite. In the month of August, Knox returned to the south, and resumed his labours. It seems to have been at this time that he composed the *Confession* and *Prayer*, which he commonly used in the congregations to which he preached, in which he prayed for Queen Mary by name, and for the suppression of such as meditated rebellion.* While he itinerated through Buckinghamshire, he was attended by large audiences, which his popularity and the alarming crisis drew together; especially at Amherstham, a borough formerly noted for the general reception of the doctrines of Wickliffe, the precursor of the Reformation in England, and from which the seed sown by his followers had never been altogether eradicated. Wherever he went, he earnestly exhorted the people to repentance under the tokens of divine displeasure, and to a steady adherence to the faith which they had embraced. He continued to preach in Buckinghamshire and Kent during the harvest months, although the measures of government daily rendered his safety more precarious; and in the beginning of November, returned to London, where he resided in the houses of Mr. Locke and Mr. Hickman, two respectable merchants of his acquaintance.†

While the measures of the new government threatened danger to all the Protestants in the kingdom, and our countryman was under daily apprehensions of imprisonment, he met with a severe trial of a private nature. I have already mentioned his engagements to Miss Bowes. At this time, it was judged proper by both parties to avow the connexion, and to proceed to solemnize the union. This step was opposed by the young lady's father; and his opposition was accompanied with circumstances which gave much distress to Knox, as well as to Mrs. Bowes and her daughter. His refusal seems to have proceeded from family pride; but I am inclined to think that it was also influenced by religious considerations; as from different hints dropped in the correspondence, Mr. Bowes appears to have been, if not inclined to Popery in his judgment, at least resolved to comply with the religion now favoured by

* See Note G.—Period Third.

† MS. Letters, p. 289, 291.

the Court. We find Knox writing to Mrs. Bowes on this subject from London, in a letter dated 20th September, 1553. "My great labours, wherein I desire your daily prayers, will not suffer me to satisfy my mind touching all the process between your husband and you, touching my matter with his daughter. I praise God heartily, both for your boldness and constancy. But I beseech you, mother, trouble not yourself too much therewith. It becomes me now to jeopard my life for the comfort and deliverance of my own flesh,* as that I will do, by God's grace, both fear and friendship of all earthly creature laid aside. I have written to your husband, the contents whereof I trust our brother Harry will declare to you and to my wife. If I escape sickness and imprisonment, [you may] be sure to see me soon."†

His wife and mother-in-law were very anxious that he should settle in Berwick, or the neighbourhood of it, where he might perhaps be allowed to reside peaceably, although in a more private way than formerly. But for this purpose some pecuniary provision was requisite. Since the accession of Queen Mary, the payment of the salary allotted to him by government had been stopped. Indeed, he had not received any part of it for the last twelve months. His wife's relations were abundantly able to give him a sufficient establishment, but their dissatisfaction with the marriage rendered them averse. Induced by the importunity of his mother-in-law, he applied to Sir Robert Bowes at London, (her husband's brother,) and attempted, by a candid explanation of all circumstances, to remove any umbrage which he had conceived against him, and procure an amicable settlement of the whole affair. He communicated the unfavourable issue of this interview, in a letter to Mrs. Bowes, of which the following is an extract:

"Dear Mother, so may and will I call you, not only for the tender affection I bear unto you in Christ, but also for the motherly kindness ye have shewn unto me at all times since our first acquaintance, albeit such things as I have desired, (if it had pleased God,) and ye and others have

* His wife,

† MS. Letters, p. 290, 291.

long desired, are never like to come to pass, yet shall ye be sure that my love and care toward you shall never abate, so long as I can care for any earthly creature. Ye shall understand that this 6th of November, I spake with Sir Robert Bowes, on the matter ye know, according to your request, whose disdainful, yea despiteful words hath so pierced my heart, that my life is bitter unto me. I bear a good countenance with a sore troubled heart; while he, that ought to consider matters with a deep judgment, is become not only a despiser, but also a taunter of God's messengers. God be merciful unto him! Among other his most displeasing words, while that I was about to have declared my part in the whole matter, he said, 'Away with your rhetorical reasons, for I will not be persuaded with them.' God knows I did use no rhetoric or coloured speech, but would have spoken the truth, and that in most simple manner. I am not a good oratour in my own cause. But what he would not be content to hear of me, God shall declare to him one day to his displeasure, unless he repent. It is supposed that all the matter comes by you and me. I pray God that your conscience were quiet and at peace, and I regard not what country consume this my wicked carcase. And were [it] not that no man's unthankfulness shall move me (God supporting my infirmity) to cease to do profit unto Christ's congregation, those days should be few that England would give me bread. And I fear that, when all is done, I shall be driven to that end; for I cannot abide the disdainful hatred of those, of whom not only I thought I might have craved kindness, but also to whom God hath been by me more liberal than they be thankful. But so must men declare themselves. Affliction does trouble me at this present; yet I doubt not to overcome by him, who will not leave comfortless his afflicted to the end: whose omnipotent Spirit rest with you. Amen."*

He refers to the same disagreeable affair in another letter, written about the end of this year. After mentioning the bad state of his health, which had been greatly increased

* MS. p. 293, 294.

by distress of mind, he adds, "It will be after the 12th day before I can be at Berwick; and almost I am determined not to come at all. Ye know the cause. God be more merciful unto some, than they are equitable unto me in judgment. The testimony of my conscience absolves me before His face who looks not upon the presence of man."* These extracts shew us the heart of the writer; they discover the sensibility of his temper, the keenness of his feelings, and his pride and independence of spirit struggling with a sense of duty, and affection to his relations.

About the end of November, or beginning of December, he returned from the south to Newcastle. The Parliament had by this time repealed all the laws made in favour of the Reformation, and restored the Roman Catholic religion; but liberty was reserved for such as pleased, to observe the Protestant worship, until the 20th of December. After that period they were thrown out of the protection of the law, and exposed to the pains decreed against heretics. Many of the bishops and ministers were committed to prison; others had already escaped beyond sea. Knox could not, however, prevail on himself either to flee the kingdom or to desist from preaching. Three days after the period limited by the statute had elapsed, he says in one of his letters, "I may not answer your places of Scripture, nor yet write the exposition of the sixth Psalm, for every day of this week must I preach, if this wicked carcase will permit."†

His enemies, who had been defeated in their attempts to ruin him under the former government, had now access to rulers sufficiently disposed to listen to their informations. They were not dilatory in improving the opportunity. In the end of December 1553, or beginning of January 1554, his servant was seized as he carried letters from him to his wife and mother-in-law; and the letters were taken from him, with the view of finding in them some matter of accusation against the writer. As they contained merely religious advices, and exhortations to constancy in the faith which they professed, (which he was prepared to avow be-

* MS. p. 265.

† MS Letters, p. 265.

fore any court to which he might be called,) he was not alarmed at their interception. But, being aware of the uneasiness which the report would give to his friends at Berwick, he set out immediately with the design of visiting them. Notwithstanding the secrecy with which he conducted this journey, the rumour of it quickly spread; and some of his wife's relations who had joined him, persuaded that he was in imminent danger, prevailed on him, greatly against his own inclination, to relinquish his design of proceeding to Berwick, and to retire to a place of safety on the coast, from which he might escape by sea, provided the search after him was continued. From this retreat he wrote to his wife and mother, acquainting them with the reasons of his absconding, and the little prospect which he had of being able, at that time, to see them. His brethren (he said) had, "partly by admonition, partly by tears, compelled him to obey," somewhat contrary to his own mind; for "never could he die in a more honest quarrel," than by suffering as a witness for that truth of which God had made him a messenger. Notwithstanding this state of his mind, he promised, if Providence prepared the way, to "obey the voices of his brethren, and give place to the fury and rage of Satan for a time." *

Having ascertained that the apprehensions of his friends were too well founded, and that he could not elude the pursuit of his enemies if he remained in England, he procured a vessel, which landed him safely at Dieppe, a port of Normandy in France, on the 28th of January, 1554.†

* MS. p. 264.

† Ibid. p. 318. Archibald Hamilton has trumped up a ridiculous story, respecting Knox's flight from England. He says, that by teaching the unlawfulness of female government, he had excited a dangerous rebel-

lion against Queen Mary. But the Queen having marched against the rebels, defeated them with great slaughter; upon which Knox, stained with their blood, fled to Geneva, carrying along with him a noble and rich lady! Dialog. p. 65.

PERIOD FOURTH.

FROM HIS LEAVING ENGLAND, IN 1554, UNTIL HIS RETURN
TO GENEVA, IN 1556, AFTER VISITING SCOTLAND.

PROVIDENCE, which had more important services in reserve for Knox, made use of the urgent importunities of his friends to hurry him away from the danger to which, had he been left to the determination of his own mind, his zeal and fearlessness would have prompted him to expose himself. No sooner did he reach a foreign shore, than he began to regret the course which he had been induced to take. When he thought upon his fellow-preachers whom he had left behind him immured in dungeons, and the people lately under his charge, now scattered abroad as sheep without a shepherd, and a prey to ravening wolves, he felt an indescribable pang, and an almost irresistible desire to return and share in the hazardous but honourable conflict. Although he had only complied with the divine direction, “when they persecute you in one city, flee ye unto another,” and in his own breast stood acquitted of cowardice, he found it difficult to divest his conduct of the appearance of that weakness, and was afraid it might operate as a discouragement to his brethren in England, or an inducement to them to make sinful compliances with the view of saving their lives.

On this subject we find him unbosoming himself to Mrs. Bowes, in his letters from Dieppe. “The desire that I have to hear of your continuance with Christ Jesus, in the day of this his battle, (which shortly shall end to the confusion of his proud enemies), neither by tongue nor by pen can I express, beloved mother. Assuredly it is such, that it vanquisheth and overcometh all remembrance and solicitude which the flesh useth to take for feeding and defence of herself. For, in every realm and nation, God will stir up some one or other to minister those things that appertain to this wretched life; and if men will cease to do their office, yet will he send his ravens: so that in every place,

perchance, I may find some fathers to my body. But, alas! where I shall find children to be begotten unto God, by the word of life, that can I not presently consider; and therefore the spiritual life of such as sometime boldly professed Christ, (God knoweth,) is to my heart more dear than all the glory, riches, and honour in earth; and the falling back of such men as I hear daily do turn back to that idol again, is to me more dolorous than, I trust, the corporal death shall [be], whenever it shall come at God's appointment. Some will ask then, Why did I flee? Assuredly I cannot tell. But of one thing I am sure, the fear of death was not the chief cause of my fleeing. I trust that one cause hath been to let me see with my corporal eyes, that all had not a true heart to Christ Jesus, that, in the day of rest and peace, bare a fair face. But my fleeing is no matter: by God's grace I may come to battle before that all the conflict be ended. And haste the time, O Lord! at thy good pleasure, that once again my tongue may yet praise thy holy name before the congregation, if it were but in the very hour of death."—"I would not bow my knee before that most abominable idol for all the torments that earthly tyrants can devise, God so assisting me, as his holy Spirit presently moveth me to write unfeignedly. And albeit that I have, in the beginning of this battle, appeared to play the faint-hearted and feeble soldier, (the cause I remit to God,) yet my prayer is, that I may be restored to the battle again. And blessed be God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, I am not left so bare without comfort, but my hope is to obtain such mercy, that, if a short end be not made of all my miseries by final death, (which to me were no small advantage), that yet, by Him who never despiseth the sobs of the sore afflicted, I shall be so encouraged to fight, that England and Scotland shall both know that I am ready to suffer more than either poverty or exile, for the profession of that doctrine, and that heavenly religion, whereof it has pleased his merciful providence to make me, among others, a simple soldier and witness-bearer unto men. And therefore, mother, let no fear enter into your heart, as that I, escaping the furious rage of these ravening wolves, (that for our unthankfulness are lately loosed from their bands,) do

repent any thing of my former fervency. No, mother ; for a few sermons by me to be made within England, my heart at this hour could be content to suffer more than nature were able to sustain ; as by the grace of the most mighty and most merciful God, who only is God of comfort and consolation through Christ Jesus, one day shall be known.”*

In his present sequestered situation, he had full leisure to meditate upon the various and surprising turns of providence in his lot, during the last seven years ; his call to the ministry and employment at St. Andrew's, his subsequent imprisonment and release, the sphere of usefulness in which he had been placed in England, with the afflicting manner in which he was excluded from it, and driven to seek refuge as an exile in that country to which he had formerly been carried as a prisoner. This last event seemed in a special manner to summon him to a solemn review of the manner in which he had discharged the sacred trust committed to him, as “ a steward of the mysteries of God.” It will throw light on his character, and may not be without use to such as occupy the same station, to exhibit the result of his reflections on this subject.

He could not, without ingratitude to Him who had called him to be his servant, deny that his qualifications for the ministry had been in no small degree improved since he came to England ; and he had the testimony of his own conscience, in addition to that of his numerous auditors, that he had not altogether neglected the gifts bestowed on him, but had exercised them with some measure of fidelity and painfulness. At the same time, he found reason for self-accusation on different grounds. Having mentioned, in one of his letters, the reiterated charge of Christ to Peter, *Feed my sheep, feed my lambs*, he exclaims, “ O alas ! how small is the number of pastors that obeys this commandment. But this matter will I not deplore, except that I (not speaking of others) will accuse myself that do not, I confess, the uttermost of my power in feeding the lambs and sheep of Christ. I satisfy, peradventure, many men in the small labours I take ; but I satisfy not myself. I

* MS. Letters, p. 70, 71, 107, 108.

have done somewhat, but not according to my duty."* In the discharge of private duties, he acknowledges that shame, and the fear of incurring the malignant scandal of the world, had hindered him from visiting the ignorant and distressed, and administering to them the instruction and comfort which they craved. In public ministrations, he had been deficient in fervency and fidelity, in impartiality, and in diligence. He could not charge himself with flattery, and his "rude plainness" had given offence to some; but his conscience now accused him of not having been sufficiently plain in admonishing offenders. His custom was to describe the vices of which his hearers were guilty, in such colours that they might read their own image; but being "unwilling to provoke all men against him," he restrained himself from particular applications. Though his "eye had not been much set on worldly promotion;" he had sometimes been allured, by affection for friends and familiar acquaintances, to reside too long in particular places, to the neglect of others. At that time, he thought he had not sinned if he had not been idle; now he was convinced that it was his duty to have considered how long he should remain in one place, and how many hungry souls were starving elsewhere. Sometimes, at the solicitation of friends, he had spared himself, and spent the time in worldly business, or in bodily recreation and exercise, when he ought to have been employed in the discharge of his official duties. "Besides these, (says he,) I was assaulted, yea infected, with more gross sins; that is, my wicked nature desired the favours, the estimation, and praise of men: against which, albeit that sometimes the Spirit of God did move me to fight, and earnestly did stir me (God knoweth I lie not) to sob and lament for these imperfections; yet never ceased they to trouble me, when any occasion was offered; and so privily and craftily did they enter into my breast, that I could not perceive myself to be wounded, till vain-glory had almost got the upperhand. O Lord! be merciful to my great offence; and deal not with me according to my great iniquity, but according to the multitude of thy mercies."†

* MS. Letters, p. 308, 309.

† MS. Letters, p. 165-167. Admonition, p. 46-48, ut supra.

Such was the strict scrutiny which Knox made into his ministerial conduct. To many, the offences of which he accused himself will appear slight and venial ; others will perceive in them nothing worthy of blame. But they struck his mind in a very different light, in the hour of adversity and solitary meditation. If he had such reason for self-condemnation, whose labours were so abundant as to appear to us so excessive, how few are there in the same station who may not say, *I do remember my faults this day.*

He did not, however, abandon himself to melancholy ; and unavailing complaints. One of his first cares, after arriving at Dieppe, was to employ his pen in writing suitable advices to those whom he could no longer instruct by his sermons and conversation. With this view he transmitted to England two short treatises. The one was an exposition of the sixth Psalm, which he had begun to write in England, at the request of Mrs. Bowes, but had not found leisure to finish. It is an excellent practical discourse upon that portion of Scripture, and will be read, with peculiar satisfaction, by those who have been trained to religion in the school of adversity. The other treatise was a large letter, addressed to those in London and other parts of England, among whom he had been employed as a preacher. The drift of it was to warn them against defection from the religion which they had professed, or giving countenance to the idolatrous worship erected among them. The conclusion is a most impressive and eloquent exhortation, in which he addresses their consciences, their hopes, their fears, their feelings ; and adjures them by all that is sacred, and all that is dear to them, as men, as parents, and as Christians, not to start back from their good profession, and plunge themselves and their posterity into the gulph of ignorance and idolatry.* The reader of this letter cannot fail to be struck with its animated strain, when he reflects, that it proceeded from a forlorn exile, in a strange country, without a single acquaintance, and ignorant where he would find a place of abode, or the means of subsistence.

* See Note C.—Period Fourth.

On the last day of February, 1554,* he set out from Dieppe, like the Hebrew patriarch of old, "not knowing whither he went;"† and "committing his way to God," travelled through France, and came to Switzerland. A correspondence had been kept up between some of the English reformers and the most noted divines of the Helvetic Church. The latter had already heard, with the sincerest grief, of the overthrow of the Reformation in England, and the dispersion of its friends. Upon making himself known, Knox was cordially received by them, and treated with the most Christian hospitality. He spent some time in Switzerland, visiting the particular churches, and conferring with the learned men. Certain difficult questions, suggested by the present conjuncture of affairs in England, which he had revolved in his mind, he propounded to them for advice, and was confirmed in his own judgment by the coincidence of their views. ‡

In the beginning of May he returned to Dieppe, to receive information from England—a journey which he repeated at intervals as long as he remained on the Continent. The kind reception which he had met with, and the agreeable company which he enjoyed, during his short residence in Switzerland, had helped to dissipate the cloud which hung upon his spirits when he landed in France, and to open his mind to more pleasing prospects as to the issue of the present afflicting events. This appears from a letter written by him at this time, and addressed "To his afflicted Brethren." After discoursing of the situation of the disciples of Christ, during the time that he lay in the grave, and the sudden transition from the depth of sorrow to the summit of joy, which they experienced upon the re-

* His exposition of the sixth Psalm concludes with these words: "Upon the very point of my journey, the last of February, 1553." MS. Letters, p. 109. The reader should recollect, that in our Reformer's time, they did not begin the year until the 25th of March; so that "February, 1553," according to the old reckoning, is "February, 1554," according to the modern.

† His Letters to the Faithful in London, &c. concludes thus: "From ane sore trubel-lit hart, upon my departure from Diep, 1553, whither God knaweth. In God is my trust, through Jesus Chryst his sone; and thairfoir

I feir not the tyrannie of man, nether yit what the Devill can invent against me. Rejoice, ye faithfull: for in joy shall w. meit, whair deth may not dissever us." MS. Letters, p. 157-158.

‡ In a letter dated Dieppe, May 10, 1554, he says: "My awne estait is this. Since the 28 of Januar [counting from the time he came to France] I have travellit throughout all the congregationis of Helvetia, and has reasonit with all the pastoris and many other excellentlie learnit men, upon sic matters as now I cannot comit to wrytting." MS. Letters, p. 318.

appearance of their master ; he adds : “ The remembrance thereof is unto my heart great matter of consolation. For yet my good hope is, that one day or other, Christ Jesus, that now is crucified in England, shall rise again, in despite of his enemies, and shall appear to his weak and sore troubled disciples, (for yet some he hath in that wretched and miserable realm,) to whom he shall say, *Peace be unto you : it is I ; be not afraid.*” *

His spirit was also refreshed at this time by the information which he received of the constancy with which his mother-in-law adhered to the Protestant faith. It appears that her husband had supposed that she and the rest of her family had consciences equally accommodating as his own. It was not until she had evinced, in the most determined manner, her resolution to forsake friends and native country rather than sacrifice her religion, that she was released from his importunities to comply with the Roman Catholic faith.† Before he went to Switzerland, Knox had signified his intention, if his life was spared, of visiting his friends at Berwick.‡ When he returned to Dieppe, he had not relinquished the thoughts of this enterprise.§ His friends, by their letters, would, it is likely, dissuade him from this ; and after cool consideration, he resolved to postpone an attempt, by which he must have risked his life, without any prospect of doing good.|| Wherefore, setting out again from Dieppe, he repaired to Geneva.

It was on this occasion that he first became personally acquainted with the celebrated Calvin, and formed that intimate friendship which subsisted between them till the death of the latter in 1564. They were nearly of the same age, and there was a striking similarity in their sentiments, and in the prominent features of their character. The name of Calvin was then known over all Europe by his writings ; and by none was he held in greater esteem than by the Protestants in England, who had corresponded with him, at the desire of Archbishop Cranmer, respecting the best method of promoting the Reformation. At Geneva

* MS. Letters, p. 313-315.

† Ibid. p. 311.

‡ Ibid. p. 106.

§ Ibid. p. 319.

|| Ibid. p. 310.

his labours had been crowned with signal success, and his acquaintance was courted by Protestants from every part of the Continent, who came to consult him on ecclesiastical matters, or to seek an asylum from the persecutions to which they were exposed in their own country. The Swiss Reformer was highly pleased with the piety and talents of Knox, who, in his turn, entertained a greater esteem and deference for Calvin than for any other of the reformers. As Geneva was an eligible situation for prosecuting study, and as he approved much of the religious order established in it, he resolved to make that city the ordinary place of his residence during the continuance of his exile.

But no prospect of personal safety or accommodation could banish from his mind the thoughts of his persecuted brethren. In the month of July he undertook another journey to Dieppe, to inform himself accurately of their situation, and learn if he could do any thing for their comfort.*

On this occasion he received tidings that tore open those wounds which had begun to close. The severities used against the Protestants of England daily increased, and what was still more afflicting to him, many of those who had embraced the truth under his ministry, had been induced to recant and go over to Popery. In the agony of his spirit he wrote to them, setting before them the destruction to which they exposed their immortal souls by such cowardly desertion, and earnestly calling them to repent.† Under his present impressions, he repeated his former admonitions to his mother-in-law, including his wife, over whose religious constancy he was tenderly jealous. “By pen will I write (because the bodies are put asunder to meet again at God’s pleasure) that which, by mouth, and face to face, ye have heard, That if man or angel labour

* One of his letters to Mrs. Bowes is dated “At Diep the 20 of July, 1554, after I had visitit Geneva and uther partis, and returnit to Diep to learn the estait of Ingland and Scotland.” MS. Letters, p. 255, 256. This is the letter which was published by Knox, along with his answer to Tyrie, in 1572, after the death of Mrs. Bowes.

† In the letter mentioned in last note, he refers his mother-in-law to “a generall letter writtin (says he) be me in greit anguiss of hart to the congregacionis of whome I heir say a

greit part, under pretence that thai may keip faith secreitt in the hart, and yet do as idolaters do, beginn^{is} now to fall befor that idoll, But O alas! blindit and desavit are thai; as thai sall knaw in the Lordis visitatioun, whilk, sa assurreddie as our God liveth, shall shortlie aprehend thai backstarteris amangis the middis of idolateris.” MS. Letters, p. 252. On the margin of the printed copy is this note. “Frequent letters written by Johne Knox to decline from idolatrie.”

to bring you back from the confession that once you have given, let them in that behalf be accursed. If any trouble you above measure, whether they be magistrates or carnal friends, they shall bear their just condemnation, unless they speedily repent. But now, mother, comfort you my heart (God grant ye may) in this my great affliction and dolorous pilgrimage, continue stoutly to the end, and bow you never before that idol, and so will the rest of worldly troubles be unto me more tolerable. With my own heart I oft commune, yea, and as it were comforting myself, I appear to triumph, that God shall never suffer you to fall in that rebuke. Sure I am that both ye would fear and eshame to commit that abomination in my presence, who am but a wretched man, subject to sin and misery like to yourself. But, O mother! though no earthly creature should be offended with you, yet fear ye the presence and offence of Him who, present in all places, searcheth the very heart and reins, whose indignation, once kindled against the inobedient, (and no sin more inflameth his wrath than idolatry doth,) no creature in heaven nor in earth is able to appease.”*

He was in this state of mind when he composed the *Admonition to England*, which was published about the end of this year. Those who have censured him as indulging in an excessive vehemence of spirit and bitterness of language, usually refer to this tract in support of their charge.† It is true that he there paints the persecuting Papists in the blackest colours, and holds them up as objects of human execration and divine vengeance. I do not stop here to inquire whether he was chargeable with transgressing the bounds of moderation prescribed by religion and the gospel, in the expression of his indignation and zeal; or whether the censures pronounced by his accusers, and the principles upon which they proceed, do not involve a condemnation of the temper and language of the most righteous men mentioned in Scripture, and even of our Saviour himself. But I ask, Is there no apology for his severity to be found in the characters of the persons against whom he wrote, and in the state of his own feelings, lacerated, not

* MS Letters, p. 251-253.

† Collier (Eccle. Hist. ii. 441.), cum multis aliis.

by personal sufferings, but by sympathy with his suffering brethren, who were driven into prisons by their unnatural countrymen, “as sheep for the slaughter,” to be brought forth and barbarously immolated to appease the Roman Moloch? Who could suppress indignation in speaking of the conduct of men, who, having raised themselves to honour and affluence by the warmest professions of friendship to the reformed religion under the preceding reign, now abetted the most violent proceedings against their former brethren and benefactors? What terms were too strong for stigmatizing the execrable system of persecution coolly projected by the dissembling, vindictive Gardiner, the brutal barbarity of the bloody Bonner, or the unrelenting, insatiable cruelty of Mary, who, having extinguished the feelings of humanity, and divested herself of the tenderness which characterises her sex, issued orders for the murder of her subjects, and continued to urge to fresh severities the willing instruments of her cruelty, after they were sated with blood, until her own husband, bigotted and unfeeling as he was, turned with disgust from the spectacle!

On such a theme 'tis impious to be calm ;
 Passion is reason, transport temper here.—YOUNG.

“Oppression makes a wise man mad :” but (to use the words of a modern orator,* with a more just application) “the distemper is still the *madness* of the *wise*, which is better than the *sobriety* of *fools*. Their cry is the voice of sacred misery, exalted, not into wild raving, but into the sanctified phrensy of phrophecy and inspiration.”

Knox returned to Geneva, and applied himself to study with all the ardour of youth, although his age now bordered upon fifty. It was about this time that he seems to have made some proficiency in the knowledge of the Hebrew language, which he had no opportunity of acquiring in early life.† It is natural to enquire, by what funds he was supported during his exile. However much inclined his mother-in-law was to relieve his necessities, the disposition

* Mr. Burke.

† MS. Letters, p. 322.

of her husband seems to have put it greatly out of her power. Any small sum which his friends had advanced to him, before his sudden departure for England, was exhausted; and he was at this time very much straitened for money. Being unwilling to burden strangers, he looked for assistance to the voluntary contributions of those among whom he had laboured. In a letter to Mrs. Bowes, he says, "My own estate I cannot well declare; but God shall guide the footsteps of him that is wilsome, and will feed him in trouble that never greatly solicited for the world. If any collection might be made among the faithful, it were no shame for me to receive that which Paul refused not in the time of his trouble. But all I remit to His providence, that ever careth for his own."* I find from his letters, that remittances were made to him by particular friends, both in England and Scotland, during his residence on the Continent.†

In the mean time, the persecution growing hot in England, great numbers of the Protestants made their escape, and sought refuge in foreign countries. Before the close of the year 1554, it was computed that there were no fewer than eight hundred learned Englishmen, besides others of different conditions, living in exile on the Continent, on account of their religion. The foreign Reformed Churches exhibited, on this occasion, an amiable proof of the spirit of their creed, and amply recompensed the kindness which many foreigners had experienced in England, during the reign of Edward. They emulated one another in exertions to accommodate and alleviate the sufferings of the unfortunate refugees who were dispersed among them.‡ The principal places in which the English Protestants obtained settlements, were Zurich, Basle, Geneva, Arrow, Embden, Wezel, Strasburgh, Duysburgh, and Frankfort.

Frankfort on the Maine was a rich imperial city of Germany, which, at an early period, had embraced the Re-

* MS. Letters, p. 256.

† Ibid. pp. 344-373.

‡ It is painful to observe, that many of the Lutherans, at this time, disgraced themselves by their illiberal inhospitality, refusing, in different instances, to admit those who fled from

England into their harbours and towns; because they differed from them in their sentiments on the sacramental controversy. Melch. Adami Vitæ Exter. Theolog. p. 20. Strype's Cranmer, p. 353, 361.

formation, and befriended Protestant refugees from all countries, as far as this could be done without coming to an open breach with the Emperor, who watched their conduct with a jealous eye. There was already a church of French Protestants in that city. On the 14th of July, 1554, the English exiles, who had come to Frankfort, obtained from the magistrates the joint use of the place of worship allotted to the French, with liberty to perform religious service in their own language.* This was granted upon the condition of their conforming as nearly as possible to the form of worship used by the French Church ; a prudent precaution which their political circumstances dictated. The offer was gratefully accepted by the English, who came to a unanimous agreement, that in using the English liturgy they would omit the litany, the audible responses, the surplice, with certain other ceremonies which, “in those Reformed Churches would seem more than strange,” or which were “superstitious and superfluous.” Having settled this point in the most harmonious manner, elected a pastor and deacons, *pro tempore*, and agreed upon some rules for discipline, they wrote a circular letter to their brethren scattered in different places, inviting them to Frankfort, to share with them in their accommodations, and unite their prayers for the afflicted Church of England. The exiles at Strasburgh, in their reply, recommended to them certain persons as most fit for the offices of superintendent and pastors ; a recommendation not asked by the congregation at Frankfort, who did not think a superintendent requisite in their situation, and meant to have two or three pastors of equal authority. They accordingly proceeded to make choice of three : one of whom was Knox, who received information of his election, by the following letter from the congregation delivered to him in Geneva.

“ We haue receiued letters from oure brethern off Straus-

* The English exiles were greatly indebted for this favour to the friendly services of the French pastors. One of these was Valerandus Polanus, a native of Flanders, and minister of a congregation in Strasburgh. During the confusions in Germany occasioned by the In-

terim, he had gone to England, and along with his congregation, obtained a settlement at Glastonbury. Upon the death of Edward he went to Frankfort. Strype's Memor. of the Reformat. ii. 242

brough, but not in suche sorte and ample wise as we looked for ; whereuppon we assembled together in the H. Goaste, (we hope,) and have, with one voice and consent, chosen yow so particulerly to be one off the ministers off our congregation here, to preache unto us the moste lively worde off God, accordinge to the gift that God hathe geven yow ; for as muche as we have here, throughe the mercifull goodnes off God, a churche to be congregated together in the name of Christe, and be all of one body, and also beinge of one nation, tonge, and countrie. And at this presente, having need of such a one as yow, we do desier yow and also require yow, in the name of God, not to deny us, nor to refuse theis oure requests ; but that yow will aide, helpe, and assiste us with your presence in this our good and godlie enterprise, which we have taken in hand, to the glorie off God and the profit off his congregation, and the poore sheepe off Christ dispersed abroad, who, withe your and like presences, woulde come hither and be of one folde, where as nowe they wander abroad as loste sheepe withowte anie gide. We mistruste not but that yow will joiffully accepte this callinge. Fare ye well from Franckford this 24. of September.”*

Notwithstanding this earnest invitation, Knox was averse to undertake the charge, either from a desire to continue his studies at Geneva, or from an apprehension of the difficulties which he might meet with at Frankfort. By the persuasion of Calvin†, however, whose intercession the deputies that brought the letter had employed, he was induced to comply with the call, and repairing to Frankfort in the month of November, commenced his ministry with the unanimous consent and approbation of the congregation. But previous to his arrival, the harmony, which at first subsisted among that people, had been disturbed. The exiles at Zurich, in reply to the circular addressed to them, had sig-

* This letter was subscribed by “ John Bale,” and other twenty. See “ A Brieff Discours off the troubles begonne at Franckford in Germany, anno Domini, 1554. Abowte the book off Common Prayer, &c.” p. xix. xx. Printed anno 1575. To save the repetition of quotation, I may mention, once for all, that, when no other authority is given, my account

of the transactions at Frankfort is taken from this book. It was reprinted about the year 1540 ; but I have made use of the first edition. The writer was a non-conformist ; but his narrative was allowed, by the opposite party, to be correct.

† Knox, Historie, p. 85.

nified that they would not come to Frankfort, unless they obtained security that the Church there would "use the same order of service concerning religion, which was in England last set forth by King Edward;" for they were fully determined "to admit and use no other." By departing from that service, they alleged, they would give occasion to their adversaries to charge their religion with imperfection and mutability, and condemn their brethren in England, who were now sealing it with their blood. To these representations the brethren at Frankfort replied, that they had obtained the liberty of a place of worship, upon condition of their accommodating as much as possible to the form used by the French Church; that there was a number of things in the English service-book which would be offensive to the Protestants among whom they resided, and had been occasion of scruple to conscientious men at home; that, by the variations which they had introduced, no reflection was made upon the ordinances of their late sovereign and his council, who had themselves altered many things, and had resolved on greater alterations, without thinking that they gave any handle to their Popish adversaries; far less did they detract from the credit of the martyrs, who, they were persuaded, shed their blood in confirmation of more important things than mutable ceremonies of human appointment. This answer did not satisfy the learned men at Zurich, though it induced them to lower their tone. Not contented with forming their own resolution, they instigated their brethren at Strasburgh to urge the same request, and by letters and messengers, fomented dissension in the congregation at Frankfort.

When Knox arrived, he found that the seeds of animosity had already sprung up among them. From his sentiments respecting the English service-book, we may be sure that the eagerness manifested by those who wished to impose it, was very displeasing to him. But so sensible was he of the pernicious and discreditable effects of division among brethren exiled for the same faith, that he resolved to act as a moderator between the two parties, and to avoid, as far as possible, every thing which tended to widen or continue the breach. Accordingly, when the congrega-

tion had agreed to the order of the Genevan Church,* and requested him to proceed to administer the communion according to it; although in his judgment he approved of that form, he declined to use it, until their learned brethren in other places were consulted. At the same time, he signified that he had not freedom to administer the sacraments agreeably to the English liturgy. If he could not be allowed to perform this service in a manner more consonant to Scripture, he requested that some other might be employed in this duty, and he would willingly confine himself to preaching: if neither of these could be granted, he besought them to release him altogether from his charge. To this last request they would by no means consent.

Fearing that if these differences were not speedily accommodated, they would burst into a flame of contention, Knox, along with some others of the congregation, was employed to draw up a summary of the Book of Common Prayer, and having translated it into Latin, they sent it to Calvin for his opinion and advice. Calvin replied in a letter, dated Jan. 20, 1555; in which he lamented the unseemly contentions that prevailed among them; signified, that he had always recommended moderation respecting external ceremonies, though he could not but condemn the obstinacy of those who would consent to no change of old customs; in the liturgy of England he had found many tolerable fooleries, (*tolerabiles ineptias*,) things which might be tolerated at the beginning of a Reformation, but ought afterwards to be removed. He thought that the present condition of the English refugees warranted them to attempt this, and to agree upon an order more conducive to edification; and for his part, he could not understand what those meant who discovered such fondness for Popish dregs.†

This letter being read to the congregation, it had a great effect in repressing the keenness of such as had urged the unlimited use of the liturgy; and a committee was appointed to draw up a form which might reconcile all differences.‡

* This was the order of worship used by the Church of Geneva, of which Calvin was minister: It had been lately translated into English.

† Calvini Epist. p. 98, apud Oper. tom. ix. Amstælodami. anno 1667.

‡ Previous to the appointment of this committee, Knox, Whittingham, Fox, Gilby, and

When this committee met, Knox told them that he was convinced it was necessary for one of the parties to relent before they could come to an amicable settlement; he would therefore state (he said) what he judged most proper, and having exonerated himself, would allow them, without opposition, to determine as they should answer to God and the Church. They accordingly agreed upon a form of worship, in which some things were taken from the English liturgy, and others added, which were thought suitable to their circumstances. This was to continue in force until the end of April next; if any dispute arose in the interval, it was to be referred to five of the most celebrated foreign divines. This agreement was subscribed by all the members of the congregation; thanks were publicly returned to God for the restoration of harmony; and the communion was received as a pledge of union, and the burial of all past offences.

But this agreement was soon after violated, and the peace of that unhappy congregation again broken, in the most wanton and scandalous manner. On the 13th of March, Dr. Cox, who had been preceptor to Edward VI. came from England to Frankfort, with some others in his company. The first day that they attended public worship after their arrival, they broke through the established order, by answering aloud after the minister in the time of divine service. Being admonished by some of the elders to refrain from that practice, they insolently replied, "That they would do as they had done in England; and they would have the face of an English Church." "The Lord grant it to have the face of *Christ's Church*," says Knox, in an account which he drew up of these transactions; "and therefore I would have had it agreeable, in outward rites and ceremonies, with Christian Churches reformed."* On the following Sabbath, one of their number intruded himself into the pulpit, without the consent of the pastors or the congregation, and read the Litany; Cox and the other ac-

T. Cole, had composed (what was afterwards called) The Order of Geneva; but it did not meet the views of all concerned. This was different from the order of the Genevan Church, mentioned in the preceding page. It was so called, because first used by the Eng-

lish Church at Geneva; and it continued to be used in the Church of Scotland, for a considerable time after the establishment of the Reformation.

* Cald MS. i. 249.

complices echoing the responses. This offensive behaviour was aggravated by the consideration, that some of them, before leaving England, had been guilty of compliances with Popery, for which they had as yet given no satisfaction to the Church.

Such an insult upon the whole body, and outrage upon all decency and order, could not be passed over in silence. It was Knox's turn to preach on the afternoon of the Sabbath when this interruption occurred. In the course of lecturing through Genesis, he had come to the narration of the behaviour of Ham to his father Noah when he lay exposed in his tent. Having discoursed from this of the infirmities of brethren which ought to be concealed, he remarked that there were other things, which, as they tended to the open dishonouring of God, and disquieting of His Church, ought to be disclosed and publicly rebuked. He then reminded them of the contention which had existed in the congregation, and of the happy manner in which, after long and painful labour, it had been ended, to the joy of all, by the solemn agreement which had been that day flagrantly violated. This, he said, it became not the proudest of them to have attempted. Nothing which was destitute of a divine warrant ought to be obtruded upon any Christian Church. In that book, for which some entertained such an overweening fondness, he would undertake to prove publicly, that there were things imperfect, impure, and superstitious ; and if any would go about to burden a free congregation with such things, he would not fail, as often as he occupied that place, (provided his text afforded occasion,) to oppose their design. As he had been forced to enter upon that subject, he would say further, that, in his judgment, slackness in reforming religion, when time and opportunity were granted, was one cause of the divine displeasure against England. He adverted to the trouble which Bishop Hooper had suffered for refusing some of the ceremonies, to the want of discipline, and to the well-known fact that three, four, or five benefices had been occupied by one man, to the depriving of the flock of Christ of their necessary food.

This free reprimand was much resented by those against

whom it was levelled, especially by such as had held pluralities in England, who alleged that the preacher had slandered their mother church, and ought to be called to account. Loud complaints being made against the sermon, a special meeting was appointed to consider them; but instead of prosecuting their complaints, the friends of the Liturgy began with insisting, that Dr. Cox and his party should be admitted to a vote. This was resisted by the great majority; because they had not yet subscribed the discipline of the Church, nor given satisfaction for their late disorderly conduct, and for their sinful compliances in England. The behaviour of our countryman on this occasion, was more remarkable for moderation and magnanimity than for prudence. Although aware of their hostility to himself, and that they sought admission chiefly to overpower him by numbers, he was so confident of the justice of his cause, and anxious to remove prejudices, that he entreated and prevailed with the meeting to yield, and admit them presently to a vote.* This disinterestedness was thrown away on the opposite party. No sooner were they admitted, and had obtained a majority of voices, than Cox (although he had no authority in the congregation) discharged Knox from preaching, and from all interference in the congregational affairs.†

The great body of the congregation were indignant at these proceedings, and there was reason to fear that their mutual animosity would break out into some disgraceful disorder. A representation of the circumstances having been made by some of the members to the magistrates of Frankfort, the latter, after in vain recommending a private accommodation, issued an order that the congregation should conform exactly to the worship used by the French Church, as nothing but confusion had ensued since they departed from it; if this was not complied with, they threat-

* Knox's words on the above occasion were :
 " I know that your earnest desire to be received at this instant within the number of the congregation, is, that by the multitude of your voices ye may overthrow my cause. Howbeit the matter is so evident, that ye shall not be able to do it. I fear not your judgment; and therefore, do require that ye might be admitted." Cald. MS. i. 252.

† Collier (ii. 395.) says that Knox manifested in this instance, " a surprising compliance." But it appears, even from the account given by that historian, that in the whole of the Frankfort affair, he displayed the greatest moderation and forbearance, while the conduct of his opponents was marked throughout with violence and want of charity.

ened to shut up their place of worship. To this peremptory injunction the Coxian faction pretended a cheerful submission, while they clandestinely concerted measures for obtaining its revocation, and enforcing their favourite Liturgy upon their reclaiming brethren.

Perceiving the influence which our countryman had in the congregation, and despairing to carry their plan into execution, as long as he was among them, they determined in the first place to get rid of him. To accomplish this, they had recourse to one of the basest and most unchristian arts ever employed to ruin an adversary. Two of them, in concurrence with others, went privately to the magistrates, and accused Knox of high treason against the Emperor of Germany, his son Philip, and Queen Mary of England; putting into their hands a copy of a book which he had lately published, wherein the passages upon which the charge was founded were marked! "O Lord God!" says Knox, when narrating this step, "open their hearts to see their wickedness; and forgive them, for thy manifold mercies. And I forgive them, O Lord, from the bottom of mine heart. But that thy message sent by my mouth may not be slandered, I am compelled to declare the cause of my departing, and to utter their follies, to their amendment, I trust, and the example of others, who in the same banishment can have so cruel hearts as to persecute their brethren."*

The book which the accusers left with the magistrates was his *Admonition to England*; and the passage upon which they principally fixed, as substantiating the charge of treason against the Emperor, was the following, originally spoken to the inhabitants of Amersham in Buckingham-

* Cald. MS. i. 254. Knox, upon his return to Geneva, committed to writing an account of the reasons of his retiring from Frankfort. He intended to have published it in his vindication; but upon mature deliberation, he resolved to suppress it, and leave his own character to suffer, rather than expose his brethren and the common cause in which they were engaged. His narrative has been preserved by Calderwood, and has furnished me with several facts. It contains the names of the persons who accused him to the senate of Frankfort, with their advisers; but I have

omitted them, after the example of Knox, in the notice which he has taken of the affair, in his *Historie of the Reformatioun*, p. 85.

Mr. Strype has not discovered his usual impartiality or accuracy in his short account of this affair. He says that Knox had "published some dangerous principles about government," and that the informers "thought it fit for their own security to make an open complaint against him." *Memor. of the Reformat.* lii. 242. Even Collier himself does not pretend such an excuse for the actors.

shire, on occasion of the rumoured marriage of Queen Mary with Philip, the son and heir of Charles V. a match which was at that time dreaded even by many of the English Catholics. “ O England, England, if thou obstinately wilt return into Egypt, that is, if thou contract marriage, confederacy, or league with such princes as do maintain and advance idolatry ; such as the Emperor (who is no less enemy to Christ than ever was Nero) : if, for the pleasure of such princes, thou return to thy old abominations before used under Papistry, then assuredly, O England, thou shalt be plagued and brought to desolation, by the means of those whose favour thou seekest.” The other passages related to the cruelty of Queen Mary of England ; but in none of these was the language of our Reformer stronger or more intemperate than had been employed by the sticklers for the English forms, in speaking of their own Popish sovereign, or against foreign princes who maintained the power of Anti-Christ.*

The magistrates, in consequence of this accusation, sent for Whittingham, a respectable member of the English congregation, and interrogated him concerning Knox’s character. He told them that he was “ a learned, grave, and godly man.” They then acquainted him with the serious accusation which had been lodged against him by some of his countrymen, and giving him the book, charged him, *sub pœna pacis*, to bring them an exact Latin translation of the passages which were marked. This being done, they commanded Knox to desist from preaching, until their pleasure should be known. “ Yet, (says he, in his narrative,) being desirous to hear others, I went to the church next day, not thinking that my company would have offended any. But as soon as my accusers saw me, they, with — and others, departed from the sermon ; some of them protesting with great vehemence, that they would not tarry where I was.” The magistrates were extremely perplexed how to act in this delicate business : on the one hand, they were satisfied of the malice of Knox’s accusers ; on the other, they were afraid that information of the charge would be conveyed to

* See Note B.—Period Fourth.

the Emperor's Council, which sat at Augsburgh, and that they might be obliged to deliver up the accused to them, or to the Queen of England. In this dilemma, they desired Whittingham to advise his friend privately, to retire of his own accord from Frankfort. At the same time, they did not dissemble their detestation of the unnatural conduct of the informers, who, having waited upon them to know the result of their deliberations, were dismissed from their presence with frowns.

On the 25th of March, Knox delivered a very consolatory discourse to about fifty members of the congregation, who assembled at his lodgings in the evening. Next day they accompanied him some miles on his journey from Frankfort, and with heavy hearts and many tears, committed him to God, and took their leave.

No sooner was Knox gone, than Cox, who had privately concerted the plan with Dr. Glauberg, a civilian, and nephew of the chief magistrate, procured an order from the Senate for the unlimited use of the English liturgy, by means of the false representation that it was now universally acceptable to the congregation. The next step was the abrogation of the order of discipline, and then the appointment of a bishop or superintendent over the pastors. Having accomplished these important improvements, they could now boast that they had the "face of an English Church." Yes! they could now raise their heads above all the reformed churches which had the honour of entertaining them; and which, though they might have all the office-bearers and ordinances instituted by Christ, had neither bishop, nor litany, nor surplice! They could now lift up their faces in the presence of the Church of Rome herself, and claim some affinity with her!—But let me not forget, that the men of whom I write were at this time suffering exile for the Protestant religion, and that they really detested the body of Popery, though childishly and superstitiously attached to its attire, and gestures, and language.

The sequel of the transactions in the English congregation at Frankfort, does not properly belong to this memoir. I shall only add that, after some ineffectual attempts to obtain satisfaction for the breach of the church's peace, and

the injurious treatment of their minister, a considerable number of the members left the city. Some of them, as Fox the celebrated martyrologist, repaired to Basil; but the greater part went to Geneva, where they obtained a place of worship, and lived in great harmony and love, until the storm of persecution in England blew over, at the death of Queen Mary; while those who remained at Frankfort, as if to expiate their offence against Knox, continued a prey to endless contention. Cox and his learned colleagues, having accomplished their favourite object, soon left them to compose the strife which they had excited, and provided themselves elsewhere with a less expensive situation for carrying on their studies.*

I have been the more minute in the detail of these transactions, not only because of the share which the subject of this memoir had in them, but because they throw light upon the controversy between the conformists and non-conformists, which runs through the succeeding period of the ecclesiastical history of England. "The troubles at Frankfort," present, in miniature, a striking picture of those contentious scenes which were afterwards exhibited on a larger scale in the mother country. The issue of that affair augured ill as to the prospect of an amicable adjustment of the litigated points. It had been usual to urge conformity to the obnoxious ceremonies, from the respect due to the authority by which they were enjoined. But here there was no authority enjoining them, but rather the contrary. If they were urged with such intolerant importunity in a place where the laws

* Cox was afterwards made to feel a little of the galling yoke which he strove to impose on his brethren. Upon the accession of Elizabeth, that stately princess, still fonder of pompous and Popish equipage than her clegry, kept a Crucifix in her chapel, and ordered her chaplains to perform divine service before it. Dr. Cox was the only one of the refugees who complied with this, but his conscience afterwards remonstrating against it, he wrote a letter to the Queen, requesting to be excused from continuing the practice. In this letter, it is observable, that he employs the great argument which Knox had used against other ceremonies, while he prostrates himself before his haughty mistress with a submission to which our Reformer would never have stooped. "I ought (says he) to do nothing touching religion which

may appear doubtful, whether it pleaseth God or not; for our religion ought to be certain, and grounded upon God's word and will.—Tender my sute, I beseech you, in visceribus Jesu Christi, my dear Sovereign, and most gracious Queen Elizabeth." Burnet. ii. Append. 294. The Crucifix was removed at this time, but again introduced about 1570. Strype's Parker, p. 310. Dr. Cox afterwards fell under the displeasure of his "dear Sovereign," for maintaining rather stiffly some of the revenues of his bishopric. Strype's Annals, ii. 579. It is but justice, however, to this learned man to say, that I do not find him taking a very active part against the non-conformists, after his return to England: he even made some attempts for the removal of the obnoxious ceremonies.

and customs were repugnant to them, what was to be expected in England, where law and custom were on their side? The divines, who were advanced in the Church, at the accession of Elizabeth, professed that they desired the removal of those grounds of strife, but could not obtain it from the Queen; and I am disposed to give many of them credit for the sincerity of their professions. But as they showed themselves so stiff and unyielding when the matter was wholly in their own power; as some of them were so eager in wreathing a yoke about the consciences of their brethren, that they urged reluctant magistrates to rivet it; is it any wonder that their applications for relief were cold and ineffectual, when made to rulers who were disposed to make the yoke still more severe, and to "chastise with scorpions those whom they had chastised with whips?" I repeat it; when I consider the transactions at Frankfort, I am not surprised at the defeating of every subsequent attempt to advance the Reformation in England, or to procure relief to those who scrupled to yield conformity to some of the ecclesiastical laws. I know it is pleaded, that the things complained of are matters of indifference, not prohibited in scripture, not imposed as essential to religion, or necessary to salvation, matters that can affect no well informed conscience; and that such as refuse them, when enacted by authority, are influenced by unreasonable scrupulosity, conceited, pragmatical, opinionative, and what not. This has been the usual language of a ruling party, when imposing upon the consciences of the minority. But not to urge here the danger of allowing to any class of rulers, civil or ecclesiastical, a power of enjoining indifferent things in religion; nor the undeniable fact, that the burdensome system of ceremonial observances, by which religion was corrupted under the Papacy, was gradually introduced under these and similar pretexts; nor that the things in question, when complexly and formally considered, are not really matters of indifference; not to insist at present, I say, upon these topics, the answer to the above plea is short and decisive. "These things appear matters of conscience and importance to the scruplers; you say they are matters of indifference. Why then violate the

sacred peace of the Church, and perpetuate division ; why silence, deprive, harass, and starve men of acknowledged learning and piety, and drive from communion a sober and devout people ; why torture their consciences, and endanger their souls by the imposition of things which, in your judgment, are indifferent, not necessary, and unworthy to become subjects of contention ?”

Upon retiring from Frankfort, Knox went directly to Geneva. He was cordially welcomed back by Calvin. As his advice had great weight in disposing Knox to comply with the invitation from Frankfort, he felt much hurt at the treatment which had obliged him to leave it. In reply to an apologetic epistle which he received from Dr. Cox, Calvin, although he restrained himself from saying anything which might revive or increase the flame, could not conceal his opinion that Knox had been used in an unbrotherly, unchristian manner ; and that it would have been better for the accuser to have remained at home, than to have come as a fire-brand into a foreign country to inflame a peaceable society.*

It appeared from the event, that Providence had disengaged Knox from his late charge, to employ him on a more important service. From the time that he was carried prisoner into France, he had never lost sight of Scotland, nor relinquished the hope of again preaching in his native country. His constant employment, during the five years which he spent in England, occupied his mind, and lessened the regret which he felt at seeing the great object of his desire apparently at as great a distance as ever. Upon leaving that kingdom, his attention was more particularly directed to the state of his brethren in Scotland, with whom he had contrived to carry on an epistolary correspondence ; † and soon after returning from Frankfort, he was informed that matters began to assume a more favourable appearance there than they had worn for a number of years. Encouraged by these assurances, he resolved to pay a visit to his native country, where various events had occurred

* Calvini Epistolæ, p. 98, ut supra. This letter is addressed “ Cnoxo, (by mistake of the publisher, instead of Coxo,) et Gregalibus.

Pridie Idus Junii, 1555. Knox was at Geneva when Calvin wrote that letter.

† One main objects of his journey to Dieppe, was to receive their letters.

since he quitted it, of which it will be necessary to offer a brief recapitulation.

After the surrender of the Castle of St. Andrew's, and the banishment of the Protestants who had taken refuge in it, an irrecoverable blow seemed to have been given to the reformed cause in Scotland. The clergy triumphed in their victory, and flattered themselves that they had stifled the voice of opposition.* There were still many Protestants in the kingdom; but they satisfied themselves with retaining their sentiments in secret, without exposing their lives to certain destruction by avowing them, or exciting the suspicions of their enemies by private conventicles. The Regent, after the alarm of the invasion of the kingdom under the Duke of Somerset had subsided, began to treat all who had embraced the Reformed doctrines with great severity. Many of the barons and gentry, whom it would have been unpopular to charge with heresy, were accused and brought to trial for alleged crimes against the State, under pretext of holding correspondence with the English, or secretly favouring their interests. On these false charges Sir John Melville of Raith, a loyal and pious man, was condemned and beheaded. Cockburn of Ormiston, and Crichton of Brunston, were banished, and had their estates forfeited. Adam Wallace, who had officiated for some time as tutor in the family of Ormiston, was tried for heresy and burnt on the Castle-Hill of Edinburgh. A similar fate would have awaited George Winchester of Kinglassie, had he not contrived to make his escape.† In 1551 the Parliament renewed the laws in support of the Church, and issued fresh interdicts against the publication of heretical ballads and tragedies. At the same time, various attempts were made to correct the more glaring corruptions of Popery, and amend the dissolute lives of the clergy; especially prohibiting them from living in concubinage, and conferring titles and benefices on their illegitimate children. The

* The following lines were commonly used at that time, in allusion to Leslie, and those who suffered exile after the murder of Cardinal Beaton:

Prestis, content you now, prestis, content you now,
For Normond and his companie hes fillit the gallayis fow.

† Knox, Hist. pp. 80, 82, 87. Buchan. Opera, i. 302. Spotsw. 90-91.

bishops, in conformity with the act of the Council of Trent, were ordained to preach personally at least four times a-year, unless prevented by lawful causes; and such of them as were unfit for this duty, from want of practice, were required to employ "learned divines" for instructing them.* While these and other regulations concerning the duties of the clergy and the more regular supply of public preaching, were made by the provincial councils held at Edinburgh in 1549, 1551, and 1552, means were not neglected for suppressing heretical books and opinions, especially profane songs intended to bring the clerical order and the authority of the Church into contempt. The efforts of the councils, however well meant, produced little benefit in the way of reformation, the execution of their canons being intrusted to the very persons who were interested in perpetuating the evils against which they were directed.† But the severe measures adopted against the Protestants were not without their effect, aided as they were by the favour of the government and the activity of the prelates; and we find the Council, which met in 1551, boasting, "that heresy, which had formerly spread through the kingdom, was now repressed, and almost extinguished."

While the progress of the Reformation in Britain was thus obstructed by a variety of adverse causes, two events occurred which proved the means of reviving it in Scotland. These were the accession of Mary to the throne of England, and the elevation of the Queen-Dowager to the regency of Scotland, in 1554. The latter, at an early period, had shewn favour to the Protestants; and having received their support in her recent struggle to wrest the government from the hands of Arran, she found it necessary, from policy as well as gratitude, to screen them from the violence of the prelates, in order that they might be a check on the influence of the primate, who espoused the interest of his brother the ex-Regent. The coolness which had taken place between the Queen-Dowager and Mary of England, emboldened the Protestants still more to make public avowal of their sentiments. Several of those who

* Wilkins' Concil. tom. iv. pp. 46, 48, 65, 69, 73.

† Note C.—Period Fourth.

were driven from the sister kingdom by persecution, took refuge in this country, and were overlooked, in consequence of the security into which the Scottish clergy had been lulled by success. Travelling from place to place, they instructed many, and fanned the latent zeal of those who had formerly received the knowledge of the truth.

William Harlow, whose zeal and knowledge of the doctrines of the Gospel compensated for the defects of his education, was the first preacher that came at this time to Scotland. He had followed the trade of a tailor in Edinburgh; but having become a convert to the Reformed faith, he retired to England, where he received deacon's orders, and was employed as a preacher during the reign of Edward VI. On his return to Scotland, he continued to preach in Ayrshire, and different parts of the country, until the Reformation was established, when he was admitted minister of St Cuthbert's, near Edinburgh.*

After him arrived John Willock, in summer 1555. Willock became afterwards the chief coadjutor of Knox, who entertained the highest esteem and affection for him. The union of their talents and peculiar qualities was of great advantage to the Reformation. Willock was not inferior to Knox in learning; and although he did not equal him in intrepidity and eloquence, he surpassed him in affability, prudence, and address; by which means he was sometimes able to maintain his station and accomplish his purposes, when his colleague could not act with safety or success. He was a native of Ayrshire, and had worn the Franciscan habit; but at an early period, he embraced the Reformed opinions, and fled to England. During the severe persecution for the *six articles*, in 1541, he was thrown into the prison of the Fleet. He was afterwards chaplain to the Duke of Suffolk, the father of Lady Jane Grey; and upon the accession of Queen Mary, he retired to Embden, where he practised as a physician, and had the good fortune to be introduced to Anne, Duchess of Friesland, who favoured

* Episcopal writers have sometimes upbraided the Scottish Church, as reformed by tradesmen and mechanics. They have, however, no reason to talk in this strain; for a sensible religious tradesman is surely more qualified for communicating religious instruc-

tion than an ignorant superstitious priest. Nay, the Church of England herself, after trying those of the latter class, was glad to betake herself to the former. Strype's Annals, i. 176, 177. Keith, Append. p. 90. Hist. p. 498. Cald. MS. i. 256.

the Reformation, and who entertained so high an opinion of his talents and integrity, as to intrust him with a commission to the Queen-Regent of Scotland, (in 1555,) to effect certain arrangements respecting the trade carried on between the two countries.*

Although Knox did not know what it was to fear danger, and was little accustomed to consult his personal ease, when he had the prospect of being useful in his Master's service, none of his enterprises were undertaken rashly, and without serious deliberation upon the call which he had to engage in them. On the present occasion, he felt at first averse to a journey into Scotland, notwithstanding some encouraging circumstances in the intelligence which he had received from that quarter. He had been so much tossed about of late, that he felt a peculiar relish in the learned leisure which he at present enjoyed, and which he was desirous to prolong. His anxiety to see his wife, after an absence of nearly two years, and the importunity with which his mother-in-law, in her letters, urged him to visit them, determined him at last to undertake the journey.† Setting out from Geneva in the month of August, 1555, he came to Dieppe, and sailing from that port, landed on the east coast, near the boundaries between Scotland and England, about the end of harvest.‡ He repaired immediately to Berwick, where he had the satisfaction of finding his wife and her mother in comfortable circumstances, enjoying the happiness of religious society with several individuals in that city, who, like themselves, had not "bowed the knee" to the established idolatry, nor submitted to "receive the mark" of antichrist.§

Having remained some time with them, he set out secretly to visit the Protestants at Edinburgh; intending, after a short stay, to return to Berwick. But he found employment which detained him beyond his expectation. In Edinburgh he lodged with James Syme, a respectable

* Fox, 1099. Spottswood, 93 Smetoni Respons. ad A. Hamiltonum, p. 93. Strype's Annals, ii. App. 46. Parkhurst, Bishop of Norwich, celebrates him in these lines:

Quid memorem quanta Wilocus, Skinerus et Haddon,

Ælmerusque tuos ornarint luce penatos?

O! Deus, O! quales juvenes? Quo principe digni?

His tua luminibus splendet domus.

† MS. Letters, p. 342.

‡ Discourse of the Troubles at Franckford, p. lv. lix. Knox, Historie, p. 90.

§ MS. Letters, p. 343.

and religious burgess, to whose house the friends of the Reformation, as soon as they were informed of his arrival, repaired to attend his instructions. Among these were John Erskine of Dun, whose name has been already mentioned as one of the early patrons of literature and the Reformed doctrines; and William Maitland, younger of Lethington, afterwards Secretary to Mary Queen of Scots. Besides these, a number of other persons had been attracted from different parts of the country to hear him. John Willock was also in Edinburgh at that time.* Those who heard Knox, being exceedingly gratified with his discourses, brought their friends and acquaintances along with them, and his audiences daily increased. Being confined to a private house, he was obliged to preach to successive assemblies; and was almost unremittingly employed by night as well as by day, in communicating instruction to persons who demanded it with extraordinary avidity. The following letter written by him to Mrs. Bowes, to excuse himself for not returning so soon as he had proposed, will convey the best idea of his employment and feelings on this occasion:—

“ The wayis of man ar not in his awn power. Albeit my journey toward Scotland, belovit mother, was maist contrarious to my awn judgement, befoir I did interpryse the same; yet this day I prais God for thame wha was the cause externall of my resort to these quarteris; that is, I prais God in yow and for yow, whome hie maid the instrument to draw me frome the den of my awn eas, (you allane did draw me from the rest of quyet studie,) to contemplat and behald the fervent thirst of oure brethrene, night and day sobbing and gronyng for the breid of lyfe. Gif I had not seine it with my eis, in my awn contry, I culd not have beleveit it! I praisit God, when I was with you, perceaving that, in the middis of Sodome, God had mo Lottis than one, and ma faithfull dochteris than tua. But the fervencie heir dioth fer exceid all utheris that I have seen. And thairfoir ye sall pacientlie bear, altho’ I spend heir yet sum dayis; for depart I cannot unto sic tyme as God quenche

* He soon after returned to Embden.

thair thrist a litill. Yea, mother, thair fervencie doith sa ravische me, that I can not but accus and condemp my sleuthfull coldness. God grant thame thair hartis desire ; and I pray yow adverteis [me] of your estait, and of thingis that have occurit sence your last wrytting. Comfort your self in Godis promissis, and be assureit that God steiris up mo friendis than we be war of. My commendation to all in your company. I commit you to the protection of the omnipotent. In great haist ; the 4. of November, 1555. From Scotland. Your sone, Johne Knox."*

When he arrived in Scotland, he found that the friends of the reformed doctrine, in general, continued to attend the Popish worship, and even the celebration of mass ; principally with the view of avoiding the scandal which they would otherwise incur. This was very disagreeable to Knox, who, in his sermons and conversation, disclosed the impiety of that service, and the danger of symbolizing with it. As some of the Protestants in the city entertained doubts on this subject, a meeting was appointed for the express purpose of discussing the question. Maitland defended the practice with all that ingenuity and learning for which he was distinguished ; but his arguments were so satisfactorily answered by Knox that he yielded the point as indefensible ; and agreed with the rest of his brethren, to abstain for the future from such temporising conduct. Thus was a formal separation made from the Popish Church in Scotland, which may justly be regarded as an important step in the Reformation.†

Mr. Erskine prevailed on Knox to accompany him to his family seat of Dun, near Montrose, where he continued a month, preaching every day. The principal persons in that neighbourhood attended his sermons. After he returned to the South, he resided for the most part in Calder-House, with Sir James Sandilands,‡ who had long supported the cause of the Reformation, and contributed greatly to

* MS. Letters, p. 342, 343.

† Knox, Historie, p. 91.

‡ On the back of a picture of our Reformer, which hangs in one of the rooms of Lord Torphichen's house at Calder, is this inscription : " The Rev. John Knox.—The first sacrament of the super given in Scotland after the Reformation, was dispensed in this hall." The commencement of the Reformation is here

dated from the present visit of Knox to Scotland ; for we have already seen that he administered the ordinance in the Castle of St. Andrew's, anno 1547. The account given by Knox in his History of the Reformation, (p. 92,) seems to imply that he performed this service in the west country, before he did it in Calder House.

its promotion in that part of the country.* Here he was attended by Lord Lorn, (afterwards Earl of Argyle,) the Master of Mar, (afterwards Earl of Mar,) and Lord James Stewart, natural son of James V. and prior of St. Andrew's, (afterwards Earl of Murray ;) the two last of whom Knox lived to see Regents of Scotland. These noblemen were highly pleased with the doctrine which he taught. In the beginning of the year 1556, he was conducted by Lockhart of Bar, and Campbell of Kineancleugh, to Kyle, the antient receptacle of the Scottish Lollards, where there were a number of adherents to the Reformed doctrine. He preached in the houses of Bar, Kineancleugh, Carnell, Ochiltree, and Gadgirth, and in the town of Ayr. In several of these places he also dispensed the sacrament of our Lord's Supper. A little before Easter, the Earl of Glencairn sent for him to his manor of Finlayston, in which, besides preaching, he also dispensed the sacrament, the Earl, his lady, and two of their sons, with some friends participating of the sacred feast.† From Finlayston he returned to Calder House, and soon after paid a second visit to Dun, during which he preached more openly than before. Most of the gentlemen of Mearns did at this time make profession of the Reformed religion, by sitting down at the Lord's table ; and entered into a solemn and mutual bond, in which they renounced the Popish communion, and engaged to maintain the true preaching of the gospel, according as Providence should favour them with opportunities. This seems to have been the first of those religious bonds or covenants, by which the confederation of the Protestants in Scotland was so frequently ratified.‡

The dangers to which Knox and his friends had been

* So early as 1548, he had appointed to the parsonage of Calder, John Spottiswood, who had imbibed the Reformed doctrines from Archbishop Cranmer, and was afterwards made superintendent of Lothian. By this means the Protestant religion was diffused among the parishioners, and preached to the nobility and gentry who frequented Calder House. Knox, Hist. p. 91, 118. Spotswood, p. 90. Keith, p. 530.

† The silver cups which were used on that occasion are still carefully preserved by the family of Glencairn at Finlayston. The parish of Kilmalcolm is favoured with the use of them at the time of dispensing the sacrament. "The

people (says the minister in his statistical account of the parish) respect them much for their antiquity, as well as for the solemnity attending them in former and latter times." Statistical Account of Scotland, vol. iv. p. 279. This writer thinks they had been originally candlesticks, and converted to this use on the emergent occasion: the hollow bottom reversed, forming the mouth of the cup, and the middle, after the socket was screwed out, being converted into the foot. But it is not likely, that the family of Glencairn were so destitute of silver cups, as to need to have recourse to this expedient.

‡ Knox, Historie, p. 92.

accustomed, had taught them to conduct matters with such secrecy, that he had preached for a considerable time and in different places, before the clergy knew that he was in the kingdom. Concealment was, however, impracticable after his audiences became so numerous. His preaching in Ayr was reported to the Court, and formed the topic of conversation in the presence of the Queen Regent. Some affirmed that the preacher was an Englishman; a prelate not of the least pride (Beatoun, Archbishop of Glasgow,) said, "Nay; no Englishman, but it is *Knox* that *knave*".—"It was my Lord's pleasure (says Knox) so to baptize a poor man; the reason whereof, if it should be required, his rochet and mitre must stand for authority. What further liberty he used in defining things like uncertain to him, to wit, of my learning and doctrine, at this present I omit. For what hath my life and conversation been, since it hath pleased God to call me from the puddle of Papistry, let my very enemies speak; and what learning I have, they may prove when they please."* Interest was at this time made by the bishops for his apprehension; but the application was unsuccessful.†

After his last journey to Angus-shire, the friars flocked from all quarters to the bishops, and instigated them to adopt speedy and decisive measures for checking the alarming effects of his preaching. In consequence of this, Knox was summoned to appear before a convention of the clergy, in the Church of the Black-friars at Edinburgh, on the 15th of May. This diet he resolved to keep, and with that view came to Edinburgh, before the day appointed, accompanied by Erskine of Dun, and several other gentlemen. The clergy had never dreamed of his attendance; but being apprised of his design, and afraid to bring matters to extremity, whilst unassured of the Regent's decided support; they met before hand, annulled the summons under pretence of some informality, and deserted the diet against him. On the day on which he should have appeared as a pannel, Knox preached in the bishop of Dunkeld's large lodging, to a far greater audience than had before attended

* Letter to the Lady Mary, Regent of Scotland, apud Historie, p. 417.

† Ibid. p. 416, 417.

him in Edinburgh. During the ten following days, he preached in the same place, forenoon and afternoon; none of the clergy making the smallest attempt to disturb him. In the midst of these labours, he wrote the following hasty line to Mrs. Bowes:—

“Belovit mother, with my maist hartlie commendation in the Lord Jesus, albeit I was fullie purpoisit to have visitit yow befoir this tyme, yet hath God laid impedimentis, whilk I culd not avoyd. They ar suche as I dout not ar to his glorie, and to the comfort of many heir. The trumpet blew the ald sound thrie dayis together, till private houssis, of indifferent largenes, culd not conteane the voce of it. God, for Chryst his Sonis sake, grant me to be myndfull, that the sobbis of my hart hath not bene in vane, nor neglectit, in the presence of his majestie. O! sweet war the death that suld follow sic fourtie dayis in Edinbrugh as heir I have had thrie. Rejose, mother; the tyme of our deliverance approacheth: for, as Sathan rageth, sa dois the grace of the Hailie Spreit abound, and daylie geveth new testimonyis of the eyerlasting love of oure mercifull Father. I can wryt na mair to you at this present. The grace of the Lord Jesus rest with you. In haste—this Monunday. Your sone, John Knox.*

About this time, the Earl Marishal, at the desire of the Earl of Glencairn, attended an evening exhortation delivered by Knox. He was so much pleased with it, that he joined with Glencairn, in urging the preacher to write a letter to the Queen Regent, which they thought might have the effect of inclining her to protect the reformed preachers, if not also to lend a favourable ear to their doctrine. With this request he was induced to comply.

As a specimen of the manner in which this letter was written, I shall give the following quotation, in the original language. “I dout not, that the rumouris, whilk haif cumin to your Grace’s earis of me, haif bene such, that (yf all reportis wer trew) I wer unworthie to live in the earth. And wonder it is, that the voces of the multitude suld not so have inflamed your Grace’s hart with just hatred of such

* MS Letters, p. 343, 344.

a one as I am accuseit to be, that all acces to pitie suld have bene schute up. I am traduceit as ane heretick. accusit as a fals teacher, and seducer of the pepill, besydis uther opprobries, whilk (affirmit be men of warldlie honour and estimatioun) may easelie kendill the wrath of majestatis, whair innocencie is not knawin. But blissit be God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Chryst, who, by the dew of his heavenlie grace, hath so quenchit the fyre of displeasure as yit in your Grace's hart, (whilk of lait dayis I have understaud) that Sathan is frustrat of his interpryse and purpos. Whilk is to my hart no small comfort ; not so muche (God is witnes) for any benefit that I can resave in this miserable lyfe, by protectioun of any earthlie creature, (for the cupe whilk it behoveth me to drink is apoyntit by the wisdom of him whois consallis ar not changeable) as that I am for that benefit whilk I am assurit your Grace sall resave ; yf that ye continew in lyke moderatioun and clemencie towardis utheris, that maist unjustlie ar and sal be accusit, as that your Grace hath begun towardis me, and my most desperat cause." An orator (he continued) might justly require of her Grace a motherly pity towards her subjects, the execution of justice upon murderers and oppressors, a heart free from avarice and partiality, a mind studious of the public welfare, with other virtues which heathen as well as inspired writers required in rulers. But, in his opinion, it was vain to crave reformation of manners, when religion was so much corrupted. He could not propose, in the present letter, to lay open the sources, progress, and extent of those errors and corruptions which had overspread and inundated the Church ; but, if her Majesty would grant him an opportunity and liberty of speech, he was ready to undertake this task. In the mean time, he could not refrain from calling her attention to this important subject, and pointing out to her the fallacy of some general prejudices, by which she was in danger of being deceived. She ought to beware of thinking, that the care of religion did not belong to Magistrates, but was devolved wholly on the clergy ; that it was a thing incredible that religion should be so universally depraved ; or that true religion was to be judged

of by the majority of voices, custom, the laws and determinations of men, or any thing but the infallible dictates of inspired Scripture. He knew that innovations in religion were deemed hazardous ; but the urgent necessity and immense magnitude of the object, ought, in the present case, to swallow up the fear of danger. He was aware that a public reformation might be thought to exceed her authority as Regent : but she could not be bound to maintain idolatry and manifest abuses, nor to suffer the fury of the clergy to cause the murder of innocent men, merely because they worshipped God according to his word.

Though Knox's pen was not the most smooth nor delicate, and he often irritated by the plainness and severity of his language, the letter to the Queen Regent is far from being uncourtly. It seems to have been written with great care ; and in point of language, it may be compared with any composition of that period, for simplicity and forcible expression.* Its strain was well calculated for stimulating the inquiries, and confirming the resolutions of one who was impressed with a conviction of the reigning evils in the Church ; or who, though not resolved in judgment as to the matters in controversy, was determined to preserve moderation between the contending parties. Notwithstanding her imposing manners, the Regent was not a person of this description. The Earl of Glencairn delivered the letter into her hand ; she glanced it with a careless air, and gave it to the Archbishop of Glasgow, saying, *Please you, my Lord, to read a pasquil.*† The report of this induced Knox, after he retired from Scotland, to publish the letter, with additions, in which he used a more pointed and severe style. “ As charitie,” says he, “ persuadeth me to interpret thinges doubfully spoken in the best sence, so my dutie to God, (who hath commanded me to flatter no prince in the earth,) compelleth me to say, that if no more ye esteeme the admonition of God, nor the Cardinalles do the scoffing of pasquilles, then he shall shortly send you messagers, with

* This is more evident from the letter, in its original language, which is now before me in manuscript. In the copies of it which have been published along with his history, free-

doms have been used, and the language is not a little enfeebled by the insertion of unmeaning or unnecessary expletives.

† Historie, p. 92, 425.

whome ye shall not be able on that maner to jest. I did not speak unto you, Madame, by my former lettre, nether yet do I now, as Pasquillus doth to the Pope, in behalf of such as dare not utter their names ; but I come, in the name of Jesus Christ, affirming that the religion which ye maintain is damnable idolatrie : the which I offre myselve to prove by the most evident testimonies of Goddis scriptures. And, in this quarrelle, I present myself againste all the Papistes within the realme, desiring none other armore but Goddis holie worde, and the libertie of my tonge.” *

While he was thus employed in Scotland, he received letters from the English congregation at Geneva, stating that that they had made choice of him as one of their pastors, and urging him to come and take the inspection of them. † He judged it his duty to comply with this invitation, and began immediately to prepare for the journey. His wife and mother-in-law had by this time joined him at Edinburgh ; and Mrs. Bowes, being now a widow, resolved to accompany her daughter and her husband to Geneva. Having sent them before him in a vessel to Dieppe, Knox again visited and took his leave of the brethren in the different places where he had preached. Campbell of Kin-eancleugh conducted him to the Earl of Argyle, and he preached for some days in Castle Campbell. ‡ Argyle and the Laird of Glenorchy urged him to remain in Scotland, but he resisted all their importunities. “ If God so blessed their small beginnings (he said), that they continued in godliness, whensoever they pleased to command him, they should find him obedient. But once he must needs visit that little flock, which the wickedness of men had compelled him to leave.” Accordingly, in the month of July, 1556, he left Scotland, and having arrived at Dieppe, he proceeded with his family to Geneva. §

No sooner did the clergy understand that he had quitted

* Letter, &c. apud Historie, p. 425, 426.

† This congregation, (which consisted of those who had withdrawn from Frankfort), as early as September, 1555, “ chose Knox and Goodman for their pastor, and Gilby requested to supplie the rome till Knox returned owte off France.” Troubles at Franckford, p. lix.

‡ A romantic seat belonging to the family, lying in the bosom of the Ochil hills, imme-

diately above the village of Dollar. In the civil war that raged in the north between the friends and opponents of the Covenant, it was burnt and destroyed by Montrose, in 1645. All that now remains is a picturesque ruin, on the south side of which a sloping green is still pointed out as the spot where Knox preached and dispensed the sacrament.

§ Historie, p. 93.

the kingdom, than they, in a dastardly manner, renewed the summons against him, which they had deserted during his presence ; and upon his failing to appear, they passed sentence against him, adjudging his body to the flames, and his soul to damnation. As his person was out of their reach, they caused his effigy to be ignominiously burned at the cross of Edinburgh. Against this sentence, he drew up his *Appellation*, which he afterwards published, with a supplication and exhortation, directed to the nobility and commonality of Scotland.

It may not be improper here to subjoin his summary of the doctrine taught by him, during his late visit to Scotland, which was declared to be so execrable, and subjected the preacher to such horrible penalties. He taught, that there was no other name by which men could be saved but that of Jesus, and that all reliance on the merits of any other was vain and delusive ; that He, having by his one sacrifice, sanctified and reconciled to God those who should inherit the promised kingdom, all other sacrifices which men pretended to offer for sin were blasphemous ; that all men ought to hate sin, which was so odious before God, that no other sacrifice than the death of his Son could satisfy for it ; that they ought to magnify their heavenly Father, who did not spare Him who is the substance of his glory, but gave him up to suffer the ignominious and cruel death of the Cross for us ; and that those who have been washed from their former sins are bound to lead a new life, fighting against the lusts of the flesh, and studying to glorify God by good works. In conformity with the certification of his Master, that he would deny and be ashamed of those who should deny and be ashamed of him and his words before a wicked generation, he further taught, that it was incumbent on those who hoped for life everlasting, to avoid idolatry, superstition, and all vain religion ; in one word, every mode of worship which was destitute of authority from the word of God. This doctrine he did believe so conformable to God's holy scriptures, that he thought no creature could have been so impudent as to deny any point or article of it ; yet had the false bishops and ungodly clergy condemned him as an heretic, and his doctrine as heretical ; pronoun-

cing against him the sentence of death, in testimony of which they had burned his image : from which sentence he appealed to a lawful and general council, to be held, agreeably to ancient laws and canons ; humbly requiring the nobility and commons of Scotland, until such time as these controversies were decided, to take him, and others accused and persecuted, under their protection, and to regard this his plain Appellation as of no less effect, than if it had been made with the accustomed solemnity and ceremonies.*

The late visit of our Reformer to his native country, was of vast consequence. The foundations of that noble edifice which he was afterwards so instrumental in rearing, were, on this occasion, properly laid, and a separation effected between the adherents of the Protestant religion and that corrupt communion which they had forsaken. Some may be apt to blame him for relinquishing, too precipitately, an undertaking which he had so auspiciously begun. But, without pretending to ascertain the train of reflections which occurred to his own mind, we may trace, in his determination, the wise arrangement of that Providence which watched over the infant Reformation, and guided the steps of the Reformer. His absence was now no less conducive to the preservation of the cause, than his presence and personal labours had lately been to its advancement. Matters were not yet ripened for a general Reformation in Scotland ; and the clergy would never have suffered so zealous and able a champion of the new doctrines to live in the country. By timely withdrawing, he not only saved his own life, and reserved his labours to a more fit opportunity, but he averted the storm of persecution from the heads of his brethren. Deprived of their teachers, their adversaries became less jealous of them ; while, in their private meetings, they continued to confirm one another in the doctrine which they had received, and the seed lately sown had time to take root and to spread.

Before he took his departure, Knox was careful to give his brethren such directions as he judged most necessary for them, particularly for promoting mutual edification,

* Appellation, &c. apud Historie, p. 428.

when they were deprived of the benefit of pastors. Not satisfied with communicating these orally, he committed them to writing in a common letter, which he either left behind him, or sent from Dieppe, to be circulated in the different quarters where he had preached. In this letter, he warmly recommended the frequent reading of the Scriptures, as well as the exercises of worship and religious instruction in every family. He exhorted the brethren to meet together, if possible, once every week, and that in these assemblies they should begin with confession of sins, and invocation of the divine blessing. After a portion of Scripture had been read, if any brother had any exhortation, interpretation, or doubt, he might speak ; but this ought to be done with modesty, and a desire to edify, or to be edified ; “ multiplication of words, perplexed interpretation, and wilfulness in reasoning,” being carefully avoided. If any difficulties, which they could not solve, occurred in the course of reading or conference, he advised them to commit these to writing, before they separated, that they might submit them to the judgment of the learned. He signified his own readiness to give them his advice and opinion, whenever it should be required, and directed their assemblies always to be closed, as well as opened, by prayer. * There is every reason to conclude that these instructions were punctually complied with ; this letter may, therefore, be viewed as an important document regarding the state of the Protestant Church in Scotland, previous to the establishment of the Reformation, and shall be inserted at large in the Notes. †

Among his subsequent letters are several answers to questions which they had transmitted to him for advice. The questions are such as might be supposed to arise in the minds of serious persons lately made acquainted with Scripture, perplexed with particular expressions, and at a loss how to apply some of its directions to their situation. They discover an inquisitive and conscientious disposition ; and at the same time, illustrate the disadvantages under

* MS. Letters, p. 352-359.

† Note D.—Period Fourth. The letter is inscribed “ To his Brethren in Scotland after

hie had bene quyt among thame ;” and bears date “ 7. of July, 1556.”

which ordinary Christians labour when deprived of the assistance of learned teachers. Our Reformer's answers display an intimate acquaintance with Scripture, dexterity in expounding it, with prudence in giving advice in cases of conscience, so as not to encourage a dangerous laxity on the one hand, nor scrupulosity and excessive rigidity on the other.*

Knox reached Geneva before the end of harvest, and took upon him the charge of the English congregation there,† among whom he laboured during the two following years.

PERIOD FIFTH.

FROM HIS RETURN TO GENEVA IN 1556, TO HIS SETTLEMENT AS
MINISTER OF EDINBURGH, ON THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE
REFORMATION IN 1560.

THE short period of Knox's labours in Geneva at this time, was the most quiet of his life. In the bosom of his own family, he experienced that soothing care to which he had hitherto been a stranger, and which his frequent bodily ailments now required. There two sons were born to him. The greatest cordiality among themselves, and affection to their pastor, subsisted in the small flock under his charge. With his colleague, Christopher Goodman, he lived as a brother; and was happy in the friendship of Calvin and the other Reformed preachers at Geneva. So much was he pleased with the purity of religion established in that city,

* Among the questions proposed were the following: Whether the baptism administered by the Popish priests was valid, and did not require repetition? Whether all the things prohibited in the decree of the Apostles and Elders at Jerusalem (Acts xv.) were still unlawful? Whether the prohibition of the Apostle John (2d Ep. v. 10.) extended to common salutation of those who taught erroneous doctrine? How were the directions of the

Apostle Peter respecting dress (1st Ep. ch. iii. 3.) to be obeyed? In what sense is God said to repent?

† The congregation seem to have delayed the final settlement of their order of worship and discipline until Knox's arrival; for the preface to "The Order of Geneva," is dated "the 10th of February, anno 1556," i. e. 1557, unless they followed the Geneva mode of reckoning. Dunlop's Collection of Confessions, ii. 401.

that he warmly recommended it to his persecuted acquaintances in England, as the best Christian asylum to which they could flee. “In my heart (says he, in a letter to his friend Mr Locke,) I could have wished, yea, and cannot cease to wish, that it might please God to guide and conduct yourself to this place, where I neither fear nor eshame to say, is the most perfect school of Christ that ever was in the earth, since the days of the Apostles. In other places I confess Christ to be truly preached; but manners and religion so sincerely reformed, I have not yet seen in any other place beside.”*

But neither the enjoyment of personal accommodations, nor the pleasure of literary society, nor the endearments of domestic happiness, could subdue our Reformer's ruling passion, or unfix his determination to return to Scotland, as soon as an opportunity should offer for advancing the Reformation among his countrymen. In a letter written to some of his friends in Edinburgh, March 16, 1557, we find him expressing himself thus:—“My own motion and daily prayer is, not only that I may visit you, but also that with joy I may end my battle among you. And assure yourself of that, that whenever a greater number among you shall call upon me than now hath bound me to serve them, by His grace it shall not be the fear of punishment, neither yet of the death temporal, that shall impede my coming to you.”† A certain heroic confidence and assurance of ultimate success, have often been displayed by those whom Providence has raised up to achieve great revolutions in the world; by which they have been borne up under discouragements which would have overwhelmed men of ordinary spirits, and emboldened to face dangers from which others would have shrunk appalled. This enthusiastic heroism (I use not the epithet in a bad sense) often blazed forth in the conduct of the great German Reformer. Knox possessed no inconsiderable portion of the same spirit. “Satan, I confess, rageth (says he, in a letter nearly of the same date with that last quoted); but potent is He that promised to be with us, in all such enterprises as we take in hand at his

* MS. Letters, p. 377

† Ibid. p. 408.

commandment, for the glory of his name, and for maintenance of His true religion. And therefore the less fear we any contrary power: yea, in the boldness of our God, we altogether contemn them, be they kings, emperors, men, angels, or devils. For they shall be never able to prevail against the simple truth of God which we openly profess: by the permission of God, they may appear to prevail against our bodies; but our cause shall triumph in despite of Satan.*

Very shortly after he wrote the letter last quoted but one, James Syme, who had been his host at Edinburgh, and James Barron, another burgess of the same city, arrived at Geneva with a letter and credentials from the Earl of Glencairn, Lords Lorn, Erskine, and James Stewart, informing him that those who had professed the Reformed doctrine remained stedfast, that its adversaries were daily losing credit in the nation, and that those who possessed the supreme authority, although they had not yet declared themselves friendly, still refrained from persecution; and inviting him in their own name, and in that of their brethren, to return to Scotland, where he would find them all ready to receive him, and to spend their lives and fortunes in advancing the cause which they had espoused.†

This letter Knox laid before his congregation, and also submitted it to Calvin, and the other ministers of Geneva, who delivered it as their opinion, "that he could not refuse the call, without shewing himself rebellious to God, and unmerciful to his country." His congregation agreed to sacrifice their particular interest to the greater good of the Church; and his own family silently acquiesced. Upon this, he returned an answer to the invitation of the nobility, signifying that he meant to visit them with all reasonable expedition. Accordingly, after seeing the congregation agreeably provided with a pastor in his room,‡ and having

* MS. Letters, p. 378.

† Knox, Historie, p. 97, 98.

‡ This was William Whittingham. He was the son of William Whittingham, Esq. of Holmeside, in the county of Chester, was born anno 1524, educated at Oxford, and held in great reputation for his learning. Upon the accession of Queen Mary, he went first to Frankfort, and afterwards to Geneva, where he married Catherine, the sister of John Cal-

vin. He was one of the translators of the Geneva Bible, and composed several of the metrical psalms which accompanied it. He fell under the displeasure of Queen Elizabeth, on account of a commendatory preface which he wrote to Christopher Goodman's book on Obedience to Superior powers, in which among other free sentiments, the government of women was condemned. But he enjoyed the protection of some of the principal cour-

settled his other affairs, he took an affectionate leave of his friends at Geneva, and proceeded to Dieppe, in the beginning of October. While he waited there for a vessel, he received letters from Scotland, written in a very different strain from the former. These informed him that new consultations had been held among the converts in that country; that some began to repent of the invitation which they had given him to return to Scotland; and that the greater part seemed irresolute and faint-hearted.

This intelligence exceedingly disconcerted and embarrassed him. He instantly despatched a letter to the nobility who had invited him, upbraiding them for their timidity and inconstancy. The information, which he had just received, had (he said) confounded and pierced him with sorrow. After taking the advice of the most learned and godly in Europe, for the satisfaction of his own conscience and theirs respecting this enterprise, the abandonment of it would reflect disgrace upon either him or them: it would argue either that he had been marvellously forward and vain, or else that they had betrayed great imprudence and want of judgment in their invitation. To some, it might appear a small matter that he had left his poor family destitute of a head, and committed the care of his small but dearly beloved flock to another; but, for his part, he could not name the sum that would induce him to go through the like scene a second time, and to behold so many grave men weeping at his departure. What answer could he give, on his return, to those who enquired, why he did not prosecute his journey? He could take God to witness, that the personal inconveniences to which he had been subjected, or the mortification which he felt at the disappointment, was not the chief causes of his grief. But he was alarmed at

tiers. In 1560, he accompanied the Earl of Bedford in an embassy to France, and, in 1562, and in 1563, acted as chaplain to the Earl of Warwick, during the defence of Havre-de-Grace. That brave nobleman was at a loss for words to express his high esteem for him. In 1563 he was made Dean of Durham. I have already mentioned (p. 31.) that an unsuccessful attempt was made to invalidate the ordination which he received at Geneva. On that occasion, Dr. Hutton, Dean of York, told Archbishop Sandys, that Whittingham "was

ordained in a better manner than even the Archbishop himself;" and the Lord President said, he could not in conscience agree to "allow of the Popish massing priests in our ministry, and to disallow of ministers made in a Reformed Church." Whittingham never conformed fully to the English Church, and died in 1579. Hutchinson's History and Antiquities of the county Palatine of Durham, ii. 143-152, 378. Forbes' State Papers, ii. 207, 418 487.

the awful consequences which would ensue, at the bondage and misery, spiritual and temporal, which they would entail upon themselves and their children, their subjects and their posterity, if they neglected the present opportunity of introducing the gospel into their native country. In conscience, he could except none that bare the name of nobility in Scotland from blame in this matter. His words might seem sharp and indiscreet; but charity would construe them in the best sense, and wise men would consider that a true friend cannot flatter, especially in a case which involved the salvation of the bodies and souls, not of a few persons, but of a whole realm. “What are the sobs, and what is the affliction of my troubled heart, God shall one day declare. But this will I add to my former rigour and severity; to wit, if any persuade you, for fear of dangers to follow, to faint in your former purpose, be he esteemed never so wise and friendly, let him be judged of you both foolish, and your mortal enemy.—I am not ignorant that fearful troubles shall ensue your enterprise; as in my former letters I did signify unto you. But, O! joyful and comfortable are those troubles and adversities which man sustaineth for accomplishment of God’s will revealed in his word. For how terrible that ever they appear to the judgment of natural men, yet are they never able to devour nor utterly to consume the sufferers; for the invisible and invincible power of God sustaineth and preserveth, according to his promise, all such as with simplicity do obey him.—No less cause have ye to enter in your former enterprise, than Moses had to go to the presence of Pharaoh; for your subjects, yea your brethren, are oppressed; their bodies and souls holden in bondage: and God speaketh to your consciences, (unless ye be dead with the blind world), that ye ought to hazard your own lives, be it against kings or emperors, for their deliverance. For, only for that cause are ye called princes of the people, and receive honour, tribute, and homage at God’s commandment, not by reason of your birth and progeny, (as the most part of men falsely do suppose,) but by reason of your office and duty; which is, to vindicate and deliver your subjects and bre-

thren from all violence and oppression, to the uttermost of your power.”*

Having sent off this letter, with others written in the same strain, to Erskine of Dun, Wishart of Pittarow, and some other gentlemen of his acquaintance, he resolved to spend some time in the interior of France, hoping soon to receive more favourable accounts from Scotland.† The Reformed doctrine had been early introduced into the kingdom of France; it had been watered with the blood of many martyrs; and all the violence and barbarity which had been employed, had not been able to extirpate it, or prevent it from spreading among all ranks. The Parisian Protestants were at present smarting under the effects of one of those massacres, which so often disgraced the Roman Catholic religion in that country, before as well as after the commencement of the Civil Wars. Not satisfied with assaulting them when peaceably assembled for worship in a private house, and treating them with great barbarity, their adversaries, in imitation of their pagan predecessors, invented the most diabolical calumnies against them, and circulated every where that they were guilty of committing the most abominable and flagitious crimes in their assemblies.‡ The innocent sufferers had drawn up an apology, vindicating themselves from this atrocious charge, and Knox having got a copy of this, translated it into English, and wrote a preface and additions to it, intending to publish it for the use of his countrymen. §

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 98-100.

† I find him, about this time, addressing a letter to one of his correspondents from Lyons. MS. Letters, p. 346. This letter is subscribed “John Sinclair.”

‡ *Histoire des Martyrs*, pp. 425, 426. Anno 1597. Folio. The Cardinal of Lorraine, uncle to Mary the young Queen of Scotland, was industrious in propagating this vile calumny; a circumstance which no doubt contributed to increase Knox's bad opinion of that most determined enemy of the Reformation. This is mentioned by him in his preface to the Parisian Apology. “This was not bruited be the rude and ignorant pepil; but a Cardinall (whais ipocrisie nevertheless is not abil to cover his awn filthines) eschamit not opinlie at his tabill to affirme that maist impudent and manifest lie; adding moreover (to the further declaratioun whais sone he was) that, in the hous whair thay wer apprehendit, 8

bedis wer preparit. When in verie deid in that place whair they did convene, (except a table for the Lord's Supper to have been ministered, a chayr for the preicher, and bankis and stullis for the easement of the auditors) no preparation nor furniture was abill to be proved, not even be the verie enemyis.” MS. Letters, pp. 445, 446.

§ MS. Letters, pp. 442-500. The apology of the Parisian Protestants was published; but I do not know that ever Knox's translation and additions appeared in print. The writer of the Life of Knox, prefixed to the edition of his History, 1732, page xxi. has fallen into several blunders in speaking of this subject. There are no letters to the French Protestants in the MS. to which he refers; and the apology was written by the Parisians themselves, and only translated partly by Knox, but “the most part by another, because of his other labours.”

Having formed an acquaintance with many of the French Protestants, and acquired their language, he occasionally preached to them in passing through the country. It seems to have been on the present occasion, that he preached in the city of Rochelle, when, having introduced the subject of his native country, he told his audience that he expected, within a few years, to preach in the church of St. Giles, in Edinburgh.* There is nothing in our Reformer's letters from which I can learn that he found any Protestants in Dieppe, a place which he so often visited during his exiles. It is probable he did; for at an early period of the following century they had a very numerous church in that town.†

Having received no intelligence of an encouraging nature, Knox determined to relinquish for the present his design of proceeding to Scotland. This resolution does not accord with the usual firmness of our Reformer, and is not sufficiently accounted for in the common histories. The Protestant nobles had not retracted their invitation; the discouraging letters which he had received, were written by individuals without any commission from their brethren; and if their zeal and courage had begun to flag,

* "Having particularly declared to me (says Row) by those who heard him say, when he was in Rochel, in France, that within two or three years he hoped to preach the Gospel publicly in St. Giles' kirk in Edinburgh. But the persons who heard him say it, being Papists for the time, and yet persuaded by a nobleman to hear him preach privately, and see him baptize a bairn, that was carried many miles to him for that purpose, thought that such a thing could never come to pass, and hated him for so speaking; yet, coming home to Scotland, and through stress of weather likely to perish, they began to think of his preaching, and allowed of every part of it, and vowed to God, if he would preserve their lives, that they would forsake Papistry, and follow the calling of God; whilk they did, and saw and heard John Knox preach openly in the kirk of Edinburgh, at the time whereof he spoke to them." Row's History, MS. pp. 8, 9. The same fact is mentioned by Pierre de la Roque, a French author, in *Recueil des Dernieres Heures Edifiantes*, apud Wodrow, MSS. No. 15. Advocates' Library.

† Mr. Robert Traill, minister first at Ely, and afterwards of Greyfriars, Edinburgh, when he was in France, between 1625 and 1630, i. p. 52.

was present in a congregation at Dieppe when 5000 people were assembled.--Note of the most Remarkable Particulars in a MS. account of Mr. Robert Trail, written with his own hand, anno 1669, p. 4. MS. penes me. Though Knox does not mention in his Letters whether there were any Protetants in Dieppe, when he first visited it, he now found with great satisfaction, that a number of the inhabitants had embraced the Reformed doctrines, which had been imported from Geneva about the year 1557, a short time before the arrival of Knox, by a travelling merchant named Venables. In course of the summer, a congregation was formed in the town, which was superintended by Delaporte, one of the Pastors of the Church of Rouen. Knox was appointed his colleague, and under their ministry the Reformation made great progress. By the labours of the Reformed preachers, several of the principal inhabitants of the place were induced to renounce the errors of Popery, and a very general improvement began to appear in their lives and manners; so that, as has just been stated above, at an early period of the following century, the Protestants had a numerous and flourishing Church there.—Irving's Lives, vol. i. p. 52.

there was the more need of his presence to recruit them. His private letters to his familiar acquaintances, enable me to state more fully the motives by which he was actuated in taking this retrograde step. He was perfectly aware of the struggle which would be necessary for effectuating the Reformation in Scotland; that his presence would excite the rage of the clergy, who would make every effort to crush their adversaries, and maintain the lucrative system of corruption; and that civil discord, confusion, and bloodshed might be expected to ensue. The prospect of these things rushed into his mind, and (regardless of public tranquillity as some have pronounced him to be) staggered his resolution in prosecuting an undertaking which his judgment approved as lawful, laudable, and necessary. "When," says he, "I heard such troubles as appeared in that realm, I began to dispute with myself as followeth: Shall Christ, the author of peace, concord, and quietness, be preached where war is proclaimed, sedition engendered, and tumults appear to rise? Shall not his evangel be accused as the cause of all this calamity, which is like to follow? What comfort canst thou have to see the one half of the people rise up against the other, yea, to jeopard the one, to murder and destroy the other? But, above all, what joy shall it be to thy heart, to behold with thy eyes thy native country betrayed in[to] the hands of strangers, which to no man's judgment can be avoided; because that those who ought to defend it, and the liberty thereof, are so blind, dull, and obstinate, that they will not see their own destruction?"* To "these and more deep cogitations," which continued to distract his mind for several months after he returned to Geneva, he principally imputed his abandonment of the journey to Scotland. At the same time, he was convinced that they were not sufficient to justify his desisting from an undertaking, recommended by so many powerful considerations. "But, alas! (says he) as the wounded man, be he never so expert in physic or surgery, cannot suddenly mitigate his own pain and dolour; no more can I the fear and grief of my heart, although I am not igno-

* MS. Letters, p. 349.

rant of what is to be done. It may also be, that the doubts and cold writing of some brethren did augment my dolour, and somewhat discourage me that before was more nor feeble. But nothing do I so much accuse as myself." Whatever were the secondary causes of this step, I cannot but again direct the reader's attention to the wisdom of Providence, in throwing impediments in his way, by which his return to Scotland was protracted to a period, before which it might have been injurious, and at which it was calculated to be in the highest degree useful to the great cause which he had at heart.

Before he left Dieppe, he transmitted two long letters to Scotland: the one, dated 1st December 1557, was addressed to the Protestants in general; the other, dated the 17th of the same month, was directed to the nobility. In judging of Knox's influence in advancing the Reformation, we must take into view not only his personal labours, but also the epistolary correspondence which he maintained with his countrymen. By this, he instructed them in his absence, communicated his own advice, and that of the learned among whom he resided, upon every difficult case which occurred, and animated them to constancy and perseverance. The letters which he wrote at this time deserve particular attention in this view. In both of them he prudently avoids any reference to his late disappointment.

In the first letter he strongly inculcates purity of morals, and warns all who professed the Reformed religion against those irregularities of life, which were improved to the disparagement of their cause, by two classes of persons; by the Papists, who, although the same vices prevailed in a far higher degree among themselves, represented them as the native fruits of the Protestant doctrine; and by a new sect, who were enemies to superstition, and had belonged to the Reformed communion, but having deserted it, had become scarcely less hostile to it than the Papists. The principal design of this letter was to put the people of Scotland on their guard against the arts of this latter class of persons, and to expose their leading errors.

The persons to whom he referred were those who went under the general name of *Anabaptists*, a sect which sprung

up in Germany soon after the commencement of the Reformation under Luther, broke out into the greatest excesses, and produced the most violent commotions in different places. Being suppressed in Germany, it spread through other countries, and secretly made converts by high pretensions to seriousness and Christian simplicity; the spirit of turbulence and wild fanaticism, which at first characterized the sect, gradually subsiding after the first effervescence. Ebullitions of a similar kind have not unfrequently accompanied great revolutions, when the minds of men, dazzled by a sudden illumination, and released from the galling fetters of despotism, civil or ecclesiastical, have been disposed to fly to the opposite extreme of anarchy and extravagance. Nothing proved more vexatious to the original Reformers than this; it was improved by the defenders of the old system, as a popular argument against all change; and many who had declared themselves friendly to reform, alarmed, or pretending to be alarmed at this hideous spectre, drew back, and sheltered themselves within the infallible pale of the Catholic Church.

The radical error of this sect, according to the more improved system held by them at the time of which I write, was a fond conceit of a certain ideal perfection and spirituality that belonged to the Christian Church, by which they imagined it differed essentially from the Jewish, which they looked upon as a carnal, worldly society. From this they were naturally led to abridge the rule of faith and manners, by confining themselves almost entirely to the New Testament, and to adopt their other opinions concerning the unlawfulness of infant baptism, civil magistracy, national churches, oaths, and defensive war. But besides these notions, the Anabaptists were, at this period, generally infected with the Arian and Pelagian heresies, and united with the Papists in loading the doctrines maintained by the Reformers respecting predestination and grace, with the most odious charges.*

* The Careles by Necessitie, as reprinted in Knox's Answer to an Anabaptist, 1560. Spanhemii (Patris Disput.) Theol. Miscell. Geneva, 1652, Spanhemii (Filii) Opera, tom. iii. p. 771-798.—It is scarcely necessary to add

that the great body of those who, in the present day, oppose the baptism of infants, do not hold a number of the tenets specified above. They are decidedly hostile to the Arian and Pelagian errors, and friendly to the doctrines

Our Reformer had occasion to meet with some of these sectarians, both in England and on the Continent, and had ascertained their extravagant and dangerous principles.* When he was in London, in the year 1553, one of them came to his lodging, and after requiring of him great secrecy, gave him a book, written by one of the party, which he pressed him much to read. Upon looking into it, he perceived the following proposition, that “God made not the world, nor the wicked creatures in it; but these were made by the devil, who is therefore called *the God of this world*.” Knox immediately warned the man against such gross doctrine, and began to explain to him the sense in which the devil is called “the God of this world” in Scripture. “Tush for your written word (answered the enthusiast); we have as good and as sure a word and veritie that teacheth us this doctrine, as ye have for you and your opinion.”—Knox adds, that he knew others of that sect, who maintained the old heresy of the Manicheans.*

Being apprised that these enthusiasts were creeping into Scotland, and afraid that they would insidiously instil their poison into the minds of some of his brethren, he refuted their opinion respecting church-communion, by shewing that they required such purity as was never found in the Church, either before or since the completion of the canon of Scripture. In opposition to their Pelagian tenets, he gave the following statement of his sentiments. “If there be any thing which God did not predestinate and appoint, then lacked he wisdom and free regimen; or if any thing was ever done, or yet after shall be done in heaven or in earth, which he might not have impeded, (if so had been his godly pleasure,) then he is not omnipotent; which three properties, to wit, wisdom, free regimen, and power denied to be in God, I pray you what rests in his godhead? The wisdom of our God we acknowledge to be such, that it compelleth the very malice of Satan, and the horrible iniquity of such as be drowned in sin, to serve to his glory and to the profit

of Grace. So far from denying the lawfulness of magistracy among Christians, they have in general (at least in Scotland) adopted the principles of non-resistance to civil rulers in all cases.

* Answer to the Blasphemous Cavillations written by an Anabaptist, p 405, 407. Anno 1560.

of his elect. His power we believe and confess to be infinite, and such as no creature in heaven or earth is able to resist. And his regimen we acknowledge to be so free, that none of his creatures dare present them in judgment, to reason or demand the question, why hast thou done this or that? But the fountain of this their damnable error, (which is, that in God they can acknowledge no justice except that which their foolish brain is able to comprehend,) at more opportunity, God willing, we shall entreat." *

He assigns his reasons for warning them so particularly against the seduction of these erroneous teachers. Under the cloak of mortification, and the colour of a godly life, they "supplanted the dignity of Christ," and "were become enemies to free justification by faith in his blood." The malice of their Popish adversaries was now visible to all the world. The hypocrisy of mercenary teachers and ungodly professors, would soon discover itself. Seldom was open tyranny able to suppress the true religion, when once earnestly embraced by the body of any nation or province. "But deceivable and false doctrine is a poison and venom, which, once drunken and received, with great difficulty can afterward be purged." Accordingly, he obtested them to "try the spirits" which came unto them, and to suffer no man to take the office of preacher upon him, of his own accord, without trial, and to assemble the people in privy conventions; else Satan would soon have his emissaries among them, who would "destroy the plantation of our heavenly Father." * His admonitions, on this head, were not without effect; and the Protestants of Scotland were not distracted with these opinions, but remained united in their views, as to doctrine, worship, and discipline.

His letter to the Protestant lords breathes a spirit of ardent and noble piety. He endeavours to purify their minds from selfish and worldly principles; to raise, sanctify, and Christianize their motives, by exhibiting and recommending to them the spirit and conduct of the princes and heroes, celebrated not in profane but sacred story. The glory

* This he afterwards accomplished in the book referred to in the preceding note, in which he largely explains the doctrine of predestination, as held by the Reformed Churches,

and vindicates it against the cavils and misrepresentations of its adversaries.

* MS. Letters, p 408-424.

of God, the advancement of the kingdom of Jesus Christ, the salvation of themselves and their brethren, the emancipation of their country from spiritual and civil thralldom; these, and not their own honour and aggrandisement, or the revenging of their petty private quarrels, were the objects which they ought to keep steadily and solely in view.

In this letter, he also communicates his advice on the delicate question of resistance to supreme rulers. They had consulted him on this question, and he had submitted it to the judgment of the most learned on the Continent. Soon after the marriage of their young Queen to the Dauphin of France, the Scots began to be jealous of the designs of the French court against their liberties and independence. Their jealousies increased after the Regency was transferred to the Queen-Dowager, who was wholly devoted to the interest of France, and had contrived, under different pretexts, to keep a body of French troops in the kingdom. It was not difficult to excite to resistance the independent and haughty barons of Scotland, accustomed to yield but a very limited and precarious obedience, even to their native princes. They had lately given a proof of this, by their refusal to co-operate in the war against England, which they considered as undertaken merely for French interests. How did our Reformer act upon this occasion? Did he lay hold on these occurrences, and attempt to inflame the irascible minds of the nobility? Did he persuade them to join with the Earl of Arran and others, who were discontented with the measures of government, and intriguing to recover the ascendancy they had lost? No; on the contrary, he wrote, that rumours were circulated on the Continent, that a rebellion was intended in Scotland; and he solemnly charged all that professed the Protestant religion to avoid all accession to it, and to beware of countenancing those who, for the sake of worldly promotion and other private ends, sought to disturb the government. The nobility were the guardians of the national liberties, and there were limits beyond which subjects were not bound to obedience; but recourse ought not to be had to resistance, until matters were tyrannically

driven to extremity. It was incumbent on them to be very circumspect in all their proceedings, that their adversaries might have no reason to allege, that they covered a seditious and rebellious design under the cloak of religious reformation. His advice to them therefore was, that by dutiful and cheerful obedience to all lawful commands of the Queen-Regent, and by humble and repeated requests, they should endeavour to recommend themselves to her favour; and if they could not procure her interest in promoting their cause, they might at least obtain protection against persecution. If all their endeavours failed, and the Regent refused to consent to a public reformation of religion, they ought to provide that the Gospel should be preached, and the sacraments administered to themselves and their brethren; and if attempts were made to crush them by tyrannical violence, it was lawful for them, nay, it was a duty incumbent upon them in their high station, to stand up in defence of their brethren. "For a great difference there is betwixt lawful obedience, and a fearful flattering of princes, or an unjust accomplishment of their desires, in things which be required, or devised, for the destruction of a commonwealth." * Such are the views and advices tendered by our Reformer to the Protestant nobility of Scotland, in his correspondence with them as to their public and private conduct in this critical juncture. That these admonitions were not without their effect in arousing the zeal of some, and restraining the impetuosity of others, will appear in the sequel.

Knox returned to Geneva early in 1558. During that year, he was engaged, along with several learned men of his congregation, in making a new translation of the Bible into English; which, from the place where it was composed and first printed, obtained the name of *The Geneva Bible*.† It was at this time that he published his Letter to the Queen-Regent, and his Appellation and Exhortation; both of

* MS. Letters, p. 424-458.

† Strype's Mem. of Parker, p. 205. This translation was often re-printed in Britain. The freedom of remark, used in the notes, gave offence to Queen Elizabeth, and her successor James; the last of whom said, that it was the worst translation which he had seen.

Notwithstanding this expression of disapprobation, it is evident that the translators, appointed by his authority, made great use of it; nor would our translation have been, upon the whole, worse, if they had followed it more. The late Dr. Geddes had a very different opinion of it from the royal critic.

which were transmitted to Scotland, and contributed not a little to the spread of the Reformed opinions. I have already given an account of the first of these tracts, which was chiefly intended for removing the prejudices of Roman Catholics. The last was more immediately designed for instructing and animating such as were friendly to the Reformed religion. Addressing himself to the nobility and estates of the kingdom, he shews that the care and reformation of religion belonged to civil rulers, and constituted one of the primary duties of their office. This was a dictate of Nature as well as Revelation ; and he would not insist long upon that topic, lest he should seem to suppose them “ lesse careful over God’s true religion, than were the Ethnickes * over their idolatrie.” Inferior magistrates, within the sphere of their jurisdiction, the nobles and estates of a kingdom, as well as kings and princes, were bound to attend to this high duty. He then addresses himself to the commonalty of Scotland, and points out their duty and interest, with regard to the important controversy in agitation. They were rational creatures, formed after the image of God ; they had souls to be saved ; they were accountable for their conduct ; they were bound to judge of the truth of religion, and to make profession of it, as well as kings, nobles, or bishops. If idolatry was maintained, if the Gospel was suppressed, if the blood of the innocent was shed, how could they be exculpated, when they kept silence, and did not exert themselves to prevent these evils ? †

But the most singular treatise published this year by Knox, and that which made the greatest noise, was “ The First Blast of the Trumpet against the monstrous Regiment‡ of Women ;” in which he attacked, with great vehemence, the practice of admitting females to the government of nations. There is some reason to think that his mind was struck with the incongruity of this practice, as early as Mary’s accession to the throne of England.§ This was probably one of the points on which he had conferred with the Swiss divines in 1554.|| It is certain, from a letter

* i. e. heathen.

† Appellation, apud Historie, pp. 434-440, 453, 454.

‡ i. e. regimen, or government.

§ First Blast, apud Historie, p. 478.

|| MS. Letters, pp. 318, 319.

by him in 1556, that his sentiments respecting it were then fixed and decided.* He continued, however, to retain them to himself; and out of deference to the opinions of others, refrained for a considerable time from publishing them. But at last, provoked by the tyranny of the Queen of England, and wearied out with her increasing cruelties, he applied the Trumpet to his mouth, and uttered a terrible blast. "To promote a woman to bear rule, superiority, dominion, or empire, above any realm, nation, or city, is repugnant to nature, contumely to God, a thing most contrarious to his revealed will and approved ordinance; and, finally, it is the subversion of all equity and justice." Such is the first sentence and principal proposition of the work. The arguments by which he endeavours to establish it are, that nature intended the female sex for subjection not superiority to the male, as appears from their infirmities, corporeal and mental (he excepts, however, such as God, "by singular privilege, and for certain causes, exeemed from the common rank of women"); that the divine law, announced at the creation of the first pair, had expressly assigned to man the dominion over women, and commanded her to be subject to him; that female government was not permitted among the Jews; is contrary to Apostolical injunctions; and leads to the perversion of government, and many pernicious consequences.

Knox's theory on this subject was far from being novel. In confirmation of his opinion, he could appeal to the constitutions of the free states of antiquity, and to the authority of their legislators and philosophers.† In the kingdom of France, females were, by an express law, excluded from succeeding to the crown. Edward VI. some time before his death, had proposed to the Privy Council the adoption of this law in England; but the motion, not suiting the ambitious views of the Duke of Northumberland, was overruled.‡ Though his opinion was sanctioned by such high

* MS. Letters, pp. 322, 323.

† Tacitus has expressed his contempt of those who submit to female government, with his usual emphatic brevity, in the account which he gives of the Sitones, a German tribe.

"Cætera similes, uno differunt, quod fæmina

dominatur; in tantum, non modo a libertate, sed etiam a servitute degenerant." De Mor. Germ. c. 45.

‡ Warner's Eccles. History of England, ii. 305.

authorities, Knox was by no means sanguine in his expectations as to the reception of this performance. He tells us, in his preface, that he laid his account not only with the indignation of those interested in the support of the reprobated practice, but with the disapprobation of such gentle spirits among the learned, as would be alarmed at the boldness of the attack. He did not doubt, that he would be called "curious, spiteful, a sower of sedition, and one day perchance attainted for treason;" but, in uttering a truth of which he was deeply convinced, he was determined to "cover his eyes and shut his ears" from these dangers and obloquies. He was not mistaken in his apprehensions. It exposed him to the resentment of two queens, during whose reign it was his lot to live; the one his native princess, and the other exercising a sway in Scotland, scarcely inferior to that of any of its monarchs. Several of the exiles approved of his opinion,* and few of them would have been displeased at seeing it reduced to practice, at the time when the Blast was published. But Queen Mary dying soon after it appeared, and her sister Elizabeth succeeding her, they raised a great outcry against it. John Fox wrote a letter to the author, in which he expostulated with him in a very friendly manner as to the impropriety of the publication, and the severity of its language. Knox, in his reply, did not excuse his "rude vehemencie and inconsiderate affirmations, which might appear rather to proceed from choler than of zeal and reason;" but signified, that he was still persuaded of the principal proposition which he had maintained.†

His original intention was to blow his Trumpet thrice, and to publish his name with the last Blast, to prevent the odium from falling on any other person. But finding that it gave offence to many of his brethren, and being desirous to strengthen rather than invalidate the authority of Elizabeth, he relinquished the design of prosecuting the

* Christopher Goodman adopted the sentiment, and commended the publication of his colleague, in his book on Obedience to Superior Powers. Whittingham and Gilby did the same. I might also mention countrymen of his own, who agreed with Knox on this head; as James Kennedy, the celebrated Archbishop

of St. Andrew's, and Sir David Lindsay. Buchanan's Hist. lib. xii. p. 221-224. Rudim. Chalmers' Lindsay, iii. 175.

† Strype's Annals, i. 127. Strype promised to insert Knox's letter at large in the Appendix, but did not find room for it. Fox's letter was written before the death of Queen Mary.

subject.* He retained his sentiments to the last, but abstained from any further declaration of them, and from replying to his opponents; although he was provoked by their censures and triumph, and sometimes hinted in his private letters, that he would break silence if they did not study greater moderation.

In the course of the following year, an answer to the Blast appeared, under the title of *An Harborow for Faithful Subjects*.† Though anonymous, like the book to which it was a reply, it was soon declared to be the production of John Aylmer, one of the English refugees on the Continent, who had been Archdeacon of Stowe, and tutor to Lady Jane Grey. It was not undertaken until the accession of Elizabeth, and was written (as Aylmer's biographer informs us) "upon a consultation holden among the exiles, the better to obtain the favour of the new Queen, and to take off any jealousy she might conceive of them, and of the religion which they professed."‡ This, with some other circumstances, led Knox to express his suspicion, that the author had accommodated his doctrine to the times, and courted the favour of the reigning princess, by flattering her vanity and love of power.§ It is certain, that if Knox is entitled to the praise of boldness and disinterestedness, Aylmer carried away the palm for prudence: the latter was advanced to the bishopric of London; the former could, with great difficulty, obtain leave to set his foot again upon English ground. As Knox's Trumpet would never have sounded its alarm, had it not been for the tyranny of Mary, there is reason to think that Aylmer's "Harborow" would never have been opened "for faithful subjects," but for the auspicious succession of Elizabeth.

* The heads of the intended Second Blast were published at the end of his Appellation.

† "An Harborowe for Faithfull and Trewe Subjectes, against the late blowne Blaste concerning the Government of Wemen, &c. Anno MD. lix. At Strasborowe the 26. of Aprill. The Blast drew forth several defences of female government besides this; and among the rest, two by Scotsmen. Bishop Lesly's tract on this subject was printed along with his defence of Queen Mary's honour. David Chalmers, one of the Lords of Session, published his "Discours de la legitime succession des femmes," after he retired from Scotland. Lord Hailes's Catal. of the Lords of Session, note 23. Mackenzie's Lives, iii. 388, 392.

‡ Strype's Life of Aylmer, p. 16.

§ The same suspicion seems to have been entertained by some of Elizabeth's courtiers. Ibid. p. 20. Aylmer himself says, that if the author of the Blast had not "swerved from the particular question to the general;—if he had kept him in that particular person, he could have said nothing too much, nor in such wise as to have offended any indifferent man;" and he allows that Queen Mary's government was "unnatural, unreasonable, unjust, and unlawful." Harborowe, B. Strype says, contrary to the plain meaning of the passage, that Aylmer speaks here of "the Scotch Queen Mary." Life of Aylmer, p. 230.

This, however, is independent of the merits of the question, which I do not feel inclined to examine minutely. The change which has taken place in the mode of administering government, in modern times, renders it of less practical importance than it was formerly, when so much depended upon the personal talents and activity of the reigning prince. It may be added, that the evils incident to a female reign will be less felt under a constitution such as that of Britain, than under a pure and absolute monarchy. This last consideration is urged by Aylmer; and here his reasoning is most satisfactory.* *The Blast* bears the marks of hasty composition.† *The Harborow* has been written with great care; it contains a good collection of historical facts bearing on the question; and though more distinguished for rhetorical exaggeration than logical precision, the reasoning is ingeniously conducted, and occasionally enlivened by strokes of humour.‡ It is upon the whole, a curious as well as rare work.

After all, it is easier to vindicate the expediency of continuing the practice, where it has been established by laws and usage, than to support the affirmative, when the question is propounded as a general thesis on government. It may fairly be questioned if Aylmer has refuted the principal arguments of his opponent; and had Knox deemed it prudent to rejoin, he might have exposed the fallacy of his arguments in different instances. In replying to the argument from the Apostolical canon (1 Tim. 11—14), the Archdeacon is not a little puzzled. Distrusting his distinction between the greater office, “the ecclesiastical function,” and the less “extern policy;” he argues that the Apostle’s prohibition may be considered as temporary, and peculiarly applicable to the women of his own time; and he insists that his clients shall not, *in toto*, be excluded from

* See Note A.—Period Fifth.

† The copies of “the Blast,” printed along with Knox’s History, are all extremely incorrect: whole sentences are often omitted.

‡ In his answer to Knox’s argument from Isaiah iii. 12. he concludes thus: “Therefore the arguments arise from wrong understandinge. As the vicar of Trumpenton understode ‘Eli, Eli, lama-zabatani,’ when he read the Passion on Palme Sunday. When he came to that place, he stopped, and calling the church-

wardens saide, ‘Neighboures! this gear must be emended. Heare is Eli twice in the book. I assure you, if my L. [the Bishop] of Elie come this waye and see it, he will have the book. Therefore, by mine advice, we shall scrape it out, and put in our own towne’s name, Trumpington, Trumpington, lamah zabactani.’ They consented, and he did so, because he understode no grewe.” *Harborow*, G. 3, G. 4.

teaching, and ruling in the Church, any more than in the State. “Me thinke, (says he, very seriously,) even in this poynte, we must use *επιεικεια*, a certain moderacion, not absolutely, and in every wise, to debar him herein (as it shall please God) to serve Christ. Are there not, in England, women, think you, that for their learninge and wisdom, could tell their householde and neighbouris as good a tale as the best Sir Johne there?”* Who can doubt, that the learned Lady Elizabeth, who could direct the Dean of her chapel to “keep to his text,” was able to make as good a sermon as any of her clergy? or that she was better qualified for the other parts of the duty, when she composed a book of prayers for herself, while they were obliged to use one made to their hands? In fact, the view which the Archdeacon gave of the text was necessary to vindicate the authority of his Queen, who was head, or supreme governor of the Church as well as the State. She who, by law, had supreme authority over all archbishops, bishops, &c. in the land, with power to superintend, suspend, and controul them in all their ecclesiastical functions; who, by her injunctions, could direct the primate himself when to preach, and how to preach; who could license and silence ministers at her pleasure, had certainly the same right to assume the personal exercise of the office, if she choose to do so; and must have been bound, very moderately indeed, by the Apostolical prohibition, “I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.”†

There are some things in the *Harborow* which might have been unpalatable to the Queen, if the author had not taken care to sweeten them with that personal flattery, which was as agreeable to Elizabeth as to others of her sex and rank; and which he administered in sufficient quantities before concluding his work. The ladies will be ready to excuse a slight slip of the pen in the good Archdeacon, in consideration of the handsome manner in which he has defended their right to rule; but they will scarcely believe that the following description of the sex could proceed from him:—“Some women (says he) be wiser, better learned,

* *Harborowe*, G. 4. H.

† See Note B.—Period Fifth.

discreater, constanter, than a number of men." But others, (his biographer says, "the most part") he describes* as "fond, foolish, wanton, flibbergibs, tatlers, triffling, wavering, witles, without counsel, feable, carles, rashe, proud, daintie, nise, tale-bearers, eves-droppers, rumour-raisers, evil-tongued, worse-minded, and, in every wise, doltified with the dregges of the devil's doungehill!!!" The rude author of the monstrous *Blast* never spake of the sex in terms half so disrespectful as these. One would suppose that Aylmer had already renounced the character of advocate of the fair sex, and recanted his principles on that head; as he did respecting the titles and revenues of bishops, which he inveighed against before his return from exile, but afterwards accepted with little scruple; and when reminded of the language which he had formerly used, apologised for himself, by saying, "When I was a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things."†—But it is time to return, from this degression, to the narrative.

Our Reformer's letter to the Protestant Lords in Scotland, produced its intended effect in reanimating their drooping courage. At a consultative meeting held at Edinburgh, in December 1557, they unanimously resolved to adhere to one another, and exert themselves for the advancement of the Reformation. Having subscribed a solemn bond of mutual assurance, they renewed their invitation to Knox; and being afraid that he might hesitate on account of their former irresolution, they wrote to Calvin to employ his influence to induce him to comply. Their letters did not reach Geneva until November, 1558.‡ By the same conveyance Knox received from Scotland letters of a later date, communicating the most agreeable intelligence respecting the progress which the Reformed cause had made, and the flourishing appearance which it continued to wear.

Through the exertions of our Reformer, during his residence among them in the beginning of the year 1556, and in pursuance of the instructions which he left behind him, the Protestants had formed themselves into congrega-

* Harborowe, G. 3. *Life of Aylmer*, p. 279.

† *Life of Aylmer*, p. 269.

‡ Knox, *Historie*, p. 101.

tions, which met in different parts of the country, with greater or less privacy according to the opportunities which they enjoyed. Having come to the resolution of withdrawing from the Popish worship, they endeavoured to provide for their religious instruction and mutual edification, in the best manner that their circumstances permitted. As there were no ministers among them, they continued for some time to be deprived of the dispensation of the sacraments ;* but certain intelligent and pious men of their number were chosen to read the Scriptures, exhort, and offer up prayers, in their assemblies. Convinced of the necessity of order and discipline in their societies, and desirous to have them organized, as far as within their power, agreeably to the institution of Christ, they next proceeded to choose elders, for the inspection of their manners, to whom they promised subjection ; and deacons, for the collection and distribution of alms to the poor. † Edinburgh was the first place in which this order was established ; Dundee the first town in which a Reformed Church was completely organized, provided with a regular minister, and the dispensation of the sacraments.

During the war with England, which began in Autumn 1556, and continued through the following year, the Protestants enjoyed considerable liberty ; and as they improved it with the utmost assiduity, their numbers rapidly increased. William Harlow, John Douglas, Paul Methven, and John Willock, who had again returned from Embden, now began to preach with greater publicity, in different parts of the country. ‡ The Popish clergy were not indifferent to these proceedings, and wanted not inclination to put a stop to them. They prevailed on the Queen-

* Ninian Winzet says, that "sum Lordis and gentilmen" administered the sacrament of the supper "to thair awin houshald servandis and tenantis." If only one instance of this kind occurred, the Papists would exaggerate it. The same writer adds, that Knox blamed the persons who did it, saying, that they had "gretumlie failzeit." Winzet's Buke of Four-scoir Three Questionis, apud Keith, Append. p. 239. Comp. Knox, p. 117.

† Cald. MS. i. 257. "The Electioun of Eldaris and Deaconis in the Church of Edinburgh," apud Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 635, 636. Cal-

derwood places his account of this under the year 1555 ; but I think that date too early. It was rather in the end of 1556, or in the course of 1557. The names of the first elders in Edinburgh were George Smail, Michael Robertson, Adam Craig, John Cairns, and Alexander Hope. There were at first two assemblies in Edinburgh ; but Erskine of Dun persuaded them to unite into one, which met sometimes in the houses of Robert Wilson and James Barron, and sometimes in the abbey.

‡ Knox, pp. 94, 102, 117, 118. Spotswood p. 94-97. Keith, pp. 64, 65. App. 90.

Regent to summon the Protestant preachers ; but the interposition of the gentlemen of the west country, especially of the Earl of Argyle, obliged her to abandon the process against them.* At length the clergy, unable to induce the nobility and barons to withdraw their protection from the preachers, determined to revive those cruel measures which, since the year 1550, had been suspended by the political circumstances of the kingdom, more than by their clemency or moderation. On the 28th of August, 1558, the Archbishop of St. Andrew's committed to the flames Walter Milne, an aged priest, of the most inoffensive manners,† and summoned several others to appear, on a charge of heresy, before a convention of the clergy of Edinburgh.

This barbarous and illegal execution produced effects of the greatest importance. It raised the horror of the nation to an incredible pitch ; and as it was believed, at that time, that the Regent was not accessory to the deed, their indignation was directed wholly against the clergy. Throwing aside all fear, and those restraints which prudence, or a regard to established order had hitherto imposed on them, the people now assembled openly to join in the Reformed worship, and avowed their determination to adhere to it at all hazards. The Protestant leaders having assembled at Edinburgh in the month of July, laid their complaints, in a regular and respectful manner, before the Regent ; and repeated their petition that she would, by her authority,

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 94. This seems to have taken place during the year 1557, or the beginning of 1558. The Earl of Argyle having taken under his protection a Carmelite Friar, named John Douglas, a convert to the Reformed doctrines, the Archbishop of St. Andrew's wrote a letter to that nobleman, representing the danger of entertaining Douglas, and entreating him to dismiss such a pestilent heretic from his house. To this the Earl made the following reply :—" He preiches against idolatrie, I remit to your lordship's conscience, gif it be heresie or not ;—he preiches against adultrie and fornicatioun, I referre that to your lordship's conscience ; he preichis against hypocrisie, I referre that to your lordship's conscience ; he preiches against all maner of abuses and corruptioun of Christi's sincere religioun, I refer that to your lordship's conscience. My lord, I exhort yow, in Christi's name, to wey all thir affairis in your conscience, and consider if it be your

dewtie also not onlie to thole this, bot in like maner to do the same. This is all, my lord, that I varie in my age, and na uther thing bot that I knew not befor these offences to be abhominable to God, and now, knowing his will by manifestatioun of his word, abhorres thame." Knox, *Hist.* p. 106-7.

† When fastened to the stake, he said, " I trust in God I shall be the last that shall suffer death, in this land, for this cause."—Lindsay's MS. apud Petrie, part ii. 191. The secular judge refused to take any hand in the business, and the Archbishop substituted one of his own servants in his place. At the time of his martyrdom, Milne was eighty-two years of age. He was parish priest of Lunan in Angus-shire, and had been condemned as a heretic in the time of Cardinal Beaton, but having made his escape, he continued to preach in different parts of the country until discovered by one of the Archbishop's spies.—Lindsay, *ut sup.* Knox, 122.

and in concurrence with the Parliament, restrain the tyrannical proceedings of the clergy, correct the flagrant and insufferable abuses which prevailed in the Church, and grant to them and their brethren the liberty of religious instruction and worship, at least according to a restricted plan which they laid before her, and to which they were willing to submit until such time as their grievances were deliberately examined and redressed.* The Regent's reply was such as to persuade them that she was friendly to their proposals: she promised that she would take measures for carrying them legally into effect, as soon as it was in her power; and that, in the mean time, they might depend on her protection.†

It did not require many arguments to persuade Knox to comply with an invitation, which was accompanied with such gratifying intelligence; and he began immediately to prepare for his journey to Scotland. The future settlement of the congregation under his charge occupied him for some time. Information being received of the death of Mary Queen of England,‡ and the accession of Elizabeth, the Protestant refugees hastened to return to their native country. The congregation at Geneva, having met to render thanks to God for this deliverance, agreed to send one of their number with letters to their brethren in different places of the Continent, particularly at Frankfort; congratulating them on the late happy change, and requesting a confirmation of the mutual reconciliation which had already been effected, the burial of all past offences, with a brotherly co-operation in endeavouring to obtain such a settlement of religion in England as would be agreeable to all the sincere well-wishers of the Reformation. A favour-

* This plan may be seen at large in Knox's *Historie*, p. 119—124. Keith, p. 78—82. See also Note C, Period Fifth.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 122. Bishop Bale, who was then at Basle, inserted, in a work he was just publishing, a letter sent him at this time, by Thomas Cole, an English refugee residing at Geneva, communicating this information: "*Heri enim (says Cole) D. Knoxus ex Scotia nova certissima de immutata religione accepit: Christum publice per totum illud regnum doceri; et ita demum hominum corda occupasse, ut omnia metu posito audent publicis precibus interesse sua lingua cele-*

bratis, et sacramenta quoque habeant rite administrata, impuris antichristi ceremoniis abjectis. Nunc Regina cogitat Reformationem religionis, indicto die quo conventus fiat totius regni," &c —*Scriptor. Illustr. Major. Britanniae Poster. Pars. Art. Knoxus.*

‡ "God would not suffer her to reign long, (says a Catholic writer,) either on account of the sins of her father, or on account of the sins of her people, who were unworthy of a princess so holy, so pious, and endued with such divine and rare disposition" —*Laing, de Vita Hæretic. fol. 28.*

able return to their letters being obtained,* they took leave of the hospitable city, and set out for their native country. By them Knox sent letters to some of his former acquaintances, who were now in the court of Elizabeth, requesting permission to travel through England, on his way to Scotland.

In the month of January, 1559, our Reformer took his leave of Geneva, for the last time.† In addition to former marks of respect, the republic, before his departure, conferred on him the freedom of the city.‡ He left his wife and family behind him, until he should ascertain that they could live with safety in Scotland. Upon his arrival at Dieppe, in the middle of March, he received information that the English government had refused to grant him liberty to pass through their dominions. The request had appeared so reasonable to his own mind, considering the station which he had held in that country, and the object of his present journey, that he once thought of proceeding to London, without waiting a formal permission; yet it was not without some difficulty that those who presented his letters escaped imprisonment.

This impolitic severity was occasioned by the informations of some of the exiles, who had not forgotten the old quarrel at Frankfort, and had accused of disloyalty and disaffection to the Queen, not only Knox, but all those who had been under his charge at Geneva, whom they represented as proselytes to the opinion which he had published against female government. There was not an individual who could believe that Knox had the most distant eye to Elizabeth, in publishing the obnoxious book; nor a person

* Troubles at Franckford, pp. 189, 190.

† Cald. MS. i, 380.

‡ Histoire Littéraire de Geneve, par Jean Senebier, tome i. 375. Genev. 1786. It is somewhat singular, that Calvin did not obtain this honour until December, 1559. "Il n'y a cependant point de citoyen (says Senebier) qui ait achete ce titre honorable aussi cherement que lui par ses services, et je ne crois pas qu'il y en ait beaucoup qui l'aient autant merite, et qui le rendent aussi celebre." Ibid. pp. 230, 231.

Our Reformer obtained another public testimony of esteem at this time, from Bishop Bale, who dedicated his work on Scottish

Writers to him and Alexander Aless. The praise which he bestows on him deserves the more notice, because the bishop had been one of his opponents at Frankfort. "Te vero, Knoxe, frater amantissime, conjunxit mihi Anglia et Germania, imprimis autem doctrinæ nostræ in Christo Domino fraterna consensio. Nemo est enim qui tuam fidem, constantiam, patientiam, tot erumnis, tanta persecutione, exilioque diuturno et gravi testatum, non collaudet, et non admiretur, non amplectatur." Balei Script. Illus. Maj. Brit. poster. pars. p. 175, 176. Basilæ, ex officina Joan. Operini, 1559. Mense Februario.

of judgment who could seriously think that her government was exposed to the slightest danger from him or his associates, who felt no less joy at her auspicious accession than the rest of their brethren.* If he had been imprudent in that publication, if he had “swerved from the particular question to the general,” his error (to use the words of his respondent) “rose not of malice, but of zeal, and by looking more to the present cruelty, than to the inconveniencies that after might follow ;” and it was the part of generosity and policy to overlook the fault. Instead of this, Elizabeth and her counsellors took up the charge in a serious light ; and the accused were treated with such harshness and disdain, that they repented of leaving their asylum to return to their native country. This conduct was the more inexcusable, as numbers who had been instrumental in the cruelties of the preceding reign, were admitted to favour, or allowed to remain unmolested ; and even Bonner was allowed to present himself at court, and to retire with a simple frown. †

The refusal of his request, and the harsh treatment of his flock, touched to the quick the irritable temper of our Reformer ; and it was with some difficulty that he suppressed the desire which he felt rising in his breast, to prosecute a controversy which he had resolved to abandon. “*My first Blast,*” says he, in a letter dated Dieppe, 6th April, 1559, “hath blown from me all my friends in England. My conscience bears record, that yet I seek the favour of my God, and so I am in the less fear. The *second* Blast, I fear,

* The exiles of Geneva dedicated, in February, 1559, their metrical version of the Psalms to Queen Elizabeth. In the dedication they join their congratulations, with those of all their brethren, for her accession to the throne, and profess their loyalty in the warmest terms. “When we heard (say they) that the almightie and most mercifull God had no less myraculously preferred you to that excellent dignitie, than he had aboue all mens expectations preserued you from the furie of such as sought your blood ; with most joyful myndes and great diligence we endeavoured our selves, to set foorth and dedicate this most excellent booke of the Psalmes vnto your grace as a speciall token of our service and good will, till the rest of the Byble, which, praysed be God, is in good readinesse, may be accomplished and presented.” They speak in the

same strain in the dedication of their Translation of the Bible, published anno 1560.

† In the first Parliament of Elizabeth, one Dr. Story, who had been a chief instrument of the cruelties under the former reign, had the effrontery to make a speech in the House of Commons, in which he justified and boasted of his cruelty : said, “that he saw nothing to be ashamed of, or sorry for : wished that he had done more, and that he and others had been more vehement in executing the laws ;” and said “that it grieved him that they had laboured only about the young and little twigs, whereas they should have struck at the root ;” by which he was understood to mean Queen Elizabeth. Yet it does not appear that he suffered any thing for his speech. *Strype’s Annals*, i. 79, 536.

shall sound somewhat more sharp, except that men be more moderate than I hear they are.—England hath refused me ; but because, before, it did refuse Christ Jesus, the less do I regard the loss of this familiarity. And yet have I been a secret and assured friend to thee, O England, in cases which thyself could not have remedied.”* But greater designs occupied his mind, and engrossed his attention. It was not for the sake of personal safety, nor from vanity of appearing at court, that he desired to pass through England. He felt the natural wish to visit his old acquaintances in that country, and was anxious for an opportunity of addressing once more those to whom he had preached, especially at Newcastle and Berwick. But there was another object which he had still more at heart, in which the welfare of both England and Scotland was concerned.

Notwithstanding the flattering accounts which he received from his countrymen, of the favourable disposition of the Queen-Regent towards the Protestants, and the directions which he sent them to cultivate this, he always entertained suspicions of the sincerity of her professions. But since he left Geneva, these suspicions had been confirmed ; and the information which he had procured, in travelling through France, conspired, with the intelligence which he had lately received from Scotland, in convincing him that the immediate suppression of the Reformation in his native country, and its consequent suppression in the neighbouring kingdom, were intended. The plan projected by the gigantic ambition of the princes of Lorrain, brothers of the Queen-Regent of Scotland, has been developed and described with great accuracy and ability by a celebrated modern historian.† Suffice it to say here, that the Court of France, under their influence, had resolved to set up the claim of the young Queen of Scots to the crown of England ; to attack Elizabeth, and wrest the sceptre from her hands as a bastard and a heretic ; and as Scotland was the only avenue by which this attack could be successfully made, to begin by suppressing the Reformation, and establishing their power in that country. Knox, in the course of his journies

* Cald. MS. i. 384. See also Knox's History, p. 204-207.

† Robertson's History of Scotland, B. ii. ad ann. 1559.

through France, had formed an acquaintance with some persons about the Court ; and by their means had gained some knowledge of the plan.* He was convinced that the Scottish Reformers were unable to resist the power of France, which was to be directed against them ; and that it was the interest as well as the duty of the English Court, to afford them the most effectual support. But he was afraid that a selfish and narrow policy might prevent them from doing this, until it was too late ; and was therefore anxious to call their attention to this subject at an early period, and to put them in possession of the facts that had come to his knowledge. The assistance which Elizabeth granted to the Scottish Protestants in 1559 and 1560, was dictated by the soundest policy. It baffled and defeated the designs of her enemies at the very outset ; it gave her an influence over Scotland, which all her predecessors could not obtain by the terror of their arms, nor the influence of their money ; it secured the stability of her government, by extending and strengthening the Protestant interest, the principal pillar on which it rested. And it reflects not a little credit on our Reformer's sagacity, that he had formed this plan in his mind at so early a period, was the first person who proposed it, and persisted (as we shall see) to urge its adoption, until his endeavours were crowned with success.

Deeply impressed with these considerations, he resolved, although he had already been twice repulsed, to brook the mortification, and make another attempt to obtain an interview with some confidential agent of the English government. With this view he, on the 10th of April, wrote a letter to Secretary Cecil, with whom he had been personally acquainted during his residence in London. Adverting to the treatment of the exiles who had returned from Geneva,

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 206, 214, 260. He had an opportunity of receiving a confirmation of this intelligence during his voyage to Scotland. In the same ship in which he sailed, there was sent by the French Court, to the Queen Regent, a Staff of State, with a great seal, on which were engraved the arms of France, Scotland, and England. This was shewn to him in great secrecy. The English Court, after they were awakened from their lethargy, and convinced of the hostile designs of France, applied to Knox for that information which they might have had six months

before. Cotton MSS. Caligula, B. ix. f. 38, 74. Sadler's *State Papers*, i. 463, 688. Keith. Ap. p. 38, 42. The English certainly suffered themselves to be amused at the treaty of Chateau Cambrensis, while the Courts of France and Spain concerted measures dangerous to England, and the whole Protestant interest. Dr. Wotton, one of the commissioners, complains, in a letter to Cecil, of want of intelligence, and that the English had no spies on the Continent. Forbes's *State Papers*, i. 23.

he exculpated them from all responsibility as to the offensive book which he had published, and assured him that he had not consulted with one of them previous to its publication. As for himself, he did not mean to deny that he was the author, nor was he yet prepared to retract the leading sentiment which it contained. But he was not, on that account, less friendly to the person and government of Elizabeth, in whose exaltation he cordially rejoiced, although he rested the defence of her authority upon grounds different from the common. This was the third time that he had craved liberty to pass through England. He had no desire to visit the court, nor to remain long in the country ; but he was anxious to communicate to him, or some other trusty person, matters of importance, which it was not prudent to commit to writing, nor to entrust to an ordinary messenger. If his request was refused, it would turn out to the disadvantage of England.*

The situation in which he stood at this time with the Court of England, was so well known that it was with difficulty he could find a messenger to carry the letter ; † and either despairing of the success of his application, or hastened by intelligence received from Scotland, he sailed from Dieppe on the 22d of April, 1559, and landed safely at Leith in the beginning of May.‡

On his arrival, he found matters in the most critical state in Scotland. The Queen-Regent had thrown off the mask which she had long worn, and avowed her determination forcibly to suppress the Reformation. As long as she stood in need of the assistance of the Protestants to support her authority against the Hamiltons, and procure the matrimonial crown for her son-in-law, the Dauphin of France, she courted their friendship, listened to their plans of reform, professed dissatisfaction with the corruption and tyranny of the ecclesiastical order, and her desire of correcting them

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 204, 206.

† The person whom he at last persuaded to take his letter was Richard Harrison. But the honest spy, (for such was his employment at that time) dreading that Knox had made him the bearer of another "Blast," which if it did not endanger the throne of Elizabeth, might blow up his credit with the court, prudently carried the suspicious packet to Sir

Nicolas Throckmorton, the English Ambassador at the Court of France, and obtained his sanction and safe-conduct before conveying it to London. Letter from Throckmorton to Cecil, 15th of May, 1559. *Forbes's State Papers*, i. 90, 91.

‡ *Cald. MS.* 392, 393. Knox, *Historie*, p. 127, 207.

as soon as a fit opportunity offered, and flattered them, if not with the hopes of her joining their party, at least with assurances that she would shield them from the fury of the clergy. So completely were they duped by her consummate address and dissimulation, that they complied with all her requests, restrained some of their preachers from teaching in public, and desisted from presenting to the late Parliament a petition which they had prepared ; nor would they believe her insincere, even after different parts of her conduct had afforded strong grounds for suspicion. But having accomplished the great objects which she had in view, she at last, in conformity with instructions from France, and secret engagements with the clergy, adopted measures which completely undeceived them, and discovered the gulph into which they were ready to be precipitated.*

As early as July, 1558, she had held consultations with Hamilton, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, as to the course which should be adopted for checking the progress of the Reformation. The result of these counsels was a determination to bring to trial certain individuals, who had offended the Romish clergy by expounding Scripture in private meetings ; and accordingly, about the end of December, the primate, who had received from the Regent positive assurance of her support in his exertions for maintaining the authority of the Church, summoned the Reformed preachers to appear before him at St. Andrew's on the 2d of February following, to answer for their conduct in disseminating heretical doctrines. The boldness of the Protestants, however, who waited on the Regent, and told her they would repair to St. Andrew's and see justice done to their preachers, prevented this step from being carried into effect, and in consequence the trial was prorogued. Meantime a convention of the nobility, and a provincial council of the clergy, were summoned to be held at Edinburgh early in March, to advise upon the most proper measures for settling the religious differences which had so long agitated the nation. The Protestants on their part, appointed commissioners to lay before these meetings certain prelimi-

* See Note D.—Period Fifth.

nary articles of Reformation, craving that the religious service should be performed in the vernacular tongue, that unfit pastors should be removed from their benefices, and measures adopted for preventing immoral and ignorant persons from being employed in ecclesiastical functions. To these proposals the Council not only refused to agree, but they ratified, in the strongest terms, all the Popish doctrines denied by the Reformers. They ordered that strict inquisition should be made after such as absented themselves from the mass, and that those who administered or received the sacrament of the supper or baptism after the Protestant form, should be excommunicated. Proclamation to this effect was immediately issued by the Regent, commanding all her subjects to prepare to celebrate the ensuing feast of Easter according to the rites of the Romish Church. To this ordinance, the Reformed preachers, who had quitted Edinburgh on finding themselves deserted by the Court, and all their hopes of negotiation fruitless, paid little regard; and, consequently, the Regent determined on taking decisive steps to enforce obedience by bringing the defaulters to justice. Accordingly, John Willock, Paul Methven, William Harlaw, and John Christison, were summoned to stand trial before the Justiciary Court at Stirling, on the 10th of May, for usurping the ministerial office, for administering, without the consent of their ordinaries, the sacrament of the altar in a manner different from that of the Catholic Church, during three several days of the late feast of Easter, in the burghs and boundaries of Dundee, Montrose, and various other places in the sheriffdoms of Forfar and Kincardine, and for convening the subjects in these places, preaching to them, seducing them to their erroneous doctrines, and exciting seditions and tumults. As the preachers were resolved to make their appearance, George Lovell, burgess of Dundee, became surety for Methven, John Erskine of Dun for Christison, Patrick Murray of Tibbermuir for Harlaw, and Robert Campbell of Kinyeancleugh for Willock. When the Earl of Glencairn and Sir Hugh Campbell of Loudon waited on the Queen to remonstrate against these harsh proceedings, and intercede in behalf of their preachers, she told them in plain terms that,

“in spite of them, they should be all banished from Scotland, although they preached as truly as ever St. Paul did;” and when they reminded her of the repeated promises of protection that she had given them, she unblushingly replied, that “it became not subjects to burden their princes with promises, farther than they pleased to keep them.” They told her that, if she violated the engagements which she came under to her subjects, they would consider themselves as released from allegiance to her, and warned her very freely of the dangerous consequences; upon which she adopted milder language, and engaged to suspend the trial. But soon after, upon hearing that France and Spain had concluded a treaty for the extirpation of heresy, and that the exercise of the Reformed religion had been introduced into the town of Perth, she renewed the process, and summoned all the preachers to appear at Stirling on the 10th of May, to undergo their trial.*

The state of our Reformer's mind, upon receiving this information, will appear from the following letter, hastily written by him on the day after he landed in Scotland:—

“The perpetual comfort of the Holy Ghost for salutation.

“These few lines are to signify unto you, dear sister, that it hath pleased the merciful providence of my heavenly Father to conduct me to Edinburgh, where I arrived the 2d of May: uncertain as yet what God shall further work in this country, except that I see the battle shall be great. For Satan rageth even to the uttermost, and I am come, I praise my God, even in the brunt of the battle. For my fellow preachers have a day appointed to answer before the Queen-Regent, the 10th of this instant, when I intend (if God impede not) also to be present; by life, by death, or else by both, to glorify his godly name, who thus mercifully hath heard my long cries. Assist me, sister, with your prayers, that now I shrink not when the battle approacheth. Other things I have to communicate with you, but travel after travel doth so occupy me, that no time is granted me to write. Advertise my brother, Mr. Goodman, of my

* Buchanan, Hist. lib. xvi. pp. 312, 313. Oper. Rudlm. Knox, Spotswood.

estate; as in my other letter sent unto you from Dieppe, I willed you. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ rest with you. From Edinburgh, in haste, the 3d of May.”*

The arrival of Knox in Edinburgh was too important an event to be long kept concealed. It was announced on the morning after he landed at Leith to the provincial council of the city, then sitting in the Monastery of the Greyfriars; and the intelligence had the effect of breaking up the assembly in haste and confusion. They immediately despatched a messenger to the Regent, who was then at Glasgow, and in a few days the daring Reformer was proclaimed an outlaw and a rebel, in virtue of the sentence formerly pronounced against him by the clergy. Yet although his own cause was prejudged, and sentence already pronounced against him, he did not hesitate a moment in resolving to present himself voluntarily at Stirling, to assist his brethren in their defence, and share in their danger. Having rested only a single day at Edinburgh, he hurried to Dundee, where he found the principal Protestants in Angus and Mearns already assembled, determined to attend their ministers to the place of trial, and avow their adherence to the doctrines for which they were accused. The providential arrival of such an able champion of the cause at this crisis, must have been very encouraging to the assembly; and the liberty of accompanying them, which he requested, was readily granted.

Lest the unexpected approach of such a multitude, though unarmed, should alarm or offend the Regent,† the Protestants agreed to stop at Perth, and sent Erskine of Dun before them to Stirling, to acquaint her with the peaceable object and manner of their coming. Apprehensive that their presence would disconcert her measures, the Regent had again recourse to dissimulation. She persuaded Erskine to write

* Letter to Mrs. Anne Locke, apud Cald. MS. i. 393.

† It was about this time that they began to be called the Congregation. Dr. Robertson says that they were distinguished by this name “from their union;” others say, that they received it from their calling themselves so frequently “the Congregation of Christ,” particularly in the covenant which they had lately subscribed. It is of more importance to observe, that, from the time that they began to

suspect the Regent's hostile intentions, the Protestants were industrious in obtaining subscriptions to this Covenant. Copies of it were committed to the principal persons among them in different districts, who received the names of all such as were friendly to the Reformation. By this means they were firmly bound to one another, and had also an opportunity of exactly ascertaining their number. Buchanan, *Hist. lib. xvi. p. 311. Oper. Rudim. Keith, pp. 68, 69.*

to his brethren to desist from their intended journey, and authorised him to promise, in her name, that she would put a stop to the trial. They testified their pacific intentions by a cheerful compliance with this request, and the greater part, confiding in the royal promise, returned to their homes. But when the day of trial came, the summons was called by the orders of the Queen ; the accused were outlawed for not appearing ; and all persons were prohibited, under the pain of rebellion, from harbouring or assisting them.*

Escaping from Stirling, Erskine brought to Perth the intelligence of this disgraceful transaction, which could not fail to incense the Protestants. It happened that, on the same day on which the news came, Knox, who remained at Perth, preached a sermon in which he exposed the idolatry of the mass and of image-worship. Sermon being ended, the audience quietly dismissed : a few idle persons only loitered in the church, when an imprudent priest, wishing either to try the disposition of the people, or to shew his contempt of the doctrine which had been just delivered, uncovered a rich altar-piece, decorated with images, and prepared to celebrate mass. A boy, having uttered some expressions of disapprobation, was struck by the priest. He retaliated by throwing a stone at the aggressor, which, falling on the altar, broke one of the images. This operated like a signal upon the people present, who had taken part with the boy, and in the course of a few minutes the altar, images, and all the ornaments of the church were torn down and trampled under foot. The noise soon collected a mob, who, finding no employment in the church, by a sudden and irresistible impulse, flew upon the monasteries ; nor could they be restrained by the authority of the magistrates and the persuasions of the preachers, (who assembled as soon as they heard of the riot,) until the houses of the Grey and Black Friars, with the costly edifice of the Carthusian monks, were laid in ruins. None of the gentlemen or sober part of the congregation were concerned in this unpremeditated tumult ; it was wholly confined to the

* Fines were imposed on the following gentlemen, who had given security for their appearance, viz. George Lovell, Burgess of Dundee, as security for Methven, Erskine of Dun for Christison, Patrick Murray of Tibbermuir for Harlaw, and Robert Campbell of Kinyeancleugh for Willock. Justiciary Records, 1558, 1559.

baser inhabitants, or (as Knox designs them) “the rascall multitude.”*

The demolition of the monasteries having been represented as the first fruits of our Reformer’s labours on this occasion, it was necessary to give this minute account of the causes which produced that event. Whatever his sentiments were as to the destruction of the instruments and monuments of idolatry, he wished this to be accomplished in a regular manner; he was sensible that such tumultuary proceedings were prejudicial to the cause of the Reformers in present circumstances; and instead of instigating, he exerted himself in putting a stop to the ravages of the mob. If this sudden outbreak must be traced to a remote cause, we must impute it to the wanton and dishonourable perfidy of the Queen.

In fact, nothing could be more favourable to the designs of the Regent than this riot. By her recent conduct, she had forfeited the confidence of the Protestants, and even exposed herself in the eyes of the sober and moderate of her own party. This occurrence afforded her an opportunity of turning the public indignation from herself, and directing it against the Congregation. She did not fail to improve it with her usual address. Having assembled the nobility at Stirling, she magnified the accidental tumult into a dangerous and designed rebellion. To the Catholics, she dwelt upon the sacrilegious overthrow of those venerable structures which their ancestors had dedicated to the service of God. To the Protestants who had not joined those at Perth, she complained of the destruction of the royal foundation of the Charter-house, protested that she had no intention of offering violence to their consciences, and promised her protection, provided they assisted her in punishing those who had been guilty of this violation of public order. Having inflamed the minds of all against them, she advanced to Perth with an army, threatening to lay waste the town with fire and sword, and to inflict the most exemplary vengeance on all who had been instrumental in producing the riot.†

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 128

† A writer has given the name of “bellum

imaginarium” to this war, undertaken by the Regent to avenge the destruction of the ima-

The Protestants of the north were not insensible of their danger, and did all in their power to appease the rage of the Queen.* They wrote to her, to the commanders of the French troops, to the Popish nobles, and to those of their own persuasion: they solemnly disclaimed all rebellious intentions; they protested their readiness to yield all due obedience to the government; they obtested and admonished all to refrain from offering violence to peaceable subjects, who sought only liberty of conscience, and the reformation of religion. But finding all their endeavours fruitless, they resolved not to suffer themselves and their brethren to be massacred, and prepared for a defence of the town against an illegal and furious assault. So prompt and vigorous were their measures, that the Regent, when she approached, deemed it imprudent to attack them, and proposed overtures of accommodation, to which they readily acceded.†

While the two armies lay before Perth, and negotiations were going on between them, our Reformer obtained an interview with the Prior of St Andrew's and the young Earl of Argyle, who adhered to the Regent. He reminded them of the solemn engagements which they had contracted, and charged them with violating these, by abetting measures which tended to the suppression of the Reformed religion, and the enslaving of their native country. The noblemen stated that the Regent and the clergy had represented their brethren as inclined to swerve from their former loyalty; and though it appeared this charge was unfounded, they assured him that they held their engagements sacred, and would endeavour to fulfil their promise to the Queen, to use their best endeavours for bringing the present differences to an amicable termination. If, however, she violated the present treaty, they promised that they

ges and altars, and the crimes charged upon the Congregation, he denominates "*mere imaginaria seditio et rebellio*." *Historie of the Church of Scotland to 1566.* MS. Adv. Lib. A. 5. 43.

* See Note F.—Period Fifth.

† When the overtures were proposed to the Congregation, they exclaimed with one voice; "*Cursit be they that seik effusioun of blude, weir, or dissentioun. Lat us possess Christ Jesus, and the benefite of his evangell, and*

nane within Scotland sall be mair obedient subjectis than we sall be." Knox, *Historie*, p. 137. When the armies lay before Perth, the Regent's army consisted of 8000, that of the Congregation of 5000 men. This seems to have been the number of the latter, previous to the arrival of the Earl of Glencairn, with a reinforcement from the west. Glencairn had joined them before the conclusion of the treaty, a circumstance which did not alter their pacific wishes. *Cald. MS.* i. 426.

would no longer adhere to her, but would openly take part with the rest of the Congregation. The Queen was not long in affording them the opportunity of verifying this promise ; for no sooner was the Protestant force disbanded, and the city of Perth secure in her possession, than she began to disregard the stipulations to which she had agreed.

Convinced by numerous proofs that the Queen-Regent had formed a systematical plan for suppressing the Reformation, the Lords of the Congregation renewed their bond of union, and concerted measures for counteracting her designs.* For a full account of the interesting struggle that ensued, which was interrupted by treaties artfully proposed and perfidiously violated by the Regent, and at last broke out into an open, though not very bloody, civil war, I must refer to the general histories of the period. The object of the present work does not admit of entering into a detail of this, except in so far as our Reformer was immediately engaged in it, or as may be requisite for illustrating his conduct.

The Protestant leaders had frequently supplicated the Regent, to employ her authority and influence for removing those corruptions in religion which could no longer be palliated or concealed. They had made the same application to the clergy, but without success. “ To abandon usurped power, to renounce lucrative error, are sacrifices which the virtue of individuals has, on some occasions, offered to truth ; but from any society of men no such effort can be expected. The corruptions of a society, recommended by common utility, and justified by universal practice, are viewed by its members without shame or horror ; and Reformation never proceeds from themselves, but is always forced upon them by some foreign hand.” † The scandalous lives of the clergy, their total neglect of the religious instruction of the people, and the profanation of Christian worship by gross idolatry, were the most glar-

* Persons were employed in different parts of the country to obtain signatures to their religious Covenant, in their respective districts. The principal noblemen who had joined the Reformation at this time, were the Earls of Argyle, Glencairn, Monteith, and Rothes ; Lords Ochiltree, Boyd, Ruthven, and

the Prior of St. Andrew's ; some adhered to the Regent, and others remained neutral. The great strength of the Protestants lay in the districts of Mearns, Angus, Strathearn, Monteith, Fife, Cunningham, Kyle, Carrick, and Galloway. Knox, Hist. pp. 136, 138, 144.

† Dr. Robertson,

ing abuses. A great part of the nation loudly demanded the correction of these abuses ; and if regular measures had not been adopted for this purpose, the popular indignation would have effected the work by some less justifiable means. The Lords of the Congregation now resolved to introduce a Reformation, by abolishing the Popish superstition, and setting up the Protestant worship in those places to which their authority or influence extended, and where the greater part of the inhabitants were friendly to the cause. The feudal ideas respecting the jurisdiction of the nobility, which at that time prevailed in Scotland, in part justified this step : the urgent and extreme necessity of the case, however, forms its best vindication.

St. Andrew's was the place fixed on for beginning these operations. With this view, the Earl of Argyle, and Lord James Stewart, who was Prior of the abbey of St. Andrew's, made an appointment with Knox to meet them on a certain day, in that city. Travelling along the east coast of Fife, he preached at Anstruther and Crail, and on the 9th of June came to St. Andrew's. The Archbishop, apprised of his design to preach in his cathedral, assembled an armed force, and sent information to him that if he appeared in the pulpit, he would give orders to the soldiers to fire upon him. The noblemen, having met to consult what ought to be done, were of opinion that Knox should desist from preaching at that time. Their retinue, they said, was very slender ; they had not yet ascertained the disposition of the town ; the Queen lay at a small distance with an army, ready to come to the Bishop's assistance ; and his appearance in the pulpit might lead to the sacrifice of his own life, and the lives of those who were determined to defend him from violence.

There are occasions on which it is a proof of superior wisdom to disregard the ordinary dictates of prudence ; on which, to face danger is to shun it, to flee from it is to incur it. Had the Reformers, after announcing their intentions, suffered themselves to be intimidated by the bravading attitude and threats of the Archbishop, their cause would, at the very outset, have received a blow from which it would not easily have recovered. This was prevented by the firmness and intrepidity of Knox. Filled with the

recollection of the part which he had formerly acted on that spot, and with the near prospect of realizing the sanguine hopes which he had cherished in his breast for many years, he replied to the solicitations of his brethren :—That he could take God to witness, that he never preached in contempt of any man, nor with the design of hurting an earthly creature ; but to delay to preach next day, (unless forcibly hindered,) he could not in conscience agree : In that town, and in that church, had God first raised him to the dignity of a preacher, and from it he had been *reft* by French tyranny at the instigation of the Scots bishops : The length of his imprisonment, and the tortures which he had endured, he would not at present recite ; but one thing he could not conceal, that, in the hearing of many yet alive, he had expressed his confident hope of again preaching in St. Andrew's : Now, therefore, when Providence, beyond all men's expectation, had brought him to that place, he besought them not to hinder him. “ As for the fear of danger that may come to me,” continued he, “ let no man be solicitous ; for my life is in the custody of Him whose glory I seek. I desire the hand nor weapon of no man to defend me. I only crave audience ; which, if it be denied here unto me at this time, I must seek where I may have it.”

This intrepid reply silenced all further remonstrances ; and next day Knox appeared in the pulpit, and preached to a numerous assembly, including several of the clergy, without meeting with the slightest opposition or interruption. He discoursed on the subject of our Saviour's ejecting the profane traffickers from the temple of Jerusalem ; from which he took occasion to expose the enormous corruptions that had been introduced into the Church, under the Papacy, and to point out what was incumbent upon Christians, in their different spheres, for removing them. On the three following days he preached in the same place ; and such was the influence of his doctrine, that the provost, bailies, and inhabitants, harmoniously agreed to set up the Reformed worship in the town : the church was stripped of images and pictures, and the monasteries pulled down. This took place on the 14th of June, 1559. The Regent, during these proceedings, lay at Falkland

with the royal army, and attempted to surprise the Protestant Lords, who were attended only by a small retinue; but their brethren in Angus having intelligence of their critical situation, marched to their assistance with such speed and in such numbers, as to intimidate the Queen from risking a battle. A truce was agreed to, by which she consented to remove the French troops from Fife, and to send commissioners to treat with the Protestants at St. Andrew's, for the purpose of endeavouring to effect an amicable arrangement. The troops were removed; but instead of a commissioner to settle their differences, the Regent proposed to seize the passage of the Forth at Stirling, and thus cut off all communication with the brethren of the Congregation in the south. The Protestants advanced to Perth, the garrison of which they expelled; thence they proceeded to Stirling, which they seized, and then directing their march towards Edinburgh, they took possession of the capital, the Queen in the meantime retiring to Dunbar.*

The example of St. Andrew's was quickly followed in other parts of the kingdom; and in the course of a few weeks, at Crail, at Cupar, at Lindores, at Stirling, at Linlithgow, at Glasgow, and at Edinburgh, the houses of the monks were overthrown, and all the instruments which had been employed to foster idolatry and image-worship were destroyed.†

These proceedings were celebrated in the singular lays which were at that time circulated among the Reformers:—

His cardinalles hes cause to mourne,
His bishops are borne a backe;
His abbots gat an uncouth turne,
When shavellinges went to sacke.
With burges wives they led their lives,
And fare better than wee.
Hay trix, trim goe trix, under the greene
wod-tree.

His Carmelites and Jacobinis,
His dominikes had great adoe;
His Cordeilier and Augustines,
Saint Francis's ordour to;

The sillie friers, mony yeiris
With babbling bleerit our ee.
Hay trix, &c.

Had not your self begun the weiris,
Your stepillis had bene standand yit:
It was the flattering of your frieris
That ever gart Sanct Francis flit;
Ye grew as superstitious
In wickednesse,
In gart us grow malicious
Contrair your messe.‡

* Knox, Hist. 141-146. Spotswood, 142-46.
Buchan. Oper. i. 315-16.

† Letter written by Knox from St. Andrew's,
23d June, 1559, apud Cald. MS. i. 426, 428.
Historie, pp. 140, 141.

‡ Gude and godly Ballates, apud Dalrymple's
Scotish Poems of the 16th Century, ii. pp. 192,
193.

Scarcely any thing in the progress of the Scottish Reformation, has been more frequently or more loudly condemned, than the demolition of those edifices upon which superstition had lavished all the ornaments of the chisel and pencil. To the Roman Catholics, who anathematized all that were engaged in this work of inexpressible sacrilege, and represented it as involving the overthrow of all religion,* have succeeded another race of writers who, although they do not, in general, make high pretensions to devotion, have not scrupled at times to borrow the language of their predecessors, and have bewailed the wreck of so many precious monuments, in as bitter strains as ever idolater did the loss of his gods. These are the warm admirers of Gothic architecture, and other relics of ancient art; some of whom, if we may judge from their language, would welcome back the reign of superstition, with all its ignorance and bigotry, if they could recover the objects of their adoration.† Writers of this stamp depict the devastations and ravages which marked the progress of the Reformation, in colours as dark as ever were employed by the historian in describing the overthrow of ancient learning, by the irruptions of the barbarous Huns and Vandals. Our Reformer cannot be mentioned by them without symptoms of horror, and in terms of detestation, as a barbarian, a savage, a ringleader of mobs, for overthrowing whatever was venerable in respect of antiquity, or sacred in respect of religion. It is unnecessary to produce instances.

Expectes eadem a summo minimoque poeta.

To remind such persons of the divine mandate to destroy all monuments of idolatry in the land of Canaan, would be altogether insufferable; and might provoke, from some of them, a profane attack upon the authority from which

* The tolbooth of Musselburgh was built out of the ruins of the Chapel of Loretto; on which account the good people of that town were, till lately, annually excommunicated at Rome. Sibbald's *Chronicle of Scottish Poetry*, iii. 19. Those who wish to see a specimen of Catholic declamation on this subject, will find it in Note F.—Period Fifth.

† The reader may take one example, which I adduce, not because it is the strongest, but because it happens to be at hand. "This abbey [Kelso] was demolished 1569, in consequence of the enthusiastic Reformation,

which, in its violence, was a greater disgrace to religion than all the errors it was intended to subvert. Reformation has hitherto always appeared in the form of a zealot, full of fanatic fury, with violence subduing, but through madness creating almost as many mischiefs in its oversights, as it overthrows errors in its pursuit. Religion has received a greater shock from the present struggle to repress some formularies and save some scruples, than it ever did by the growth of superstition." Hutchinson's *History of Northumberland*, and of an *Excursion to the Abbey of Melrose*, i. 265.

it proceeded. To plead the example of the early Christians, in demolishing the temples and statues dedicated to pagan polytheism, would only awaken the keen regrets which are felt for the irreparable loss.* It would be still worse to refer to the apocalyptic predictions, which some have been so fanatical as to think were fulfilled in the miserable spoliation of that "Great City," which, under all her revolutions, has so eminently proved the nurse of the arts, and given encouragement to painters, statuary, and sculptors, to "harpers, and musicians, and pipers, and trumpeters, and craftsmen of whatsoever craft;" who, to this day, have not forgotten their obligations to her, nor ceased to bewail her destruction. In any apology which I make for the Reformers, I would rather alleviate than aggravate the distress which is felt for the wreck of so many valuable memorials of antiquity. It has been observed by high authority, that there are certain commodities which derive their principal value from their great rarity, and which, if found in great quantities, would cease to be sought after or prized.† A nobleman of great literary reputation has, indeed, questioned the justness of this observation, as far as respects precious stones and metals.‡ But I flatter myself that the noble author and the learned critic, however much they differ as to public wealth, will agree that the observation is perfectly just, as applied to those commodities which constitute the wealth of the antiquary. With him *rarity* is always an essential and primary requisite. His property, like that of the possessor of the famous Sibylline books, does not decrease in value by the reduction of its quantity, but, after the greater part has been destroyed, becomes still more precious. If the matter be viewed in this light, antiquarians have no reason to complain of the ravages of the Reformers, who have left them such valuable remains, and placed them in that very

* "Alas! how little of its former splendour have time and the fanatic rage of the early Christians left to the Roman Forum? The covered passage, with a flight of steps, founded by Tarquin the elder, is no more here to shelter us from bad weather, or to serve for the spectators to entertain themselves with mountebanks in the market-place." A most deplorable loss, truly! The writer adds, that

the statues of the twelve gods are yet standing; no great proof, one would imagine, of the fanatic rage of the Christians. Kotzebue's Travels through Italy, vol. i. p. 200. Lond. 1807.

† Edinburgh Review, vol. iv. p. 348.

‡ Lord Lauderdale's Observations on Edinburgh Review.

state which awakens in their minds the most lively sentiments of the sublime and beautiful, by reducing them to—*Ruins.*

But to speak seriously, I would not be thought such an enemy to any of the fine arts, as to rejoice at the wanton destruction of their models, ancient or modern; or to vindicate those who, from ignorance or fanatical rage, may have excited the mob to such violent proceedings. At the same time, I must reprobate that spirit which disposes persons to magnify irregularities, and dwell with unceasing lamentations upon losses, which, in the view of an enlightened and liberal mind, will sink and disappear in the magnitude of the incalculable good which rose from the wreck of the revolution.* What! do we celebrate, with public rejoicings, victories over the enemies of our country, in the gaining of which the lives of thousands of our fellow-creatures have been sacrificed? and shall solemn masses and sad dirges, accompanied with direful execrations, be everlastingly sung for the mangled members of statues, torn pictures, and ruined towers? I will go farther and say, that I look upon the destruction of these monuments as a piece of good policy, which contributed materially to the overthrow of the Roman Catholic religion, and the prevention of its re-establishment. It was chiefly by the magnificence of temples, and the splendid apparatus of its worship, that the Popish Church fascinated the senses and imaginations of the people. There could not, therefore, be a more successful method of attacking it, than the demolition of the rites and edifices that contributed so much to extend its influence. There is more wisdom than many seem to perceive, in the maxim, which Knox is said to have inculcated, “that the best way to keep the *rooks* from returning, was to pull down their *nests*.” In demolishing, or rendering uninhabitable all those buildings which had served for the maintenance of the ancient superstition, (except what were requisite for the Protestant worship), the Reformers only acted upon the principles of a prudent general, who razes the castles and fortifications

* The ravages charged upon the Reformers, and the losses sustained, have been greatly exaggerated. See Note G.—Period Fifth.

which he is unable to keep, and which might afterwards be seized, and employed against him, by the enemy. Had they been allowed to remain, the Popish clergy would not have ceased to indulge hopes, and to make efforts to be restored to them; occasions would have been taken to tamper with the credulous, and inflame the minds of the superstitious; and the Reformers might soon have found reason to repent their ill-judged forbearance.*

Our Reformer continued at St. Andrew's till the month of June. He was with the forces of the Congregation when they confronted the royal army at Cupar Moor, near Falkland; he accompanied them to Perth, and thence to Edinburgh, from which the Regent had retired. The Protestants in this city fixed their eyes upon him, and chose him immediately for their minister. He accordingly entered upon that charge; but the Lords of the Congregation having soon after concluded a treaty with the Regent, by which they were forced to deliver up Edinburgh to her, and agreed to quit the city; they judged it unsafe for him to remain there, on account of the extreme personal hostility with which the Papists were inflamed against him.† Willock, as being less obnoxious to them, was therefore substituted in his place, while he undertook a tour of preaching through the kingdom. ‡ This itineracy had great influence in extending the Reformed interest. The wide field which was before him, the interesting situation in which he was placed, the dangers by which he was surrounded, and the hopes which he cherished, increased the ardour of his zeal, and

* . . . When we had quelled
The strength of Aztlan, we should have
thrown down
Her altars, cast her idols to the fire.

. . . The priests combined to save their
craft;

And soon the rumour ran of evil signs
And tokens; in the temple had been heard
Wailings and loud lament; the eternal fire
Gave dismally a dim and doubtful flame;
And from the censer, which at morn should
st eam

Sweet odours to the sun, a fœtid cloud,
Black and portentous, rose.—

Southey's *Madoc*, Part i. b. ii.

† The Lords of the Congregation had sent deputies to Dunbar, to assure the Regent that they had no intention of throwing off their allegiance, and only wished reasonable terms of

accommodation. With her usual insincerity, the queen pretended to negotiate, but having procrastinated until she understood the greater part of their forces had left them, she suddenly marched with her army to Edinburgh, which the Protestants were proposing to defend. But Leith having opened its gates to her, and the Castle being held in her interest by Lord Erskine, they were obliged to conclude a treaty, and leave the capital. Knox, *Hist.* 145, 151.

‡ Knox, *Historie*, p. 158. In the month of August, Willock administered the sacrament of the supper, after the reformed manner, in St Giles' Church, although the French soldiers in the Regent's service kept the city in alarm, and disturbed the Protestant worship. At this time the Popish service was confined to the Royal Chapel and the Church of Holyrood House. Knox, 159. Cook's *Hist. of Reform*, vol. ii. chap. xi. p. 166.

stimulated him to extraordinary exertions both of body and mind. Within less than two months, he travelled over the greater part of Scotland. He visited Kelso, and Jedburgh, and Dumfries, and Ayr, and Stirling, and Perth, and Brechin, and Montrose, and Dundee, and returned again to St. Andrew's. The attention of the nation was aroused; their eyes were opened to the errors by which they had been deluded; and they panted for the word of life which they had once tasted.* I cannot better describe the emotions which he felt at his success, than by quoting from the familiar letters which he wrote on the occasion, at intervals snatched from his constant employment.

“Thus far,” says he, in a letter from St. Andrew's, June 23d, “hath God advanced the glory of his dear Son among us. O! that my heart could be thankful for the superexcellent benefit of my God. The long thirst of my wretched heart is satisfied in abundance, that is above my expectation; for now forty days and more hath my God used my tongue, in my native country, to the manifestation of his glory. Whatsoever now shall follow, as touching my own carcase, his Holy name be praised. The thirst of the poor people, as well as of the nobility here, is wondrous great; which putteth me in comfort, that Christ Jesus shall triumph here in the north and extreme parts of the earth for a space.” In another letter, dated September 2d, he says, “Time to me is so precious, that with great difficulty can I steal one hour in eight days, either to satisfy myself, or to gratify my friends. I have been in continual travel since the day of appointment;† and notwithstanding the fevers have vexed me, yet have I travelled through the most part of this realm, where (all praise to His blessed Majesty!) men of all sorts and conditions embrace the truth. Enemies we have many, by reason of the Frenchmen who lately arrived, of whom our Papists hope golden hills. As we be not able to resist, we do nothing but go about Jericho, blowing with trumpets, as God giveth strength, hoping victory by his power alone.”‡

* Cald. MS. i. 472, 473. Forbes, i. 131. 155. Sadler, i. 431, 432.

† This refers to the agreement between the Regent and Lords of the Congregation, by which the latter gave up Edinburgh. It was

made on the 10th of July, according to Calderwood, but on the 25th, according to Knox, Historie, p. 154.

‡ Cald. MS. i. 428,

Immediately after his arrival in Scotland, he wrote for his wife and family, whom he had left at Geneva. On the 13th of June, Mrs. Knox and her mother were at Paris, and applied to Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, the English ambassador, for a safe conduct to pass into England. Throckmorton, who by this time had begun to penetrate the counsels of the French court, not only granted this, but wrote a letter to Queen Elizabeth, in which he urged the propriety of overlooking the offence which Knox had given by his publication, and of conciliating him by the kind treatment of his wife; seeing he was in great credit with the Lords of the Congregation, had been the principal instrument in producing the late change in that kingdom, and was capable of doing essential service to her Majesty.* Accordingly, Mrs. Knox came into England, and being conveyed to the Borders, by the directions of the Court, reached her husband in safety, on the 20th of September.† Her mother, after remaining a short time in her native country, followed her into Scotland, where she remained until her death.‡

The arrival of his family was the more gratifying to our Reformer, that they were accompanied by Christopher Goodman, his former colleague at Geneva. He had repeatedly written, in the most pressing manner, for him to come to his assistance, and expressed much uneasiness at the delay of his arrival.§ Goodman became minister at Ayr, and afterwards of St. Andrew's. The settlement of Protestant ministers took place at an earlier period than is mentioned in our common histories. Previous to September, 1559, eight towns were provided with pastors; other places remained unprovided, owing to the scarcity of preachers, which was severely felt.||

* Forbes, i. 129, 130. Throckmorton wrote to the same effect to Cecil, 7th June, and 19th July. Ibid. p. 119, 167. The ambassador was probably moved to more earnestness in this matter by the influence of Alexander Whitlaw of Greenrig, a particular friend of our Reformer, who was at this time in France. He returned soon after to Scotland, and Throckmorton recommended him to Cecil, as "a very honest, sober, and godly man."—"You must let him se as littel sin in England as yow maye"—He "is greatly estemyd of John Knoke, and he doth allso favour hym above other: nevertheles, he is sory for his boke rashey writen." Ibid. 137, 147—149.

† Cald. MS. i. 491.

‡ Knox applied to the English Court for a safe-conduct for Mrs. Bowes to come into Scotland, which was granted about the month of October. I have already noticed, that Mrs. Bowes's husband was dead. The particular time of his death I have not ascertained, but it seems to have been between 1554 and 1556. She is designed a widow, in the correspondence between Cecil and Sadler. Sadler, i. 456, 479, 509.

§ Cald. MS. i. 429, 473.

|| "Christ Jesus is preached in Edinburgh, and his blessed sacraments rightly ministered in all congregations and assemblies where the

In the meantime, it became daily more apparent that the Lords of the Congregation would be unable, without foreign aid, to maintain the struggle in which they were involved. Had the contest been merely between them and the domestic party of the Regent, they would soon have brought it to a successful termination; but they could not withstand the veteran troops which France had sent to her assistance, and was preparing to send, in still more formidable numbers. * As far back as the middle of June, our Reformer renewed his exertions for obtaining assistance from England; and persuaded William Kircaldy of Grange, first to write, and afterwards to pay a visit to Sir Henry Percy, who held a public situation on the English marches. Percy immediately transmitted his representations to London, and an answer was returned from Secretary Cecil, encouraging the correspondence.†

Knox himself wrote to Cecil, requesting permission to visit England,‡ and inclosed a letter to Queen Elizabeth, in which he attempted to apologise for his rude attack upon female government. There was nothing at which he was more awkward than making apologies, and in the present instance, he was the more embarrassed as he could not in conscience retract the sentiments that had given offence. The letter contains professions of strong attachment to Elizabeth's government; but the strain in which it is written is such as, if it was ever read by that high-minded princess, must have aggravated, instead of extenuating, his offence. But the sagacious Secretary, I have little doubt, suppressed it.§ He was himself friendly to the measure of assisting the Scottish Congregation, and exerted all his influence to bring over the Queen and her council to his opinion. A message was, accordingly, sent to Knox, desiring him to meet with

ministers be established; and they be these Edinburgh, Sanct Andrews, Dundie, Sanct Johnstoun [Perth], Brechen, Montross, Stirling, Air. And now Christ Jesus is begun to be preached upon the south borders next unto yow, in Jedburgh and Kelso; so that the trumpet soundeth over all; blessed be our God. We lack labourers, alace!" Letter, Knox to Locke, 2d Sept. 1559. apud Cald. MS. i. 472.

* Sadler, i. 403, 411. Forbes, vol. 1. passim.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 207.

‡ Ibid. p. 209. Forbes, i. 155, 167.

§ Cecil was accustomed to keep back intelligence which he knew would be disagreeable to his mistress. A curious instance of this occurs with respect to the misfortune which happened to Cockburn of Ormiston, while conveying a subsidy which she had sent to the Congregation. Sadler, i. 573. We learn, from one of his own letters, that he did not usually communicate the epistles of our Reformer, whom he knew to be no favourite with Elizabeth. Ibid. p. 535.

Sir Henry Percy at Alnwick, on the 2d of August, upon business which required the utmost secrecy and despatch ; and Cecil himself came down to Stamford to hold an interview with him.*

The confusion, produced by the advance of the Regent's army upon Edinburgh, retarded his journey ; but no sooner was this settled, than he sailed from Pittenweem to Holy Island. Finding that Percy was recalled from the Borders, he applied to Sir James Croft, governor of Berwick. Croft, who was not unapprised of the design upon which he came, dissuaded him from proceeding farther into England, and undertook to despatch his communications to London, and to procure a speedy return. While he remained at Berwick, Alexander Whitlaw of Greenrig, who had been banished to France, and was then in London on his way home, brought from the English Court answers to the letters formerly sent. These despatches he delivered to Knox, who immediately hastened to Stirling to lay them before a meeting of the Protestant lords. The irresolution or the caution of Elizabeth's cabinet had led them to express themselves in such general and unsatisfactory terms, that the Lords of the Congregation were both disappointed and displeased ; and it was with some difficulty that our Reformer obtained permission from them to write again to London, in his own name. The representation which he gave of the urgency of the case, and the danger of further hesitation or delay, produced a speedy reply, desiring them to send a confidential messenger to Berwick, who would receive a sum of money, to assist them in carrying on the war. About the same time, Sir Ralph Sadler was sent down to Berwick, to act as an accredited, but secret agent ; and the correspondence between the Court of London and the Lords of the Congregation continued afterwards to be carried on through him and Sir James Croft, until the English auxiliary army entered Scotland.†

If we reflect upon the connection which the religious and

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 212.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 212—214. The State Papers of Sir Ralph Sadler have been lately published in 2 vols. 4to. The 1st volume contains the greater part of the letters that passed

between him and the agents of the Congregation, which throw light upon this interesting period of our national history, and ought to be consulted along with the histories which appeared previous to their publication

civil liberties of the nation had with the contest in which the Protestants were engaged, and upon our Reformer's zeal in that cause, we will not be greatly surprised to find him at this time acting in the character of a politician. Extraordinary cases cannot be measured by ordinary rules. In a great emergency, like that under consideration, when all that is valuable and dear to a people is at stake, it becomes the duty of every individual to step forward, and exert the talents with which he is endowed for the public good. Learning was at this time rare among the nobility; and though there were men of distinguished abilities among the Protestant leaders, few of them had been accustomed to transact public business. Accordingly, the management of the correspondence with England was for a time devolved chiefly on Balnaves and our Reformer. But he submitted to this merely from a sense of duty, and regard to the common cause; and when the younger Maitland acceded to their party, Knox expressed the greatest satisfaction at the prospect which this gave him of being relieved from the burden.*

It was not without reason that he longed for this deliverance. He now felt that it was almost as difficult to preserve Christian integrity and simplicity amidst the crooked wiles of political intrigue, as he had formerly found it to pursue truth through the perplexing mazes of scholastic sophistry. In performing a task foreign to his habits, and repugnant to his disposition, he met with a good deal of vexation, and several unpleasant rubs. These were owing partly to his own impetuosity, partly to the grudge entertained against him by Elizabeth, but chiefly to the temporising line of policy which the English Court had prescribed to themselves. They were convinced of the danger of suffering the Scottish Protestants to be suppressed; but they wished to confine themselves to pecuniary aid, by which they thought the Lords of the Congregation would be enabled to expel the French, and bring the contest to a successful termination; while England, by the secresy with which that aid might be conveyed, would avoid an open breach

* Keith, Ap. 42.

with France. This plan, which originated in the personal disinclination of Elizabeth to the Scottish war, rather than in the judgment of her wisest counsellors, protracted the contest, and produced several disputes between the English agents and those of the Congregation.* The former were continually urging the associated lords to attack the Regent before she received fresh succours from France, and blaming their slow operations; they complained of the want of secrecy in their correspondence with England; and even insinuated that the money, intended for the common cause, was partially applied to private purposes. The latter were offended at this charge, and urged the necessity of military as well as pecuniary aid. †

In a letter to Sir James Croft, Knox represented the great importance of their being speedily assisted with troops, without which they would be in much hazard of miscarrying in an attack upon the fortifications of Leith. The Court of England, he said, ought not to hesitate at offending France, of whose hostile intentions against them they had the most satisfactory evidence. But “if ye list to craft with thame,” continued he, “the sending of a thousand or mo men, to us can breake no league nor point of peace contracted betwixt you and France: For it is free for your subjects to serve in warr anie prince or nation for their wages; and if yee fear that such excuses will not prevail, ye may declare thame rebelles to your realme, when ye shall be assured that thai be in our companie.” No doubt such things have been often done; and such *political casuistry* (as Keith not improperly styles it) is not unknown at courts. But it must be confessed, that the measure recommended by Knox (the morality of which must stand on the same grounds with the assistance which the English were at that time affording) was too glaring to be concealed by the excuses which he suggested. Croft laid hold of this opportunity to check the impetuosity of his correspondent, and

* See Note H.—Period Fifth.

† Sadler, i. 520, 524. Randolph mentions in one of his letters, that both Knox and Balnaves were discontented. Keith has inserted a letter in which Balnaves complained of, and vindicated himself from the charges brought against him. Sadler afterwards endeavoured

to pacify them. Keith, Ap. 43, 44. Sadler, i. p. 537. 548. Notwithstanding the complaints against the Congregation for being too “open,” there is some reason to think that Sir James Croft’s own secretary had informed the Queen-Regent of the correspondence between England and the Congregation. Forbes, i. p. 137.

wrote him, that he wondered how he, "being a wise man," would require from them such aid as they could not give "without breach of treaty, and dishonour;" and that the world was not so blind as not to see through the devices by which he proposed to colour the matter. Knox, in his reply, apologized for his "unreasonable request;" but at the same time, reminded Croft of the common practice of courts in such matters, and of the French Court toward themselves in a recent instance.* He was not ignorant, he said, of the inconveniences which might attend an open declaration in their favour, but feared that they would have cause to "repent the drift of time, when the remedy shall not be so easy."†

This is the only instance in which I have found our Reformer recommending any thing like dissimulation, which was very foreign to the openness of his natural temper, and the blunt and rigid honesty which marked all his actions. His own opinion was, that the English Court ought from the first to have done what they found themselves obliged at last to do, to declare openly their resolution to support the Congregation. Keith praises Croft's "just reprimand on Mr Knox's double-fac'd proposition," and Cecil says, that his "audacitie was well tamed." We must not, however, imagine that either of these statesmen had any scruple of conscience or of honour on the point. For, on the very day on which Croft answered Knox's letter, he wrote to Cecil that he thought the Queen ought openly to take part with the Congregation. And in the same letter in which Cecil speaks of Knox's audacity, he advises Croft to adopt, in substance, the same measure which Knox had recommended, though in a more plausible shape, by sending five or six officers, who should "steal from thence with appearance of displeasure for lack of interteynment;" and in a subsequent letter, he gives directions to send three or four

* "See how Mr. Knox still presses his underhand management!" says Keith. Quære, Did the honest Bishop never find any occasion, in the course of his history, to reprimand such management in his own friends? or did he think that intrigue was criminal only when it was employed by Protestant cabinets and ministers?

† Keith, Ap. 40-42. Sadler, i. p. 523. In fact, if a storm had not dispersed and shattered the French fleet, which had on board the Marquis D'Elbeuf, and a large body of French troops, destined for the reinforcement of the Queen-Regent of Scotland, the English, after so long delay, would have found it very difficult to expel the French from Scotland.

fit for being captains, who should give out that they left Berwick, "as men desyrous to be exercised in the warres, rather than to lye idely in that towne." *

Notwithstanding the prejudice which existed in the English Court against our Reformer,† on account of his "audacity" in attacking female prerogative, they were too well acquainted with his integrity and influence to decline his services. Cecil kept up a correspondence with him; and in the directions sent from London for the management of the subsidy, it was expressly provided, that he should be one of the council for examining the receipts and payments, to see that it was applied "to the common action," and not to any private use. ‡

In the meantime, his zeal and activity in the cause of the Congregation, exposed him to the deadly resentment of the Queen-Regent and the Papists. A reward was publicly offered to the person who should seize or kill him; and numbers, actuated by hatred or avarice, lay in wait to apprehend him. But he was not deterred by this from appearing in public, nor from travelling through the country in the discharge of his duty. His exertions at this period were incredibly great. By day he was employed in preaching, by night in writing letters on public business. He was the soul of the Congregation; was always present at the post of danger; and by his presence, his public discourses, and private advices, animated the whole body, and defeated the schemes employed to corrupt and disunite them. §

* Sadler, i. 522, 534, 568. Note I.—Period Fifth.

† The Lords of the Congregation having proposed to send our Reformer to London, as one of their Commissioners, Cecil found it necessary to discourage the proposal. "Of all others, Knoxees name, if it be not Goodman's, is most odiose here; and, therefore, I wish no mention of him [coming] hither." And in another letter he says, "His writings, [i. e. Knox's letters] do no good here; and therefore I doo rather suppress them, and yet I meane not but that ye should contynue in sending of them." Sadler, i. 532, 535. The editor of Sadler supposes, without any reason, that Knox and Goodman were obnoxious to the court on account of their Geneva discipline, and republican tenets. They had both been guilty of one offence, and that a very different one,—their attack upon "the Regiment of Women." I shall afterwards have occasion to

notice the prosecution to which Goodman was subjected for this, on his return to England

‡ Sadler, i. 540. Keith, Ap. 40.

§ "In twenty-four hours, I have not four free to natural rest, and easce of this wicked carcass. Remember my last request for my mother, and say to Mr. George [Mr. George Bowes, his brother-in-law] that I have need of a good and an assured horse; for great watch is laid for my apprehension, and large money promised till any that shall kyll me.—And this part of my care now poured in your bosom, I cease farther to trouble you, being troubled myself in body and spirit, for the troubles that be present, and appear to grow.—At mydnicht.

Many things I have to writ, which now tym suffereth not, but after, if ye mak haste with this messinger, ye shall undirstand more.

R ryt I write with
sleeping eis." Knox's Letter to Rayl-

Our Reformer was now called to take a share in a very delicate and important measure. The cause of the Congregation had lately received an important increase of strength, by the accession of the former Regent, the Duke of Chatelherault, and his eldest son, the Earl of Arran, who had embraced the Reformed doctrine in France, where he commanded the Scots guard. Through his influence, the father, whose conduct had been extremely vacillating, was gained over to the Reformed party, and subscribed their bond of confederation. When the Lords of the Congregation first had recourse to arms in their own defence, they had no intention of making any alteration in the government, nor of assuming the exercise of the supreme authority.* Even after they had adopted a more regular and permanent system of resistance to the measures of the Regent, they continued to recognize the station which she held, presented petitions to her, and listened respectfully to the proposals which she made, for removing the grounds of variance. But finding that she was fully bent upon the execution of her plan for subverting the national liberties, and that the office which she held gave her great advantages in carrying on this design, they began to deliberate upon the propriety of adopting a different line of conduct. Their sovereigns were minors, in a foreign country, and under the management of persons who had been the principal instruments in producing all the evils of which they complained. The Queen-Dowager held the Regency by the authority of Parliament; and might she not be deprived of it by the same authority? In the present state of the country, it was impossible for a free and regular Parliament to meet; but the greater and better part of the nation had declared their dissatisfaction with her administration; and was it not competent for them to provide for the public safety which was exposed to such imminent danger? These were questions which formed the topic of frequent conversation at this time.

ton, 23d October, 1559. Keith, Ap. 38. Sadler, i. 681, 682.

The letter, written with the Reformer's own hand, is in the British Museum. Cotton MSS. Calig. B. ix. f. 38. The conclusion of the letter, which is here printed in imitation of the

original, is very descriptive of the state of the writer at the time.—It appears from the same letter, that, amidst his other employments, he had already begun and made considerable progress in his History of the Reformation.

* See Note K.—Period Fifth.

After much deliberation on this important point, a numerous assembly of nobles, barons, and representatives of boroughs met at Edinburgh on the 21st of October, to bring it to a solemn issue. To this assembly Knox and Willock were called; and the question being stated to them, they were required to deliver their opinions as to the lawfulness of the measure. Willock, who officiated as minister of Edinburgh, being first asked, declared it to be his judgment, founded upon reason and Scripture, that the power of rulers was limited; that they might be deprived of it upon valid grounds; that the Queen-Regent having by the fortification of Leith, and the introduction of foreign troops, evinced a fixed determination to oppress and enslave the kingdom, might justly be deprived of her authority by the nobles and barons, the native counsellors of the realm, whose petitions and remonstrances she had repeatedly rejected. Knox assented to the opinion delivered by his brother, and added, that the assembly might, with safe consciences, act upon it, provided they attended to the three following things; *first*, that they did not suffer the misconduct of the Queen-Regent to alienate their affections from due allegiance to their sovereigns, Francis and Mary; *second*, that they were not actuated in the measure by private hatred or envy of the Queen-Dowager, but by regard to the safety of the commonwealth; and *third*, that any sentence which they might pronounce at this time should not preclude her re-admission to the office, if she afterwards discovered sorrow for her conduct, and a disposition to submit to the advice of the Estates of the realm. After this, the whole assembly, having severally delivered their opinions, did, by a solemn deed, suspend the Queen-Dowager from her authority as Regent of the kingdom, until the meeting of a free Parliament;* and elected a council for the management of public affairs during the interval.†

* Dr. Robertson says, "It was the work but of one day to examine and resolve this nice problem, concerning the behaviour of subjects towards a ruler who abuses his power." But it may be observed, that this was but the formal determination of the question. It had been discussed among the Protestants frequently before this meeting, and, as early as the beginning of September, they were nearly

unanimous about it. Sadler, i. 433. It should also be noticed, that the Queen was only "suspended from," not absolutely "deprived of her office."

† Knox, 182-187. Alexander Gordon, Bishop of Galloway, (who had embraced the Reformation,) Knox, Goodman, and Willock, were appointed to be on the council, for matters of religion. Sadler, i. 510, 511.

Some have alleged that the act of suspending the Queen-Regent, was a matter altogether beyond the jurisdiction of ministers of the Gospel; and that Knox and Willock, by interposing their advice on this question, being incompetent to persons of their character, exposed themselves to unnecessary odium.* But it is not easy to see how they could have been excused, when required by those who had submitted to their ministry, in refusing to deliver their opinion upon a measure which involved a case of conscience, as well as a question of law and political right. The advice which was actually given and followed, is a matter of greater consequence than the quarter from which it came. As this proceeded upon principles very different from those which produced resistance to princes, and the limitation of their authority, under feudal governments; and as our Reformer has been the object of much animadversion for inculcating these principles, the reader will pardon another digression from the narrative, in illustration of this important subject.

Among the various causes which affected the general state of society and government in Europe, during the Middle Ages, we are particularly led to notice the influence of religion. Debased by ignorance, and fettered by superstition, the minds of men were prepared to acquiesce without examination in the claims of authority, and to submit tamely to every yoke. The genius of Popery is in every view friendly to slavery. The Romish Court, while it aimed directly at the establishment of a spiritual despotism in the hands of ecclesiastics, contributed to rivet the chains of political servitude upon the people. In return for the support which princes yielded to its arrogant claims, it was content to invest them with an absolute authority over the bodies of their subjects. By the priestly unction, performed at the coronation of kings in the name of the Holy See, a sacred character was understood to be communicated, that raised them to a superiority over their nobility which they did not formerly possess, rendered their persons inviolable, and their office divine. Although the sovereign pontiffs claimed, and on different occasions, exer-

* Spotswood, p. 137. Keith, 104.

cised the power of dethroning kings, and absolving subjects from their allegiance, yet any attempt of this kind, when it proceeded from the people themselves, was denounced as a crime deserving the severest punishment in this world, and damnation in the next. Hence sprung the divine right of kings to rule independently of their people, and of passive obedience and non-resistance to their will ; under the sanction of which they were encouraged to sport with the lives and happiness of their subjects, and to indulge in the most tyrannical and wanton acts of oppression, without the dread of resistance, or of being called to an account. Even in countries where the people were understood to enjoy certain political privileges, transmitted from remote ages, or wrested from their princes on some favourable occasions, these principles were generally prevalent ; and it was easy for an ambitious and powerful monarch to avail himself of them, to violate the rights of the people with impunity, and upon a constitution, the forms of which were friendly to popular liberty, to establish an administration completely despotic and arbitrary.

The contest between Papal sovereignty and the authority of General Councils, which was carried on during the fifteenth century, struck out some of the true principles of liberty, which were afterwards applied to political government. The revival of learning, by unfolding the principles of legislation and modes of government in the republics of ancient Greece and Rome, gradually led to more liberal notions on this subject. But these were confined to a few, and had no influence upon the general state of society. The spirit infused by philosophy and literature, is too feeble and contracted to produce a radical reform of established abuses ; and learned men, satisfied with their own superior illumination, and the liberty of indulging their speculations, have generally been too indifferent or too timid to attempt the improvement of the multitude. It is to the religious spirit excited during the sixteenth century, which spread rapidly through Europe, and diffused itself among all classes of men, that we are chiefly indebted for the propagation of the genuine principles of rational liberty, and the consequent amelioration of government.

Civil and ecclesiastical tyranny were so closely combined, that it was impossible for men to emancipate themselves from the latter without throwing off the former ; and from arguments which established their religious rights, the transition was easy and almost unavoidable, to disquisitions about their civil privileges. In those kingdoms in which the rulers threw off the Romish yoke, and introduced the Reformation by their authority, the influence was more imperceptible and slow ; and in some of them, as in England, the power taken from the ecclesiastical was thrown into the regal scale, which proved in so far prejudicial to popular liberty. But where the Reformation was embraced by the body of a nation, while the ruling powers continued to oppose it, the effect was visible and immediate. The interested and obstinate support which rulers gave to the old system of error and ecclesiastical tyranny, and their cruel persecution of all who favoured the new opinions, drove their subjects to inquire into the just limits of authority and obedience. Their judgments once informed as to the rights to which they were entitled, and their consciences satisfied respecting the means which they might employ to acquire them, the immense importance of the immediate object in view, their emancipation from religious bondage, and the salvation of themselves and their posterity, impelled them to make the attempt with an enthusiasm and perseverance which the mere love of civil liberty could not have inspired.

In effecting that memorable revolution, which terminated in favour of religious and political liberty in so many nations in Europe, the public teachers of the Protestant doctrine had a principal influence. By their instructions and exhortations, they roused the people to consider their rights and exert their power ; they stimulated timid and wary politicians ; they encouraged and animated princes, nobles, and confederated states, with their armies, against the most formidable opposition, and under the most overwhelming difficulties, until their exertions were crowned with the most signal success. These facts are now admitted, and this honour has at last, through the force of truth, been conceded to the religious leaders of the Protestant

Reformation, by philosophical writers who had too long branded them as ignorant and fanatical.*

Our national Reformer had caught a large portion of the spirit of civil liberty. We have already adverted to the circumstance in his education which directed his attention, at an early period, to some of its principles. † His subsequent studies introduced him to an acquaintance with the maxims and modes of government in the free states of antiquity; and it is reasonable to suppose that his intercourse with the republics of Switzerland and Geneva had some influence on his political creed. Having formed his sentiments independent of the prejudices arising from established laws, from long usage, and commonly received opinions, his zeal and intrepidity prompted him to avow and propagate them, when others, less sanguine and resolute, would have been restrained by fear, or despair of success. ‡ Extensive observation had convinced him of the glaring perversion of government in most of the European kingdoms; but his principles led him to desire their reform, not their subversion. His admiration of the policy of republics, ancient or modern, was not so great or indiscriminate as to prevent him from separating the essential principles of equity and freedom which they contained, from others which were incompatible with monarchy. He was perfectly sensible of the necessity of regular government to the maintenance of justice and order among mankind, and aware of the danger of setting men loose from its salutary control. He uniformly inculcated a conscientious obedience to the lawful commands of rulers, and respect to their persons as well as to their authority, even when they were chargeable with various mismanagements; so long as they did not break through all the restraints of law and justice, and cease to perform the essential duties of their office.

But he held that rulers, supreme as well as subordinate, were invested with authority for the public good; that obe-

* Viller's Essay on the Spirit and Influence of the Reformation of Luther, Mill's Translation, pp. 183, 186, 321, 327.

† See above, p. 6.

‡ "I praise my God (said he) I have not

learned to cry conjuration and treason at every thing that the godless multitude does condemn, neither yet to fear the things that they fear." Conference with Murray and Maitland, Historie, p. 339.

dience was not due to them in any thing contrary to the divine law ; that in every free and well constituted government, the law of the land was superior to the will of the prince ; that inferior magistrates and subjects might restrain the supreme magistrate from particular illegal acts, without throwing off their allegiance, or being guilty of rebellion ; that no class of men have an original, inherent, and indefeasible right to rule over a people, independently of their will and consent ; that every nation has a right to provide and require that they be ruled by laws agreeable to the divine law, and calculated to promote their welfare ; that there is a mutual compact, tacit and implied, if not formal and explicit, between rulers and their subjects ; and if the former shall flagrantly violate this, employ that power for the destruction of a commonwealth, which was committed to them for its preservation and benefit ; in one word, if they shall become habitual tyrants and notorious oppressors, that the people are absolved from allegiance, have a right to resist them, formally to depose them from their place, and to elect others in their room.

The real power of the Scottish kings was, indeed, always limited, and there are in our history, previous to the era of the Reformation, many instances of resistance to their authority. But though these were pleaded as precedents on this occasion, it must be confessed that we cannot trace them to the principles of genuine liberty. They were the effect either of sudden resentment on account of some flagrant act of mal-administration, or of the ambition of some powerful baron, or of the jealousy with which the feudal aristocracy watched over the prerogatives of their own order. The people who followed the standards of their chiefs had little interest in the struggle, and derived no benefit from the limitations which were imposed upon the sovereign. But, at this time, more just and enlarged sentiments were diffused through the nation, and the idea of a commonwealth, including the mass of the people as well as the privileged orders, began to be entertained. Our Reformer, whose notions of hereditary right, whether in kings or nobles, were not exalted, studied to repress the insolence and oppression of the aristocracy, he reminded them of the

original equality of men, and the ends for which some were raised above others ; and he taught the people that they had rights to preserve, as well as duties to perform.*

With respect to female government he never moved any question among his countrymen, nor attempted to gain proselytes to his opinion. Such, in substance, were the political sentiments of our Reformer, which were strenuously inculcated by him, and acted upon in Scotland in more than one instance during his life. That they should, at that period, have exposed those who held them to the charge of treason from despotical rulers and their numerous satellites ; that they should have been regarded with a suspicious eye by some of the learned, who had not altogether thrown off common prejudices, in an age when the principles of political liberty were only beginning to be understood,—is not much to be wondered at. But it must excite both surprise and indignation, to find writers in the present enlightened age, and under the sunshine of British liberty, (if our sun is not fast going down,) expressing their abhorrence of these sentiments, and exhausting upon their authors all the invective and virulence of the former Antimonarchists, and advocates of passive obedience. They are essentially the principles upon which the free constitution of Britain rests ; the most obnoxious of them were reduced to practice at the Revolution, when the necessity of employing them was not more urgent or unquestionable than it was at the suspension of the Queen-Regent of Scotland, and the subsequent sequestration of her daughter. I have said *essentially* ; for I would not be understood as meaning that every proposition advanced by Knox, on this subject, is expressed in the most guarded and unexceptionable manner ; or that all the cases in which he was led to vindicate forcible resistance to rulers, were such as rendered it necessary, or which may be pleaded as precedents in modern times. The political doctrines maintained at that time, received a tincture from the spirit of the age, and were accommodated to a rude and unsettled state of society and government. The checks that have since been introduced into the constitution, and the influence

* The authorities for this statement of Knox's political opinions will be found in Note L—Period Fifth.

which public opinion, expressed by the organ of a free press, has upon the conduct of rulers, are sufficient, in ordinary cases, to restrain dangerous encroachments, or afford the means of correcting them in a peaceable way ; and have thus happily superseded the necessity of having recourse to those desperate but decisive remedies which were formerly applied by an oppressed and indignant people. But if ever the time come when these principles shall be generally renounced and abjured, the extinction of the boasted liberty of Britain will not be far off.

Those who judge of the propriety of any measure from the success with which it is accompanied, will be disposed to condemn the suspension of the Queen-Regent. Soon after this step was taken, the affairs of the Congregation began to wear a gloomy appearance. The messenger whom they had sent to Berwick to receive a remittance from the English Court, was intercepted on his return, and rifled of the treasure ;* their soldiers mutinied for want of pay ; they were repulsed in a premature assault upon the fortifications of Leith, and worsted in a skirmish with the French troops ; the secret emissaries of the Regent were too successful among them ; their numbers daily decreased ; and the remainder disunited, dispirited, and dismayed, came to the resolution of abandoning Edinburgh on the evening on the 5th of November, and retreated with precipitation and disgrace to Stirling.

Amidst the universal dejection produced by these disasters, the spirit of Knox remained unsubdued. On the day after their arrival at Stirling, he mounted the pulpit, and delivered a discourse which had a wonderful effect in rekindling the zeal and courage of the Congregation. Their faces (he said) were confounded, their enemies triumphed, their hearts had quaked for fear, and still remained oppressed with sorrow and shame. What was the cause for which God had thus dejected them ? The situation of their affairs required plain language, and he would use it. In

* The messenger was Sir James Cockburn, of Ormiston. The sum he had received from Sadler and Crofts was 4000 crowns. On his way to Edinburgh he was attacked and plundered, after some resistance, by the Earl of

Bothwell—the same who makes a discreditable figure in Queen Mary's reign. Keith, App. to B. I. p. 30. Tytler, Hist. of Scot. vol. vi. p. 171.

the present distressed state of their minds, they were in danger of fixing upon an erroneous cause of their misfortunes, and of imagining that they had offended in taking the sword of self-defence into their hands ; just as the tribes of Israel did when twice discomfited in the war which they undertook, by divine direction, against their brethren the Benjamites. Having divided the Congregation into two classes, those who had been embarked in this cause from the beginning, and those who had lately acceded to it,* he proceeded to point out what he considered as blameable in the conduct of each ; and after exhorting all to amendment of life, prayers, and works of charity, he concluded with an animating address. God (he said) often suffered the wicked to triumph for a while, and exposed his chosen congregation to mockery, dangers, and apparent destruction, in order to abase their self-confidence, and induce them to look to him for deliverance and victory. If they turned unfeignedly to the Eternal, he no more doubted that their present distress would be converted into joy, and followed by success, than he doubted that Israel was finally victorious over the Benjamites, after being twice repulsed with ignominy. The cause in which they were engaged would, in spite of all opposition, prevail in Scotland. It might be oppressed for a time, but would ultimately triumph.

The audience, who had entered the church in deep despondency, left it with renovated courage. In the after-

* Some time before this, the Earl of Arran, having escaped from France, (where his life was in imminent danger, on account of his attachment to the Reformed doctrine,) and come into Scotland, persuaded his father, the Duke of Chastelherault, to join the Congregation, who was followed by the most of his retainers. The Duke was considered as the president or chief person in the Reformed Council, and was present at the sermon. That part of the discourse which related to his conduct, is a striking specimen of that boldness and freedom with which the preacher reproved the faults of the most powerful, a freedom which, on the present occasion, does not seem to have given any offence. After blaming the brethren for having become elated and self-confident by the union of the Hamilton party, Knox thus alludes to Chastelherault: " But wherein had my lord duke and his friends offended ? I am uncertain if my lord's grace has unfeignedly

repented of his assistance to these murderers unjustly pursuing us. Yea, I am uncertain if he has repented of that innocent blood of Christ's blessed martyrs, which was shed in his default. But let it be that so he has done, (as I hear that he has confessed his fault before the lords and brethren of the Congregation ;) yet I am assured that neither he, nor yet his friends, did feel before this time the anguish and grief of heart which we felt, when in their blind fury they pursued us. And therefore God hath justly permitted both them and us to fall in this fearful confusion at once, — us, for that we put our trust and confidence in man ; and them, because they should feel in their own hearts how bitter was the cup which they made others drink before them." Knox has preserved in his History, (p. 194-197.) the principal topics on which he insisted in this sermon, which has been praised both by Buchanan and Robertson.

noon the Council met, and after prayer by the Reformer, unanimously agreed to despatch Maitland to London, to supplicate more effectual assistance from Elizabeth. In the meantime, as they were unable to keep the field, they resolved to divide; that the one-half of the Council should remain at Glasgow, and the other at St. Andrew's. Knox was appointed to attend the latter, in the capacity of preacher and secretary. The French having, in the beginning of the year 1560, penetrated into Fife, he encouraged that small band, which, under the Earl of Arran and the Prior of St. Andrew's, bravely resisted their progress until the appearance of the English fleet obliged them to make a precipitate retreat.*

The disaster which caused the Protestant army to leave Edinburgh, turned out to the advantage of their cause. It obliged the English Court to abandon the line of cautious policy which they had hitherto pursued. Maitland succeeded in the object of his embassy; and on the 27th of February, 1560, they concluded a formal treaty with the Lords of the Congregation. In the beginning of April, the English army entered Scotland, and joined the forces of the Protestants. It consisted of 2000 horse, and 6000 foot, and was joined at Preston by the army of the Congregation, led by the Duke of Chastelherault, the Earls of Argyle, Glencairn, and Menteith, the Lord James Stuart, with other principal officers amongst the Reformers, and estimated at nearly 80,000 men.† No sooner was the Queen-Regent informed of the treaty with Elizabeth, than she was resolved to disperse the troops which were collected at Glasgow under the Duke of Chastelherault, before the English army could arrive. On the 7th of March, the French, amounting to 2000 foot and 300 horse, issued from

* Knox, *Historie*, pp. 197, 201, 215. Spotswood, p. 140.

† On the advance of the enemy, the Queen-Regent was received by Lord Erskine within the Castle of Edinburgh, and the united armies having pushed forward from Preston to Restalrig, a sharp skirmish of cavalry took place, in which the French were beat back with the loss of forty men and a hundred prisoners. Having determined to besiege Leith, Lord Grey encamped on the fields to the south and south-east of that seaport; Winter, the English admiral, opened a canonade from the

fleet, whilst a battery of eight pieces of ordnance commenced firing on the land side, by which the French guns placed on St. Antony's steeple, were speedily silenced and dismounted. But this advantage, which produced in the combined armies an over-confidence and contempt of discipline, was followed by a more serious action, in which Martiques attacked the English trenches, entered the camp, spiked their cannon, and put two hundred and forty men to the sword, after which he retreated with little loss to Leith. (15th April.) Tytler, *Hist. of Scot.* vi. 185.

Leith, and proceeding by Linlithgow and Kirkintulloch, suddenly appeared before Glasgow. Having reduced the Episcopal castle, they were preparing to advance to Hamilton, when they received a message from the Queen-Regent, informing them that the English army had begun its march into Scotland; upon which they relinquished their design, and returned to Leith, carrying along with them a number of prisoners, and a considerable booty. The French troops, who had retired within the fortifications of Leith, were now invested by sea and land; the Queen-Regent, who had for some time been in a declining state of health, was received by Lord Erskine into the castle of Edinburgh, where she died during the siege; and the ambassadors of France were forced to agree to a treaty, by which it was provided that the French troops should be removed from Scotland, an amnesty granted to all who had been engaged in the late resistance to the measures of the Regent, their principal grievances redressed, and a free Parliament called to settle the other affairs of the kingdom.*

During the continuance of the war, the Protestant preachers had been assiduous in disseminating the knowledge of the truth through all parts of the country. Ministers were appointed to some of the chief towns in the kingdom, Knox being directed to continue his charge at Edinburgh, whilst Goodman was sent to St. Andrew's, Heriot to Aberdeen, Row to Perth, and others to Jedburgh, Dundee, Dunfermline, and Leith. Superintendents were next chosen for the districts of Lothian, Glasgow, Fife, Angus, and Mearns, and lastly for Argyle and the Isles. The Popish clergy used no exertions to counteract them. Too corrupt to think of reforming their manners, too illiterate to be ca-

* Keith, p. 131-144. Knox, 229-234. Spotswood, p. 147-149. The treaty was signed by the deputies on the 7th July, 1560. On the 16th the French army embarked at Leith, and the English troops began their march into their own country; and on the 19th the Congregation assembled in St Giles's Church, to return solemn thanks to God for the restoration of peace, and the success which had crowned their exertions. The preacher, who was probably Knox, in a prayer preserved in his history, described the miseries of their country,

lately groaning under the oppression of a foreign yoke and an abominable idolatrous worship. He acknowledged the mercy of God in sending, through the instrumentality of England, a deliverance which their own policy or strength could never have accomplished, called upon them all to maintain that godly league entered into with Elizabeth, and implored God to confound the counsels of those who endeavoured to dissolve it. Tytler, Hist. of Scot. vi. p. 203.

pable of defending their errors, they placed their forlorn hope upon the success of the French arms, and looked forward to the issue of the contest, as involving the establishment or the ruin of their religion.* One attempt they, indeed, made to recover their lost reputation, and support their sinking cause, by reviving the stale pretence of miracles wrought at the shrines of their saints; one memorable example of which occurred at the chapel of Loretto, near Musselburgh.† But the detection of the imposture exposed them to derision, and was the occasion of their losing a person who was the greatest ornament of their party.‡

The treaty, which put an end to hostilities, made no settlement respecting religious differences; but on that very account, it was fatal to Popery.§ The power was left in the hands of the Protestants. The Roman Catholic worship was almost universally deserted throughout the kingdom, except in those places which had been occupied by the Regent and her foreign auxiliaries; and no provision was made for its restoration. The firm hold which it once had of the opinions and affections of the people, was completely loosened; it was supported by force alone; and the moment that the French troops embarked, that fabric which had stood for ages in Scotland, fell to the ground. Its feeble and dismayed priests ceased, of their own accord, from the celebration of its rites; and the Reformed service was peaceably set up wherever ministers could be found to perform it. The Parliament, when it met, had little else to do respecting Church matters, than to sanction what the nation had previously adopted, by legally abolishing the Popish

* The French court sent into Scotland the bishop of Amiens, who was invested with the title of Papal legate, and three doctors of the Sorbonne, who gave out that they had come to confound the heretics, and bring back the erring Scots to the bosom of the church, by the force of argument and persuasion. Leslie boasts of their success; but it appears that these foreign divines, instead of disputing with the heretics, confined themselves to the more easy task of instructing the Scottish clergy in the canonical method of purifying the churches which had been polluted by the profane worship of the Protestants. Spotswood, 133, 134. Keith, 102. Sadler says that the bishop came "to curse, and also to dispute with the Protestants, and to reconcile them, if it wolbe." Vol. i. 470.

† See Note M.—Period Fifth.

‡ This was Mr John Row, of whom I shall afterwards have occasion to speak more particularly.

§ The English ambassadors, in a letter to Elizabeth, say:—"Two things have been to whott [too hot] for the French to meddle withal: and therefore they be passed, and left as they found them. The first is the matter of religion, which is here as freely, and rather more earnestly (as I the Secretary think) received than in England: a hard thyng now to alter, as it is planted." Haynes, p. 352. Dr. Wotton, Dean of Windsor, is one of the subscribers of this letter; but as it would rather have been too much for him to say that religion was more earnestly received in Scotland than in England, the Secretary alone vouches for that fact.

and establishing the Protestant religion. The meeting was adjourned from the 10th of July till the 1st of August, on which day the proceedings were opened with great solemnity; and considering the affairs to be brought under discussion—being nothing less than the establishment of the Reformation—never, perhaps, was a more important meeting of the Estates of the kingdom held in Scotland. The attendance was numerous beyond all precedent. One cause of this, was a proceeding adopted by the lesser Barons. Many of these persons, notwithstanding their right to sit and vote in the Assembly of the Three Estates, had ceased to claim their privilege. Indifference to public affairs, occupation upon their own demesnes, and the expense attendant on a journey to the capital, had occasioned their absence. But it was amongst these persons that the Reformed doctrines had made the greatest progress, and aware that the subjects to be debated must involve the great religious principles in dispute between the Congregation and the Romanists, they attended in their places, and presented a petition in which they prayed to be restored to their privilege, and to be allowed to give their counsel and vote.

After some trifling opposition to their request, they were permitted to take their seats, although a final decision on their claims does not appear to have been given. The accession, however, of so many votes, (their number being a hundred,) was of no small consequence to the Protestants, who were anxious that they should immediately proceed to the business of the Parliament. Some preliminary questions having been settled, respecting the lawfulness of their meeting without communicating with the sovereign, then in France; the crown, the mace, and the sword were laid upon the seat or throne usually occupied by the Queen; and Maitland, who possessed great influence with the Congregation, being chosen Speaker, (it was then termed “harangue maker,”) opened the proceedings. The Clerk of the Register having inquired of the Three Estates, to what matter they would proceed; it was judged proper that the articles of the peace should be read over, which having been done, they received the unanimous approbation of the Assembly, and were directed to be sent over to France to receive the

ratification of their Sovereign. The Lords of the Articles were next chosen, the order of which, says Randolph, "is, that the Lords Spiritual choose the Temporal, and the Temporal the Spiritual—the Burgesses their own." Great complaint was here made by the Prelates, that in the selection of the Lords Spiritual, none were chosen but such as were known to be well affected to the new religion, nor was it unnoticed that some upon whom the choice had fallen were mere laymen. So great was the majority, however, of the friends of the Congregation, that it was impossible to have redress. "This being done," says Randolph, in an interesting letter to Cecil, where he describes the proceedings of the Parliament, "the Lords departed, and accompanied the Duke as far as the Bow, which is the gate going out of the High Street, and many down unto the Palace where he lieth; the town all in armour, the trumpets sounding, and all other kinds of music, such as they have. Other solemnities have not been used, saving in times long past; the Lords have had parliament robes, which are now with them wholly out of use; the Lords of the Articles sat from henceforth in Holyrood House, except that at such times as upon any matter of importance, the whole Lords assembled themselves again as they did this day in the Parliament House."

Having proceeded thus far, a petition was presented to the Parliament by some of the most zealous of the Reformers. It prayed, that the doctrines professed by the Remish Church, and tyrannically maintained by the clergy, should be condemned and abolished; and amongst the errors, it particularly enumerated—transubstantiation, adoration of Christ's body under the form of bread, the merit of works, purgatory, pilgrimages, and prayers to departed saints. It declared, that God of his great mercy by the light of his word, had demonstrated to no small number within the realm, the pestiferous errors of the Roman Church; errors which the ministers of that Church had maintained by fire and sword, bringing damnation upon the souls that embraced them. It stated, that the sacraments of our Lord were shamefully abused by that Roman harlot, by whom the true discipline of the Church was extin-

guished ; and proceeded to give an appalling picture, in strong and somewhat coarse language, of the corrupt lives of those who called themselves the clergy. Embracing the whole Papal Church in one sweeping anathema, the petitioners offered to prove, that “in all the rabble of the Clergy,” there was not one lawful minister, if the word of God, and the practices of the Apostles and primitive Church, were to be taken as authority upon this point ; it denominated them, thieves and murderers, rebels, traitors, and adulterers ; living in all manner of abominations, and unworthy to be suffered in any Reformed commonwealth. Lastly, it called upon the Parliament, in the bowels of Jesus Christ, to employ the victory which they had obtained, with wholesome vigour ; to compel the body of the Romish clergy to answer these accusations now brought against them, to pronounce them unworthy of authority in the Church of God, and expel them for ever from having a voice or vote in the great Council of the nation, which, it continued, “if ye do not, we forewarn you, in the fear of God, and by assurance of his word, that as ye leave a grievous yoke and a burden intolerable upon the Church of God within this realm, so shall they be thorns in your eyes, and pricks in your sides, whom afterwards when ye would ye shall have no power to remove.” In conclusion, it virtually declared that this extraordinary petition was not their’s, but God’s, who craved this by his servants, and it prayed Him to give them an upright heart and a right understanding of the requests made through them.*

The names of those who signed this violent production do not appear. Knox, whose zeal flamed high at this period, seized the sitting of the Parliament as a proper season for a course of sermons on the prophecies of Haggai, in which he tells us, he was peculiarly “special and vehement,” the doctrine being proper to the times. Many of the nobles, however, who had prospered upon the plunder of the Church, demurred to the sentiments of the preacher, when he exhorted them to restore their lands for the support of the ministers ; and Lethington exclaimed in mock-

* Knox, Hist. B. iii. p. 239. Spotswood, B. iii. p. 150. See the petition at length, in Cook’s Hist. of Reform. vol. iii. App. x.

ery, "We must now forget ourselves, and bear the burrow to build the house of God." Yet, although some were thus foolish, others of the barons and burgesses assembled, and we are informed by Knox that the petition emanated from them. There can be no doubt that it received the sanction, if it was not the composition, of the Reformer.

On being read in Parliament, this petition occasioned a great diversity of sentiment: still there can be little doubt, that as the great majority in the Parliament supported the changes proposed, it would have been favourably received, but for one circumstance which touched some of the highest and most influential of the Protestant leaders. It called upon them to restore the patrimony of the Church, of which they had unjustly possessed themselves, to the uses for which it was originally destined,—the support of the ministers, the restoration of godly learning, and the assistance of the poor. This, according to Knox, was unpalatable doctrine to the nobles, who for worldly respects abhorred a perfect reformation. Waving therefore the practical part of the question, and retaining for the present the wealth they had won, the majority of the Parliament commanded the ministers to draw up a Confession of their faith, or a brief summary of those doctrines which they conceived wholesome, true, and necessary to be believed and received within the realm. This solemn and arduous task was achieved, apparently with extraordinary rapidity; but although only four days were employed in its preparation, it is evident that the Confession of Faith embodied the results of much previous study and consultation. It is a clear and admirable summary of Christian doctrine, grounded on the word of God. On most essential points, it approximates indefinitely near, and in many instances, uses the very words of the Apostles Creed, and the Articles of the Church of England as established by Edward the Sixth.

Before the authors of the Confession agreed finally on every point it should embrace, the treatise was submitted to the revisal of the Secretary Lethington, and the Sub-Prior of St. Andrew's, who mitigated the austerity of many words and sentences, and expunged a chapter on the limits of the obedience due by subjects to their magistrates, which

they considered improper to be then discussed. So at least says Randolph, but it is certain that a chapter "Of the Civil Magistrate," forms a portion of the Confession of Faith as it is printed by Knox, and that it not only prescribes, in clear and strong terms, the obedience due by subjects to princes, governors, and magistrates, as powers ordained by God; but pronounces all who attempt to abolish the "Holy State of Civil Policies," as enemies alike to God and man.

When thus finished, this important paper was laid before Parliament; but all disputation upon its doctrines appears to have been waved by a mutual understanding that on the one side it was unnecessary, and on the other it would be unavailing. The Romanists knew that against them was arrayed a violent and overwhelming majority; so keen were the feelings of some of their leaders, that the Duke of Chastelherault had threatened his brother the Archbishop of St. Andrew's with death if he dared to exert himself against it; nor is it by any means improbable, that similar arguments had been used with other dignitaries. Of the Temporal Peers present, the Earls Cassillis and Caithness, alone dissented; of the Spiritual, the Primate, with the Bishops of Dunkeld and Dumblane. Time, they said, had not been given them to examine the book: they were ready to give their consent to all things which were sanctioned by the word of God, and to abolish the abuses which had crept into the Church, but they requested some delay, that the debate upon a question which branched into so many intricate, profound, and important subjects, might be carried on with due study and deliberation. To these sensible and moderate representations, no attention appears to have been paid; the treatise was laid upon the table, the Bishops were called upon to oppugn it upon the instant, and having declined the contest, the consent of the Parliament was given almost by acclamation; some of the Lords, in the enthusiasm of the moment, declared they would sooner end their lives than think contrary to these doctrines; many offered to shed their blood in the cause. The Earl Marshall, with indignant sarcasm, called upon the Bishops, as pillars of the Papal Church, to defend the tenets of their

master ; and the venerable Lord Lindsay, rising up in his place, and alluding to his extreme age, declared that since God had spared him to see that day, and the accomplishment of so worthy a work, he was ready with Simeon to say, “ nunc dimittis.”*

This Confession having been sanctioned by Parliament, (August 17th,) as the standard of the Protestant faith in Scotland, it was thought proper to complete the work, (August 24th,) by passing three Acts. The first abolished for ever in that country the power and jurisdiction of the Pope ; the second repealed all former statutes passed in favour of the Romish Church ; the third ordained that all who said mass, or who dared to hear mass, should, for the first transgression, be punished with confiscation of goods ; for the second, incur the penalty of banishment from the kingdom ; and if guilty of a third offence, be put to death.

Thus did the Reformed religion advance in Scotland, from small beginnings, and amidst great opposition, until it attained a Parliamentary establishment. Besides the blessing of Heaven which accompanied the labours of the preachers and confessors of the truth, the serious and inquisitive reader will trace the hand of Providence in that concatenation of events which contributed to its rise, preservation, and increase ; by the over-ruling of the caprice, the ambition, the avarice, and the interested policy of princes and cabinets, many of whom had nothing less in view than to favour that cause which they were so instrumental in promoting.

The breach of Henry VIII. of England with the Romish See, awakened the attention of the inhabitants of the northern part of the island to a controversy which had hitherto been carried on at too great a distance to interest them, and led not a few to desire a reformation more improved than the model which that monarch had held out to them. The premature death of James V. of Scotland was favourable to these views ; and during the short period in which they received the countenance of civil authority,

* Tytler's Hist. vol. vi. p. 204-215. From this learned and valuable work, has been extracted the preceding abridged account of the proceedings of the memorable Parliament of

August, 1560, which the author of the Life of Knox entirely omitted in his first edition, and has but cursorily noticed in the last.

at the commencement of Arran's regency, the seeds of the Reformed doctrine were so widely spread, and had taken such deep root, as to be able to resist the violent measures which the Regent, after his recantation, employed to extirpate them. Those who were driven from the country by persecution, found an asylum in England under the decidedly Protestant government of Edward VI. After his death, the alliance of England with Spain, and of Scotland with France, the two great contending powers on the Continent, prevented any concert between the two courts, which might have proved fatal to the Protestant religion in Britain. While the cruelties of the English Queen drove preachers into Scotland, the political schemes of the Queen-Regent induced her to favour the Protestants, and connive at the propagation of their opinions. At the critical moment when she had accomplished her favourite designs, and was preparing to crush the Reformation, Elizabeth ascended the throne of England, and from motives of policy no less than religion, was inclined to support the Scottish Reformers. The Princes of Lorrain who, by the accession of Francis II. had obtained the sole direction of the French Court, were resolutely bent on their suppression, and being at peace with Spain, seemed to have it in their power to turn the whole force of the empire against them ; but at this very time, those intestine dissensions, which continued so long to desolate France, broke out, and forced them to accede to that treaty which put an end to French influence and the Roman Catholic religion in Scotland.

PERIOD SIXTH.

FROM HIS SETTLEMENT AS MINISTER OF EDINBURGH, IN 1560, TO HIS ACQUITTAL FROM A CHARGE OF TREASON, BY THE PRIVY COUNCIL, IN 1563.

IN the appointment of ministers to the different parts of the kingdom, a measure which engaged the attention of the Privy Council immediately after the conclusion of the war,

the temporary arrangements formerly made were, in general, confirmed; and our Reformer resumed his station as minister of Edinburgh, having for several months officiated at St. Andrew's, which he quitted about the end of April, 1560. During the month of August, he was employed in composing the Protestant Confession of Faith, which was presented to the Parliament, who ratified it, and abolished the Papal jurisdiction and worship.*

The organization of the Reformed Church was not yet completed, although Parliament had abolished Popery, and sanctioned the Reformed doctrines as laid down in the Confession. Hitherto, the Book of Common Order, agreed upon by the English Church at Geneva, had been chiefly followed as a directory for worship and government. But this having been compiled for the use of a single congregation, and that composed for the most part of men of education, was found inadequate for an extensive church, consisting of a multitude of confederated congregations. Sensible of the great importance of ecclesiastical polity for the maintenance of order, the preservation of purity of doctrine and morals, and the general advancement of religion in the kingdom, our Reformer, at an early period, called the attention of the Protestants to this subject, and urged its speedy settlement.† In consequence of this, the Lords of the Privy Council appointed him, and other five ministers,‡ to draw out such a plan as they judged most

* When the Confession was read in Parliament, all who had any objections to it were called upon to state them, and ample liberty allowed them. The Protestant ministers were in the house, standing prepared to defend it. Another day was appointed, on which it was read article by article. The Earl of Athole, with Lords Somerville and Borthwick, were the only persons who voted against it, assigning this truly catholic reason, We will believe as our forefatheris belevit. "The bishops spak nothing." The Earl Marischal protested that if any of the ecclesiastical estate afterwards opposed this Confession, they should not be entitled to credit, but be regarded as seeking their own commodity, and not the truth, seeing, after long advisement, they could make no objection to it. Knox, 253, 254. Spotswood, 150. Keith is at a great loss to account for, and excuse the silence of the Popish dignitaries, (to whom he is uniformly partial;) and he was obliged to retract one apology which he

had made for them, viz. that they were hindered from speaking by threatenings. History, p. 149, 150, 488, Note (a)

† Knox, Historie, p. 237.

‡ The five ministers who composed the Confession of Faith and the Book of Discipline, were John Winrow, John Spotswood, John Douglas, John Row, and John Knox. Knox, Hist. p. 256. They performed their task with the utmost diligence and care. "The ministers (says Row) took not their example from any kirk in the world, no, not from Geneva; but laying God's word before them, made reformation according thereto." In drawing up this book, the compilers divided the different heads among them. They afterwards met together, and examined them with "great pains, much reading, and meditation, with earnest incalling on the name of God." The book was approved by the General Assembly, after some articles, which were thought too large, were abridged. Row's MS. Historie, p. 12, 16, 17.

agreeable to Scripture, and conducive to the advancement of religion. They met accordingly, and with great pains, and much unanimity, formed the book, which was afterwards called the *The First Book of Discipline*.

As our Reformer had a chief hand in the compilation of this book, and as the subject is interesting, it may not be altogether foreign to the object of the present work to give a slight sketch of the form and order of the Church of Scotland, at the first establishment of the Reformation. Some more minute particulars, which are not generally known, shall be thrown into the notes.

The ordinary and permanent office-bearers of the Church, were of four kinds: the minister or pastor, to whom the preaching of the Gospel and administration of the sacraments belonged; the doctor or teacher, whose province it was to interpret Scripture, and confute errors, (including those who taught theology in schools and universities;) the ruling elder, who assisted the minister in exercising ecclesiastical discipline and government; and the deacon, who had the special oversight of the revenues of the Church and the poor. But besides these, it was found necessary, at that time, to employ some persons in extraordinary and temporary charges. As there were not a sufficient number of ministers to supply the different parts of the country, that the people might not be altogether destitute of public worship and instruction, certain persons who had received some education, were appointed to read the Scriptures and the common prayers. These were called readers, and in large parishes they were employed to assist the ministers in the public service. If they advanced in knowledge, they were encouraged to add a few plain exhortations to the reading of the Scriptures. In this case they were called exhorters, but they were examined and admitted before entering upon this employment.

The Assembly referred to was probably the convention mentioned by Knox (*Historie*, p. 261, 295,) which met 5th Jan. 1561. The first General Assembly appointed a meeting to be held at that time, (*Buik of the Universal Kirk*, p. 3;) but there is no account of its proceedings in any register which I have had access to see. In the copy of the *First Book of Discipline*, published (by Calderwood, I believe) anno 1621, pp. 23, 70, and in Dunlop's

Confessions, ii. 517, 605. it is said that the order for compiling it was given on the 29th April, 1560; and that it was finished by them on the 20th May following. But as the civil war was not then concluded, I am inclined to prefer the account which Knox gives, that it was undertaken subsequent to the meeting of Parliament in August that year. *Historie*, p. 216.

The same cause gave rise to another temporary expedient. Instead of fixing all the ministers in particular charges, it was judged proper, after supplying the principal towns, to assign to the rest the superintendence of a large district, over which they were appointed regularly to itinerate for the purpose of preaching, planting churches, and inspecting the conduct of ministers, exhorters, and readers. These were called superintendents. The number originally proposed was ten ; but owing to the scarcity of proper persons, or rather the want of necessary funds, there were never more than five appointed. The deficiency was supplied by commissioners or visitors, appointed from time to time by the General Assembly.*

The mode of admission to all these offices was by the free election of the people,† examination of the candidates by the ministers, and public admission, accompanied with prayer and exhortation.‡ The mode of admitting superintendents was the same as in the case of ordinary pastors. The affairs of each congregation were managed by the minister, elders, and deacons, who constituted the kirk-session, which met once a week, or oftener if business required. There was a meeting called The Weekly Exercise, or Prophesying, held in every considerable town, consisting of the ministers, exhorters, and learned men in the vicinity, for expounding the Scriptures. This was afterwards converted into the Presbytery, or Classical Assembly. The superintendent met with the ministers and delegated elders of his district twice a-year, in the Provincial Synod, which took cognizance of ecclesiastical affairs within its bounds. And the General Assembly, which was composed of ministers and elders commissioned from the different parts of the kingdom, met twice, sometimes thrice in the year, and attended to the interests of the whole National Church. Public worship was conducted according to the Book of

* The first superintendents were, John Spottiswood, for Lothian; John Erskine of Dun, for Angus; John Winram, for Fife; John Willock, for Glasgow; and John Carswell, for Argyll. The General Assembly had several times proposed to appoint superintendents for Dumfries, Jedburgh, Aberdeen, and Banff; but it does not appear that these appointments were ever concluded.

Booke of the Universall Kirk, Peterkin's Edit. p. 8.

† Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 524, 526, 545, 577, 638, 639.

‡ Imposition of hands at the ordination of ministers was not practised in Scotland at the beginning of the Reformation. It was, however, appointed to be used by the Second Book of Discipline. Dunlop, ii. 529, 768, 769

Common Order, with a few variations adapted to the state of the Church.* There were two diets of public worship on Sabbath days ; and catechising was substituted for preaching in the afternoon, with a view to promote the instruction of the ignorant. In towns there was a regular weekday sermon, besides almost daily opportunities of hearing prayer and the reading of Scripture. The sacrament of the Supper was administered four times a-year in towns. The sign of the Cross in Baptism, and kneeling at the Lord's Table, were discontinued ; and anniversary holy-days were wholly abolished.

The compilers of the *First Book of Discipline* paid particular attention to the state of education. They required that a school should be erected in every parish, for the instruction of youth in the principles of religion, grammar, and the Latin tongue. They proposed that a college should be erected in every "notable town," in which logic and rhetoric should be taught along with the learned languages. They seem to have had it in their eye to revive the system adopted in some of the ancient republics, in which the youth were considered as the property of the public rather than of their parents, by obliging the nobility and gentry to educate their children ; and providing, at the public expense, for the education of the children of the poor who discovered talents for learning. Their regulations for the three national universities, discover an enlightened regard to the interests of literature, and may suggest hints which deserve attention in the present age.† If they were not carried into effect, the blame cannot be imputed to the Reformed ministers, but to those persons who, through avarice, defeated the execution of their plans. But even as matters stood, and notwithstanding the confusions in which the country was involved, learning continued to make great progress in Scotland from this period to the close of the century.

Judicious as its plan was, and well adapted to promote the interests of religion and learning in the nation, the Book of Discipline, when presented to the Privy Council,

* See Note, A.—Period Sixth. † First Book of Discipline, chap. vii. Dunlop, ii. 547-561.

was coldly received, and its formal ratification evaded. This did not arise from any difference of sentiment between them and the ministers respecting ecclesiastical government, but partly from aversion to the strict discipline which it appointed to be exercised against vice, and partly from reluctance to comply with its requisition for the appropriation of the revenues of the Popish Church to the support of the new religious and literary establishments. * However, it was subscribed by the greater part of the members of the Council; and as the grounds of prejudice against it were well known, it was submitted unto by the nation, and carried into effect in all its principal ecclesiastical regulations. †

We are ready to form very false and exaggerated notions of the rudeness of our ancestors. Perhaps some of our literati, who entertain such a diminutive idea of the taste and learning of those times, might be surprised, if they could be set down at the table of one of our Scottish Reformers, surrounded with a circle of his children and pupils, where the conversation was all carried on in French, and the chapter of the Bible, at family worship, was read by the boys in Hebrew, Greek, Latin, and French. Perhaps they might have blushed, if the book had been put into their hands, and they had been required to perform a part of the exercises. It is certain, however, that this was the common practice in the house of Mr. John Row, minister of Perth, with whom many of the nobility and gentry boarded their children, for their instruction in the Greek and Hebrew languages, the knowledge of which he contributed to spread through the kingdom. Nor was the improvement of our native tongue neglected at this time. ‡

The first General Assembly of the Reformed Church of Scotland, sat down at Edinburgh on the 20th of December 1560. It consisted of forty members, only six of whom were ministers. § Knox was one of these; and he continued to sit in most of its meetings until the time of his death. Their deliberations were conducted at first with great simplicity and

* See Note B.—Period Sixth.

† Knox, *Historie*, pp. 256, 257, 295, 296. Keith, 496, 497, Dunlop, ii 606-608.

‡ See Note C.—Period Sixth.

§ Booke of the Universall Kirk, p. 1. Peterkin's Ed. Keith, 498.

unanimity. It is a singular circumstance, that they had six different meetings without a president or moderator. But as the number of members increased, and business became more complicated, a moderator was appointed to be chosen at every meeting ; he was invested with authority to maintain order ; and regulations were enacted concerning the constituent members of the court, the causes which ought to come before them, and the order of procedure.*

In the close of this year our Reformer suffered a heavy domestic loss, by the death of his valuable wife, who, after sharing in the hardships of her husband's exile, was removed from him when he had obtained a comfortable settlement for his family.† He was left with the charge of two young children, in addition to his other cares. His mother-in-law was still with him ; but though he took pleasure in her religious company, the dejection of mind to which she was subject, and which all his efforts could never completely cure, rather increased than lightened his burden.‡ His acute feelings were severely wounded by this stroke ; but he endeavoured to moderate his grief by the consolations which he administered to others, and by application to public duties. He had the satisfaction of re-

* The first person appointed to the office was John Willock. In the first Session of the Sixth Assembly, "It was proposed by the hail Assemblie, that ane Moderatour should be appointed, for avoiding confusion in reasoning, but that every brother should speak in his own roome. The Lords of the Secret Councill, with the hail brethren of the Assemblie, appointed Mr. John Willock superintendent of the West, Moderator," &c. Booke of the Universale Kirk, Peterkin's Edit. p. 17. The Assembly, held at Perth in 1572, ordained, as a perpetual law, that no person, of whatever estate, take in hand to speak without licence asked and given by the Moderator ; that moderation should be kept in reasoning, and silence when commanded by the Moderator, under pain of removal from the Assembly, and not to re-enter during that convention. Ibid. p. 133. In July 1568, to correct evils, "be reason of the pluralitie and confusion of voices," it was enacted, that none should have power to vote but superintendents, commissioners appointed to visit kirks, ministers "brought with yame, presented as habile to reasone, and having knowledge to judge," and commissioners of burghs, shires, and universities. The ministers were to be chosen at the synodal convention of the diocese, by consent

of the rest of the ministry and gentlemen that shall convene at the said synodal convention ; commissioners of burghs by "the counsell and kirk of their awn townes." "None to be admitted without sufficient commission or writ." And to prevent a monopoly of power, they were to be changed from Assembly to Assembly. Ibid. p. 99. The Assembly, March 1569-70, settled the following order of procedure. After sermon and prayer by the former Moderator, 1. A new Moderator to be chosen. 2. Superintendents, commissioners, &c. to be tried. First, the superintendents being removed, inquiry was made of the ministers and commissioners of their bounds if they had any charges to lay against them as to neglect of duty, &c. If any charge was brought, it was examined, and sentence passed. The same order was observed in the trial of the other members of Assembly. 3. The case of penitents and persons under censure to be considered. Lastly, The business left undecided by last Assembly or brought before the present, to be taken up. Ibid. p. 117.

† Knox, Historie, p. 260.

‡ Preface to a Letter added to An Answer to a Letter of a Jesuit, named Tyrie, be John Knox.—Sanctandrois, anno do. 1572.

ceiving, on this occasion, a letter from his much respected friend Calvin, in which expressions of great esteem for his deceased partner were mingled with condolence for his loss.* I may take this opportunity of mentioning, that Knox, with the consent of his brethren, consulted the Genevan Reformer upon several difficult questions which occurred respecting the settlement of the Scottish Reformation, and that a number of letters passed between them on this subject.†

Anxieties on a public account were felt by Knox, along with his domestic distress. The Reformation had hitherto advanced with a success equal to his most sanguine expectations; and at this time, no opposition was publicly made to the new establishment. But matters were still in a very critical state. There was a party in the nation, by no means inconsiderable in number and power, who remained addicted to Popery; and though they had given way to the torrent, they anxiously waited for an opportunity to embroil the country in another civil war, for the restoration of the ancient religion. Queen Mary and her husband, the King of France, had refused to ratify the late treaty, and had dismissed the deputy sent by the Parliament, with marks of the highest displeasure at the innovations which they had presumed to introduce. A new army was preparing in France for the invasion of Scotland against the spring; emissaries were sent, in the meantime, to encourage and unite the Roman Catholics; and it was doubtful if the Queen of England would subject herself to a new expense and odium, by protecting them against a second attack.‡

The danger was not unperceived by our Reformer, who exerted himself to prepare his countrymen for the event, by impressing their minds with a due sense of it, and exciting them speedily to complete the settlement of religion throughout the kingdom, which, he was persuaded, would

* Calvini Epistolæ, p. 150, apud Oper. tome ix. "Viduitas tua mihi, ut debet, tristis et acerba est. Uxorem nactus eras cui non reperiuntur passim similes," &c. In a letter to Christ. Goodman, written at the same time, Calvin says, "Fratrem nostrum Knoxum, etsi non parum doleo suavissima uxore fuisse pri-

vatum, gaudeo tamen ejus morte non ita fuisse afflictum, quin strenue operam suam Christo et ecclesiæ impendat." Ibid.

† See Note D.—Period Sixth.

‡ Knox, 257, 258. Buchanan, p. 326, 327. Spotswood, 150, 151. Keith, 154, 157.

prove the principal bulwark against the assaults of their adversaries. In the state in which the minds of men then were, his admonitions were listened to by many who had formerly treated them with indifference.* The threatened storm blew over in consequence of the death of the French King ; but this necessarily led to a measure which involved the Scottish Protestants in a new struggle, and exposed the Reformed Church to dangers less obvious and striking, but on that account, not less to be dreaded than open violence and hostility. This was the invitation given by the Protestant nobility to their young Queen, who, on the 19th of August 1561, arrived in Scotland, and assumed the reins of government into her own hands.

The education which Mary had received in France, whatever embellishments it added to her beauty, was the very worst which can be conceived for fitting her to rule her native country at the present juncture. Of a temper naturally violent, the devotion which she had been accustomed to see paid to her personal charms, rendered her incapable of bearing contradiction.† Habituated to the splendour and gallantry of the most luxurious and dissolute court in Europe, she could not submit to those restraints which the severer manners of her subjects imposed ; and while the freedom of her behaviour gave offence to them, she could not conceal the antipathy and disgust which she felt at theirs.‡ Full of high notions of royal prerogative, she regarded the late proceedings in Scotland as a course of rebellion against her authority. Every means was employed, before she left France, to strengthen her blind attachment to the Roman Catholic religion, in which she had been nursed from her infancy, and to inspire her with aversion to the religion which had been embraced by her subjects. She was taught that it would be the great glory of her reign to reduce her kingdom to the obedience of the Romish See, and co-operate with the Popish princes on the

* Knox, 260.

† Mr. Hume's letter, printed in the life of Dr. Robertson, apud History of Scotland, vol. i. 25. Lond. 1809. Anderson's Collections, vol. iv. part i. p. 71, 72, 74, 79.

‡ "How sone that ever her French fillokes, fidlars, and utheris of that band gat the house

alone, thair mycht be sene skipping not veray comelie for honest women. Her commune talk was in secrete, that sche saw nothing in Scotland bot gravity, quhilk repugned altogether to her nature, for sche was brocht up in joyeusetie." Knox, Historie, p. 294.

Continent in extirpating heresy. If she forsook the religion in which she had been educated, she would forfeit their powerful friendship ; if she persevered in it, she might depend upon their assistance to enable her to chastise her rebellious subjects, and prosecute her claims to the English crown against a heretical usurper.

With these fixed prepossessions Mary came into Scotland, and she adhered to them with singular pertinacity to the end of her life. To examine the subjects of controversy between the Papists and Protestants, with the view of ascertaining on what side the truth lay ; to hear the preachers, or admit them to state the grounds of their faith, even in the presence of the clergy whom she had brought along with her ; to do any thing which might lead to a doubt in her mind respecting the religion in which she had been brought up, she had formed an unalterable determination to avoid. As the Protestants were at present in the possession of power, it was necessary for her to temporize ; but she resolved to withhold her ratification of the late proceedings, and to embrace the first favourable opportunity to overturn them, and re-establish the ancient system.*

The reception which she met with on her first arrival in Scotland was flattering ; but an occurrence which took place soon after, damped the joy which had been expressed, and prognosticated future jealousies and confusion. Resolved to give her subjects an early proof of her firm determination to adhere to the Roman Catholic worship, Mary, by the advice of her uncles, who accompanied her, directed preparations to be made for the celebration of a

* See Throkmorton's conference with Mary, before she left France. Knox, *Historie*, 275-277. Keith, *History*, 164-167. Life of Bishop Lesley, apud Anderson's Collections, i. 4. iii. 9. The letters of the Cardinal de St. Croix, (ambassador from the Pope to the Court of France,) extracted from the Vatican Library, afford a striking demonstration of the intentions of the Queen. St. Croix writes to Cardinal Borromeo, that the Grand Prior of France (one of Mary's uncles) and Mons. Danville, had arrived from Scotland on the 17th November, (1561,) and brought information that the Queen was going on successfully to the surmounting of all opposition to her in that kingdom. Being informed one day that some heretics had extinguished the candles on her

altar, she repaired to the chapel, and having ascertained the fact, commanded a baron, one of the most powerful, and most addicted to Lutheranism, to re-light the candles, and place them on the altar: in which she was instantly obeyed. After relating another instance of her spirited conduct against the magistrates of a certain borough, who had banished the Popish priests, the Cardinal adds: "by these means she has acquired greater authority and power, for enabling her to restore the ancient religion;" "*con che acquista tutta via maggior autorita et forze, per posser restituere en quel regno l'antica religione.*" Aymon's *Synodes Nationaux des Eglises Reformees de France*, tom. i. p. 17, 18.

solemn mass in the chapel of Holyrood House, on the first Sunday after her arrival, notwithstanding this service was prohibited by an act of the late Parliament, and had not been performed in Scotland since the termination of the war. So great was the horror with which the Protestants viewed this service, and the alarm which they felt at finding it countenanced by their Queen, that the first rumour of the design excited violent murmurs, which would have burst into an open tumult, had not some of their leaders interfered, and by their authority repressed the zeal of the multitude. Knox, from regard to public tranquillity, and to avoid giving offence to the Queen and her relations at the present juncture, used his influence in private conversation to allay the fervour of the more zealous, who were ready to prevent the service by force. But he was not less alarmed at the precedent than the rest of his brethren, and having exposed the evil of idolatry in his sermon on the following Sabbath, he said, that "one mess was more fearful unto him, then if ten thousand armed enemies wer landed in ony parte of the realme, of purpose to suppress the hole religioun."*

At this day, we are apt to be struck with surprise at the conduct of our ancestors, to treat their fears as visionary, or at least highly exaggerated, and summarily to pronounce them guilty of the same intolerance of which they complained in their adversaries. Persecution for conscience' sake is so odious, and the least approach to it is so dangerous, that we think we can never express too great detestation of any measure which involves it, or tends to give it countenance or encouragement. But let us be just as well as liberal. A little reflection upon the circumstances in which our reforming forefathers were placed, may serve to abate our astonishment and qualify our censures. They were actuated, it is true, by a strong abhorrence of Popish idolatry, and unwilling to suffer the land to be again polluted with it; but they were influenced also by a proper regard for their own preservation; and neither were their fears fanciful, nor their precautions unnecessary.

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 284-287. See Note E.—Period Sixth.

The warmest friends of toleration and liberty of conscience (some of whom will not readily be charged with Protestant prejudices) have admitted, that persecution of the most sanguinary kind was inseparable from the system and spirit of Popery which was at that time dominant in Europe ; and they cannot deny the inference, that the profession and propagation of it were, on this account, justly subjected to penal restraints, as far at least as was requisite to prevent it from obtaining the ascendancy, and reacting the bloody scenes which it had already exhibited.* The Protestants of Scotland had these scenes before their eyes, and fresh in their recollection ; and criminal indeed would they have been, if, under a false security, and by listening to the Syren song of toleration, (by which their adversaries, with no less impudence than artifice, now attempted to lull them asleep,) they had suffered themselves to be thrown off their guard, and neglected to provide against the most distant approaches of the danger by which they were threatened. Could they be ignorant of the perfidious, barbarous, and unrelenting cruelty with which Protestants were treated in every Roman Catholic kingdom ; in France, where so many of their brethren had been put to death, under the influence of the relations of their Queen ; in the Netherlands, where such multitudes had been tortured, beheaded, hanged, drowned, or buried alive ; in England, where the flames of persecution were but lately extinguished ; and in Spain, where they continued to blaze ? Could they have forgotten what had taken place in their own country, or the perils from which they had themselves narrowly escaped ? “ God forbid ! ” exclaimed the Lords of the Privy Council, in the presence of Queen Mary, at a time when they were not disposed to offend her, “ God forbid that the lives of the faithful stood in the power of the Papists ; for just experience has taught us what cruelty is in their hearts.”†

Nor was this an event so improbable, as to render the

* Bayle, *Commentaire Philosophique*, tome i. pref. xiv. part ii. chap. v. p. 343, 347. Anno 1686, and *Critique Générale de l'Histoire du Calvinisme*, p. 486, 501-519. Hume's *Hist. of England*, vol. vii. chap. i. p. 24. Lond. 1793,

12mo. Robertson's *History of Scotland*, vol. ii. p. 62, 143, 352. Lond. 1809. See also Note F.—Period Sixth.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 341.

most jealous precautions unnecessary. The rage for conquest, on the Continent, was now converted into a rage for proselytism; and steps had already been taken towards forming that League among the Catholic princes, which had for its object the universal extermination of the Protestants. The Scottish Queen was passionately addicted to the intoxicating cup of which so many of "the kings of the earth had drunk." There were numbers in the nation similarly disposed. The liberty taken by the Queen, would soon be demanded for all who declared themselves Catholics. Many of those who had hitherto ranged under the Protestant standard, were lukewarm in the cause; the zeal of others had already suffered a sensible abatement since the arrival of the Queen;* and it was to be feared, that the favours of the Court, and the blandishments of an artful and engaging princess, would make proselytes of some, and lull others into a dangerous security, while designs were carried on pregnant with ruin to the religion and liberties of the nation. It was in this manner that some of the most wise persons in the country reasoned,† and had it not been for the uncommon spirit which at that time existed among the Reformers, there is every reason to think that their predictions would have been verified.

To those who assimilate the conduct of the Scottish Protestants on this occasion, with the intolerance of Roman Catholics, I would recommend the following statement of a sensible French author, who had formed a more just notion of these transactions than many of our own writers. "Mary," says he, "was brought up in France, accustomed to see Protestants burned to death, and instructed in the maxims of her uncles, the Guises, who maintained that it was necessary to exterminate, without mercy, the pretended Reformed. With these dispositions she arrived in Scotland, which was wholly reformed, with the exception of a few lords. The kingdom receive her, acknowledge her

* Knox, *Historie*, pp. 282, 283, 285, 287.

† Several of the above considerations, along with others, are forcibly stated in a letter of Maitland to Cecil, written a short time before Queen Mary's arrival in Scotland. Keith, *App.* 92-95. That sagacious, but supple and versa-

tile politician, was among the first to realise some of his own predictions. That such fears were very general in the nation, appears also from a letter of Randolph. Robertson, *App.* No. 5.

as their Queen, and obey her in all things according to the laws of the country. I maintain that, in the state of men's spirits at that time, if a Huguenot queen had come to take possession of a Roman Catholic kingdom, with the equipage with which Mary came to Scotland, the first thing they would have done would have been to arrest her; and if she had persevered in her religion, they would have procured her degradation by the Pope, thrown her into the Inquisition, and burned her as a heretic. There is not an honest man who dare deny this." * After all, it is surely unnecessary to apologise for the restrictions which our ancestors were desirous of imposing on Queen Mary, to those who approve of the present Constitution of Britain, which excludes every Papist from the throne, and according to which the reigning monarch, by setting up mass in his chapel, would virtually forfeit his crown. Is Popery more dangerous now than it was two hundred and fifty years ago?

Besides his fears for the common cause, Knox had grounds for apprehension as to his personal safety. The Queen was peculiarly incensed against him on account of the active hand which he had in the late revolution; the Popish clergy who left the kingdom, represented him as the ring-leader of her factious subjects; and she had signified, before she left France, that she was determined he should be punished. His book against female government was most probably the ostensible charge on which he was to be prosecuted; and accordingly we find him making application through the English resident at Edinburgh, to secure the favour of Elizabeth, reasonably suspecting that she might be induced to abet the proceedings against him on this head.† But

* *Histoire du Calvinisme et celle du Papisme mises en Parallele; ou Apologie pour les Reformateurs, pour la Reformation, et pour les Reformez*, tome i. 334. A Rotterdam, 1683, 4to. The affirmation of this writer is completely supported by the well-known history of Henry IV. of France, (not to mention other instances;) whose recantation of Calvinism, although it smoothed his way to the throne, was never able to efface the indelible stigma of his former heresy, to secure the affections of his Roman Catholic subjects, or to avert from his breast the consecrated poignard of the assassin.

† Randolph to Cecil, 9th Aug. 1561. Robertson, Appendix, No. 5. See also Keith,

190. A letter from Maitland to Cecil of the same date, published by Haynes, p. 369, seems to refer to the same design, which I mention the rather to correct (what appears to me) an error in the transcription: "I wish to God the first warre may be planely intended *against them by Knox*, for so should it be manifest that the suppressing off religion was ment; but I fear more the will proceed tharunto by indirect meanes: And nothing for us so dangerous as temporising." This seems altogether unintelligible; but if the words printed in italics are transposed, and read thus, "by them against Knox," they will make sense, correspond with the strain of the letter, and with the fact mentioned by Randolph in his letter

whatever perils he apprehended from the personal presence of the Queen, either to the public or to himself, he used not the smallest influence to prevent her being invited home. On the contrary, he concurred with his brethren in this measure, and in defeating a scheme which the Duke of Chastelherault, under the direction of the Archbishop of St. Andrew's, had formed to exclude her from the government.* But when the Prior of St. Andrew's was sent to France with the invitation, he urged that her desisting from the celebration of mass should be one of the conditions of her return; and when he found him and the rest of the Council disposed to grant her this liberty within her own chapel, he predicted that "her liberty would be their thralldom."†

Soon after her arrival,‡ Queen Mary, whether of her own accord or by advice is uncertain, sent for Knox to the palace, and held a long conversation with him, in the presence of her brother, the Prior of St. Andrew's. She seems to have expected to awe him into submission by her authority, if not to confound him by her arguments. But the bold freedom with which he replied to all her charges, and vindicated his own conduct, convinced her that the one expectation was not more vain than the other; and the impression which she wished to make on the preacher was left on her own mind. She accused him of raising her subjects against her mother and herself; of writing a book against her just authority, which (she said) she would cause the most learned in Europe to answer; of being the cause of sedition and bloodshed when he was in England; and of accomplishing his purposes by magical arts.

To these heavy charges Knox replied, that if to teach the truth of God in sincerity, to rebuke idolatry, and exhort a people to worship God according to his word, were to excite subjects to rise against their princes, then he stood convicted of that crime; for it had pleased God to employ him, among others, to disclose unto that realm the vanity

written on the same day. Maitland expresses his fears that Mary would have recourse to crafty measures for undermining their cause, instead of persevering in the design which she had avowed of using violence against Knox.

* Knox, *Historie*, 269.

† Knox, *Historie*, 262, 293.

‡ In the beginning of September, Keith, p. 188.

of the Papistical religion, with the deceit, pride, and tyranny of the Roman antichrist. But if the true knowledge of God and his right worship were the most powerful inducements to subjects cordially to obey their princes, (as they certainly were,) he was innocent. Her Grace, he was persuaded, had at present as an unfeigned obedience from the Protestants of Scotland, as ever her father or any of her ancestors had from those called bishops. With respect to what had been reported to her Majesty, concerning the fruits of his preaching in England, he was glad that his enemies laid nothing to his charge but what the world knew to be false. If any of them could prove, that in any of the places where he had resided, there was either sedition or mutiny, he would confess himself to be a malefactor. So far from this being the case, he was not ashamed to say, that in Berwick, where bloodshed among the soldiers had formerly been common, God so blessed his weak labours, that there was as great quietness during the time he resided in it, as there was at present in Edinburgh. The slander of practising magic, (an art which he condemned wherever he preached,) he could more easily bear, when he recollected that his master, the Lord Jesus, had been defamed as one in league with Beelzebub. As to the book which seemed so highly to offend her Majesty, he owned that he wrote it, and was willing that all the learned should judge of it. He understood that an Englishman had written against it, but he had not read him. If he had sufficiently confuted his arguments, and established the contrary propositions, he would confess his error; but to that hour he continued to think himself alone more able to sustain the things affirmed in that work, than any ten in Europe were to confute them.

“You think I have no just authority?” said the Queen. “Please your Majesty,” replied he, “learned men in all ages have had their judgments free, and most commonly disagreeing from the common judgment of the world; such also have they published both with pen and tongue; notwithstanding, they themselves have lived in the common society with others, and have borne patiently with the errors and imperfections which they could not amend. Plato

the philosopher wrote his book "Of the Commonwealth," in which he condemned many things that then were maintained in the world, and required many things to have been reformed ; and yet, notwithstanding, he lived under such policies as then were universally received, without farther troubling of any state. Even so, madam, am I content to do, in uprightness of heart, and with a testimony of a good conscience." He added, that his sentiments on that subject should be confined to his own breast ; and that, if she refrained from persecution, her authority would not be hurt, either by him or his book, " which was written most especially against that wicked Jesabell of England."

" But ye speak of women in general," said the Queen. " Most true it is, madam ; yet it appeareth to me, that wisdom should persuade your Grace never to raise trouble for that which to this day has not troubled your Majesty, neither in person nor in authority ; for of late years many things, which before were held stable, have been called in doubt ; yea, they have been plainly impugned. But yet, madam, I am assured that neither Protestant nor Papist shall be able to prove that any such question was at any time moved either in public or in secret. Now, madam, if I had intended to have troubled your estate, because ye are a woman, I would have chosen a time more convenient for that purpose than I can do now when your presence is within the realm."

Changing the subject, she charged him with having taught the people to receive a religion different from that allowed by their princes ; and asked, if this was not contrary to the Divine command, that subjects should obey their rulers ? He replied that true religion derived not its origin or authority from princes, but from the eternal God ; that princes were often most ignorant of the true religion ; and that subjects were not bound to frame their religion according to the arbitrary will of their rulers, else the Hebrews would have been bound to adopt the religion of Pharaoh, Daniel and his associates that of Nebuchadnezzar and Darius, and the primitive Christians that of the Roman Emperors. " Yea," replied the Queen, qualifying her assertion ; " but none of these men raised the sword against

their princes." "Yet you cannot deny," said he, "that they resisted; for those who obey not the commandment given them, do in some sort resist." "But they resisted not with the sword," rejoined the Queen, pressing home the argument. "God, madam, had not given unto them the power and the means." "Think you," said the Queen, "that subjects, having the power, may resist their princes?" "If princes exceed their bounds, madam, no doubt they may be resisted, even by power. For no greater honour, or greater obedience is to be given to kings and princes, than God has commanded to be given to father and mother. But the father may be struck with a frenzy, in which he would slay his children. Now, madam, if the children arise, join together, apprehend the father, take the sword from him, bind his hands, and keep him in prison till the frenzy be over; think you, madam, that the children do any wrong? Even so, madam, is it with princes that would murder the children of God that are subject unto them. Their blind zeal is nothing but a mad frenzy; therefore, to take the sword from them, to bind their hands, and to cast them into prison, till they be brought to a more sober mind, is no disobedience against princes, but just obedience, because it agreeth with the will of God."

The Queen, who had hitherto maintained her courage in reasoning, was completely overpowered by this bold answer: her countenance changed, and she continued in a silent stupor. Her brother spoke to her, and inquired the cause of her uneasiness; but she made no reply. At length, recovering herself, she said. "Well then, I perceive that my subjects shall obey you, and not me, and will do what they please, and not what I command; and so must I be subject to them, and not they to me." "God forbid!" answered Knox, "that ever I take upon me to command any to obey me, or to set subjects at liberty to do whatever pleases them. But my travel is, that both princes and subjects may obey God. And think not, madam, that wrong is done you, when you are required to be subject unto God; for it is he who subjects people under princes, and causes obedience to be given unto them. He craves of kings, that they be as foster-fathers to his Church, and

commands queens to be nurses to his people. And this subjection, madam, unto God and his Church, is the greatest dignity that flesh can get upon the face of the earth ; for it shall raise them to everlasting glory."

"But you are not the Church that I will nourish," said the Queen: "I will defend the Church of Rome ; for it is, I think, the true Church of God." "Your *will*, madam, is no reason ; neither doth your *thought* make the Roman harlot to be the true and immaculate spouse of Jesus Christ. Wonder not, madam, that I call Rome an harlot, for that Church is altogether polluted with all kinds of spiritual fornication, both in doctrine and manners." He added, that he was ready to prove that the Romish Church had declined farther from the purity of religion taught by the Apostles, than the Jewish Church had degenerated from the ordinances which God gave them by Moses and Aaron, at the time when they denied and crucified the Son of God. "My conscience is not so," said the Queen. "Conscience, madam, requires knowledge ; and I fear that right knowledge you have none." She said, she had both heard and read. "So, madam, did the Jews who crucified Christ ; they read the law and the prophets, and heard them interpreted after their manner. Have you heard any teach but such as the Pope and cardinals have allowed ? and you may be assured, that such will speak nothing to offend their own estate."

"You interpret the Scriptures in one way," said the Queen evasively, "and they in another : whom shall I believe, and who shall be judge?" "You shall believe God, who plainly speaketh in his word," replied the Reformer, "and farther than the word teacheth you, you shall believe neither the one nor the other. The word of God is plain in itself ; if there is any obscurity in one place, the Holy Ghost, who is never contrary in himself, explains it more clearly in other places, so that there can remain no doubt, but unto such as are obstinately ignorant." As an example, he selected one of the articles in controversy, that concerning the Sacrament of the Supper, and proceeded to shew that the Popish doctrine of the sacrifice of the mass, was destitute of all foundation in Scripture. But the

Queen, who was determined to avoid all discussion of the articles of her creed, interrupted him by saying, that she was unable to contend with him in argument, but if she had those present whom she had heard, they would answer him. "Madam," replied the Reformer fervently, "would to God that the learnedest Papist in Europe, and he whom you would best believe, were present with your Grace to sustain the argument, and that you would wait patiently to hear the matter reasoned to the end! for then, I doubt not, madam, but you would hear the vanity of the Papistical religion, and how little ground it hath in the word of God." "Well," said she, "you may perchance get that sooner than you believe." "Assuredly, if ever I get that in my life, I get it sooner than I believe; for the ignorant Papist cannot patiently reason, and the learned and crafty Papist will never come, in your audience, madam, to have the ground of their religion searched out. When you shall let me see the contrary, I shall grant myself to have been deceived in that point."

The hour of dinner afforded an occasion for breaking off this singular conversation. At taking leave of her Majesty, the Reformer said, "I pray God, madam, that you may be as blessed within the commonwealth of Scotland as ever Deborah was in the commonwealth of Israel."* Such is the account of Knox's first conference with the Queen; and though he addressed her with a boldness and freedom to which crowned heads are seldom accustomed, there is no ground for the charge that he treated her with rudeness, or that he ever lost sight of that respect due to the presence of his Sovereign, or to the decorum which became his own character.

This interview excited great speculation, and different conjectures were formed as to its probable consequences. The Catholics, whose hopes now depended solely on the Queen, were alarmed lest Knox's rhetoric should have shaken her constancy. The Reformed party cherished the expectation that she would be induced to attend the Protestant sermons, and that her religious prejudices would

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 287-292.

gradually abate. Knox indulged no such flattering expectations. He had made it his study, during the late conference, to discover the real character of the Queen; and he formed, at that time, the opinion which he never saw reason afterwards to alter, that she was proud, crafty, obstinately wedded to the Popish Church, and averse to all means of instruction.* He resolved, therefore, vigilantly to watch her proceedings, that he might give timely warning of any danger which might result from them to the Reformed interest; and the more that he perceived the zeal of the Protestant nobles to cool, and their jealousy to be laid asleep by the winning arts of the Queen, the more frequently and loudly did he sound the alarm. Vehement and harsh as his expressions often were; violent, seditious, and insufferable, as his sermons and prayers have been pronounced, I have little hesitation in saying, that as the public peace was never disturbed by them, so they were useful to the public safety, and even a principal means of warding off those confusions in which the country was involved, and which brought on the ultimate ruin of the infatuated Queen. His uncourtly and rough manner was not, indeed, calculated to gain upon her mind, (nor is there reason to think that an opposite manner would have had this effect,) and his admonitions often irritated her; but they obliged her to act with greater reserve and moderation; and they operated, to an indescribable degree, in arousing and keeping awake the zeal and the fears of the nation, which at that period were the two great safeguards of the Protestant religion in Scotland.† We may

* Knox, 292. Keith, 197. In a letter to Cecil, 7th October, 1561, Knox says, "The queen neyther is, neyther shall be of our opinion; and, in very dead, her hole proceedings do declair that the cardinalles lessons ar so deaplie printed in her heart, that the substance and the qualitie are lick to perishe together. I wold be glad to be deceaved, but I fear I shall not. In communication with her, I espyed such craft as I have not found in such aige. Since, hath the court been dead to me and I to it." Haynes, 372.

† Dr. Cook has the following just and rational reflections on this interview. "What had passed sunk deeply into the heart of Mary. She saw plainly the nature of that spirit with which she had to contend, and pro-

bably justly estimated the difficulty which she would experience in guiding or resisting it. Knox also was strongly impressed with what he had heard. The ability with which Mary had sustained her part in the conference; the firmness with which she argued for the maxims which she had adopted, convinced him that there was little or no hope of her conversion, and he frequently mentioned the opinion which he had formed. It is evident that he had been represented to Mary as an enemy to monarchy, and the manner in which he spake of allegiance may afford some reason for imagining that this was really the case. Yet an attentive examination of his conduct will show that he was thoroughly convinced of the obligation to submit to the supreme magistrates

form an idea of the effect produced by his pulpit-orations, from the account of the English ambassador, who was one of his constant hearers. "Where your honour," says he, in a letter to Cecil, "exhorteth us to stoutness, I assure you the voice of one man is able, in an hour, to put more life in us, than six hundred trumpets continually blustering in our ears."*

The Reformer was not ignorant that some of his friends thought him too severe in his language, nor was he always disposed to vindicate the expressions which he employed. Still, however, he was persuaded that the times required the utmost plainness; and he was afraid that snares lurked under the smoothness which was recommended and practised by courtiers. Cecil, having given him an advice on this head, in one of his letters, we find him replying: "Men deliting to swym betwix two waters, have often compleaned upon my severitie. I do fear that that which men terme lenitie and dulcenes, do bring upon thameselves and others mor fearful destruction, than yit hath enseeded the vehemency of any preacher within this realme."†

The abatement of zeal which he dreaded from "the holy water of the Court," soon began to appear among the Protestant leaders. The General Assemblies of the Church were a great eye-sore to the Queen, who was very desirous

in all things not contrary to the law of God. He upon every occasion shrunk from the imputation of being a promoter of rebellion; and it cannot be doubted, that by the activity of his exertions, rebellion was frequently prevented; but his attachment to what he revered as pure religion, to the liberty which was essential to its existence, was certainly stronger than his loyalty. But there is much reason to conclude, that his estimate of the danger which hung over his country was not exaggerated; and in this case, before he can be branded as a turbulent incendiary, we must be prepared to admit, that even the most intolerable tyranny ought not to be restrained by those against whom it is exercised. If we revolt from this opinion, so shocking to common sense, and so incompatible with the feelings of mankind,—if we allow that the happiness of the community is the great end of government,—that when this is disregarded or wantonly sacrificed, government is a calamity from which we would seek to escape,—if, in one word, we hold those principles upon which the revolution in Britain proceeded, and which form the basis on which our admi-

nable constitution rests, we must revere this great Reformer as the intrepid champion of liberty,—we must with gratitude ascribe to the resolute stand which he now made that blessed change of religious sentiment, those grand maxims of policy which have raised the prosperity of our country, and contributed to that intellectual culture, to that astonishing progress in art and in science by which its inhabitants are so eminently distinguished."

* Randolph's Letter, apud Keith, 188. In this letter, the ambassador gives an account of Knox's conference with the Queen. He "knocked so hastily upon her heart, that he made her to weep, as well you know there be some of that sex that will do that as well for anger as for grief; though in this the Lord James will disagree with me. He concluded so in the end with her, that he hath liberty to speak his conscience; [and] to give unto her such reverence as becometh the ministers of God unto the superior powers.

† Haynes, 372. An epistolary correspondence was at this time maintained between secretary Cecil and our Reformer. Keith, 191, 192, 194. Robertson, Append. No. 5.

to have them put down. At the first Assembly after her arrival, the courtiers, through her influence, absented themselves, and when challenged for this, began to dispute the propriety of such conventions without her Majesty's pleasure. On this point, there was sharp reasoning between Knox and Maitland, who was now made Secretary of State. "Take from us the liberty of Assemblies, and take from us the Gospel," said the Reformer. "If the liberty of the Church must depend upon her allowance or disallowance, we shall want not only Assemblies, but also the preaching of the Gospel." It was proposed that the Book of Discipline should be ratified by the Queen; but this was keenly opposed by the Secretary, who asked, with a sneer, "How many of those who subscribed that book will be subject to it? Many had subscribed it *in fide parentum* implicitly." Knox replied, that the scoff was as untrue as it was unbecoming; for the book was publicly read, and its different heads discussed for a number of days, so that no man was required to subscribe what he did not understand. "Stand content," said one of the courtiers, "that book will not be obtained." "And let God requite the injury which the commonwealth shall sustain, at the hands of those who hinder it," replied the Reformer.

He was still more indignant at their management in settling the provision for the ministers of the Church. Hitherto they had lived mostly on the benevolence of their hearers, and many of them had scarcely the means of subsistence; but repeated complaints having obliged the Privy Council to take up the affair, they came at last to a determination, that the ecclesiastical revenues should be divided into three parts; that two of these should be given to the ejected Popish clergy; and that the other part should be divided between the Court and the Protestant ministry! * The persons appointed "to modify the stipends," or fix the sums to be appropriated to the Court and the clergy, were disposed to gratify the Queen; and the sums allotted to the ministers were as ill paid as they were paltry and inadequate. "Weall!" exclaimed Knox, when he heard of

* Keith, App. 175-179. Knox, 296-300.

this disgraceful arrangement, "if the end of this ordour, pretendit to be takin for sustenatioun of the ministers, be happie, my judgement failes me. I sie twa pairtis freelie gevin to the devill, and the thrid mon be devyded betwix God and the devill. Quho wald have thocht, that quhen Joseph reulled in Egypt, his brethren sould have travellit for victualles; and have returned with emptie sackes unto thair families? O happie servands of the devill, and miserabill servants of Jesus Christ, if efter this lyf thair wer not hell and heavin!"* When Maitland complained to him of the ingratitude of the ministers, who did not acknowledge the Queen's liberality to them, Knox replied, with a derisive smile, "Assuredly, such as receive any thing of the Queen are unthankfull, if they acknowledge it not; but whether the ministers be of that rank or not, I greatly doubt. Has the Queen better title to that which she usurps, be it in giving to others, or in taking to herself, than such as crucified Christ had to divide his garments among them? Let the Papists who have the two parts, some that have their thirds free, and some that have gotten abbacies and feu-lands, thank the Queen; the poor preachers will not yet flatter for feeding their bellies. To your dumb dogs, formerly ten thousand was not enough; but to the servants of Christ, that painfully preach his evangell, a thousand pound! how can that be sustained."

He unfolded his mind more freely on this subject, as his complaints could not be imputed to personal motives; for his own stipend, though moderate, was liberal when compared with those of the most of his brethren. From the time of his last return to Scotland, until the conclusion of the war, he had been indebted to the liberality of individuals for the support of his family. After that period, he lodged for some time in the house of David Forrest, a burghess of Edinburgh, from which he removed to the lodging

* "So busie," says he, "and circumspect wer the modifiers (because it was a new office, the terme must also be new,) that the ministers sould not be over-wantoun, that an hundredth merks was sufficient to an single man, being a commone minister: Thre hundredth merks was the hiest apoynted to any except the superintendents, and a few utheris." *Historie*, 301. "Mr. Knox is not at all here diminishing the sum, (says Keith); for

the original Books of Assigation to the ministers, which now ly before me, ascertain the truth of what he says," p. 508. Wishart of Pittarow, who was appointed (March 1, 1561,) comptroller of the modification, pinched the ministers so much, that it became a proverb,—"The gude laird of Petarro was an earnest professour of Christ, but the mekill devill receive the comptroller."

which had belonged to Durie, Abbot of Dunfermline. As soon as he began to preach statedly in the city, the Town Council assigned him an annual stipend of two hundred pounds, to be paid quarterly; besides discharging his house-rent, and reimbursing some individuals the money which they had expended in maintaining his family. Subsequent to the settlement made by the Privy Council, it would seem that he received at least a part of his stipend from the common fund allotted to the ministers of the Church; but the Good Town had still an opportunity of testifying their generosity, by supplying the deficiencies of the legal allowance. Indeed, the uniform attention of the Town Council to his external accommodation and comfort, was honourable to them, and deserves to be recorded to their commendation.*

In the beginning of the year 1562, he went to Angus, to preside in the election and admission of John Erskine of Dun as superintendent of Angus and Mearns. That respectable baron was one of those whom the first General Assembly declared "apt and able to minister;"† and having already contributed, in different ways, to the advancement of the Reformation, he now devoted himself to the service of the Church in a laborious employment, at a time when she stood eminently in need of the assistance of all the learned and pious. Knox had formerly presided at the installation of John Spotswood, as superintendent of Lothian.‡

The influence of our Reformer appears from his being engaged on different occasions to compose or decide disputes of a civil nature, which arose among the Protestants. He was applied to frequently to intercede with the Town Council, in behalf of some of the inhabitants who had subjected themselves to punishment by their disorderly conduct.§ He had been employed in 1561, to adjust some difference that had arisen between the Earl of Angus and his brothers, respecting the possession of the lands and ba-

* See Extracts from the Records of the Town Council in Note G.—Period Sixth.

† Keith, 498.

‡ The form observed on that occasion, which was followed in the admission or ordination

of all the superintendents and other ministers, is inserted at length in Knox's *Historie*, p. 263-266; and in Dunlop's *Confessions*, ii. 627-636.

§ Knox, *Historie*, p. 270.

rony of Abernethy; and in March next year, the Earl of Bothwell urged him to assist in removing a deadly feud which subsisted between him and the Earl of Arran. He was averse to interfere in this business, which had already baffled the authority of the Privy Council;* but at the desire of some friends he yielded, and after considerable pains, had the satisfaction of bringing the parties to an amicable interview, at which they mutually promised to bury all differences. But he was exceedingly mortified and disappointed by the information which Arran, immediately on the back of this agreement, communicated to him, of a conspiracy which Bothwell had proposed to engage him in, the object of which was to seize the person of the Queen, and murder the Secretary, the Prior of St. Andrew's, and the rest of the counsellors. Knox appears to have attached little credit to this information, which on being made public, produced the imprisonment of both Arran and Bothwell; and notwithstanding the lunacy of the informer, created suspicion in the minds of the principal courtiers, that the existence of such a design was not improbable.†

In the month of May, Knox had another interview with the Queen, on the following occasion. The family of Guise were at this time making the most vigorous efforts to regain that influence in France, of which they had been deprived since the death of Francis II., and as zeal for the Catholic religion was the cloak by which they covered their ambitious designs, they began by stirring up persecution against the Protestants. The massacre of Vassy, in the beginning of March this year, was a prelude to this, in which the Duke of Guise and Cardinal of Lorraine attacked, with an armed force, a congregation assembled for worship, killed a number of them, and wounded and mutilated others, not excepting women and children.‡ Intelligence of the success which attended the measures of her uncles, was brought to Queen Mary, who immediately after gave a splendid ball to her foreign servants, at which the dancing was prolonged to a late hour.

Knox was advertised of the festivities in the palace, and

* Keith, 215.

† Histoire des Martyrs, fol. 558, 559.

‡ Knox, Historie, 305-308, and Letter to Locke, 6th May, 1562, apud Cald. MS. i. 755, 756.

the occasion of them. He always felt a lively interest in the concerns of the French Protestants, with many of whom he was intimately acquainted, and he entertained a very bad opinion of the Princes of Lorraine. In his sermon on the following Sabbath, he introduced some severe strictures upon the vices to which princes were addicted, their oppression, ignorance, hatred of virtue, attachment to bad company, and fondness for foolish pleasures. Information of this discourse was quickly conveyed to the Queen, with many exaggerations; and the preacher was next day ordered to attend at the palace. Being conveyed into the royal chamber, where the Queen sat with her maids of honour and principal counsellors, he was accused of having spoken of her Majesty irreverently, and in such a manner as to bring her under the contempt and hatred of her subjects.

After the Queen had made a long speech on that theme, he was allowed to state his defence. He told her Majesty, that she had been treated as persons usually were, who refused to attend the preaching of the word of God: she had been obliged to trust to the false reports of flatterers. For, if she had heard the calumniated discourse, he did not believe she could have been offended with any thing that he had said. She would now, therefore, be pleased to hear him repeat, as exactly as he could, what he had preached yesterday.* Having done this, he added, “If any man,

* “My text, (said he,) madam, was this, ‘And now, O kings, understand, be learned ye judges of the earth:’ after, madam, (said he,) that I had declared the dignity of kings and rulers, the honour wherein God hath placed them, the obedience that is due unto them, being God’s lieutenants; I demanded this question, But oh! alas, what account shall the most part of princes make before that supreme Judge, whose throne and authority so manifestly and shamefully they abuse? The complaint of Solomon is this day most true, to wit, ‘That violence and oppression do occupy the throne of God here in this earth;’ for whilst that murderers, blood-thirsty men, oppressors, and malefactors, dare be bold to present themselves before kings and princes, and that the poor saints of God are banished and exiled, what shall we say? but that the devil hath taken possession in the throne of God, which ought to be fearful to all wicked doers, and a refuge to the innocent, oppressed; and

how can it otherwise be? for princes will not understand, they will not be learned, as God commands them; but God’s law they despise, his statutes and holy ordinances they will not understand; for in fiddling and flinging they are more exercised than in reading and hearing God’s most blessed word; and fiddlers and flatterers (which commonly corrupt the youth) are more precious in their eyes, than men of wisdom and gravity, who, by whoelsom admonitions, may beat down in them some part of that vanity and pride wherein we all are born, but in princes take deep root and strength by education. And of dancing, madam, I said, That albeit, in Scriptures I found no praise of it, and in profane writers, that it is termed the gesture rather of those that are mad, and in phrenzy, than of sober men; yet do I not utterly condemn it, providing that two vices be avoided. The former, that the principal vocation of those that use that exercise, be not neglected for the pleasure of dancing. Se-

madam, will say, that I spake more, let him presently accuse me." Several of the company attested that he had given a just report of the sermon. The Queen, after turning round to the informers, who were dumb, told him that his words, though sharp enough as related by himself, were reported to her in a different way. She added, that she knew that her uncles and he were of a different religion, and therefore did not blame him for having no good opinion of them; but if he heard any thing about her conduct which displeased him, he should come to herself, and she would be willing to hear him. Knox easily saw through the artifice of this fair proposal, which was merely a stratagem to get him to refrain, in his preaching, from saying any thing that might offend or reflect upon the Court. He replied, that he was willing to do any thing for her Majesty's contentment which was consistent with his office. If her Grace choosed to attend the public sermons, she would hear what pleased or displeased him, in her and in others; or if she pleased to appoint a time when she would hear the substance of the doctrine which he preached in public, he would most gladly wait upon her Grace's pleasure, time, and place: but to come and wait at her chamber-door, and then to have liberty only to whisper in her ear what people thought and said of her, that would neither his conscience nor his office permit him to do. "For," added he, in a strain which he sometimes used even on serious occasions, "albeit at your Grace's commandment, I am heir now, yit can I not tell quhat uther men shall judge of me, that, at this tyme of day, am absent from my buke, and waitting upoun the Court." "Ye will not alwayes be at your buke," said the Queen pettishly, and turned her back. As he left the room "with a reasonable merry countenance," some of the Popish attendants said in his hearing, *He is not afraid!* "Why sould the plesing face of a *gentilwoman* afray me?" said he, regarding them with a

condly, That they dance not as the Philistines their fathers, for the pleasure that they take in the displeasure of God's people; for if they do these, or either of them, they shall receive the reward of dancers, and that will be to drink in hell, unless they speedily repent, so shall God turn their mirth into sudden sor-

row: for God will not always afflict his people, neither will he always wink at the tyranny of tyrants. If any, madam, (said he) will say that I spake more, let him publicly accuse me; for I think I have not only touched the sum, but the very words as I spake them." Knox, *Historie*, p. 270.

sarcastic scowl, "I have luiked in the faces of mony angry men, and yit have not bene affrayed above measour."*

There was at this time but one place of worship in the city of Edinburgh.† The number of inhabitants was, indeed, small when compared with its present population; but still they must have formed a very large congregation. St. Giles's church, the place then used for worship, was capacious; and on some occasions, three thousand persons assembled in it to hear sermon.‡ In this church, Knox had, since 1560, performed all the parts of ministerial duty, without any other assistant but John Cairns, who acted as reader.§ He preached twice every Sabbath, and thrice on other days of the week.|| He met regularly once every week with the kirk-session for discipline,¶ and with the assembly of the neighbourhood, for the exercise on the Scriptures. He attended, besides, the meetings of the provincial Synod and General Assembly; and at almost every meeting at the last mentioned court, he received an appointment to visit and preach in some distant part of the country. These labours must have been oppressive to a constitution which was already much impaired; especially as he did not indulge in extemporaneous effusions, but devoted a part of every day to study. His parish were sensible of this; and in April 1562, the Town Council came to an unanimous resolution to solicit John Craig, the minister of Canongate, or Holyrood House, to undertake the half of the charge. The ensuing General Assembly approved of the Council's proposal, and appointed Craig to remove to Edinburgh.** His translation did not, however, take place before June 1563, owing, as it would seem, to the difficulty of obtaining an additional stipend.††

Although the Queen adopted the policy of employing none but Protestant counsellors, it is well known they did not possess her confidence or affection, and accordingly various plots were laid to undermine and ruin them. The

* Knox, *Historie*, 308-311.

† St. Cuthbert's, or the West Church, was at that time (as at present) a distinct parish, of which William Harlow was minister.

‡ Cald. MS. ii. 157.

§ Records of Town Council, 26th October, 1561.

|| Ibid. 10th April, 1562.

¶ The number of Elders in the Session of Edinburgh, was 12, and of deacons, 16. Duglop's *Confessions*, ii. 638.

** Calderwood, *apud* Keith, 514.

†† See Note H. Period Sixth.

chief direction of public affairs was entrusted to the Prior of St. Andrew's, who was, in 1562, created Earl of Murray, and married a daughter of the Earl Marischal, a Roman Catholic. During the autumn of that year, the Papists in Scotland entertained great hopes of a change in their favour. After several unsuccessful attempts to cut off the principal Protestant courtiers,* the Earl of Huntly openly took arms in the north, to rescue the Queen from their hands; while the Archbishop of St. Andrew's endeavoured to unite and rouse the Papists of the south. On this occasion, our Reformer acted with his usual zeal and foresight. Being appointed by the General Assembly as commissioner to visit the churches of the west, he persuaded the gentlemen of that quarter to enter into a new bond of defence. Hastening into Galloway and Nithsdale, he, by his sermons and conversation, confirmed the Protestants of these places. He employed the Master of Maxwell to write to the Earl of Bothwell, who had escaped from confinement, and meant, it was feared, to join Huntly. He himself wrote to the Duke of Chastelherault, warning him not to listen to the solicitations of his brother, the archbishop, nor accede to a conspiracy which would infallibly prove the ruin of his house. By these means, the southern parts of the kingdom were preserved in a state of peace, while the vigorous measures of Murray crushed the rebellion in the north.† The Queen expressed little satisfaction at the victory gained over Huntly, and there is every reason to think, that if she was not privy to his rising, she expected to turn it to the advancement of her projects.‡ She scrupled not to say, at this time, "that she hoped, before a year was expired, to have the mass and Catholic profession restored through the whole kingdom."

While these hopes were indulged, the Popish clergy thought it necessary to gain credit to their cause, by appearing more openly in defence of their tenets than they had lately done. They began to preach publicly, and boasted that they were ready to dispute with the Protestant ministers. The person who stepped forward as their cham-

* Keith, 230. Knox, 321.

† Gordon of Gordon's MS. apud Keith, 229.

‡ Spotswood, 185.

pion was Quintin Kennedy, uncle to the Earl of Cassilis, and Abbot of Crossraguel. The abbot appears to have spent the greater part of his life in the same negligence of the duties of his office with the rest of his brethren ; but he was roused from his inactivity by the success of the Protestant preachers, who, in the years 1556 and 1557, attacked the Popish faith, and inveighed against the idleness and corruption of the clergy. * At an age when others retire from the field, he began to rub up his long neglected theological weapons, and to gird on his armour.

His first appearance, as a polemical writer, was in 1558, when he published a short system of Catholic tactics, under the title of *Ane Compendius Tractive*, shewing “ the nerrest and onlie way ” to establish the conscience of a Christian man, in all matters which were in debate concerning faith in religion. This way was no other than that of implicit faith in the decisions of the Church or clergy. In every controversy, the Scripture was only to be cited as a *witness* ; the Church was the *judge*, whose determinations, in general councils canonically assembled, were to be humbly received and submitted to by all the faithful. † This was no doubt the most compendious and nearest way for quieting and fortifying the conscience of every Christian man ; and deciding every controversy which might arise, without the trouble of examination, reasoning, or debate.

But as the stubborn Reformers would not submit to this easy and short mode of decision, the abbot was reluctantly obliged to enter the lists of argument with them. Accordingly, when Willock preached in his neighbourhood, in the beginning of 1559, he challenged him to a dispute on the sacrifice of the mass. The challenge was accepted, the time and place of meeting were fixed ; but the abbot refused to appear, unless his antagonist would previously engage to submit to the interpretations of Scripture which had been given by the ancient doctors of the Church. ‡ The

* The Reasoning betwix Jo. Knox and the Abbote of Crosraguell, fol. 4. Edinburgh, 1563.

† As Kenedy's Tractive, and Archbishop Hamilton's Catechism, are the only books published by the Scots Roman Catholics before the establishment of the Reformation, which

have come down to us, some extracts from both shall be inserted in Note I. Period Sixth.

‡ Keith, App. 195-199. Kennedy, in a letter to the Archbishop of Glasgow, says, “ Willock, and the rest of his counsell labourit earnestlie to sie gif I wald admitt the scripture

dispute, in consequence, did not place ; but from this time Kennedy seems to have made the mass the great subject of his study, and endeavoured to qualify himself for defending this keystone of the Popish arch. *

George Hay having been sent by the General Assembly to preach in Carrick and Cunningham, during the autumn of 1562, Kennedy offered to dispute with him ; but no meeting took place between them.† On the 30th of August, the abbot read in his chapel of Kirk Oswald, a number of articles respecting the mass, purgatory, praying to saints, the use of images, &c. which he said he would defend against any who should impugn them, and promised to declare his mind more fully respecting them on the following Sunday. Knox, who was in the vicinity, came to Kirk Oswald on that day, with the design of hearing the abbot, and granting him the disputation which he had courted. The abbot not making his appearance, although specially requested by Knox, the latter himself preached in the chapel. When he came down from the pulpit, there was a letter from Kennedy put into his hand, stating, that he understood he had come to that country to seek disputation, and offering to meet with him on the following Sunday in any house in Maybole, provided there were not more than twenty persons on each side admitted. Knox replied that he had come, not purposely to dispute, but to preach the gospel ; he was, however, willing to meet with him. But as he was under a previous engagement to be in Dumfries on the day mentioned by the abbot, if he sent him his articles, he would, with all convenient speed, return and fix a time for the discussion.

A correspondence was carried on between them on this subject, which is fully as curious as the dispute that ensued.

onlye juge, and, be that meines, to haif maid me contrarray to my awin buke ; bot thair labouris wes in waist.—I held me evir fast at ane grounde.” And he triumphs that he “draif the lymmar—to refuse the interpretation of the doctoris allegeit be him and all utheris, bot so far as he thocht thay war agreeable with the worde of God, quhilk was as rycht nocht.” Ut supra, 103, 194.

* See Note K. Period Sixth.

† In answer to the Abbot's assertion, that George Hay had declined to dispute with him,

Knox says, “Maister George Hay offered unto you disputation, but ye fled the barrass.” Reasoning, &c. x. liij. George Hay seems to have had a benefice in the church before the Reformation. He was at this time minister of Eddlestone ; and, in the records of the Church is also designed minister to the Privy Council, and parson of Ruthven. Keith, 511, 530, 544. In the year 1562, he published a book on the sacrament of the supper, perhaps in answer to Kennedy's. Winzet, apud Keith, App. 246, comp. 236.

In his answer to the abbot's first letter, the Reformer says, "that ye offer unto me familiar, formall, and gentill reasoning, with my whole hart I accept the condition. For assuredlie, my lord, (so I style you by reason of blood, and not of office,) chiding and brawling I utterlie abhor." The abbot returned a long answer, to which Knox (when he published the account of the dispute) affixed short notes by way of reply. Whereas Knox said he had come to preach salvation through Christ, the abbot answers, that this was "na newingis" in that country before he was born. Knox replies, that he greatly doubted if ever Christ was preached by "a Papistical priest or monk." "Ye said ane lytill afore (the abbot writes,) ye did abhor all chiding and railling; bot nature passis nurtor with yow."—"I will nether interchange nature nor nurtor with yow, for all the profets of Crossraguell." "Gif the victorie consist in clamour or crying out, (says the abbot, objecting to a public meeting,) I wil quite yow the caus, but farther pley, [without farther plea;] and yet praise be to God, I may quhisper in sic maner as I wil be hard sufficientlie in the largest hous in Carrick." "The larger hous the better for the auditor and me," replied Knox. The Reformer wished that the reasoning should be as public as the abbot had made his articles, and proposed that it should take place in St. John's Church in Ayr; but the abbot refused to dispute publicly.

The Earl of Cassilis wrote to Knox, expressing his disapprobation of the proposed disputation, as unlikely to do any good, and calculated to endanger the public peace; to which the Reformer replied, by signifying that his relation had given the challenge, which he was resolved not to decline, and that his lordship ought to encourage him to keep the appointment, from which no bad effects were to be dreaded. Upon this the abbot, feeling his honour touched, wrote a letter to the Reformer, in which he told him that he would have "rencountered" him the last time he was in the country, had it not been for the interposition of the Earl of Cassilis;* and charged him with stirring up his nephew to write that letter, in order to bring him into disgrace. "Ye sal be assured (says he) I sal keip day and

* "Brag on," says Knox, on the margin.

place in Mayboill, according to my writing, an I haif my life, and my feit louse ;” and in another letter to Knox and the baillies of Ayr, he says, “ keip your promes, and pretext na joukrie, be my lorde of Cassilis writing.” The abbot being in this state of mind, the conditions of the combat were speedily settled. They agreed to meet on the 28th of September, at eight o’clock in the morning, in the house of the provost of Maybole. Forty persons on each side were to be admitted as witnesses of the dispute, with “ as many mo as the house might goodly hold, at the sight of my lord of Cassilis.” And notaries or scribes were appointed to record the papers which might be given in by the parties, and the arguments which they advanced in the course of reasoning, to prevent unnecessary repetition, or a false report of the proceedings. These conditions were formally subscribed by the abbot and the Reformer, on the day preceding the meeting.

When they met, “ John Knox addressed him to make publick prayer, whereat the abbot was soir offended at the first, but whil the said John wold in nowise be stayed, he and his gave audience ; which being ended, the abbote said, *Be my faith, it is weill said.*” The disputation commenced by reading a paper presented by the abbot, in which, after rehearsing the occasion of his present appearance, and protesting that his entering into dispute was not to be understood as implying that the points in question were disputable or dubious, being already determined by lawful general councils, he declared his readiness to defend the articles which he had exhibited, beginning with that concerning the sacrifice of the mass. To this paper Knox gave in a written answer in the course of the disputation : and in the mean time, after stating his opinion respecting general councils, he proceeded to the article in dispute. It was requisite, he said, to state clearly and distinctly the subject in controversy ; and he thought the mass contained the four following things—the name, the form, and action, the opinion entertained of it, and the actor with the authority which he had to do what he pretended to do : all of which he was prepared to shew were destitute of any foundation in Scripture. The abbot was aware of the difficulty of managing the

dispute on such a broad basis, and he had taken up ground of his own which he thought he could maintain against his antagonist. "As to the masse that he will impung, (said he,) or any mannes masse, yea, and it war *the Paipes awin masse*, I wil mantein na thing but Jesus Christes masse, conforme to my article, as it is written, and diffinition contained in my buik, quhilk he hes tane on hand to impung."

Knox expressed his delight at hearing the abbot say that he would defend nothing but the mass of Christ, for if he adhered to this, they were "on the verray point of an Christiane agreement," as he was ready to allow whatever could be shewn to have been instituted by Christ. As to his lordship's book, he confessed he had not read it, and (without excusing his negligence) requested the definition to be read to him from it. The abbot qualified his assertion, by saying, that he meant to defend no other mass, except that which, in its "substance, institution, and effect," was appointed by Christ; and he defined the mass, as concerning the substance and effect, to be the sacrifice and oblation of the Lord's body and blood, given and offered by him in the last supper; and for the first confirmation of this, he rested upon the oblation of bread and wine by Melchisedek. His argument was, that the Scripture declared that Christ was a priest after the order of Melchisedek: Melchisedek offered bread and wine to God: therefore Christ offered or made oblation of his body and blood in the last supper, which was the only instance in which the priesthood of Christ and Melchisedek could agree.

Knox said that the ceremonies of the mass, and the opinion entertained of it, as procuring remission of sins to the quick and the dead, were viewed as important parts of it, and having a strong hold of the consciences of the people, ought to be taken into the argument; but as the abbot declared himself willing to defend these afterwards, he would proceed to the substance, and proposed, in the first place, to fix the sense in which the word sacrifice or oblation was used in the argument. There were sacrifices *propitiatoriae* for expiation, and *eucharisticae*, of thanksgiving; in which last sense the mortification of the body,

prayer, and alms-giving, were called sacrifices in Scripture. He wished, therefore, to know whether the abbot understood the word in the first or second of these senses, in this dispute. The abbot said, that he would not at present dispute what his opponent meant by a sacrifice *propitiatorium*; but he held the sacrifice on the cross to be the only sacrifice of redemption, and that of the mass to be the sacrifice of commemoration of the death and passion of Christ. Knox replied, that the chief head which he intended to impugn seemed to be yielded by the abbot; and he, for his part, cheerfully granted, that there was a commemoration of Christ's death in the right use of the ordinance of the supper.

The abbot insisted that he should proceed to impugn the warrant which he had taken from Scripture for his article. "Protesting," said the Reformer, "that this mekle is win, that the sacrifice of the messe, being denied by me to be a sacrifice *propitiatorie* for the sins of the quick and the dead, (according to the opinion thereof before conceived,) hath no patron at the present, I am content to procede."—"I protest he hes win nothing of me as yit, and referres it to black and quhite contened in our writing."—"I have openlie denied the masse to be an sacrifice propitiatorie for the quick, &c. and the defence thereof is denied. And, therefore, I referre me unto the same judges that my lord hath clamed."—"Ye may denie quhat ye pleis; for all that ye denie I tak not presentlie to impung; but quhair I began thair will I end, that is, to defend the messe conform to my artickle."—"Your lordship's ground," said Knox, after some altercation, "is, that Melchisedek is the figure of Christe in that he did offer unto God bread and wine, and that it behoved Jesus Christ to offer, in his latter supper, his body and blude, under the forms of bread and wine. I answer to your ground yet againe, that Melchisedek offered neither bread nor wine unto God; and therefore, it that ye would thereupon conclude hath no assurance of your ground."—"Preve that," said the abbot. Knox replied, that, according to the rules of just reasoning, he could not be bound to prove a negative; that it was incumbent on his opponent to bring forward some

proof for his affirmation, concerning which the text was altogether silent ; and that until the abbot did this, it was sufficient for him simply to deny. But the abbot said, he “ stuck to his text,” and insisted that his antagonist should shew for what purpose Melchisedek brought out the bread and wine, if it was not to offer them unto God. After protesting that the abbot’s ground remained destitute of any support, and that he was not bound in argument to shew what became of the bread and wine, or what use was made of them, Knox consented to state his opinion, that they were intended by Melchisedek to refresh Abraham and his company. The abbot had now gained what he wished ; and he had a number of objections ready to start against this view of the words, by which he was able at least to protract and involve the dispute. And thus ended the first day’s contest.

When the company convened on the following day, the abbot proceeded to impugn the view which his opponent had given of the text. He urged first, that Abraham and his company had a sufficiency of provision in the spoils which they had taken from the enemy in their late victory, and did not need Melchisedek’s bread and wine ; and secondly, that the text said that Melchisedek brought them forth, and it was improbable that one man, and he a king, should carry as much as would refresh three hundred and eighteen men. To these objections, Knox made such replies as will occur to any person who thinks on the subject. In this manner did the second day pass. When they met on the third day, the abbot presented a paper, in which he stated another objection to Knox’s view of the text. After some more altercation on this subject, Knox desired his opponent to proceed to his promised proof of the argument upon which he had rested his cause. But the abbot, being indisposed, rose up, and put into Knox’s hand a book to which he referred him for the proof. By this time, the noblemen and gentlemen present were completely wearied out. For, besides the tedious and uninteresting mode in which the disputation had been managed, they could find entertainment neither for themselves nor for their retinue in Maybole ; so that if any person had brought in bread

and wine among them, it is presumable that they would not have debated long upon the purpose for which it was brought. Knox proposed that they should adjourn to Ayr and finish the dispute, which was refused by the abbot, who said he would come to Edinburgh for that purpose, provided he could obtain the Queen's permission.* Upon this the company dismissed.

The abbot, or his friends, having circulated the report that he had the advantage in the disputation, Knox afterwards (1563) published the account of it from the records of the notaries, and added a prologue and short marginal notes. The prologue and his answer to the abbot's first paper, especially the latter, are pieces of good writing. I have been more minute in the narration of this dispute than its merits deserve, because no account of it has hitherto appeared, the tract itself being so exceedingly rare, as to have been seen by few for a long period.†

Another priest who advocated the Roman Catholic cause at this time, was Ninian Wingate, who had been schoolmaster of Linlithgow, from which situation he was removed by Spotswood, superintendent of Lothian, on account of his attachment to Popery. In the month of February, 1562, he sent to Knox a writing, consisting of eighty-three questions upon the principal topics of dispute between the Papists and Protestants, which he had drawn up in the name of the inferior clergy and laity of the Catholic persuasion in Scotland. To some of these, particularly the questions which related to the call of the Protestant mini-

* The dispute was never resumed, though Knox says he applied to the Privy Council for liberty to the abbot to come to Edinburgh with that view. The abbot died anno 1564. Crawford says, that he was canonized as a saint. *Peerage of Scotland*, p. 75. I do not, however, perceive his name in the calendar among the Scots saints; but what is of as great consequence, I find that the grand argument which he so zealously supported has been canonized. For in a calendar drawn up by "M. Adam King, professeur of philosophie and mathematikis at Paris," prefixed to a Scots translation of Canisius's Catechism, anno 1587, it is written: "Marche 25. Melchisedec sacrefeit breid and wyne in figure of ye body and bloud of our lord, whilk is offerit in ye messe." Doubtless, those who knew the

very month and day on which this happened, must have been better acquainted with the design of Melchisedek, and with the whole transaction, than Moses.

† Knox gives merely a general notice of this disputation in his *Historie*, p. 318. Keith, who was very industrious in collecting whatever referred to the ecclesiastical history of that period, could not obtain a copy of the printed disputation, and never heard of but one imperfect copy. *History*, App. 255. The only copy known to exist is in the library of Alexander Boswell Esq. of Auchinleck, who very politely allowed me to peruse it. Mr. Boswell lately caused to be printed a small impression of this unique, for the gratification of the curious.

sters, the Reformer returned an answer from the pulpit, and Wingate addressed several letters to him, complaining that his answers were not satisfactory. These letters, with addresses to the Queen, nobility, bishops, and magistrates of Edinburgh, Wingate committed to the press, but the impression being seized in the printer's house, (according to Bishop Lesley) the author escaped and went to the Continent,* Knox intended to publish an answer to Wingate's questions, and to defend the validity of the Protestant ministry; but it does not appear that he carried his intention into execution,†

In the beginning of 1563, Knox went to Jedburgh, by appointment of the General Assembly, to investigate a scandal which had broken out against Paul Methven, the minister of that place, who was suspected of adultery. The accused was found guilty, and excommunicated.‡ He fled to England, but having afterwards written a letter to the General Assembly, and offered to submit to the discipline of the Church, a severe and humiliating course of public repentance was prescribed to him. He was ordered to appear at the church-door of Edinburgh, when the second bell rang for public worship, clad in sackcloth, bare-headed and barefooted; to stand there until the prayer and psalms were finished; when he was brought into the church to hear sermon, during which he was to be "placeit in the public spectackell above the peiple." This appearance he was to make on three several preaching-days; and on the last of them, being a Sabbath, he was, at the close of the sermon, to profess his sorrow before the congregation, and to request their forgiveness; upon which he was again

* Lesley, apud Keith, p. 501. App. 203. Lesley speaks of a dispute between Knox and Wingate, but that historian is often incorrect in his details. The dispute between the doctors of Aberdeen and the ministers, which took place in the beginning of 1561, is mentioned by Knox, *Historie*, pp. 261, 262. It would seem from a letter of Randolph, that there was a dispute in the end of 1561, between some of the ministers and a Parisian divine, who had come over with the Queen, Keith, 208. Wingate published at Antwerp his "*Buke of Fourscoir Three Questionis*," anno 1563. Keith has reprinted this, and also his "*Tractatis*," originally printed at Edinburgh. He calls them "very rare and much noted pieces." *History*, App. 203. In point

of argument or sentiment they are not noted; but they contain a strong testimony in support of the extreme corruption which prevailed among the superior Popish clergy, against which Wingate inveighs as keenly as any Reformer. His second book concludes with this exclamation, "Och for mair paper or penyis!" It is not improbable that he was the translator of some of the works of the Fathers into the Scottish language, which are mentioned by him. Keith, App. 226, 227. He was made abbot of a Scots monastery at Ratisbon. Mackenzie's *Lives*, vol. iii. p. 149.

† See Note L.—Period Sixth.

‡ Knox, *Historie*, pp. 323, 324. Keith, 522.

to be “clad in his awin apparell,” and received into the communion of the Church. He was to repeat this course at Dundee and at Jedburgh, where he had officiated as minister. Methven went through a part of this discipline, with professions of deep sorrow; but overwhelmed with shame, or despairing to regain his lost reputation, he stopped in the midst of it, and again retired to England.* Prudential considerations were not wanting to induce the Reformed Church of Scotland to stifle this fama, and screen from public ignominy a man who had acted a distinguished part in the late Reformation of religion. But they refused to listen to these; and by instituting a strict scrutiny into the fact, and inflicting an exemplary punishment upon the criminal, they “approved themselves to be clear in this matter,” and effectually shut the mouths of their Popish adversaries.†

The mode of public repentance enjoined on this occasion, was appointed to be afterwards used in all cases of aggravated immorality.‡ There was nothing in which the Scottish Reformers approached nearer to the primitive Church, than in the rigorous and impartial exercise of ecclesiastical discipline, the relaxation of which, under the Papacy, they justly regarded as one great cause of the universal corruption of religion. While they rejected many of the ceremonies in worship, which were used by the Christians during the first three centuries after the time

* It was in the year 1564, that he returned and professed his submission to discipline. Keith, p. 558.

† The following is the deliverance of the Assembly on this case. “Session Third, December 27, 1564.—Anent the supplication presented to the Assembly in name of Paull Methven, and touching diverse petitions therein contained, wherewith the said Assembly being well and rypellie advysed, and after long reasoning had therein, with mature deliberation, gave their answer as follows:—

Anent his receaving to repentance, the haill Assembly are content to receive the said Paull to repentance, presentand him personallie before them, declareing evident signes of unfained repentance, willing to obey sic injunctions as the Kirk shall please to appoint him to doe and fulfill.

Touching his desyre to delate his proces of their books, thereto the Clark can noways condescend, neither think they that sick ane petition can proceed from the Holy Ghost, seeing David, ane notable servant of God, es-

chewed not to write his owne offence to God's glory and his own confusione. Anent his admission to the ministrie within the realme, that was thought no wayes sufferable unto sic tyme as the memorie of his former impietie be more deeplie buried, and some notable Kirk within this realme make earnest request for his new acceptation; and likewise the Kirk signifies unto him, that his entry in the ministrie in the parts of England, he being excommunicat and unreconciled, hes grevously offended them; as also the last part of his writeing, where he akcuses false witnesses, who hes deponed no other thing in effect nor he hes confessed with his mouth in write. Farder, the Assembly required the brethren to whom the said Paull hes written, that amongst uthers their answers they signifie unto him that he may safelie repare toward this realme, notwithstanding lately proclaimed against adulterers. Booke of the Universall Kirk, Peterkin's Edit. p. 26, 27.

‡ See Note M.—Period Sixth.

of the Apostles ; they, from detestation of vice, and a desire to restrain it, did not scruple to conform to a number of their penitentiary regulations. In some instances they might carry their rigour against offenders to an extreme ; but it was a virtuous extreme, compared with the dangerous laxity, or rather total disuse of discipline, which has gradually crept into almost all the churches which retain the name of Reformed : even as the scrupulous delicacy with which our forefathers shunned the society of those who had transgressed the rules of morality, is to be preferred to modern manners, by which the virtuous and vicious are equally admitted to *good* and virtuous company.

In the month of May, the Queen sent for Knox to Lochleven. The Popish priests, presuming upon her avowed partiality to them, and secret promises of protection, had of late become more bold, and during the late Easter, masses had been openly celebrated in the different parts of the kingdom. The Queen in council had issued various proclamations against this, but as the execution had hitherto been left to her, nothing had followed upon them. The Protestants of the west, who were the most zealous, perceiving that the laws were eluded, resolved to execute them, without making any application to the Court, and apprehended some of the offenders by way of example. These decided proceedings highly offended the Queen, as they were calculated to defeat the scheme of policy which she had formed ; but finding that the signification of her displeasure had not the effect of stopping them, she wished to avail herself of the Reformer's influence for accomplishing her purpose.

She dealt with him very earnestly, for two hours before supper, to persuade the western gentlemen to desist from all interruption of the Catholic worship. He told her Majesty, that if she would exercise her authority in executing the laws of the land, he could promise for the peaceable behaviour of the Protestants ; but if her Majesty thought to elude them, he feared there were some who would let the Papists understand that they should not offend with impunity. “ Will ye allow, that they shall take *my* sword in their hands ? ” said the Queen. “ The sword of justice

is *God's*," replied the Reformer with equal firmness, "and is given to princes and rulers for one end, which, if they transgress, sparing the wicked and oppressing the innocent, they who, in the fear of God, execute judgment where God has commanded, offend not God, although kings do it not." He added, that the gentlemen of the west were acting strictly according to law; for the act of Parliament gave power to all judges within their bounds, to search for and punish those who should transgress its enactments. He concluded with advising her Majesty to consider the terms of the mutual contract between her and her subjects, and that she could not expect to receive obedience from them, if she did not grant unto them protection, and the execution of justice. The Queen broke off the conversation with evident marks of displeasure.

Having communicated what had passed between them to the Earl of Murray, (which was the title now conferred on the Prior of St. Andrew's,) Knox meant to return to Edinburgh next day, without waiting for any further communication with the Queen. But a message was delivered him early in the morning, desiring him not to depart until he had again spoken to her Majesty. He accordingly met with her near Kinross, where she took the amusement of hawking. This interview was very different from that of the preceding evening. Waiving entirely the subject on which they had differed, she introduced a variety of topics, upon which she conversed with the greatest familiarity and apparent confidence. "Lord Ruthven," she said, "had offered her a ring; but she could not love him. She knew that he used enchantment;* and yet he was made one of her Privy Council. Lethington, she blamed as the sole cause of that appointment." Knox, however, refrained from saying any thing of the secretary in his absence. "I understand," said she, introducing another subject of discourse, "that ye are appointed to go to Dumfries, for the election of a superintendent to be established in these countries." He answered in the affirmative. "But I understand the Bishop of Athens† would be superintendent." "He is one,

* Comp. Knox, *Historie*, 327, with Keith, App. 125.

† The Bishop of Galloway is the person meant. He was Alexander Gordon, brother

madam, that is put in election.”—“If you knew him as well as I do, you would not promote him to that office, nor yet to any other within your kirk.” Knox said that the bishop deceived many more than him, if he did not fear God. “Well, do as you will; but that man is a dangerous man.”

When Knox was about to take his leave of her Majesty, she pressed him to stay. “I have one of the greatest matters that have touched me since I came into this realm to open to you, and I must have your help in it,” said she, with an air of condescension and confidence as enchanting as if she had put a ring on his finger. She then entered into a long discourse concerning a domestic difference between the Earl and Countess of Argyle. “Her ladyship had not,” she said, “been so circumspect in every thing as she could have wished, but still she was of opinion that his lordship had not treated her in an honest and godly manner.” Knox said that he was not unacquainted with the disagreeable variance which had subsisted between that honourable couple, and before her Majesty’s arrival in this country, he had effected a reconciliation. On that occasion, the countess had promised not to complain to any creature, before acquainting him; and as he had never heard from her, he concluded that there was nothing but concord between them. “Well,” said the Queen, “it is worse than ye believe. But do this much, for my sake, as once again to put them at unity, and if she behave not herself as she ought to do, she shall find no favour of me; but in any wise let not my Lord know that I have requested you in this matter.” Then introducing the subject of their reasoning on the preceding evening, she said, “I promise to do as ye required: I shall cause summon all offenders; and ye shall know that I shall minister justice.”—“I am assured then,” said he, “that ye shall please God, and enjoy rest and tranquillity within your realm, which to your Majesty is more profitable than all the Pope’s power can be.” Upon this he took his leave of the Queen.*

to the Earl of Huntly, and for a short time filled the different Sees of Caithness, Glasgow, the Isles, and Galloway. After being deprived of Glasgow, he was created titular Archbishop of Athens by the Pope. It is printed

‘Cathenis,’ by mistake, instead of ‘Athenis,’ in Knox’s *Historie*, p. 327. Keith, pp. 128, 153, 175. Gordon’s *General Hist. of the Earldom of Sutherland*, pp. 112, 137.

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 326-328.

This interview strikingly exhibits one part of Queen Mary's character. It shews how far she was capable of dissembling, what artifice she could employ, and what condescensions she could make, in order to accomplish the schemes upon which she was bent. She had previously attacked the Reformer on another quarter, without success ; she now resolved to try if she could soothe his stern temper by flattering his vanity, and disarm his jealousy by strong marks of confidence. There is some reason to think that she partly succeeded in her design. For though he was not very susceptible of flattery, and must have been struck with the sudden change in the Queen's views and behaviour, there are few minds that can altogether resist the impression made by the condescending familiarity of persons of superior rank ; and our feelings, on such occasions, chide as uncharitable the cold suspicions suggested by our judgment. In obedience to her Majesty's request, he wrote a letter to the Earl of Argyle, which was not very pleasing to that nobleman. From deference to the opinion which she had expressed of the Bishop of Galloway, he inquired more narrowly into his conduct, and postponed the election ; and the report which he gave of the Queen's gracious answer operated in her favour on the public mind.

But if his zeal suffered a temporary intermission, it soon rekindled with fresh ardour. On the 19th of May, the Archbishop of St. Andrew's and a number of the principal Papists were arraigned, by the Queen's orders, before the Lord Justice-General, for transgressing the laws ; and having come in her Majesty's will, were committed to ward.* But this was merely a stroke of policy, to enable her more easily to carry her measures in the Parliament which met on the following day ; and accordingly the Archbishop and his fellow delinquents were set at liberty, as soon as it was dissolved.

This was the first Parliament which had met since the Queen's arrival in Scotland ; and it was natural to expect

* On the 19th of May, a few days before the meeting of Parliament, the Bishop of St. Andrew's, the Prior of Whithorn, the Parson of Sanquhar, and other Papists, were arraigned

before Argyle, the Justice-General, for the crime of celebrating mass ; and having pleaded guilty, were subjected to a temporary imprisonment.—*Tytler's Hist.* vi. p. 327.

that they would proceed to ratify the treaty of peace made in July 1560, and the establishment of the Protestant religion. If the acts of the former Parliament were invalid, as the Queen had repeatedly declared, the Protestants had no law on their side ; they held their religion at the mercy of their sovereign, and might be required, at her pleasure, to submit to Popery, as the religion which still possessed the legal establishment. But so well had she laid her plans, such was the effect of her insinuating address, and above all, so powerful was the temptation of self-interest on the minds of the Protestant leaders, that by general consent they passed from this demand, and lost the only favourable opportunity, during the reign of Mary, for giving a legal security to the Reformed religion, and thereby removing one principal source of jealousy and apprehension on the part of the nation. An act of oblivion, securing indemnity to those who had been engaged in the late civil war, was indeed passed ; but the mode of its enactment virtually implied the invalidity of the treaty in which it had been originally embodied ; and the Protestants, on their bended knees, supplicated as a boon from their sovereign, what they had formerly won with their swords, and repeatedly demanded as their right.* The other acts made to please the more zealous Reformers, were expressed with such studied and glaring ambiguity as to offer an insult to their understandings.†

Our Reformer was thunderstruck when first informed of the measures which were in agitation, and could scarcely believe them serious. He immediately procured an interview with some of the principal members of Parliament, to whom he represented the danger of allowing that meeting to dissolve without obtaining the ratification of the acts of the preceding Parliament, or at least those acts which established the Reformation. They alleged that the Queen would never have agreed to call this meeting, if they had persisted in these demands ; but there was a prospect of her speedy marriage, and on that occasion they would obtain all their wishes. In vain he reminded them, that poets

* Spotswood, 188. " We are very much obliged to the information of Archbishop Spotswood for this," says Keith. History, 240.

† Knox, 331. Keith, 240.

and painters had represented *Occasion* with a bald hind-head; in vain he urged, that the event to which they looked forward would be accompanied with difficulties of its own, which would require all their skill and circumspection. Their determination was fixed. He now perceived the full extent of the Queen's dissimulation; and the selfishness and servility of the Protestant leaders affected him deeply.

So hot was the altercation between the Earl of Murray and him on this subject, that an open rupture ensued. He had long looked upon that nobleman as one of the most steady and sincere adherents to the Reformed cause; and therefore felt the greater disappointment at his conduct. Under his first irritation he wrote a letter to the Earl, in which, after reminding him of his condition at the time when they first became acquainted in London,* and the honours to which Providence had now raised him, he solemnly renounced friendship with him as one who preferred his own interest and the pleasure of his sister to the advancement of religion, left him to the guidance of the new counsellors which he had chosen, and exonerated him from all future concern in his affairs. This variance, which continued nearly two years, was very gratifying to the Queen and others, who disliked their former familiarity, and failed not (as Knox informs us) to "cast oil into the flame, until God did quench it by the water of affliction."†

Before the dissolution of the Parliament, the Reformer embraced an opportunity of disburdening his mind in the presence of the greater part of the members assembled in his church. After discoursing of the great mercy of God shewn to Scotland, in marvellously delivering them from bondage of soul and body, and of the deep ingratitude which

* I have not been able to ascertain the time at which the Earl of Murray and the Reformer first became acquainted. It was probably soon after Knox came into England, in the reign of Edward VI. A Popish writer has mentioned their meeting, and grafted upon it the calumny, current among the party, that the Earl had formed the ambitious project of wresting the crown from his sister, and placing it on his own head. "Johann Knox deceavit him," says he, "in S. Paules kirk in Londone, bringand him in consait, that God had chosin him extraordinarilie as ane Josias

to be King of Scotland, to rute out idolatrie, and to plant the licht of his new evangel: quhair thay convenit in this manner, That the prior of Sanct Androis, erl of Murray, sould mentene the new Elias aganis the priestis of Baal, (for sua blasphemuslie he namit the priestes of Christ Jesus.) And the neu Elias sould fortifie the new Josias, be procuring the favour of the people aganis Jesabel, blaspheming maist impudentlie the quenis M." Nicol Burne's Disputation, p. 156.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 331. See Note N.—Period Sixth.

he perceived in all ranks of persons, he addressed himself particularly to the nobility. He praised God that he had an opportunity of pouring out the sorrows of his heart in their presence, who could attest the truth of all that he had spoken. He appealed to their consciences if he had not, in their greatest extremities, exhorted them to depend upon God; and assured them of preservation and victory, if they preferred his glory to their own lives and secular interests. "I have been with you in your most desperate temptations," continued he, in a strain of empassioned eloquence: "in your most extreme dangers I have been with you. St. Johnston, Cupar Moor, and the Craggs of Edinburgh, are yet recent in my heart; yea, that dark and dolorous night wherein all ye, my lords, with shame and fear, left this town, is yet in my mind, and God forbid that ever I forget it! What was, I say, my exhortation to you, and what has fallen in vain of all that ever God promised unto you by my mouth, ye yourselves yet live to testify. There is not one of you against whom was death and destruction threatened perished; and how many of your enemies has God plagued before your eyes? Shall this be the thankfulness that ye shall render unto your God? To betray his cause, when ye have it in your hands to establish it as you please? He saw nothing (he said) but a cowardly desertion of Christ's standard. Some had even the effrontery to say that they had neither law nor Parliament for their religion. They had the authority of God for their religion, the truth of which was independent of human laws; but it was also accepted within this realm in public Parliament; and that Parliament he would maintain to have been as lawful as any ever held in the kingdom of Scotland."

In the conclusion of his discourse, he adverted to the reports of her Majesty's marriage, and the princes who courted this alliance; and (desiring the audience to mark his words) predicted the consequences which were to be dreaded, if ever the nobility consented that their sovereign should marry a Papist. "And now, my Lords," he concluded, "to put an end to all, I hear of the Queen's marriage—Dukes, brethren to Emperors and Kings, strive all for the best gain. But this, my Lords, will I say, note the

day, and bear witness hereafter. Whenever the nobility of Scotland, who profess the Lord Jesus, consent that an infidel (and all Papists are infidels) shall be head to our Sovereign, ye do as far as in you lieth to banish Christ Jesus from this realm, and to bring God's vengeance on the country."

Protestants as well as Papists were offended with the freedom of this sermon; and some who had been most familiar with the preacher, now shunned his company. Flatterers were not awanting to run to the Queen, and inform her that John Knox had preached against her marriage. After surmounting the opposition to her measures, and managing so successfully the haughty and independent barons of her kingdom, Mary was incensed to think that there should yet be one man of obscure condition, who ventured to condemn her proceedings; and as she could not tame his stubbornness, she determined to punish his temerity. Knox was ordered instantly to appear before her. Lord Ochiltree, with several gentlemen, accompanied him to the palace; but the Superintendent of Angus alone was allowed to go with him into the royal presence.

Her Majesty received him in a very different manner from what she had done at Lochleven. Never had prince been handled (she passionately exclaimed) as she was: she had borne with him in all his rigorous speeches against herself and her uncles; she had sought his favour by all means; she had offered unto him audience whenever he pleased to admonish her. "And yet," said she, "I cannot be quit of you. I vow to God I shall be once revenged." On pronouncing these words with great violence, she burst into a flood of tears which interrupted her speech. When the Queen had composed herself, he proceeded calmly to make his defence. Her Grace and he had (he said) at different times been engaged in controversy, and he never before perceived her offended with him. When it should please God to deliver her from the bondage of error, in which she had been trained through want of instruction in the truth, he trusted that her Majesty would not find the liberty of his tongue offensive. Out of the pulpit, he thought, few had occasion to be offended with

him ; but there he was not master of himself, but bound to obey Him who commanded him to speak plainly, and to flatter no flesh on the face of the earth.

“ But what have you to do with my marriage ? ” said the Queen. He was proceeding to state the extent of his commission as a preacher, and the reasons which led him to touch on that delicate subject ; but she interrupted him by repeating her question ; “ What have ye to do with my marriage ? Or what are *you* in this commonwealth ? ” — “ A subject born within the same, madam,” replied the Reformer, piqued by the last question, and the contemptuous tone in which it was proposed. “ And albeit I be neither earl, lord, nor baron in it, yet has God made me (how abject that ever I be in your eyes) a profitable member within the same. Yea, madam, to me it appertains no less to forewarn of such things as may hurt it, if I forsee them, than it doth to any of the nobility ; for both my vocation and conscience requires plainness of me. And therefore, madam, to yourself I say that which I spake in public place : Whensoever the nobility of this realm shall consent that ye be subject to an unfaithful husband, they do as much as in them lieth to renounce Christ, to banish his truth from them, to betray the freedom of this realm, and perchance shall in the end do small comfort to yourself.” At these words, the Queen began again to weep and sob with great bitterness. The superintendent, who was a man of mild and gentle spirit, tried to mitigate her grief and resentment : he praised her beauty and her accomplishments ; and told her, that there was not a prince in Europe who would not reckon himself happy in gaining her hand. During this scene, the severe and inflexible mind of the Reformer displayed itself. He continued silent, and with unaltered countenance, until the Queen had given vent to her feelings. He then protested, that he never took delight in the distress of any creature ; it was with great difficulty that he could see his own boys weep when he corrected them for their faults, far less could he rejoice in her Majesty’s tears : but seeing he had given her no just reason of offence, and had only discharged his duty, he was constrained, though un-

willingly, to sustain her tears, rather than hurt his conscience, and betray the commonwealth through his silence.

This apology inflamed the Queen still more : she ordered him immediately to leave her presence, and wait the signification of her pleasure in the adjoining room. There he stood as “one whom men had never seen ;” all his friends (Lord Ochiltree excepted) being afraid to shew him the smallest countenance. In this situation he addressed himself to the court-ladies, who sat in their richest dress in the chamber. “O fair ladies, how plesing war this lyfe of yours, if it sould ever abyde, and then, in the end, that we might pas to hevin with all this gay gear ! But fye upon that knave death, that will come whidder we will or not !” Having engaged them in a conversation, he passed the time till Erskine came and informed him, that he was allowed to go home until her Majesty had taken further advice. The Queen insisted to have the judgment of the Lords of Articles, whether the words he had used in the pulpit were not actionable ; but she was persuaded to desist from a prosecution. “And so that storme quietit in appearance, bot nevir in the hart.”*

No expressions are sufficiently strong to describe the horror which many feel at the monstrous insensibility and inhumanity of Knox, in remaining unmoved, while “youth, beauty, and royal dignity”† were dissolved in tears before him. Enchanting, surely, must the charms of the Queen of Scots have been, and iron-hearted the Reformer, who could resist their impression, when they continue to this day to exercise such a sway over the hearts of men, that even grave and serious authors, not addicted to the language of gallantry and romance, can protest that they cannot read of the tears which she shed on this occasion, without feeling an inclination to weep along with her. There may be some, however, who, knowing how much real misery there is in this world, are not disposed to waste their feelings unnecessarily, and who are of opinion, that there was not much to commiserate in the condition of the Queen, nor to reprobate in the conduct of the Reformer. Considering that she had been so fortunate in her measures,

* *Knox, Historie*, p. 332-334.

† See Note O.—Period Sixth.

and found her nobility so ready to gratify her wishes, the passion by which she suffered herself to be transported was extravagant, and her tears must have been those of anger and not of grief. On the other hand, when we consider that Knox was at this time deserted by his friends, and stood almost alone in resisting the will of a princess, who accomplished her measures chiefly by caresses and tears, we may be disposed to form a more favourable idea of his conduct and motives. We behold not, indeed, the enthusiastic lover, mingling his tears with those of his mistress, and vowing to revenge her wrongs ; nor the man of nice sensibility, who loses every other consideration in the gratification of his feelings ; but we behold what is more rare, the stern patriot, the rigid Reformer, who, in the discharge of his duty, and in a public cause, can withstand the tide of tenderness as well as the storm of passion. There have been times when such conduct was regarded as the proof of a superior mind ; and the man who, from such motives, “ hearkened not to the wife of his bosom, nor knew his own children,” has been the object not of censure, but admiration, in Sacred * as well as Pagan story.†

When Knox lay under the displeasure of the Court, and had lost the confidence of his principal friends, his enemies judged it a favourable opportunity for attacking him in (what was universally allowed to be irreproachable) his moral conduct. At the very time that he was engaged in scrutinizing the scandal against Methven, and inflicting upon him the highest censure of the Church, it was alleged that he himself was guilty of a similar crime. Euphemia Dundas, an inhabitant of Edinburgh, inveighing one day in the presence of a circle of her acquaintances, against the Protestant doctrine and ministers, said among other things, that John Knox had been a common whoremonger all his days, and that, within a few days past, he “ was apprehendit and tane furth of ane killogye with ane common hure.” This might perhaps have been passed over by Knox and the Church as an effusion of Popish spleen or female scandal ;

* Deut. xxxiii. 9.

† Fertur pudicæ conjugis osculum,
Parvosque natos, ut captis minor,

Ab se removisse, et virilem

Torvus humi pusuisse vultum.

Hor. lib. iii. Od. v.

but the recent occurrence at Jedburgh, the situation in which the Reformer at present stood, the public manner in which the charge had been brought, and the specification of a particular instance, seemed to them to justify and call for a legal prosecution. Accordingly, the clerk of the General Assembly, on the 18th of June, gave in a formal representation and petition to the Town Council, praying that the woman might be called before them, and the matter examined; that, if the accusation was found true, the accused might be punished with all rigour without partiality; and that, if false, the accuser might be dealt with according to the demerit of her offence. She was called, and appearing before the Council, “flatly refused” that she had ever used any such words; although Knox’s procurator afterwards produced respectable witnesses to prove that she had spoken them.*

This convicted calumny, which never gained the smallest credit at the time, would scarcely have deserved notice, had it not been revived, after the Reformer’s death, by the Popish writers, who, having caught hold of the report, and dressed it out in all the horrid colours which malice or credulity could suggest, circulated it industriously, by their publications, through the Continent. Though I had not been able to trace these slanders to their source, the atrocity of the imputed crimes, the unspotted reputation which the accused uniformly maintained among all his contemporaries, the glaring self-contradictions of the accusers, and above all, the notorious spirit of slander and wanton defamation for which they have long been stigmatized in the learned world, would have been grounds sufficient for rejecting such charges with detestation. Those who are acquainted with the writings of that period, will not think that I speak too strongly; those who are not, may be in some degree satisfied as to this, by looking into the notes.†

The Queen flattered herself that she had at last caught the Reformer in an offence, which would infallibly subject him to exemplary punishment. During her residence at Stirling, in the month of August, the domestics whom she left

* See Note P.—Period Sixth.

† See Note Q.—Period Sixth.

behind her in Holyrood House, celebrated the Popish worship with greater publicity than had been usual when she herself was present; and at the time when the sacrament of the supper was dispensed in Edinburgh, they revived certain superstitious practices which had been laid aside by the Roman Catholics, since the establishment of the Reformation. This boldness offended the Protestants, and some of them went down to the palace to mark the inhabitants who repaired to the service. Perceiving numbers entering, they burst into the chapel, and presenting themselves at the altar, which was prepared for mass, asked the priest, how he durst be so *malapert* as to proceed in that manner, when the Queen was absent? Alarmed at this intrusion, the mistress of the household dispatched a messenger to the comptroller, (who was attending sermon in St. Giles's church,) desiring him to come instantly to save her life and the palace. Having hurried down, accompanied with the magistrates, and a guard, the comptroller found every thing quiet and no appearance of tumult, except what was occasioned by the company which he brought along with him.*

When the report of this affair was conveyed to the Queen, she declared her resolution not to return to Edinburgh unless this riot was punished, and indicted two of the Protestants, who had been most active, to stand trial "for forethought, felony, hamesuckin, and invasion of the palace." Fearing that she intended to proceed to extremities against these men, and that their condemnation was a preparative to some hostile attempts against their religion, the Protestants in Edinburgh resolved that Knox, agreeably to a commission which he had received from the Church, should write a circular letter to the principal gentlemen of their persuasion, informing them of the circum-

* Spotswood gives a different account of this affair, which has been adopted by different writers. He not only says that the Protestants "forced the gates;" but that "some [of the Papists] were taken and carried to prison, many escaped the back way with the priest himself." History, p. 188. But he could not have the opportunity of being so well acquainted with the circumstances as Knox, whose account is totally irreconcilable with the Arch-

bishop's. He expressly says, that besides bursting into the chapel, and addressing the priest as above-mentioned, "no farther was done or said." Historie, pp. 335, 336. Had some of the Papists been carried to prison, he never could have given such an account as he did, not only in his history, but also in his circular letter, which was produced at his trial, without any contradiction on this head.

stances, and requesting their presence on the day of trial. He wrote the letter according to their request.* A copy of it having come into the hands of Sinclair, Bishop of Ross, and President of the Court of Session, who was a great personal enemy to Knox, he conveyed it immediately to the Queen at Stirling. She communicated it to the Privy Council, who, to her great satisfaction, pronounced it treasonable; but to give the greater solemnity to the proceedings, it was resolved that an extraordinary convention of the counsellors and other noblemen should be called to meet at Edinburgh, in the end of December, to try the cause. The Reformer was summoned to appear before this convention.†

Previous to the day of trial, great influence was used in private, to persuade or intimidate him to acknowledge a fault, and throw himself on the Queen's mercy. This he peremptorily refused to do. The master of Maxwell, (afterwards Lord Herries,) with whom he had long been very intimate, threatened him with the loss of his friendship, and told him that he would repent, if he did not submit to the Queen, for men would not bear with him as they had hitherto done. He replied, that he did not understand such language; he had never opposed her Majesty except in the article of religion, and surely it was not meant that he should bow to her in that matter; if God stood by him, (which he would do as long as he confided in him, and preferred His glory to his own life,) he regarded little how men should behave towards him; nor did he know wherein they had borne with him, unless in hearing the word of God from his mouth, which if they should reject, he would mourn for them, but the danger would be their own.

The Earl of Murray, and Secretary Maitland, sent for him to the Clerk Register's House, and had a long conversation with him to the same purpose, They represented

* Knox, *Historie*, pp. 336, 337.

† It has been doubted whether this convention acted as a court of judicature in Knox's trial, or met merely to determine whether he should be brought to a judicial trial. Dalrymple's *Cursory Remarks*, prefixed to *Scottish Poems*, vol. i. 72. It is evident that it was not an ordinary or proper meeting of the Privy Council.

The Queen's object appears to have been to obtain the imprisonment of Knox in the first place, after which she might proceed against him as she might think expedient. The justice-general, the lord advocate, and the other law lords were present. Knox, *Historie*, pp. 339, 340.

the pains which they had taken to mitigate the Queen's resentment, and that nothing could save him but a timely submission. He returned the same answer that he gave to the Master of Maxwell, that he never would confess a fault when he was conscious of none, and had not learned to cry treason at every thing which the multitude called treason, nor to fear what they feared. The wily Secretary endeavoured to bring on a dispute on the subject, and to draw from him the defence which he meant to make for himself; but Knox, aware of his craft, declined the conversation, and told him it would be foolish to intrust with his defences one who had already prejudged his cause.

On the day appointed for the trial, the public anxiety was greatly raised, and the palace-yard with all the avenues was crowded with people, who waited to learn the result. The pannel was conducted to the chamber in which the Lords were already assembled, and engaged in consultation. When the Queen had taken her seat, and perceived Knox standing uncovered at the foot of the table, she burst into a loud fit of laughter. "That man," she said, "had made her weep, and shed never a tear himself: she would now see if she could make him weep." The Secretary opened the proceedings, by stating, in a speech addressed to the Reformer, the reasons why the Queen had convened him before her nobility. "Let him acknowledge his own handwriting," said the Queen, "and then we shall judge of the contents of the letter." A copy of the circular letter being handed to him, he looked at the subscription, and said that it was his; and though he had subscribed a number of blanks, he had such confidence in the fidelity of the scribe, that he was ready to acknowledge both the subscription and the contents. "You have done more than I would have done," said Maitland. "Charity is not suspicious," replied the other. "Well, well," said the Queen, "read your own letter, and then answer to such things as shall be demanded of you."—"I will do the best I can," said he; and having read the letter with an audible voice, returned it to the Queen's advocate, who was commanded to accuse him.

"Heard you ever, my lords, a more despiteful and trea-

sonable letter?" said the Queen, looking round the table.

"Mr Knox, are you not sorry from your heart, and do you not repent that such a letter has passed your pen, and from you has come to the knowledge of others?" said Maitland.

"My Lord Secretary, before I repent I must be taught my offence."—"Offence! if there were no more but the

convocation of the Queen's lieges, the offence cannot be denied."—"Remember yourself, my Lord, there is a dif-

ference between a lawful convocation and an unlawful. If I have been guilty in this, I offended oft since I came last

into Scotland; for what convocation of the brethren has ever been to this hour, unto which my pen served not?"—

"Then was then, and now is now," said the Secretary;

"we have no need of such convocations as sometimes we have had."—"The time that has been is even now before

my eyes," rejoined the Reformer; "for I see the poor flock in no less danger than it has been at any time before, ex-

cept that the devil has got a vizor upon his face. Before, he came in with his own face, discovered by open tyranny,

seeking the destruction of all that refused idolatry; and then, I think, you will confess the brethren lawfully assem-

bled themselves for defence of their lives: and now, the devil comes under the cloak of justice, to do that which

God would not suffer him to do by strength."

"What is this?" interrupted her Majesty, who was offended that the pannel should be allowed such liberty of

speech, and thought that she could bring him more closely to the question. "What is this? Methinks you trifle with

him. Who gave him authority to make convocation of my lieges? Is not that treason?"—"No, madam," replied

Lord Ruthven, displeased at the active keenness which the Queen shewed in the cause; "for he makes convocation

of the people to hear prayer and sermon almost daily; and whatever your Grace or others will think thereof, we think

it no treason."—"Hold your peace," said the Queen;

"and let him answer for himself."—"I began, madam," resumed Knox, "to reason with the Secretary, (whom I

take to be a better dialectician than your Grace,) that all convocations are not unlawful; and my Lord Ruthven has

given the instance."—"I will say nothing against your

religion, nor against your convening to your sermons ; but what authority have you to convocate my subjects when you will, without my commandment ?” He answered, that at his own will he had never convened four persons in Scotland, but at the orders of his brethren he had given many advertisements, and great multitudes had assembled ; and if her Grace complained that this had been done without her command, he would answer, that so was all that had been done as to the reformation of religion in this kingdom. He must, therefore, be convicted by a just law, before he would profess sorrow for what he had done : he thought he had done no wrong.

“ You shall not escape so,” said the Queen. “ Is it not treason, my Lords, to accuse a prince of *cruelty* ? I think there be acts of Parliament against such whisperers.” Several of their lordships said that there were such laws. “ But wherein can I be accused of this ?” inquired Knox. — “ Read this part of your own bill,” said the Queen, who shewed herself an acute prosecutor. She then caused the following sentence to be read from his letter :—“ This fearful summons is directed against them, [the two persons who were indicted,] to make no doubt a preparative on a few, that a door may be opened to execute *cruelty* upon a greater multitude.”—“ Lo !” exclaimed the Queen, exultingly ; “ what say you to that ?” The eyes of the assembly were fixed on the pannel, anxious to know what answer he would make to this charge.

“ Is it lawful for me, madam, to answer for myself ? or shall I be condemned unheard ?”—“ Say what you can ; for I think you have enough to do,” answered the Queen.—“ I will first then desire of your Grace, madam, and of this most honourable audience, whether your Grace knows not, that the obstinate Papists are deadly enemies to all such as profess the gospel of Jesus Christ, and that they most earnestly desire the extermination of them, and of the true doctrine that is taught within this realm ?”—The Queen was silent : but the Lords, with one voice, exclaimed, “ God forbid, that ever the lives of the faithful, or yet the staying of the doctrine stood in the power of the Papists ! for just experience has taught us what cruelty lies in their hearts.”

—“I must proceed then,” said the Reformer. “Seeing as I perceive that all will grant, that it were a barbarous thing to destroy such a multitude as profess the gospel of Christ within this realm, which oftener than once or twice they have attempted to do by force,—they, by God and by his providence being disappointed, have invented more crafty and dangerous practices, to wit, to make the prince a party under colour of law; and so what they could not do by open force, they shall perform by crafty deceit. For who thinks, my Lords, that the insatiable cruelty of the Papists, (within this realm I mean,) shall end in the murdering of these two brethren, now unjustly summoned, and more unjustly to be accused?—And therefore, madam, cast up, when you list, the acts of your Parliament; I have offended nothing against them; for I accuse not, in my letter, your Grace, nor yet your nature, of cruelty. But I affirm yet again, that the pestilent Papists, who have inflamed your Grace against those poor men at this present, are the sons of the devil, and therefore must obey the desires of their father, who has been a liar and manslayer from the beginning.”—“You forget yourself! you are not now in the pulpit,” said one of the lords. “I am in the place where I am demanded of conscience to speak the truth; and therefore the truth I speak, impugn it whoso list.” He added, again addressing the Queen, “that persons who appeared to be of honest, gentle, and meek natures, had often been corrupted by wicked counsel; that the Papists who had her ear were dangerous counsellors, and such her mother had found them to be.”

Mary perceiving that nothing was to be gained by reasoning, began to upbraid him with his harsh behaviour to her, at their last interview. He spake “fair enough” at present before the Lords, she said; but on that occasion he caused her to shed many salt tears, and said, “he set not by her weeping.” This drew from him a vindication of his conduct, in which he gave a narration of that conference. After this, the Secretary, having spoken with the Queen, told Knox that he was at liberty to return home for that night. “I thank God and the Queen’s Majesty,” said he, and withdrew.

When Knox had retired, the judgment of the nobility

was taken respecting his conduct. All of them, with the exception of the immediate dependents of the Court, voted that he was not guilty of any breach of the laws. The secretary, who had assured the Queen of his condemnation, was enraged at this decision. He brought her Majesty, who had retired before the vote, again into the room, and proceeded to call the votes a second time in her presence. This attempt to overawe them, incensed the nobility. "What!" said they, "shall the laird of Lethington have power to control us? or shall the presence of a woman cause us to offend God, and to condemn an innocent man, against our consciences?" With this they repeated their votes, absolving him from all offence, and praising his modest appearance and judicious defences.

Mary was unable to conceal her mortification and displeasure, at this unexpected acquittal. When the Bishop of Ross, who had been the informer, gave his vote on the same side with the rest, she taunted him openly in the presence of the court. "Trouble not the child! I pray you trouble him not! for he is newly wakened out of his sleep. Why should not the old fool follow the footsteps of those that have passed before him?" The bishop replied coldly, that her Majesty might easily know that his vote was not influenced by partiality to the accused. "That nicht was nyther dancing nor fiddeling in the court; for madam was disappoynted of hir purpose, quhilk was to have had Johnne Knox in hir will, be vote of hir nobility."*

PERIOD VII.

FROM HIS ACQUITTAL FROM A CHARGE OF TREASON BY THE PRIVY COUNCIL, IN 1563, TO HIS BEING STRUCK WITH APOPLEXY, IN 1570.

THE indignation of the Queen at the Reformer's escape from punishment did not soon abate,† and the effects of it fell both upon the courtiers who had voted for his excul-

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 338-343. The account of the trial given by Calderwood, in his MS. has been compared with that of Knox, and exactly agrees with it. † Keith, 248, 251.

pation, and upon those who had opposed it. The Earl of Murray was among the former;* Maitland among the latter. In order to appease her, they again attempted to persuade Knox to condescend to some voluntary submission to her; and they engaged that all the punishment which should be inflicted on him, would be merely to go within the walls of the castle, and return again to his own house. But he refused to make any such compliances, by which he would throw discredit on the judgment of the nobility who had acquitted him, and confess himself to have been a mover of sedition. Disappointed in this, they endeavoured to injure him by whispers and detraction, circulating that he had no authority from his brethren for what he had done; and that he arrogated a Papal and arbitrary power over the Scottish Church, issuing his letters, and exacting obedience to them. These charges were very groundless and injurious; for there never was perhaps any one who had as much influence, that was so careful in avoiding all appearance of assuming superiority over his brethren, or acting by his own authority, in matters of public and common concern.

In the General Assembly which met in the close of this year, he declined taking any share in the debates. When their principal business was settled, he requested liberty to speak on an affair which concerned himself. He stated what he had done in writing the late circular letter, the proceedings to which it had given rise, and the surmises which were still circulated to his prejudice; and insisted that the Church should now examine his conduct in that matter, and particularly that they should declare whether or not they had given him a commission to advertise the brethren, when he foresaw any danger threatening their religion, or any difficult case which required their advice. The courtiers strenuously opposed the decision of this question; but it was taken up, and the Assembly, by a great majority, found that he had been burthened with such a

* In a letter of Randolph, 27th Feb. 1564, there is mention made of "some unkindness between Murray and the queen, about Knox, whose parte he [Murray] taketh." Keith, 249.

commission, and in the advertisement which he had lately given, had not gone beyond the bounds of his commission.*

Knox had remained a widower upwards of three years. But in March 1564, he contracted a second marriage with Margaret Stewart, daughter of Lord Ochiltree,† a nobleman of amiable dispositions, who had been long familiar with our Reformer, and steadily adhered to him when he was deserted by his other friends. She continued to discharge the duties of a wife to him, with pious and affectionate assiduity, until the time of his death. The Popish writers, who envied the honours of the Scottish Reformer, have represented this marriage as a proof of his great ambition; and in the excess of their spleen, have ridiculously imputed to him the project of aiming to raise his progeny to the throne of Scotland; because the family of Ochiltree were of the blood royal! They are quite clear, too, that he gained the heart of the young lady by means of sorcery, and the assistance of the devil. But it seems, that powerful as his black-footed second was, he could not succeed in another attempt which he had previously made; for the same writers inform us, that he had paid his addresses to the lady Fleming, eldest daughter to the Duke of Chastelherault, and was repulsed. The account of the appearance which he made at the time of his marriage, which shall be inserted in the notes, the reader will receive according to the degree of its probability, and the credit which he may think due to the authority upon which it rests.‡

The country continued in a state of quietness during the year 1564; but the same jealousies still subsisted between

* Keith, 527, 528. Knox, 344, 345. Randolph, in a letter to Cecil, 18th March, 1563 $\frac{3}{4}$, says: "Knox askt in church to be marryed to Margrett Steward, the daughter of the Lord Ochiltree," referring to the proclamation of banns. Keith, 251.

† Lord Ochiltree was descended from Robert, Duke of Albany, second son of King Robert II. His father exchanged the lands and title of Evandale for those of Ochiltree. Douglas's Peerage, 522. Crawford's Renfrew, and Royal House of Stewart, by Semple, part i. p. 92-94. The second son of Lord Ochiltree, and

brother-in-law of the Reformer, was Sir James Stewart of Bothwellmuir, afterwards the infamous favourite of James VI. who created him Earl of Arran. Crawford, in his Officers of State, (p. 448.) has published a protestation which he made of his lineage, and title of priority to the Duke of Lennox, his rival in James's favour. He was usually called the good Lord Ochiltree. Knox says, that he was "a man rather born to mak peace then to brag upoun the calsey." Historie, p. 304.

‡ See Note A.—Period Seventh.

the Court and the Church. Her Majesty's prejudices against the Reformed religion were unabated, and she maintained a correspondence with its sworn enemies on the Continent, which could not altogether escape the vigilance of her Protestant subjects.* The preachers, on their side, did not relax in their zealous warnings against Popery, and concerning the dangers which they apprehended; they complained of the beggary to which the greater part of their own number was reduced, and of the growing lukewarmness of the Protestant courtiers. The latter were uneasy under these reproaches, and in concert with the Queen, were anxious to restrain the license of the pulpit. They began by addressing themselves in private to some of the most moderate and complying of the ministers, whom they gained over by their persuasions to a partial approbation of their measures. Having in so far succeeded, they ventured to propose the matter more publicly, and to request the sanction of the leading members of the General Assembly.

Without designing to vindicate the latitude which might be taken by particular preachers at this time, I may say, in general, that a systematic attempt to restrain the liberty of speech in the pulpit, (farther than the correction of any occurring excess might require,) would have been a measure fraught with danger to the Protestant interest. The ministers were the most vigilant and incorrupt guardians of the public safety. Better it is to be awaked with rudeness, or even by a false alarm, than to be allowed to sleep on in the midst of dangers. Who would muzzle the mouth of the wakeful animal that guards the house against thieves, because the inhabitants are frequently disturbed by his nocturnal vociferation; or substitute in his place a "dumb

* Robertson's History of Scotland, vol. ii. 108. Lond. 1809. MS. Letters, (extracted from the Barberini Library.) Adv. Lib. A. 2. 11. In a letter to the Council of Trent, 18th March, 1563 $\frac{3}{4}$, Mary expresses her regret that the situation of her affairs (*hujus temporis tanta injuria*) did not permit her to send some of her prelates to that council; and assures them of her great and unalterable devotion to the Apostolic See, "*Nostra perpetua mente ac voluntate, in ejusdem sedis observantia*

et submissione." In a letter written Jan. 3, the same year, she entreats the Cardinal of Lorraine to assure the Pope of her resolution to live and die a Catholic. And on the last day of the same month, she writes to his Holiness himself, laments the damnable errors (*damnabili errori*) in which she found her subjects plunged, and informs him that her intention, from the time she had left France, had uniformly been to re-establish the ancient religion.

dog, that cannot bark, sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber?"

Knox, the freedom and sharpness of whose censures the courtiers felt most deeply, was the person whom they chiefly wished to restrain; but it was no easy matter either to overawe, or reason him into silence. In a conference which they demanded with the leading members of the General Assembly, in the month of June, this subject was discussed; and a long debate ensued between Maitland and Knox, on the principal points of his doctrine which gave offence to the court. This debate "admirably displays the talents and character of both the disputants; the acuteness of the former, embellished with learning, but prone to subtilty; the vigorous understanding of the latter, delighting in bold sentiments, and superior to all fear."* The dispute has been recorded at large by Knox in his History of the Reformation. After giving so full a view of some former disputes in which he was engaged, I must content myself with a brief account of the leading heads of the present.

There were two things which Maitland found fault with in the Reformer's public services; the mode in which he prayed for her Majesty, and the doctrine which he taught as to the authority of princes and duty of subjects. Prayers and tears, we have sometimes been reminded, are the only arms which Christians ought to employ against violence. But those who have deprived them of other weapons, have usually envied them the use of these also; and if their prayers have not been smoothed down to the temper of their adversaries, so as to become mere compliments to princes, under colour of an address to the Almighty, they have often been pronounced seditious and treasonable.†

Knox repeated his usual prayer for the Queen, and desired the Secretary to state what was faulty in it. "Ye pray for the Queen's Majesty with a condition," replied Maitland, "saying, 'Illuminate her heart, if thy good

* Dr. Robertson, *ut supra*, p. 109.

† During the reign of Mary of England, the manner in which the Protestants prayed for her, in their conventicles, was declared High Treason. Act Parl. 1 and 2 Philip and Mary,

cap. 9. Nor did the psalms and prayers of the primitive Christians escape punishment under the tolerant Emperor Julian. Works of the Rev. Samuel Johnson, p. 20-22. Lond. 1713.

pleasure be.' Where have ye example of such prayer?" —"Wherever the examples are," rejoined Knox, "I am assured of the rule, 'If we shall ask any thing according to his will, he will hear us;' and Christ commanded us to pray, 'Thy will be done.'" —"But in so doing ye put a doubt in the people's head of her conversion," said Maitland. —"Not I, my lord; but her own obstinate rebellion causes more than me to doubt of her conversion." —"Wherein rebels she against God?" —"In all the actions of her life, but in these two heads especially: that she will not hear the preaching of the blessed evangel of Jesus Christ, and that she maintains that idol the mass." —"She thinks not that rebellion, but good religion." —"So thought they who offered their children to Moloch, and yet the Spirit of God affirms that they offered them unto devils, and not unto God." —"But yet ye can produce the example of none that has so prayed before you," said the Secretary, pressing his former objection. —"Well, then," said Knox, "Peter said these words to Simon Magus, 'Repent of this thy wickedness, and pray to God, that, if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.' And think ye not, my lord Secretary, that the same doubt may touch my heart as touching the Queen's conversion, that then touched the heart of the apostle?" —"I would never hear you or any other call that in doubt," replied Maitland. —"But your will is no assurance to my conscience." —"Why say ye that she refuses admonitions?" said Maitland; "she will gladly hear any man." —"But what obedience ensues? Or, when shall she be seen to give her presence to the public preaching?" —"I think never, so long as she is thus entreated," replied the Secretary. —"And so long," rejoined the Reformer, "ye and all others must be content that I pray so as I may be assured to be heard of my God, either in making her comfortable to his Church, or if he has appointed her to be a scourge to the same, that we may have patience, and she may be bridled."

The second part of the debate related to Knox's doctrine respecting the limited authority of princes, and the right of the people to control them in the abuse of their power. Un-

der this head, the lawfulness of suppressing the Queen's mass was discussed. Even here, Maitland was hardly pushed by his antagonist, and found it difficult to maintain his ground, after the resistance which he himself had made to the supreme powers, and the principles which he professed in common with the Reformer. For it is to be observed, that both parties held that idolatry might justly be punished by death.* Into this sentiment they were led, in consequence of their having adopted the untenable opinion that the judicial laws given to the Jewish nation, were binding upon Christian nations, as to all offences against the moral law.

In the course of the debate, Knox's colleague, Craig, gave an account of an interesting dispute on the same question, which he had heard in the university of Bologna, in Italy; in which the judgments of the learned men, and the decision of the question, were strongly in favour of popular liberty, and the limited power of princes.† The opinion delivered by Craig, caused some apprehension on the part of the courtiers, as to the result of the vote; and the Clerk Register took occasion to remark, that at a previous con-

* Knox, *Historie*, pp. 357, 360.

This was an opinion generally entertained among the Reformers; and it was one ground (though, as we have seen, p. 192, not the only one) upon which they vindicated the penal statutes against the mass and image worship. At the same time, while they laboured to restrain these evils, they discovered no disposition to proceed to capital punishment, even when it was completely in their power. I never read nor heard of an instance, in the time of our Reformer, of a person being put to death, for performing any part of the Roman Catholic worship. If the reason of this disconformity between their opinion and their practice be asked, it may be answered,—their aversion to blood. “God (says our Reformer, addressing the Popish Princes who persecuted the Protestants) God will not use his saintes and chosen children to punish you. For with them is alwaies mercie, yea, even although God have pronounced a curse and malediction; as in the historie of Josua is plaine. But as ye pronounced wrong and cruel judgment without mercie, so will he punish you by such as in whom there is no mercie.” Answer to an Anabaptist, p. 449.—See Note B. Period Seventh.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 364, 365. “Ye tell us what was done at Bologna,” exclaimed one of the courtiers; “we are in a kingdom, and they are but a commonwealth.”—“My lord,” replied Craig, “my judgment is, that every

kingdom is a commonwealth, or at least should be, albeit that every commonwealth is not a kingdom; and therefore I think that in a kingdom no less diligence ought to be taken that laws be not violated, than in a commonwealth, because the tyranny of princes who continually reign in a kingdom, is more hurtful to the subjects, than the misgovernment of those that from year to year are changed in free commonwealths.” He added, “that the dispute to which he had referred was conducted on general principles, applicable equally to monarchies and republics; and that one of the conclusions adopted was, that, although laws contrary to the law of God, and to the true principles of government, had been introduced, through the negligence of the people or the tyranny of princes, yet the same people, or their posterity, had a right to demand that all the things should be reformed according to the original institution of kings and commonwealths.” Craig, who was rather facile in his disposition, and apt to be moulded by those who were about him, seems afterwards to have recanted the principle which he maintained on this occasion. For I suppose he is the person who preached the sermon at Linlithgow, mentioned by Hume of Godscroft. *History of the House of Douglas and Angus*, ii. 383, 385. The historian has inserted some very ingenious observations on the subject, by way of strictures on that sermon.

ference it had been agreed that Knox should obtain Calvin's judgment on the question. This the Reformer declined, reminding the Secretary that he had himself undertaken to write to Geneva on the subject, but that he had not fulfilled his promise.

After long conference, Maitland insisted that the votes should be called, and that by their decision some order should be established for preventing the recurrence of the evils of which he had complained. But Knox protested against any determination of the question, which belonged to the whole General Assembly; and the sentiments of the members being divided, the conference broke up without coming to any determinate resolution.*

In the month of August, Knox went, by appointment of the General Assembly, as visitor of the churches in Aberdeen and the north, where he remained six or seven weeks.† The subsequent Assembly gave him a similar appointment to Fife and Perthshire.‡

Our Reformer's predictions at the last meeting of Parliament, were now fully realised. Another parliament was held in the end of 1564, but nothing was done for securing the Protestant religion.§ The Queen's marriage approached; and as Darnley was understood to be inclined to Popery, if he had any religion at all, it naturally induced the nobility to provide additional securities for the Protestant Church; and to insist that the royal sanction, hitherto withheld, should now be granted to its legal establishment. This the Lords demanded as the condition of their consent; but Mary artfully evaded the demand, and accomplished her object. While she was arranging her plans for the marriage, she sent for the superintendents of Lothian, Glasgow, and Fife, (for Knox was now inadmissible to her presence,) and amused them with fair words. She was not yet persuaded, she said, of the truth of their religion, but she was willing to hear conference and reasoning on

* Knox, 348-366.

† The Magistrates of Edinburgh, understanding that Mr. Christopher Goodman was appointed to preach during the absence of their own ministers, directed a committee of their number to wait upon him, and "offer him in their names all honourabill interten-

ment, and cause the steward of Jhonne Knox hous to keep table to him upoun the Town's expenssis." Records of Town Council for 23d Aug. 1564.

‡ Keith, 535, 537, 540.

§ Knox, *Historie*, p. 368.

the subject: she was even content to attend the public sermons of some of them; and "above all others, she would gladly hear the superintendent of Angus, for he was a mild and sweet-natured man, with true honesty and uprightness, Sir John Erskine of Dun."* But as soon as her marriage with Lord Darnley was over, she told them in very plain and determined language, "her Majesty neither will, nor may, leave the religion wherein she has been nourished, and brought up."† And there was no more word of hearing either sermon or conference.

The friendship between the Earl of Murray and the Reformer, had been renewed in the beginning of 1565. The latter was placed in a very delicate predicament, by the insurrection under Murray and the other Lords who opposed the Queen's marriage. His father-in-law was one of the number. They professed that the security of the Protestant religion was the principal ground of their taking arms; and they came to Edinburgh, to collect men to their standard. But whatever favour he might have for them, he kept himself clear from any engagement.‡ If he had taken part in this unsuccessful revolt, we need not doubt that her Majesty would have embraced the opportunity of punishing him for it, when his principal friends had fled the kingdom.

We find, in fact, that she immediately proceeded against him on a different, but far more slender pretext. The young King, who could be either Papist, or Protestant as it suited, went sometimes to mass with the Queen, and sometimes attended the Reformed sermons. To silence the suspicions of his alienation from the Reformed religion, circulated by the insurgent Lords, he, on the 19th of August, made a solemn appearance in St. Giles's Church, sitting on a throne, which had been prepared for his reception. Knox preached that day on Isa. xxvi. 13, &c. and happened to prolong the service beyond his usual time. In one part of the sermon, he quoted these words of Scripture: "I will give children to be their princes, and babes shall

* Knox, *Historie*, p. 373, 374.

† Ibid. p. 376.

‡ Goodall says that Knox was engaged with the Earl of Murray in a plot for seizing Darn-

ley; but he has not produced the evidence for his assertion. *Life of Queen Mary*, i. 207, 209.

rule over them : children are their oppressors, and women rule over them ;” and in another part of it, he mentioned that God punished Ahab, because he did not correct his idolatrous wife Jesabel.* Though no particular application was made by the preacher, the King applied these passages to himself and the Queen, and returning to the palace in great wrath, refused to taste dinner. The Papists, who had accompanied him to Church, inflamed his resentment and that of the Queen, by their representations.

That very afternoon Knox was taken from bed, and carried before the Privy Council.† Some respectable inhabitants of the city, understanding his citation, accompanied him to the palace. He was told that he had offended the King, and must desist from preaching as long as their Majesties were in Edinburgh. He replied, that “ he had spoken nothing but according to his text ; and if the Church would command him to speak or abstain, he would obey, so far as the word of God would permit him.”‡ Spotswood says, that he not only stood to what he had said in the pulpit, but added, “ That as the King, for the Queen’s pleasure, had gone to mass, and dishonoured the Lord God, so should he in his justice make her the instrument of his overthrow. This speech, (continues the archbishop’s manuscript,) esteemed too bold at the time, came afterwards to be remembered, and was reckoned among other his prophetic sayings, which certainly were marvellous. The Queen, enraged at this answer, burst forth into tears.”§

* Sermon, apud *Historie of the Reformation*, Edin. 1644. 4to. Append. p. 120, 128. Spotswood says, that Knox, in his sermon, (either doubting the king’s sincerity, or favouring the faction of the noblemen), “ fell upon him with a bitter reproof.” *Historie*, 191. But the archbishop does not seem to have read the sermon, which contains no reproof of the king, either bitter or mild. Indeed, the preacher seems to have used, on that occasion, less freedom in the application than ordinary.

† Preface to the Sermon.

‡ Ibid. *Records of Town Council*, ut infra. *Historie*, p. 381. In consequence of being called before the Privy Council, he immediately wrote out the sermon, as exactly according to what he preached as he could, and sent it to the press, to let the impartial see, “ upon how small occasions great offence is now taken.” At the end of it is this postscript : “ Lord, into

thy hands I commend my spirit ; for the terrible roaring of gunnes and the noise of armour do so pierce my heart, that my soul thirstith to depart.” On the margin are these words : “ The Castle of Edinburgh was shooting against the exiled for Christ Jesus’s sake.” Then follows the date at which the writing was finished. “ The last day of August, 1565, at four of the clock in the afternoon, written indigestly, but yet truly so farre as memorie would serve, if those things that in publike I spake on Sunday, August 19, for the which I was discharged to preach for a time. Be merciful to thy flock, O Lord, and at thy pleasure put end to my misery. John Knox.”

§ Spotswood, 191, 192. Keith, 546, 547. Keith calls in question the archbishop’s narration ; because Knox, in his *History*, does not say that the Queen was present, and does not mention the prediction, although “ fond enough to catch at and force such things upon

The report of the inhibition laid upon the Reformer, created great agitation in the city. His colleague, who was appointed to supply his place during the suspension, threatened to desist entirely from preaching. The Town Council met, and appointed a deputation to wait on their Majesties, and request the removal of the inhibition; and in a second meeting, on the same day, they came to a unanimous resolution, that they would "in no manner of way consent or grant that his mouth be closed," but that he should be desired, "at his pleasure, and as God should move his heart, to proceed forward to true doctrine as before, which doctrine they would approve and abide at to their life's end."*

It does not appear that he continued any time suspended from preaching. For the King and Queen left Edinburgh before the next Sabbath,† and the prohibition extended only to the time of their residence in the city. Upon their return, it is probable that the Court judged it unadvisable to enforce an order which had already created much discontent, and might alienate the minds of the people still farther from the present administration. Accordingly, we find him exercising his ministry in Edinburgh with the same boldness as formerly. Complaints were made to the Council of the manner in which he prayed for the exiled noblemen; but Secretary Maitland, who had formerly found so much fault with his prayers, defended them on the present occasion, saying that he had heard them, and they were such as nobody could blame.‡

Christopher Goodman had officiated with much acceptance as minister of St. Andrew's, since the year 1560; but he was prevailed on, by the solicitations of his friends in England, to return about this time to his native country.§ The commissioners from St. Andrew's were instructed to petition the General Assembly which met in December

his readers." But it should be noticed, that Knox did not write this part of the history; the fifth book being compiled after his death, and not being found in the ancient MSS. See Advertisement prefixed to the edition of his *Historie*, Edin. 1732. It must be confessed, however, that Spotswood's account of this affair is inaccurate in a number of particulars. David Buchanan says that the king had "cast

the psalme booke in the fire," which was the cause of Knox's denunciation against him. *Life* prefixed to *History of the Reformation*.

* Records of Town Council, 23d August, 1565. Keith, 547.

† Knox, *Historie*, p. 381.

‡ Ibid. p. 389.

§ See Note C.—Period Seventh.

this year, that Knox should be translated from Edinburgh to their city. They claimed a right to him, as he had commenced his ministry among them; and they might think that the dissensions between the Court and him would induce him to prefer a more retired situation. But the petition was refused.*

This Assembly imposed on him several important services. He was commissioned to visit the Churches in the south of Scotland, and appointed to write "a comfortable letter," admonishing the ministers, exhorters, and readers, throughout the kingdom, to persevere in the discharge of their functions, which many of them were threatening to throw up, on account of the non-payment of their stipends; and exciting the people among whom they laboured, to relieve their necessities.† He had formerly received an appointment to draw up the Form of Excommunication and Public Repentance.‡ At this time he was required to compose a Treatise of Fasting. The Assembly, having taken into consideration the troubles of the country, and the dangers which threatened the whole Protestant interest, appointed a general fast to be kept through the kingdom. The form and order to be observed on that occasion, they left to be drawn out by Knox and his colleague. As nothing had been hitherto published expressly on this subject, they were authorised to explain the duty, as well as state the reasons which at this time called for that solemn exercise. The whole was appointed to be ready before the time of the Fast, to serve as a directory to ministers and people. The treatise does credit to the compilers, both as to matter and form. It is written in a perspicuous and nervous style. In the grounds assigned for fasting, the critical state of all the Reformed Churches, the late decree of the Council of Trent for the extirpation of the Protestant name, the combination of the Popish princes for carrying this into execution, and the barbarities exercised towards their brethren

* Keith, 562.

† Ibid. 533.

‡ The appointment was laid upon him in June, 1563. Keith, 525. He does not seem to have finished it till 1567; for this date is added after a prayer at the end of the treatise. Then follows a postscript. "This booke is thought necessary and profitable for the

church, and commanded to be printed by the Generall Assemblie." The order for printing it seems to have been first given by the Assembly in 1568, and renewed in 1571. — Psalms in meeter, &c. (commonly called Knox's Liturgy) printed by Andro Hart, A. 1611. p. 28, 67. Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 705, 747.

in different countries, are all held forth as a warning to the Protestants of Scotland, and urged as calls to repentance and prayer.

In fact, strong as their apprehensions were, the danger was nearer to themselves than they imagined. The most zealous and powerful Protestants being exiled, the Queen determined to carry into execution the design of which she had never lost sight; and while she amused the nation with proclamations against altering the received religion, and tantalized the ministers with offers of more adequate support, she was preparing for the immediate restoration of the Roman Catholic worship. No means were left unattempted for gaining over the nobility to that religion. The King openly professed himself a Papist, and officiated in some of their most superstitious rites. The Earls of Lennox, Cassilis, and Caithness, with Lords Montgomery and Seton, did the same.* The Friars were employed to preach at Holyroodhouse, and, to gain the favour of the people, endeavoured to imitate the popular method of the Protestant preachers.† In the beginning of February 1566, a message arrived from the Cardinal of Lorrain, with a copy of the Catholic league for the general extirpation of the Protestants, and instructions to obtain her subscription to it, and her consent to proceed to extremities against the exiled nobility. Mary scrupled not to set her hand to this league.‡ The exiled noblemen were summoned to appear before the Parliament, on the 12th of March. The Lords of the Articles were chosen according to the Queen's pleasure; the Popish ecclesiastics were restored to their place in Parliament; the altars to be erected in St. Giles's Church for the service of the Roman Catholic worship, were prepared.§

But these measures, when ripe for execution, were blasted,

* Robertson, App. No. 14. Keith, App. p. 165, 167. Knox, 389, 391.

† The friars were so little esteemed, that they soon wearied of preaching. They boasted that they would dispute with the Protestant ministers; but when the Commissioners of the General Assembly waited on their Majesties, and requested that this might be granted in their presence, the Queen replied, "that sche wald not jeopard her religioun upon sick

as wer thare present; for sche knew weill enough, that the Protestants wer more learned." Knox, Historie, p. 391.

‡ Keith, p. 326. App. 167. Robertson, App. No. 14. Melvil's Memoirs, 63, 64.

§ Knox, 392, 394. Keith, App. 126. The Queen's Letter to the Archbishop of Glasgow, apud Keith, 331. Goodall and Blackwood, apud Robertson, ii. 145. Lond. 1809.

in consequence of a secret engagement which the king had entered into with some of the Protestant nobles. The first effect produced by this engegement, was the well known assassination of Rizzio, an unworthy favourite of the Queen, who was the principal instigator of the measures against the Protestant Religion and the banished lords, and had incurred the jealousy of the King, the contempt of the nobility, and the hatred of the people. The removal of this minion from her Majesty's counsels and presence, would have been a meritorious act ; but the manner in which it was accomplished was marked with the barbarous manners of the age, and equally inconsistent with law and humanity.*

A complete change in the state of the Court followed upon this : the Popish counsellors fled from the palace ; the banished lords returned out of England ; and the Parliament was prorogued, without accomplishing any of the objects for which it had been assembled. But the Queen soon persuaded the weak and uxorious King to desert the noblemen, to retire with her to Dunbar, and emit a proclamation disowning his consent to the late attempt, by which he exposed himself to the contempt of the nation, without regaining her affection. Having collected an army, she returned to Edinburgh, threatening to inflict the most exemplary vengeance on all who had been accessory to the murder of her secretary, and the indignity shewn to her person. She found herself, however, unable to resume her plan for altering the received religion ; and while the conspirators against Rizzio were compelled to retire to England, the Earl of Murray, with the other lords who had opposed her marriage, were soon after pardoned.

When the Queen came to Edinburgh, Knox left it, and withdrew to Kyle. There is no reason to think that he was privy to the conspiracy which proved fatal to Rizzio. But it is probable that he had expressed his satisfaction at an event which contributed to the safety of religion and the commonwealth ; if not also his approbation of the con-

* The noblemen wished to bring Rizzio to a public trial, but the king would not wait for this, and determined that he should be seized in the Queen's presence, although big with

child, that he might have the opportunity of upbraiding her for the wrongs which he had suffered. Keith, App. 121, 122.

duct of the conspirators.* At any rate, he was, on other grounds, sufficiently obnoxious to the Queen; and as her resentment on the present occasion was exceedingly inflamed, it was deemed prudent for him to withdraw.†

Having at last "got quit" of one who had long been troublesome to her, the Queen was determined to prevent his return to the capital. We need not doubt that the Town Council and inhabitants, who had formerly refused to agree to his suspension from preaching for a short time, would exert themselves to obtain his restoration. But she resisted the importunities of all his friends. She was even unwilling that he should find a refuge within the kingdom, and wrote to a nobleman in the west country, with whom he resided, to banish him from his house.‡ It does not appear that he returned to Edinburgh, or at least, that he resumed his ministry in it, until the Queen was deprived of the government.

Being banished from his flock, he judged this a favourable opportunity for paying a visit to England. Parental affection, on the present occasion, increased the desire which he had long felt to accomplish this journey. His two sons had some time ago been sent by him into that kingdom, probably at the desire of their mother's relations, to obtain their education in some one of the English seminaries. Having obtained the Queen's safe-conduct, he applied to the General Assembly, which met in December, 1566, for their liberty to remove. They readily granted it, upon condition of his returning against the time of their next meeting in June; and at the same time, gave him a most ample and honourable testimonial, in which they describe him as "a true and faithful minister, in doctrine pure and sincere, in life and conversation in our sight inculpable," and one who "has so fruitfully used that talent

* King James VI. having found great fault with Knox for approving of the assassination of Rizzio, one of the ministers said, "that the slaughter of David, [Rizzio,] so far as it was the work of God, was allowed by Mr. Knox, and not otherwise." Cald. MS. ad ann. 1591. Knox himself does not, however, make this qualification, when he mentions the subject incidentally. *Historie*, p. 86.

† Knox, *Historie*, 395, and *Answer to Tyrie*, A. iij.

‡ Letter from Archbishop Grindal to Bullinger, 17th August, 1566, *Strype's Grindal*, App. 20. Letter from Bishop Parkhurst, written in December, 1566. *Burnet's Hist. of Reform.* iii. App. No. 91. In the Assembly which met in June this year, Mr. John Craig desired that "John Carnes, who had read prayers, and exhorted four years and more in Edinburgh, and had weill profited, might be joynd with him as colleague in the kirk of Edinburgh, in respect he was alone." *Keith*, 560.

granted to him by the Eternal, to the advancement of the glory of his godly name, to the propagation of the kingdom of Jesus Christ, and edifying of them who heard his preaching, that of duty we most heartily praise his godly name, for that so great a benefit granted unto him for our utility and profit." *

The Reformer was charged with a letter from the Assembly to the bishops and ministers of England, interceding for lenity to such of their brethren as scrupled to use the sacerdotal dress enjoined by the laws. The controversy on that subject was at this time carried on with great warmth among the English clergy. It is not improbable, that the Assembly interfered in this business at the desire of Knox, to whom the composition of the letter was committed.† He could not have forgotten the trouble which he himself had suffered on a similar ground, and he had a high regard for many of the scruplers. This interposition did not procure for them any relief. Even though the superior clergy had been more zealous to obtain it than they were, Elizabeth was inflexible, and would listen neither to the supplications of her bishops, nor the advice of her counsellors. Knox's good opinion of the English Queen does not seem to have been improved by this visit.‡

There was one piece of public service which he performed, before undertaking his journey to England. On the 23d of December, the Queen granted a commission to the Archbishop of St. Andrew's, under the Privy Seal, restoring him to his ancient jurisdiction, which had been abolished in 1550, by act of Parliament. § This step was taken, partly to prepare for the restoration of the Popish religion, and partly to facilitate another dark design which was soon after disclosed. The Protestants could not fail to be both alarmed and enraged at this daring measure. Moved both by his own zeal, and the advice of his brethren, the Re-

* Keith, 564.

† Ibid. 565, 566. Knox, 402, 403. Spotswood, 198, 199. The letter was subscribed by "John Davidson, for James Nicoldson, writer and clarke of the church of Edinborough." Strype's Life of Archbishop Parker, App. S8.

‡ Speaking of England, he says: "And yet is sche that now rigneth over thame nether gude Protestant, nor yet resolute Papist; let

the world juge quhilk is the third." Historie, p. 277. By comparing p. 269, it appears that this was written by him in 1567, after his return from England.

§ Laing's History of Scotland, vol. i. 75, 76. This historian has refuted the charges of forgery which Whitaker had brought against Knox and Calderwood on this head. Ibid. p. 78, 79.

former addressed a circular letter to the principal Protestants in the kingdom, requesting their immediate advice on the measures most proper to be adopted on this occasion, and inclosing a copy of a proposed supplication to the Queen. This letter discovers all the ardour of the writer's spirit, called forth by such an alarming occurrence. After mentioning the late acts for the provision of the ministry,* by which the Queen attempted to blind them, he says: "How that any such assignation, or any promise made thereof, can stand in any stable assurance, when that Roman Antichrist, by just laws once banished from this realm, shall be intrusted above us, we can no ways understand. Yea, further, we cannot see what assurance can any within this realm that hath professed the Lord Jesus, have of life or inheritance, if the head of that odious Beast be cured among us." Having enforced his request, he adds:—"As from the beginning we have neither spared substance nor life, so mind we not to faint unto the end, to maintain the same, so long as we can find the concurrence of brethren; of whom (as God forbid,) if we be destitute, yet are we determined never to be subject to the Roman Antichrist, neither yet to his usurped tyranny; but when we can do no farther to suppress that odious Beast, we mind to seal it with our blood to our posterity, that the bright knowledge of Jesus Christ hath banished that Man of Sin, and his venomous doctrine, from our hearts and consciences. Let this our letter and request bear witness before God, before his Church, before the world, and before your own consciences."† The supplication of the General Assembly to the Lords of the Privy Council, on the same subject, also bears marks of the Reformer's pen.†

During the time Knox was in England, that tragedy, so well known in Scottish history, was acted, which led to a complete revolution in the government of the kingdom, and contrary to the designs of the actors, threw the power solely into the hands of the Protestants. Mary's affection for her husband, which had cooled soon after their mar-

* Keith, p 561, 562. The occurrence which had taken place helps to explain the coldness with which the Assembly received the inform-

ation of these acts in their favour, Ibid. p. 563.

† Cald. MS. ap. Keith, 566, 567. ‡ Ibid.

riage, was, from the time of Rizzio's assassination, converted into a fixed hatred, which she was at little pains to conceal. In proportion as her mind was alienated from the King, the unprincipled Earl of Bothwell grew in her favour. He engrossed the whole management of public affairs, and was treated by her Majesty with every mark of regard and affection. In these circumstances, the neglected unhappy king was decoyed to Edinburgh, lodged in a solitary dwelling at the extremity of the city, and murdered on the night of February 9th, 1567 ; the house in which he lay being blown up with gunpowder.

It would be out of place to enter here into the controversy respecting the authors of this murder, which has been agitated with uncommon keenness, from that day to the present time. The accusation of the Earl of Murray as a party to the deed, which was at first circulated with the evident design of turning away the public mind from the real perpetrators, and afterwards insinuated and brought forward directly in the conferences at York and Westminster, by way of retaliating the charge exhibited by him against the Queen ; though still kept up by some of the zealous partizans of Mary, is destitute of all proof, and utterly incredible. That Bothwell was the prime contriver and agent in the murder, cannot admit of a doubt with any impartial and reasonable inquirer. And that Mary was privy to the design, and accessory to it by permission and approbation, there is, I think, all the evidence, moral and legal, which could reasonably be expected in a case of the kind. The whole of her behaviour towards the King, from the time that she brought him from Glasgow till she left him on the fatal night ; the remissness which she discovered in inquiring into the murder ; the shameful manner in which the farce of Bothwell's trial was conducted ; and the glaring act, (which struck with horror the whole of Europe, and even her own friends,) of taking to her bed, with indecent haste, the man who was stigmatised as the murderer of her husband, afford the strongest presumption of her guilt ; and when taken in connexion with the direct evidence arising from letters and depositions, would have been

sufficient long ago to shut the mouths of any but the defenders of Mary, Queen of Scots. *

Knox was absent from Edinburgh at the time of the Queen's marriage with Bothwell ; but his colleague ably supported the honour of his place and order on that occasion, when the whole nobility of Scotland observed a passive and disgraceful silence. Being required by both the parties to publish the banns, Craig, after considerable reluctance, and by the advice of his session, complied ; but he at the same time protested from the pulpit, on three several days, and took heaven and earth to witness, that he abhorred and detested the intended marriage as unlawful and scandalous, and solemnly charged the nobility to use their influence to prevent the Queen from taking a step which would cover her with infamy. Being called before the Council, and accused of having exceeded the bounds of his commission, he boldly replied that the bounds of his commission were the word of God, good laws, and natural reason, to all of which the proposed marriage was contrary. And Bothwell being present, he charged him with the crime of adultery, the precipitancy with which the process of divorce had been carried through, the suspicions entertained of collusion between him and his wife, of his having murdered the King, and ravished the Queen ; all of which would be confirmed, if they carried their purpose into execution. †

The events which followed in rapid succession upon this infamous marriage ; the confederation of the nobility for revenging the King's death, and preserving the person of the infant prince ; the flight of Bothwell ; the surrender and imprisonment of Mary ; her resignation of the Government ; the coronation of her son ; and the appointment of the Earl

* Those who wish to see the proof of these assertions, may consult Mr. Hume's History of the period, with the notes ; Dr. Robertson's with his Dissertation ; and especially Mr. Laing's Dissertation on the subject. This last writer has examined the point with great industry, acuteness, and judgment ; established the genuineness of the letters to Bothwell, and cleared the whole evidence from the objections and cavils of the fantastical Whitaker, a late author, who has equalled any of his predecessors in prejudice, and exceeded all of

them in the illiberal and virulent abuse with which he has treated the most respectable of his opponents.

† Buik of the Universall Kirk, p. 85, 87, 103. Anderson's Collections, ii. 278-283. Knox, 405, 406. Spotswood, 202, 203. Craig gave in a defence of his conduct to the General Assembly, 30th Dec. 1567 ; but it was not until the 6th July, 1569, that the Assembly expressed their formal approbation, and declared that " he had done the dewtie of a faithfull minister."

of Murray as Regent during his minority, are all well known to the readers of Scottish history.

Knox seems to have returned to his charge at the time that the Queen fled with Bothwell to Dunbar. He was present in the General Assembly which met at Edinburgh on the 25th of June, and was delegated by them to go to the west country, and endeavour to persuade the Hamiltons, and others who still stood aloof from the confederated lords, to join with them in settling the distracted affairs of the country, and to attend a general convention of the delegates of the Churches, to be held on the 20th of July following. He was unsuccessful in this negociation. But the convention was held, and the nobles, barons, and other commissioners, who were present, subscribed a number of articles with reference to religion and the state of the nation.†

On the 29th of July, 1567, the Reformer preached the sermon at the coronation of King James VI. in the parish Church of Stirling.‡ He objected to the ceremony of unction, as a Jewish rite, abused under the Papacy; but it was deemed inexpedient to depart from the accustomed ceremonial on the present occasion. It was therefore performed by the Bishop of Orkney, the superintendents of Lothian and Angus assisting him to place the crown on the King's head.§ After the coronation, Knox, along with some others, took instruments, and craved extracts of the proceedings.||

When the Queen was confined by the lords in the Castle of Lochleven, they had not resolved in what manner they should dispose of her person for the future. Some proposed that she should be allowed to leave the kingdom; some that she should be imprisoned during life; while others insisted that she ought to suffer capital punishment. Of this last opinion was Knox, with almost all the ministers, and the

* Keith, 574, 577. Knox, 410

† Keith, 581-583. Knox, 411. Spots. 209, 210.

‡ Knox, 412. Buchanan calls it *luculentam concionem*. Hist. lib. xviii. Oper. Rud. tm. i. p. 366.

§ Cald. MS. ii. 67, 68. Anderson's Collections, ii. 249.

|| Keith, 439. Keith expresses his surprise at Knox's taking instruments in the name of

the estates, as he "could properly belong to no estate at all," p. 440. But the record does not say that he took instruments in the name of the estates. It is evident that he acted in the name of the Church, which was considered as having an interest in the transaction, as by one clause of the coronation oath, the king engaged to maintain the Protestant religion, and the privileges of the church. Ibid. p. 438.

great body of the people. The chief ground upon which they insisted for this, was not her maladministration in the Government, or the mere safety and peace of the commonwealth; which were the reasons upon which the Parliament of England, in the following century, proceeded to the execution of her grandson. But they grounded their opinion upon the personal crimes with which Mary was charged. Murder and adultery, they reasoned, were crimes to which the punishment of death was allotted by the law of God, and of nations. From this penalty persons of no rank could plead exemption. The ordinary forms of judicial procedure, indeed, made no provision for the trial of a supreme magistrate for these crimes; because the laws did not suppose that such enormous offences would be committed by them. But extraordinary cases required extraordinary remedies; and new offences gave birth to new laws. There were examples in Scripture of the capital punishment of princes, and precedents for it in the history of Scotland.*

Upon these grounds, Knox scrupled not publicly to maintain, that the estates of the kingdom ought to bring Mary to a trial; and if she was found guilty of the murder of her husband, and an adulterous connexion with Bothwell, that she ought to be put to death. Throk Morton, the English ambassador, had a conference with him, with the view of mitigating the rigour of this judgment; but though he acquiesced in the resolution adopted by the lords to detain her in prison, he retained his own sentiment, and after the civil war was kindled by her escape, repeatedly said, that he considered the nation as suffering for their criminal lenity.†

The Earl of Murray, though he had been restored to his place in the Privy Council after his return from banishment, was never re-admitted into the confidence of the Queen. He had seldom appeared at Court, and after the King's murder, he retired to France, where he remained till summoned by a message from the Protestant lords, when Mary had resigned the crown, and appointed him

* Keith, 421, 422, 428. Throk Morton's Letters, 14th and 18th July; apud Robertson App. No. 21. "The women (says the ambas-

sador) be most furious and impudent against the Queen, and yet the men be mad enough."

† Cald. MS. ii. 73.

Regent during her son's minority. Being formally invested with the Government, (August 22d, 1767,) he immediately directed his attention to the settlement of religion, and the redressing of the principal grievances of which the Church had long complained. A Parliament being summoned to meet in the middle of December, he, with the advice of the Privy Council, previously nominated certain barons and commissioners of boroughs, to consult upon and digest such overtures as were proper to be laid before that Assembly. With these he joined Knox, and other four ministers, to assist in matters which related to the Church. This committee met in the beginning of December, and sat until the opening of the Parliament. The record of their proceedings, both as to civil and ecclesiastical affairs, is preserved; and as many of their propositions were not adopted by the Parliament, it is valuable as a declaration of the sentiments of a number of the most able men in the kingdom.*

On the 15th December, Knox preached at the opening of the Parliament, and exhorted them to begin with the affairs of religion, in which case they would find better success in their other business. The Parliament ratified all the acts which had been passed in 1560, in favour of the Protestant religion, and against Popery. New statutes of a similar kind were added. It was provided, that no prince should in future be admitted to the exercise of authority in the kingdom, without taking an oath to maintain the Protestant religion; and that none but Protestants should be admitted to any office, not hereditary nor held for life. The ecclesiastical jurisdiction, exercised by the different Assemblies of the Church, was formally ratified; and commissioners appointed to define more exactly the causes which properly came within the sphere of their judgment. The thirds of benefices were appointed to be paid immediately to collectors appointed by the Church, who were to account to the Exchequer for the overplus, after paying the stipends of the ministers. And the funds of provostries, prebendaries, and chaplainries were appropriated to maintain bursars in colleges.†

* See Note D. Period Seventh.

† Cald. MS. ad ann. 1567, and Acts 1. Parl. James VI.

In the act ratifying the jurisdiction of the Church, Knox was appointed one of the commissioners for drawing out the particular points which pertained to ecclesiastical jurisdiction, to be presented to next meeting of Parliament. The General Assembly, which met about the same time, gave him a commission, along with some others, to act for them in this matter, and in general, to consult with the Regent and Council on such ecclesiastical questions as occurred after the dissolution of that Assembly. He was also appointed to assist the superintendent of Lothian in his visitation, and afterwards to visit the Churches in Kyle, Carrick, and Cunningham.*

During the regency of Murray, there were no jars between the Church and the Court, nor any of those unpleasant complaints which had been made at every meeting of the General Assembly before that time, and which were afterwards renewed.† All the grievances of which they complained were not, indeed, redressed; and the provision made by law was still inadequate for the support of such an ecclesiastical establishment as the nation required, including the seminaries of education. But the Regent not only received the addresses of the General Assemblies in a "manner very different from that to which they had been accustomed;" but showed a disposition to grant their petitions, as far as was in his power. It was chiefly through his influence that the favourable arrangement concerning the thirds of benefices was made; and he endeavoured, though unsuccessfully, to obtain the consent of Parliament to the dissolution of the prelacies, and the appropriation of their revenues to the common fund of the Church.‡

Our Reformer had now reached that point from which

* Cald. MS. Keith, 585, 586.

† Dr. Robertson says, that the regulations respecting the thirds, made by the Parliament, December, 1567, did not produce any considerable change in the situation of the clergy, and speaks of them as still "groaning under extreme poverty, unable to obtain any thing but fair words and liberal promises." History of Scotland, ii. 250, 312. Lond. 1809. But the law which gave power to the collectors appointed by the Church to uplift the thirds, and to pay the stipends, before any thing was allowed to the Court, was certainly a considerable benefit. The Church herself viewed it in this light. Calderwood says, "that the mini-

sters were now refreshed with the allowance made be the last Parliament." MS. ad ann. 1567. And the Assembly, in their letter inviting Willock to return from England, expressly say, "Our enemies, praised be God, are dashed; religion established; sufficient provision made for ministers," &c. Keith, 590. The account which I have given in the text is, I think, supported by the Register of the five General Assemblies which were held during the regency of Murray.

‡ Letter from the Regent to the General Assembly, ult. June, 1569. Bulk of the Universal Kirk, p. 45-47.

he could take a calm and deliberate view of the bustling scene through which he had passed, and the termination to which the arduous struggle, wherein he had been so long engaged, was now happily brought. The fabric of Papal tyranny was suppressed; superstition and ignorance was overthrown; true religion was established; the supreme government of the nation was in the hands of one in whose wisdom and integrity he had the greatest confidence; the Church was freed from many of those grievances under which she had hitherto groaned, and enjoyed the prospect of obtaining the redress of such as still remained. The work on which his heart had been so ardently set for such a long period, and for the success of which he had so often trembled, had prospered beyond his utmost expectation. He now congratulated himself on being released from all burden of public affairs, and spending the remainder of his days in religious meditation, and preparation for that event of whose approach he was daily admonished by his increasing infirmities.* He even secretly cherished the wish of resigning his charge in Edinburgh, and retiring to that privacy, from which he had been drawn at the commencement of the Scottish Reformation.†

But “the way of man is not in himself.” Providence had allotted to him further trials of a public nature: he was yet to see the security of the Reformed religion endangered, and the country involved in another civil war, even more distressing than the former, in as much as the principal persons on each side were professed Protestants. From the time that the Government was transferred from Mary to her infant son, and the Earl of Murray appointed to the regency, a number of the nobility, with the house of Hamilton at their head, had stood aloof, and from other motives as much as attachment to the Queen, had refused to acknowledge the authority of the Regent;‡ or at least

* Cald MS. ii. 108.

† Speaking of the congregation of which he had been pastor at Geneva, he says:—“God comfort that dispersed little flock, amongst whom I lived with quietness of conscience, and contentment of heart; and amongst whom I would be content to end my days, if so it might stand with God’s good pleasure. For seeing it hath pleased His Majesty, above all men’s expectations, to prosper the work, for

the performing whereof I left that company, I would even as gladly return to them, if they stood in need of my labours, as ever I was glad to be delivered from the rage of mine enemies. I can give you no reason than I should so desire, other than that my heart so thirsteth.” Letter, 14th February, 1568. Cald. MS. ii. 91.

‡ The Hamiltons were afraid that the Duke’s title to the succession would be in-

withheld their approbation of his proceedings. The Popish party still entertained hopes of accomplishing the restoration of the ancient religion, Argyle and Chastelherault were alienated from Murray, the former in consequence of a family quarrel, the latter from a jealousy lest the recent settlement of the crown should invalidate his right to the succession. The active measures of the Regent to repress anarchy and disorder, naturally raised up enemies to his government among the turbulent and licentious; and upon the escape of the Queen from imprisonment, they flocked to her standard, and avowed their design to restore her to the full exercise of the royal authority. The insurgent party, however, met with a prompt overthrow. In consequence of the defeat at Langside, Mary was driven from the kingdom, and her party broken; and the Regent, by his vigorous measures, reduced the whole country to a state of obedience to the King's authority.

Despairing to accomplish their object during his life, the partizans of Mary resolved to cut Murray off by private means. During the year 1568, two persons were employed to assassinate him; but the design was discovered.* This did not hinder new machinations. Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh, a nephew of the Archbishop of St. Andrew's, undertook to perpetrate the deed. He was one of the prisoners taken at the battle of Langside, and after being arraigned, condemned, and brought out to execution, had his life given him by the Regent,† and was shortly after set at liberty along with the other prisoners.‡ It is said that he was actuated by revenge, on account of an injury which he had received, by detaining one of his forfeited estates, or by the cruel manner in which his wife had been dispossessed of it.§ Whether this was really the case, or

fringed, and were offended that the Regency, which they considered as his due, was conferred on Murray. Keith, 423. Throk Morton's Letters, 14th and 18th July, apud Robertson, App. No. 21, Spotswood, 226, 227. Argyle and Huntly had at this time family quarrels with Murray. Keith, 447, 450.

* The Hist. of King James the Sext, p. 48. Birrell's Diary, 17.

† Ibid. p. 43.

‡ Ibid. p. 63.

§ This story is related in very different

ways. One account makes the revenge to turn solely upon the treatment of his wife, who, expecting to be allowed to remain in her house of "Woodislie," was "uncourtouslie and unmercifullie put thairfra, all hir gudis tane fra hir, and schoe left stark naked. The gentill woman quhat for grief of mynd and exceeding cald, that schoe had then contracted, conceived sic madness as was almost incredible." Historie of King James the Sext, p. 74. Spotswood's account is very different. He says, that Bothwellhaugh had redeemed

whether it was afterwards circulated to diminish the odium of his crime, and turn it away from his party, cannot perhaps be certainly determined. But it does not appear that he ever met with any thing in the conduct of the Regent, which can be pleaded as an excuse for his bursting the ties of gratitude by which he was bound to him. Having concerted the design with some of the leading persons of his faction, who incited him to carry it into execution,* he followed the Regent in his progress to Glasgow, Stirling, and Linlithgow; and finding an opportunity in the last of these places, shot him through the body with a musket-ball. The wound proved mortal, and the Regent died on the same evening. While some of his friends, who stood round his bed, lamented the excessive lenity which he had shewn to his enemies, and in particular to his murderer, he replied with a truly noble and Christian spirit, that *nothing would make him repent an act of clemency.*†

The consternation which is usually produced by the fall of a distinguished leader, was absorbed in the deep distress which the tidings of the Regent's murder spread through the nation. The common people, who had experienced the beneficial effects of his short administration, to a degree altogether unprecedented in the country, felt as if each had lost a father, and loudly demanded vengeance against the authors of the parricide. Many who had envied or hated him during his life, were now forward to do justice to his virtues. Those who had not been able to conceal their satisfaction on the first intelligence of his death, became ashamed of the indecent exultation which they had imprudently ex-

his life by yielding up the lands of Woodhouse-lie, which were given to the justice-clerk, and he refusing to part with them, Bothwellhaugh "made his quarrel to the Regent, [i. e. revenged himself upon the Regent,] who was most innocent, and had restored him to life and liberty." Spots History, p. 233. Crawford, in his Memoirs of the Affairs of Scotland, p. 140. 1st edit. says, that "Murray sent some officers to take possession of the house, who not only turned the gentlewoman out of doors, but," &c. This is the authority which has been relied upon by all those writers who have criminated the Regent; yet it is now discovered that this is one of those impudent forgeries by which that work is disgraced from beginning to end. See Hist. of King James the Sext, preface.

* That the assassination of the Regent was the effect of a conspiracy, and not of personal revenge, is clear from many considerations. Within a few days after, his secretary, Mr. John Wood, was murdered in Fife. Anderson's Coll. iii. 84. The house in which Bothwellhaugh concealed himself, while he committed the murder, belonged to the Archbishop of St. Andrew's, who confessed before his execution, that he "furtherit the deed." Historie of King James the Sext, p. 117. The horse on which the murderer escaped belonged to John Hamilton, Abbot of Arbroath, one of the Duke's sons. Cald. ad ann. 1570. He rode immediately to Hamilton, where he was "received with great applause." Ibid.

† Buch. Cald. Spots.

pressed. The Hamiltons were anxious to clear themselves from the imputation of a crime which they saw to be universally detested. The murderer was dismissed by them, and was glad to conceal his ignominy, by condemning himself to perpetual banishment. The only one of his crimes for which the Archbishop of St. Andrew's afterwards expressed contrition, before his execution, was his accession to the murder of the Regent.* Nor were these feelings confined to Scotland: the sensation was general through England, and the expressions of grief and condolence from that country evinced the uncommon esteem in which he was held by all ranks.

It was the happiness of the Regent, that in his early years he fell into the company of men who cultivated his vigorous understanding, gave a proper direction to his activity, and instilled into his mind the principles of religion and virtue. His early adoption of the Reformed sentiments, the steadiness with which he adhered to them, the uniform correctness of his morals, his integrity, sagacity, and enterprising but cool courage, soon placed him in the first rank among those who embarked in the struggle for the reformation of religion, and maintenance of national liberties, and secured to him their cordial and unbounded confidence. The honours which Queen Mary conferred on him, were not too great for the services which he rendered to her; and had she continued to trust him with the direction of her counsels, those measures would have been avoided which precipitated her ruin. He was repeatedly placed in a situation which would have tempted the ambition of others far less qualified; yet he shewed no disposition to grasp at the supreme authority. When he accepted the Regency, it was in compliance with the decided and uncorrupted voice of the acting majority in the kingdom, point-

* *Historie and Life of King James the Sext*, p. 117. "To the thrid head" (his participation in the murder of the late Regent,) the Archbishop "answerit thus: That he not only knew thair of, and wald not stopp it, bot rather furtherit the deed thair of, quhilk he repentit, and askit God merey for the same." Yet an author, in the nineteenth century, can write of this deed in the following terms: "The heiress of Woodhouselie fell a sacrifice to the corrupt tyranny of the Regent Murray.

Her husband, Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh, put the guilty tyrant to death, as 'base-born Murray rode through old Linlithgow's crowded town.'" *Chalmers's Caledonia*, ii. 571. Did I not respect the erudition of this writer, and pity his prejudice, (which, upon ecclesiastical and political subjects, is worthy of the darkest age into which he has carried his researches,) there are few expressions which I would reckon too strong to be employed in reprobating the spirit which is breathed in this passage.

ing him out as the fittest person for occupying that high station. His conduct, in one of the most delicate and embarrassing situations in which a governor was ever placed, shewed that his countrymen were not mistaken in their choice. He united, in no ordinary degree, those qualities which are rarely combined in the same individual, and which make up the character of an accomplished prince. Excelling equally in the arts of war and peace, he reduced the country to universal obedience to the King's authority by his military skill and valour, and preserved it in a state of tranquillity and order by the wise and impartial administration of justice. Successful in all his warlike enterprizes, he never once tarnished the laurels of victory by cruelty or unnecessary rigour to the vanquished. He knew how to maintain the authority of the laws, and bridle the licentious, by salutary severity, and at the same time to temper the rigour of justice by the interposition of mercy. He used to sit personally in the courts of judicature, and exerted himself to obtain for all the subjects an easy and expeditious decision of litigated causes. His uncommon liberality to his friends, to the learned, and to his servants ; and his unostentatious charity to the poor, have been celebrated by one who had the best opportunities of becoming acquainted with these amiable traits of his character.* Nor has the breath of calumny, which has laboured in many ways to blast his reputation, ever insinuated that he oppressed or burdened the public, during his regency, in order to enrich himself or his family. Add to all his exemplary piety, the only source of genuine virtue. His family was so regulated as to resemble a church rather than a court. Not a profane nor a lewd word was to be heard from any of his domestics. Besides the ordinary exercise of devotion, a chapter of the Bible was always read at dinner and supper ; and it was his custom on such occasions, to require his chaplain, or some other learned men, (of whom he had always a number about him,) to give their opinion upon the passage, for his own instruction and that of his family. "A man truly good," says Archbishop Spotswood, "and

* Buchanan, Oper. p. 385. Rud.

worthy to be ranked amongst the best governors that this kingdom hath enjoyed, and, therefore, to this day honoured with the title of *The Good Regent*.”*

This may be deemed, perhaps, by some readers, an improper digression from the subject of this work. But even though it had been still less connected with it, though there had not subsisted that intimate familiarity and co-operation between the Regent and the Reformer, I could scarcely have denied myself the satisfaction of paying a small tribute to the memory of one of the greatest men of his age, who has been traduced and vilified in a most unjustifiable and wanton manner, in modern times ; and whose character has been drawn with unfavourable, and in my opinion, with unfair colours, by the most moderate of our historians. All that I have attempted, is to sketch the most prominent features of his character. That he was faultless, I am far from wishing to insinuate ; but the principal charges which have been brought against him, I consider as either irrelevant, or unproved, or greatly exaggerated. That his exaltation to the highest dignity in the State which a subject could enjoy, produced no unfavourable change on his behaviour, is what none can be prepared to affirm ; but I have not seen the contrary established. The confidence which he reposed in his friends was great, and he was inclined to be swayed by their advice ; but that he became the dupe of worthless favourites, and fell by listening to their flattery, and refusing to hearken to wholesome advice, and not by the treachery of his friends, and the malice of his implacable enemies, are assertions which have been repeated upon the authority of a single witness, unsupported by facts, and capable of being disproved.†

The Regent died on the evening of Saturday the 23d of January, 1570 ; and the intelligence of his murder was conveyed early next morning to Edinburgh. It is impossible to describe the anguish which the Reformer felt on this occasion. A cordial and intimate friendship had long subsisted between them. Of all the Scottish nobility, he placed the greatest confidence in Murray’s attachment to religion ;

* History, p. 234.

† See Note E.—Period Seventh.

and his conduct after his elevation to the Regency, had served to heighten the good opinion which he formerly entertained of him. He looked upon his death as the greatest calamity which could befall the nation, and the forerunner of other evils.* When the shock produced by the melancholy tidings had subsided, the first thought that rushed into his mind was, that he had himself been the instrument of obtaining from his clemency a pardon to the man who had become his murderer; a thought which naturally produced a very different impression on him from what it did on the dying Regent.†

In his sermon that day, he introduced the subject; and after saying, that God in his great mercy raised up godly rulers, and took them away in his displeasure on account of the sins of a nation, he thus poured out the sorrows of his heart in an address to God. "O Lord, in what misery and confusion found he this realm! To what rest and quietness now by his labours suddenly he brought the same, all estates, but especially the poor commons, can witness. Thy image, O Lord, did so clearly shine in that personage, that the devil, and the wicked to whom he is prince, could not abide it; and so to punish our sins and ingratitude, (who did not rightly esteem so precious a gift,) thou hast permitted him to fall, to our great grief, in the hands of cruel and traitorous murderers. He is at rest, O Lord: we are left in extreme misery."‡

Only a few days before this, and after the murder was fully concerted, the Abbot of Kilwinning, Gavin Hamilton, applied to Knox to intercede with the Regent in behalf of some of his kinsmen, who were confined for practising against the Government. Knox signified his readiness to do all in his power for the relief of any of that family who were willing to own the authority of the King and Regent;

* Smetoni Responsio ad Hamiltonii Dialogum, p. 116.

† "Upon the 22 of Maii, the Sherife of Linlithgow, the laird of Innerweek, James Hamilton of Bothelhaugh, and six others, were put to an assyse; their hands bound; and pardoned, at the request of Mr. Knox, whereof he sore repented; for Bothwelhaugh killed the Regent shortlie after," Cald. MS. ad ann. 1568.

‡ Cald. MS. ii. 150. He is said to have added this to his usual prayers after dinner and supper. But in a volume of Calderwood's History, in the Advocates' Library in Edinburgh, (which has been transcribed more early than any copy which I have seen.) these words are scored out; and, it is introduced as the prayer which he offered up in public, the day on which he was informed of the Regent's death.

but he entreated the Abbot not to abuse him, by employing his services, if any mischief were intended against the Regent ; for “ I protest,” said he, “ before God, who is the only witness now betwixt us, that if there be any thing attempted, by any of that surname, against the person of that man, in that case I discharge myself to you and them for ever.” After the assassination, the Abbot sent to desire another interview ; but Knox refused to see him, and desired the messenger to say to him, “ I have not now the Regent to make suit unto for the Hamiltons.”*

At this time there was handed about a fabricated account of a pretended conference, held by the late Regent with Lord Lindsay, Wishart of Pitarrow, the tutor of Pitcur, James Macgill, and Knox ; in which they were represented as advising him to set aside the young king, and place the crown on his own head. To give it the greater air of credibility, the modes of expression peculiar to each of the persons, were carefully imitated in the speeches put into their mouths. The design of it evidently was to lessen the odium of the murder, and the veneration of the people for the memory of Murray ; but it was universally regarded as an impudent and gross forgery. Its fabricator was Thomas Maitland, a young man of talents, but corrupted by his brother the Secretary, who before this had engaged himself to the Queen’s party, and was suspected of having a deep hand in the plot for cutting off the Regent.†

On the day on which the Weekly Conference was held in Edinburgh, the same person slipped into the pulpit a schedule, containing words to this effect, “ Take up now the man whom you accounted another God, and consider the end to which his ambition hath brought him.” Knox, whose turn it was to preach that day, on entering the pulpit took up the paper, supposing it to be a note requesting the prayers of the congregation for a sick person, and having read it, laid it aside without any apparent emotion. But towards the conclusion of his sermon, after deploring the loss which the Church and Commonwealth had recently sustain-

* Cald. MS. ad ann. 1570.

† Cald. MS. ii. 151-157.

ed, and declaring the account of the Conference, which had been circulated, to be false and calumnious, he said that there were persons who rejoiced at the treasonable murder, and scrupled not to make it the subject of their merriment; particularly there was one present, who had thrown in a writing insulting over an event which was the cause of grief to all good men. "That wicked man, whosoever he be, shall not go unpunished, and shall die where there shall be none to lament him." Maitland, when he went home, said to his sister, that the preacher was raving, when he spake in such a manner of a person who was unknown to him; but she, understanding that her brother had written the line, reproved him, saying with tears, that none of that man's denunciations were wont to prove idle. Spotswood (who had his information personally from the mouth of that lady) says, that Maitland died in Italy, "having no known person to attend him."*

Upon Tuesday the 14th of February, the Regent's corpse was brought from the palace of Holyrood House, and interred in the south aisle of the collegiate church of St. Giles'. Before the funeral, Knox preached a sermon on these words, "Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord." Three thousand persons were dissolved in tears before him, while he described the Regent's virtues, and bewailed his loss.† Buchanan paid his tribute to the memory of the deceased, by writing the inscription placed on his monument, with that expressive simplicity and brevity which are dictated by genuine grief.‡ A convention of the nobility was held after the funeral, at which it was resolved to avenge his death; but different opinions were entertained as to the mode of doing this, and the Commons

* Spotswood, p. 234. Mackenzie labours to overthrow the Archbishop's narrative of this affair. *Lives of Scottish Writers*, iii. 192, 196. But whatever opinion we may form about the prediction, it cannot be doubted that Spotswood had the best information to proceed upon as to the facts which he relates. Nor has Mackenzie any other authority for what he says about the death of Maitland, except the Archbishop's, who must have been satisfied that what he says in the account of Smeaton was not inconsistent with what he had written as to Knox's denunciation.

† Cald. MS. ii. 157.

‡ The inscription, engraved on brass, is yet to be seen; a copy of which shall be inserted in Note F. Period Seventh. But Buchanan has, in his *History*, reared to him "a monument more durable than brass," which will preserve his memory as long as the language in which it is written shall continue to be understood, and as long as a picture taken from life shall be preferred to the distorted representations of a jaundiced imagination. Nor has he neglected to celebrate the Regent in his verses. *Epigram*, lib. ii. 29. iii. 7, 9, 18.

complained loudly of the remissness with which it was carried into execution. The General Assembly, at their first meeting, testified their detestation of the crime, by ordering the assassin to be publicly excommunicated in all the chief towns of the kingdom, and appointing the same process to be used against all who should afterwards be convicted of accession to the murder.*

During the sitting of the convention, Knox received a number of letters from his acquaintances in England, expressive of their high regard for the character of the Regent, and their sorrow at so grievous a loss.† One of his correspondents, Dr. Laurence Humphrey,‡ urged him to write a memoir of the deceased. Had he done this, he would no doubt, from his intimate acquaintance with him, have communicated a number of particulars of which we must now be content to remain ignorant. But though he had been disposed to undertake this task, the state of his health must have prevented its execution.

The grief which he indulged, in consequence of this mournful event, and the confusions which followed it, preyed upon his spirits, and injured his constitution.§ In the month of October, he had a stroke of apoplexy, which affected his speech to a considerable degree. Upon this occasion, his enemies exulted, and circulated the most exaggerated tales. The report ran through England as well as Scot-

* Spotswood, 235.

† Among others, he received letters from Christopher Goodman, and John Willock. *Cald. ut supra.* It appears from this, that Willock had before this time returned to England, after he was recalled from it by the General Assembly in 1568. I find no mention of that Reformer, after this period, by any of the writers of that age. A late author has very wantonly attempted to load the memory of this excellent man with a capital crime. He gives the following extract from the paper office, 22d April, 1590, "Twa men, the ane namyt Johnne Gibsonne, Scottishman, preacher, and the other Johnne Willokis, now baith lying in prison at Leicester, were convicted by a jury of robbery." "The last of these convicts," says he, "was the reforming co-adjutor of Knox." Chalmers's *Life of Ruddiman*, p. 307. What evidence has this author for saying so? Nothing but the sameness of the name! Just as if a person, on reading in the public papers of one George Chalmers who was convicted of a robbery, (no unlikely thing,)

should immediately take it into his head that this was, and could be no other, than the author of the *Life of Ruddiman and Caledonia*! It is evident that the second convict was no preacher, else this designation would have been added to his name, as well as to that of the first. It is probable that Willock, who was a preacher as early as 1540, was not alive in 1590: it is utterly incredible that he should then have been in a condition to act as a robber. But it is paying too much regard to such a charge to bring exculpatory proof.

‡ In the copy of *Cald. MS.* belonging to the Church of Scotland, the name is written Winfred: but in the copy in the Advocates' Library it is Umfrede. The person meant is evidently Dr. Laurence Humphrey, (Umfredius,) professor of divinity, and head of one of the colleges in the University of Oxford. This learned man was a Puritan, but enjoyed the patronage of Secretary Cecil. *Strype's Annals*, i. 421, 430-432.

§ Smetoni Respons. ad Hamilt. p. 116.

land, that John Knox would never preach nor speak more ; that his face was turned into his neck ; that he was become the most deformed creature ever seen ; that he was actually dead ;*—a most unequivocal expression of the high consideration in which he was held, and which our Reformer received in common with some other great men of his age.†

PERIOD VIII.

FROM HIS BEING STRUCK WITH APOPLEXY, IN THE YEAR 1570,
TO HIS DEATH, IN 1572.

THOSE who flattered themselves that the Reformer's disorder might prove mortal, were disappointed ; for he was restored to the use of his speech, and was able, in the course of a few days, to resume preaching, at least on Sabbath.‡ He never recovered, however, from the debility which the apoplectic stroke had produced.

The confusions which he had augured from the death of the good Regent soon broke out, and again spread the flames of civil discord through the nation. The Earl of Lennox, grandfather to the young Prince, was made Regent of the kingdom ; but his weakness and want of talents, added strength to the party of the Queen. The Hamiltons openly raised her standard ; whilst Kirkaldy of Grange, governor of the castle of Edinburgh, who had been corrupted by Maitland, after concealing his defection for a time under the flag of neutrality, declared himself on the same side, and became the principal agent in attempting to overturn the government which he had been so zealous in erecting. The defection of Grange was a source

* Bannatyne's Journal, p. 54. Cald. MS. n. 206. Bannatyne says " the disorder was a kind of apoplexia, called by the phisitiones resolutione ;" probably a more gentle stroke of the disorder, attended with relaxation of the system.

† In 1556, Calvin was suddenly seized in the pulpit with a fever, which confined him to his bed for a considerable time, and from which it was not thought he would recover.

On that occasion the Popish clergy of Noyon (his native city) met, and, rather prematurely, gave public thanks to God for his death. Melch. Adam, Vit. Exter. Theol. p. 93.—
" Plusieurs grands hommes (says Senebier) ont partagé cet honneur avec Calvin, et ont eu, comme lui, la satisfaction de connoître la profonde estime qu'on avoit conçue pour eux." Histoire Littéraire de Geneve, tom. 1. 228,

‡ Bannatyne's Journal, p. 55.

of great injury to the inhabitants of Edinburgh, and of distress to Knox. He had a warm affection for the governor, not only from their acquaintance in the Castle of St. Andrew's, and during their confinement on board the French galleys, but also on account of the important services which he had rendered to the Reformation; and he continued always to think that he was at bottom a sincere friend to religion. Under this conviction, he spared no pains in endeavouring to prevent him from renouncing his fidelity to the King, and afterwards to reclaim him from his apostacy. But in both he was unsuccessful.

In the end of the year 1570, he was personally involved in a disagreeable quarrel with Kirkaldy of Grange. A servant belonging to the castle, having been imprisoned by the magistrates on a charge of murder, the governor sent a party from the garrison, who forced the tolbooth, and carried off the criminal. Knox, in his sermon on the following Sabbath, condemned this riot, and violation of the house of justice. Had it been done by the authority of a blood-thirsty man, and one who had no fear of God, he would not, he said, have been so much moved at it; but he was affected to think that one of whom all good men had formed so great expectations, should have fallen so far as to act such a part; one who, when formerly in prison, had refused to purchase his own liberty by the shedding of blood. An exaggerated report of this censure being conveyed to the castle, the governor, in great rage, made his complaint, first to Knox's colleague, and afterwards formally to the kirk-session, that he had been traduced as a murderer; and required that his character should be vindicated as publicly as it had been calumniated. Knox explained, and vindicated what he had said in the pulpit. On a subsequent Sabbath, Grange, who had been absent from the church nearly a whole year, came down to St. Giles's, accompanied with a number of the persons who had been active in the murder and riot. Looking upon this as an attempt to overawe the authorities, and outbrave the scandal which his conduct had given, Knox took occasion to discourse particularly of the sin of forgetting benefits received from God, and warned his hearers against confiding

in the divine mercy while they were knowingly transgressing any of the commandments, or proudly defending their transgression.

Kirkaldy was much incensed at these admonitions, which he considered as levelled at him; and in speaking of the preacher, made use of very threatening language. The report having spread that the governor of the castle was become a sworn enemy to Knox, and intended to kill him, several of the noblemen and gentlemen of Kyle and Cunningham sent a letter to Grange, in which, after mentioning his former appearances for religion, and the reports which had reached their ears, they warned him against doing any thing to the injury or prejudice of the man whom "God had made the first planter and chief waterer of his church among them," and protested that "his death and life were as dear to them as their own deaths and lives."*

Knox was not to be deterred by threatenings, from doing what he considered to be his duty. He persisted in warning his hearers to avoid all participation with those who, by supporting the pretensions of the Queen, prevented the punishment of notorious crimes, and sought the overthrow of the King's authority, and the Reformed religion. When the General Assembly met in March 1571, anonymous libels were thrown into the assembly-house, and placards fixed on the church-door, accusing him of seditious railing against their sovereign the Queen, refusing to pray for her welfare and conversion, representing her as a reprobate, whose repentance was hopeless, and uttering imprecations against her. The assembly having, by public intimation, required the accusers to come forward and substantiate their charges, another anonymous bill appeared, promising that the writer would do so against next assembly, if the accused continued his offensive speeches, and was "then law-byding and not fugitive according to his accustomed manner."

Several of his friends dealt with him to pass over these malicious libels in silence, but he refused to comply with this advice, considering that the credit of his ministry was

* Bannatyne's Journal, p. 67-87.

implicated. Accordingly, he produced them in the pulpit, and returned a particular answer to the accusations which they contained. That he had charged the late Queen with the crimes of which she had been notoriously guilty, he granted; but that he had railed against her, they would not, he said, be able to prove, without proving Isaiah, Jeremiah, and other inspired writers, to be railers. "He had learned plainly and boldly to call wickedness by its own terms, a fig a fig, and a spade a spade." He had never called the Queen reprobate, nor said that her repentance was impossible; but he had affirmed that pride and repentance could not remain long together in one heart. He had prayed that God, for the comfort of his church, would oppose his power to her pride, and confound her and her assistants, in their impiety: this prayer, let them call it imprecation or execration, as they pleased, had stricken, and yet would strike, whoever supported her. To the charge of not praying for her, he answered, "I am not bound to pray for her in this place, for sovereign to me she is not; and I let them understand that I am not a man of law that has my tongue to sell for silver, or favour of the world."* What title she now had, or ever had to the government, he would not dispute: the estates had deprived her of it, and it belonged to them to answer for this: as for him, he had hitherto lived in obedience to all lawful authority within the kingdom. To the insinuation that he might not be "law-byding" against next assembly, he replied, that his life was in the custody of Him who had preserved him to that age at which he was not apt to flee, nor could any yet accuse him of leaving the people of his charge, except at their own command.†

* Crawford, in his *Memoirs of Scotland*, p. 186. Edin. anno 1706, among other things disgraceful to the Reformers, says that they openly avowed, on this occasion, "That to pray for, or forgive our real or reputed enemies, was no part of a Christian's duty." It is sufficient to say, that there is not one word of this in the "authentick MS." from which he professes that his memoirs were "faithfully publish'd." See *Historie and Life of King James the Sext*, p. 113, 114. The public are under great obligations to Mr. Malcolm Laing, for exposing this literary forgery, which has continued so long to impose upon our most acute and industrious historians.

† Touching these "famous lybells," Knox addressed the following letter to the General Assembly, which met at Stirling in August, 1571: "Master John Knox Epistle,—The mightie Spirit of comfort, wisdom, and concord in God, remaine ever with yow. Deare Brethren, if abilitie of body would have sufferit, I sould not have troubled yow with this my rude inditement. I have not forgot what was layed to my charge, be famous lybells, the last Assembly, and what a brag of adversaries maid personall to accuse at this Assembly, qwhilk I pray you patiently to heare, and judge of me as ye will answer to God; ffor unto yow upon that neid, submit I myself, being assurit

After these defences, his enemies fled, as their last resort, to an attack upon his "Blast of the Trumpet," and accused him of inconsistency in writing against female government, and yet praying for Queen Elizabeth, and seeking her aid against his native country. This accusation he also met in the pulpit, and refuted with great spirit. After vindicating his consistency, he concludes in the following manner: "One thing, in the end, I may not pretermitt, that is, to *give him a lie in his throat*, that either dare or will say, that ever I sought support against my native country. What I have been to my country, albeit this unthankful age will not know, yet the ages to come will be compelled to bear witness to the truth. And thus I cease, requiring of all men that has to oppose any thing against me, that he will do it so plainly as I make myself and all my doings manifest to the world; for to me it seems a thing most unreasonable, that, in my decrepid age, I shall be compelled to fight against *shadows and howlets*, that dare not abide the light."*

The conduct of our Reformer at this time, affords a striking display of the unextinguishable ardour of his mind. He was so debilitated in body, that he never went abroad except on Sabbath days, to preach in the forenoon, and could not even mount the pulpit without assistance.† Previous to the breaking out of the last disturbances, he had given up attendance upon Church Courts, and ceased to take any active part in public affairs. But whenever he saw

that I neither offendit God nor good men in any thing that hitherto hes beene layed to my charge. And now, brethren, because the decay of naturall strength threatens unto me certaine and suddaine departure frae the miserie of this life; of love and conscience I exhort yow, yea in the feare of God I charge and command yow, that ye take heed to yourselfis, and to the flock over the qwhilk God hes placit yow pastors. To discourse of the behaviour of yourselfis, I may not; but command yow to be faithfull to the flock, I dare not ceass. Unfaithfull and trytors to the flock shall ye be before the Lord Jesus, if that with your consent, directly or indirectly, ye suffer unworthie men to be thrust into the ministrie of the Kirk, under what pretence that ever it be. Remember the Judge before whom ye must make account, and resist that tyrannie as ye wald avoyd hell fyre. This battell, I grant, will be hard; but, in the second poynt, it will be harder; that is, that with the lyke upright-

ness and strength in God, ye withstand the merciless devourers of the patrimonie of the Kirk. Give men will spoyll, let them doe it to their owne perrell and condemnatione; but communicat ye not with their sins, of what estate that ever they be; neither be consent nor yet be silence, but with publick protestatione, make this knowne unto the world, that ye are innocent of sic robberrie, qwhilk will, or it be lang, provock God's vengeance upon the committers thereof, whereof ye will seek redress of God and man. God give you wisdom and stout courage in so just a cause, and me ane happie end. At St. Androis, 3d August, 1571. Your brother in Christ Jesus, Johne Knox. Booke of the Universall Kirk, Peterkin's edit. pp. 128, 129.

* The accusation and defences may be seen at full length in his secretary, Bannatyne's, Journal, p. 99, 120.

† Bannatyne, p. 77.

the welfare of the Church and Commonwealth threatened, he forgot his resolutions and his infirmities, and entered into the cause with all the keenness of his more vigorous days. Whether the public proceedings of the nation, or his own conduct, were arraigned and condemned, whether the attacks upon them were open or clandestine, he stood prepared to repel them; and convinced the adversaries, that they could not accomplish their designs without opposition, as long as he was able to move a tongue.*

His situation in Edinburgh became very critical in April 1571, when Grange received the Hamiltons, with their forces, into the castle. Their inveteracy against him was so great, that his friends were obliged to watch his house during the night. They offered to form a guard for his protection when he went abroad; but the governor of the castle forbade this, as implying a suspicion of him, and offered to send Melvill, one of his officers, to conduct him to and from Church. "He wold gif the woulf the wedder to keip," says Bannatyne. At the request of the citizens, Kirkaldy applied to the Duke and his friends for protection; but they refused to pledge their word for his safety, because "there were many rascals among them who loved him not, and might do him harm without their knowledge." Intimations were often given him of threatenings against his life; and one evening, as he sat in his house, a musket ball was fired in at the window, and lodged in the roof of the room. It happened that he sat at the time in a different part of the room from that which he usually occupied, otherwise the ball, from the direction which it took, must have struck him.† Upon this a number of the inhabitants,

* The lively interest which he continued to take in public affairs, is apparent from the letters of his correspondence. Captain Crawford of Jordanhill sent him, at his desire, a minute account of the taking of Dumbarton Castle in 1571, with an inventory of the arms, ammunition, and provisions found in it. Bannatyne, 123. There are two letters to him from Alexander Hay, clerk of the Privy Council, informing him of the most important transactions in England, and on the Continent. Ibid. p. 294-302. From these letters, (Dec. 1 and 14, 1571,) it also appears, that he was then engaged in continuing his History, and had applied to Hay for materials. From the public papers, mentioned in one of the letters, it would seem that he had advanced,

in writing, to the period between 1567 and 1570, of which nothing now remains. Ibid. 298, 299. The following clause, in a prayer composed by him about this time, upon finding himself unable to finish the history, shews the important light in which he viewed that work:—"Rease thou up the spreitis of some to observe thy notable workis, faithfullie to comit the same to writ, that the prosperities [posterities] to come may praise thy holie name, for the greatt graces plentifulle powred foorth upon this unthankfull generatione. Johne Knox, trusting end of trawell." Ibid. 129.

† Cald. MS. ad ann. 1572. Life prefixed to History, anno 1644.

along with his colleague, repaired to him, and renewed the request which they had formerly made, that he would remove from Edinburgh, to a place where his life would be in greater safety, until such time as the Queen's party should evacuate the town. But he refused to yield to them, apprehending that his enemies wished to intimidate him into flight, that they might carry on their designs more quietly, and then accuse him of cowardice. Being unable to persuade him by any other means, they at last had recourse to an argument which prevailed. They told him that they were determined to defend him, if attacked, at the peril of their lives; and if blood was shed in the quarrel, which was highly probable, they would leave it on his head. Upon this, he consented, "sore against his will," to leave that city.*

On the 5th of May he left Edinburgh, and crossing the firth at Leith, travelled by short stages to St. Andrew's, which he had chosen as the place of his retreat.† Alexander Gordon, bishop of Galloway, occupied his pulpit. He preached and prayed in a manner more acceptable to the Queen's party than his predecessor,‡ but little to the satisfaction of the people, who despised him on account of his weakness, and disliked him for supplanting their favourite pastor. The Church of Edinburgh was for a time dissolved. A great number of its most respectable members either were driven from the city, or left it through dissatisfaction. The celebration of the Lord's Supper was suspended. During a whole week "there was neither preaching nor prayer, neither was there any sound of bell heard in all the town, except the ringing of the cannon."§

Amidst the extreme hostility with which both parties were inflamed, and which produced many of the evils of intestine war, as well as several disgraceful acts of mutual retaliation, various proofs were exhibited of the personal antipathy which the Queen's adherents bore to the Re-

* Bannatyne, 139-146.

† Bannatyne, 144, 146.

‡ The principles upon which the Bishop vindicated the authority of the Queen, and the duty of praying for her in the pulpit, shew the strong and universal opinion of her guilt at that time. He did not venture to insinuate

her innocence, although the town was at that time full of armed men, enlisted under her banners. Bannatyne, 181, 182.

§ Bannatyne, 144, 169, 170. Hist. of King James the Sixth, 123, 124. Knox's Epistle to his Brethren of the Church of Edinburgh, now dispersed. Streveling, 1571.

former. An inhabitant of Leith was assaulted, and his body mutilated, because he was of the same name with him. A servant of John Craig, being met one day by a reconnoitring party, and asked who was his master, answered in his trepidation, "Mr Knox," upon which he was seized; and although he immediately corrected his mistake, they desired him to "hold at his first master," and dragged him to prison. Having fortified St. Giles's steeple, to overawe the town, the soldiers baptized one of the cannons by the name of Knox, which they were so fond of firing, that it burst, killed two of the party, and wounded others.* They circulated the most ridiculous tales respecting his conduct at St. Andrew's. John Law, the letter-carrier of St. Andrew's, being in the Castle of Edinburgh, "the ladie Home and utheris wald neidis thraip in his face, that" John Knox "was banist the said toune, becaus that in the yarde he had reasit *sum sanctis*, amongis whome thair came up *the devill with hornis*, which, when his servant Richart sawe, [he] ran woode, and so died."†

Although he was now free from personal danger, Knox did not find St. Andrew's that peaceful retreat which he had expected. The friends of Kirkaldy and Sir James Balfour were a considerable party in that quarter, and the Hamiltons had their partisans both in the University, and among the ministry. These were thorns in the Reformer's side, and made his situation uneasy as long as he resided among them. Having left Edinburgh, because he could not be permitted to exonerate his conscience, by testifying against the designs of persons whom he regarded as conspirators against the legal Government of the country and the security of the Reformed religion, it was not to be expected that he would preserve silence on this subject at St. Andrew's. Accordingly, in the discourses which he preached on the eleventh chapter of Daniel's prophecy, he frequently took occasion to advert to the transactions of his own time, and to inveigh against the murder of the late King and the Regent. This was very grating to the ears of the opposite faction, particularly to Robert and Archibald Hamil-

* Bannatyne, 154, 240, 322.

† Ibid 309, 310. "Gif this had been thair

first inventit lie (says the same Richart) I wald never have bleckit paper for it."

ton, the former a minister of the city, and the latter a professor in one of the colleges. Displeased with Knox's censures of his relations, and aware of his popularity in the pulpit, Robert Hamilton circulated in private, that it did not become him to exclaim so loudly against murderers, for he had seen his subscription, along with that of the Earl of Murray, to a bond for assassinating Darnley. But when the Reformer applied to him by letter, and threatened to bring his conduct before the Church, unless he gave satisfaction for the slander which he had propagated, Hamilton denied that he had ever spoken such words.

Archibald Hamilton being complained of for withdrawing from Knox's sermons, and accusing him of intolerable railing, endeavoured to bring the matter under the cognizance of the masters of the university, among whom his influence was great.* Knox did not scruple to give an account of his conduct before the professors, for their satisfaction; but he judged it necessary to enter a protestation that his appearance should not invalidate the liberty of the pulpit, nor the authority of the regular church-courts, to whom, and not to any university, the judgment of religious doctrine belonged.† This incident accounts for the zeal with which he expresses himself on that subject, in his letter to the General Assembly which met in August, 1572; in which he exhorts them, above all things, to preserve the Church from the bondage of the universities, and not to exempt them from ecclesiastical jurisdiction, or allow them to sit in judgment on the doctrines taught from the pulpit.‡

Another source of distress to the Reformer, at this time, was a scheme which the courtiers had formed for altering the polity of the Church, and securing to themselves the principal part of the ecclesiastical revenues. This plan

* Archibald Hamilton a short time after this left Scotland, and going to France, made a recantation of the Protestant religion. As an evidence of the sincerity of his conversion, he published the dialogue *De Confusione Calvinianæ Sectæ apud Scotos*; a book which I have frequently referred to, and which strikingly exemplifies the adage, *Omnis apostata osor acerrimus sui ordinis*. In the copious abuse of Knox with which it abounds, we are reminded of the present quarrel. Thomas Smeton, Principal of the University of Glas-

gow, (who had lately left the Roman Catholic communion,) published an elegant and masterly reply to it, which exhibits, among other things, the great contrast between a man who has exchanged a corrupt system of religion for the sake of a more pure, and one who has taken the opposite course.

† *Hamiltonii Dialog.* p. 61. *Smetonii Respons. ad Hamilt. Dialog.* p. 90, 99. *Bannatyne*, 383, 385

‡ *Bannatyne*, 364.

seems to have been concerted under the regency of Lennox ; it began to be put into execution during that of Mar, and was afterwards completed by Morton. We have already had occasion to notice the aversion of many of the nobility to the Book of Discipline, and the principal source from which this aversion sprung. While the Earl of Murray administered the government, he prevented any new encroachments upon the rights of the Church ; but the succeeding regents were either less friendly to them, or less able to bridle the avarice of the more powerful nobles. Several of the richest benefices becoming vacant by the decease or sequestration of the Popish incumbents, who had been permitted to retain them, it was necessary to determine in what manner they should be disposed of for the future. The Church had uniformly required that their revenues should be divided, and applied to the support of the religious and literary establishments ; but with this demand the courtiers were by no means disposed to comply. At the same time, the total secularization of them was deemed too bold a step ; nor could laymen, with any shadow of consistency, or by a valid title, hold benefices which the law declared to be ecclesiastical. The expedient resolved on was, that the bishoprics and other livings should be presented to certain ministers, who, previous to their admission, should make over the principal part of their revenues to such noblemen as had obtained the patronage of them from the Court.

The Archbishopric of St. Andrew's, vacant by the execution of Hamilton after the capture of Dumbarton castle, (April 2, 1571,) was gifted to the Earl of Morton, who presented John Douglas, rector of the university, to that See, entering into a private agreement with him respecting its revenues. Against this proceeding the commissioners of the General Assembly held at Stirling, August 1571, protested ; but the influence of Morton prevailed, in spite of the opposition of the clergy, and of the more zealous and disinterested barons. The new scheme for seizing on the ecclesiastical livings, was confirmed in Parliament ; bishoprics and other great benefices were now publicly conferred on noblemen, minors, and other persons, wholly unquali-

fied for the ministry. Pluralities were multiplied, and the Church courts interfered with in the exercise of their jurisdiction.

These transactions having excited great discontent in the country, the Regent and Council summoned a convention of certain ministers and superintendents, which was held at Leith in Jannary 1572. The professed object of the meeting was to consult about an order that might prove more acceptable; but through the influence of the Court, it was agreed that the name and office of archbishop, bishop, &c. should be continued during the King's minority; and that qualified persons from among the ministers should be advanced to these dignities. No greater power, however, was allotted to them than to superintendents, with whom they were equally subject to the Assemblies of the Church.* The subject was resumed in the Assembly at Perth, (August 1572,) which passed the following resolution:—"That the regulations contained certain titles, such as archbishop, dean, archdean, chancellor, and chapter, which savoured of Popery, and were scandalous and offensive to their ears; and that the whole Assembly, including the commissioners which had met at Leith, unanimously protested that they did not approve of these titles, that they submitted to the regulations merely as an interim arrangement, and that they would exert themselves to obtain a more perfect order from the Regent and Council." Such was the origin and nature of that species of Episcopacy which was introduced into the Reformed Church of Scotland, in the minority of James VI. It does not appear to have proceeded in any degree from predilection to hierarchical government, but from the desire which the courtiers had to secure to themselves the revenues of the Church. This was emphatically expressed by the name of *tulchan bishops*,† which was commonly applied to those who were at that time admitted to the office.

Encroachments were, however, made upon the jurisdic-

* Calderwood, De reg. eccl. Scotie. relatio, p. 8, anno 1618, and epist. Philad. Vind. apud Altare Damasc. p. 727, 729. Lugd. Batav. 1708. Petrie, part ii. p. 372, 374.

† A Tulchan is a calf's skin stuffed with straw, set up to make the cow give her milk freely.

tion of the Church in different ways, particularly by the presentation of unqualified persons, who were sometimes continued in the enjoyment of livings, without the admission of the Church ; by the granting of pluralities, and even by civil courts assuming the cognizance of causes of an ecclesiastical nature. Of all of these, we find the ministers complaining about this time.*

Knox, as might have been expected, did not fail to oppose these abuses, and encroachments on the rights and property of the Church. In a letter addressed to the General Assembly, held at Stirling in August, 1571, he warned his brethren of the conflict which he foresaw they would have to maintain, and exhorted them to resist to the uttermost. The same keen indignation at the avarice of the nobility he expressed in writing to Wishart of Pittar-row. “ What order God shall put into the mind of the authority to take for staying of their present troubles, I know not, but ever still my dull heart feareth the worst, and that because no appearance of right conversion unto God, but both the parties stands as it were fighting against God himself in justification of their wickedness. The murderers assembled in the castle of Edinburgh, and their assistants, justify all that they have done to be well and rightly done ; and the contrar party as little repenteth the troubling and oppressing of the poor kirk of God as ever they did ; for if they can have the kirk-lands to be annexed to their houses, they appear to take no more care of the instruction of the ignorant, and of the feeding of the flock of Jesus Christ, than ever did the Papists, whom we have condemned, and yet are worse ourselves in that behalf ; for they, according to their blind zeal, spared nothing that either might have maintained or holden up that which they took for God’s service ; but we, alace ! in the midds of the light forgett the heaven and draw to the earth.”

It has been insinuated, that Knox approved of the resolutions of the convention at Leith to restore the Episcopal office ; and the articles sent by him to the General Assembly, August 1572, have been appealed to as a proof of

* See Note A. Period Eighth.

this.* But all that can be deduced from these articles is, that he desired the conditions and limitations agreed upon by that convention, to be strictly observed in the election of bishops, in opposition to the granting of bishoprics to laymen, (of which one glaring instance had just taken place, in giving the bishopric of Ross to Lord Methven,) and also to the simoniacal pactions which the ministers made with the nobles, on receiving presentations. Provided one of the propositions made by him to the Assembly had been enforced, and the bishops had been bound to give an account of the whole of their rents, and either to support ministers in the particular places from which they derived these, or else to pay into the funds of the Church the sums requisite for this purpose, it is evident that the mercenary views both of the patrons and presentees would have been defeated, and the Church would have gained her object, the use of the Episcopal revenues. It was the prospect of this, that induced some honest ministers to agree to the proposed regulations, at the convention held in Leith. But it required a greater portion of disinterested firmness than falls to the most of men, to act upon this principle,† and the nobles were able to find, even at this period, a sufficient number of pliant, needy, or covetous ministers, to be the partners or the dupes of their avarice.

Though our Reformer had recommended the appointment of superintendents at the first establishment of the Reformation, and was of opinion that a power to inspect congregations, within a particular district, might be delegated to some minister; there is no reason to think that on this occasion he departed from his principles, which, as we have already seen, were hostile to Episcopacy. At this very time he received a letter from his friend Beza, expressing his satisfaction that they had banished the order of bishops from the Scottish Church, and admonishing him and his colleagues to beware of suffering it to re-enter under the deceitful pretext of preserving unity.‡ In the

* Robertson's History of Scotland, ii. 358, 359. Lond. 1809.

† I have read somewhere (though I cannot at present find my authority) that Mr. Robert Pont, when offered a bishopric, took the advice of the General Assembly as to accepting

it, and professed his readiness to apply its funds to the support of the ministry within the diocese.

‡ In the same letter Beza commends Knox for establishing not merely the purity of doctrine in the Scottish Church, but also disci-

General Assembly, which met at St. Andrew's in March 1572, the "making of bishops" was introduced, and he "opponit himself directlie" unto it.*

He had an opportunity of declaring his mind more publicly on this head, at the installation of Douglas as Archbishop of St. Andrew's, who had through the Earl of Morton obtained a gift of that See from the Crown.† Knox was offended with this appointment in every point of view. Having preached on the day appointed for the inauguration of the new archbishop, (February 13th, 1572,) Morton desired him to preside in the service; but he positively refused, and pronounced an anathema against both the donor and the receiver of the dignity. The provost of St. Salvador's having said that his conduct proceeded from disappointment, because the bishopric had not been conferred on himself, he, on the following Sabbath, repelled the invidious charge. He had refused, he said, a greater bishopric than that of St. Andrew's, which he might have had by the favour of greater men than Douglas had his.‡ What he had spoken was for the exoneration of his conscience, that the Church of Scotland might not be subject to that order, especially after a very different one had been established in the Book of Discipline, had been subscribed by the nobility, and ratified by Parliament. He lamented also that a burden should be laid upon one old man, which twenty men of the best gifts could not sustain.§ At the meeting of the General Assembly, he not only entered a formal protest against this procedure, but opposed himself directly to the making of bishops. In his private letter to Wishart of Pittarrow, which has already been referred to, as well as in his public letter to the Assembly which met at Stirling in 1571, he expressed his strong disapprobation of the new plans for defrauding the Church of her patrimony, and encroaching upon her free jurisdiction.¶

pline and good order, without which the former could not be preserved for any time, Bezæ Epistol. Theol. ep. lxxix. p. 344, 355. edit. 1572.

* Mr. James Melville's Diary, p. 26. MS. Adv. Lib.

† Ibid. p. 27.

‡ Meaning the See of Rochester, offered him by Edward VI. of England and his Council. See Note C. Period Second.

§ Bannatyne, 321, 324, 375. Cald. MS. ii. 269, 338, 340. Mr. James Melvill says, that he spake against the appointment of Douglas, "bot sparinglie, because he lovit the man," and rather in the language of regret than of censure. MS. Diary, p. 27.

¶ Buik of the Universall Kirk, p. 53. Cald. MS. ii. 269, 270, 280, 281. Petrie, part ii. 370. Spots. 258. Collier says, that in the letter to the Assembly at Stirling, "there are

While he was engaged in these contests, his bodily strength was every day sensibly decaying. Yet he continued to preach, although unable to walk to the pulpit without assistance; and, when warmed with his subject, he forgot his weakness, and electrified the audience with his eloquence. James Melville, afterwards minister of Anstruther, was then a student at the college, and one of his constant hearers. The account which he has given of his appearance, as well as of the transactions concerning the bishops, during his residence in St. Andrew's, is exceedingly striking; and as any translation would enfeeble it, we shall give it in his own words.* "Of all the benefits I haid that year [1571,] was the coming of that maist notable profet and apostle of our nation, Mr. Jhone Knox, to St. Andrew's, who, be the faction of the Queen occupeing the castell and town of Edinbrugh, was compellit to remove therefra, with a number of the best, and chusit to come to St. Andrew's. I heard him teache there the prophecies of Daniel, that simmer, and the wintar following. I haid my pen and my litle buike, and tuk away sic things as I could comprehend. In the opening up of his text, he was moderat the space of half an houre; but when he enterit to application, he made me so to *grew*,† and tremble, that I could not hald a pen to wryt. I hard him oftymes vtter these thretenings in the hicht of ther pryde, quhilk the eis of monie saw cleirlie brought to pass within few yeirs vpon the Captean of that Castle, (Kirkaldy,) the Hamiltones, and the Quein hirself. He was very weik. I saw him, everie day of his doctrine, go *hulie and fear*,‡ with a furring of marticks about his neck, a staff in the an hand, and gud godlie Richart Ballanden, his servand, halding up the uther *oxter*,§ from the abbey to the parish kirk, and be the said Richart, and another servant, lifted up to the pulpit, whar he behovit to lean, at his first entrie; bot, er he haid done with his sermone, he was sae active and vigorous,

some passages not unbecoming a person of integrity and courage," ii. 533. Those who are acquainted with the spirit of this historian, will think this high praise from such a quarter.

* The interesting passages in Melville's

Diary that allude to our Reformer, are here quoted at much greater length than in any preceding edition of Knox's Life.

† i. e. thrill.

‡ i. e. slowly and warily.

§ i. e. arm-pit.

that he was lyk to *ding the pulpit in blads*,* and flie out of it."†

"He ludgit down in the Abbay besyde our Collage, and our Primarius, Mr. James Wilkie, our Regents, Mr. Nicol Dalgleise, Mr. Wilyeam Colace, and Mr. Jhone Daudsone, went in ordinarlie to his grace efter denner and supper. Our Regent taried all the vacans to heir him, whowbeit he haid vrgent effeares of his brother sonnes to handle, to whom he was tutor. Mr. Knox wald sum tyme com in and repose him in our collage yeard, and call ws schollars vnto him, and bless ws, and exhort ws to knaw God and his wark in our contrey, and stand be the guid cause, to vse our tyme weill, and lern the guid instructiones, and follow the guid exemple of our maisters. Our haill collage, maisters and schollars, war sound and zelus for the guid cause; the vther twa colleges nocht sa; for in the New Collage, whowbeit Mr. Jhone Dowglass, then Rector, was gude aneuche, the thrie vther maisters and sum of the Regentes war euill myndit, v^z. Mrs. Robert, Archbald and Jhone Hamiltons, (wharof the last twa becam efter apostates,) hated Mr. Knox and the guid cause; and the Commissar Mr. Wilyeam Skein could nocht lyk weill of his doctrine."

"In the tyme of his being in St. Andros, ther was a Generall Assemblie hauldin in the scholles of St. Leonard's, our Collage. Their, amangs vther things, was motioned the making of Bischopes, to the quhilk Mr. Knox opponit himself directlie and zealuslie. Yit a number of commissioners of the kirk meatt at Leithe with the lords that haid the guid caus in hand, (wharof eurie ane was hounting for a fatt kirk leiving, quhilk gart them feght the fastar,) and ther aggreit to mak Bischopes; the warst turn that euer was done for the kirk leiving, as experience atteanes declared, when they war named *Tulchains*, that is, calffs skinnies stuffed with stra, to cause the cow giff milk; for euerie lord gat a bischoprie, and sought and presented to the kirk sic a man as wald be content with least, and set tham maist of fewes, takes, and pensions. Amangs the rest

* 1. e. beat the pulpit in pieces.

the later editions of Dr. Robertson's History of Scotland.

† Melvill's Diary, printed copy, pp. 21, 24,

v6. This description may partly be seen in

the Erle of Mortoun gat the bischoprik of St. Andros, efter the hanging of Jhone Hamiltone, and presented thervnto that honorable father of the Vniuersitie, as Rector therof for the present, Mr. Jhone Dowglass, a guid, vpright-harted man, bot ambitius and simple, nocht knawing wha delt with him. I hard Mr. Knox speak against it, bot sparinglie, because he louit the man, and with regrat, saying, ‘Alas! for pitie, to lay vpon an auld weak man’s bak, that quhilk twentie of the best gifts could nocht bear. It will wrak him and disgrace him.’ And indeid it cam to pass sa; for within twa or thrie yeirs he died, during the quhilk he haid nather that honour, welthe, nor helthe as he was wount to haiff, ever repenting that he tuk it on. That was the first tyme I hard Mr. Patrick Constantine, wha, then new retourned out of France with young Mr. James Macgill, the Clark Register eldest sone, thought, be the said Clarks court, wha was grait with the Erle of Mortoun, to haiff bein preferit to the bischoprik, bot coming schort, becam a zealus preatchour against bischopes. I hard a sermont of his the ouk efter the bischope was maid, vpon ane extraordinar day that he might haiff the graitter audience, wherein he maid thrie sorts of bischoppes: my Lord Bischope, my Lord’s Bischope, and the Lord’s Bischope. ‘My Lord Bischope,’ said he, ‘was in the papistrie; my Lord’s Bischope is now, when my Lord getts the benefice, and the Bischope serues for na thing bot to mak his tytle sure; and the Lord’s Bischope is the trew minister of the gospell.’ Mr. Patrik was then weill lyked, and of guid expectation with sic as knew him nocht intus. The yeir efter was maid bischope Geordie of Murro, whom I saw a haill wintar mumling on his pretching af his peapers euerie day at our morning prayers, and haid it nocht weill par ceur when all was done; and efter him Bischope Patone of Dunkell. This greivit the hart of the men of God to the dead; bot the warres war sa hatt, and the Lords cryed they behud to leaue tham giff they gat nocht the kirk leiving, and monie knew nocht yit the corruption and vnlawfulnes of that invention of men, and sa the mater past fordwart.

“At Mr. Knox coming to St. Andros, Robert Lekpriuik,

printer, transported his lettres and press from Edinbruch to St. Andros, whar first I saw that excellent art of printing, and haid then in hand Mr. Patrik Constant's Catechisme of Calvin, converted in Latin heroic vers, quhilk with the author was mikle estimed of.

"About the same tyme cam to St. Andros to visit Mr. Knox, Johne Durie, fellow minister at Leith with Mr David Lindsay, wha was then for stoutnes and zeall in the guid cause mikle renouned and talked of; for the gown was na sooner af, and the Byble out of hand fra the kirk, when on ged the corslet, and fangit was the hagbot, and to the fields. Him I saw first at St. Andros with Mr. Knox."

During his stay at St. Andrew's, Knox published a vindication of the Reformed religion, in answer to a letter written by a Scots Jesuit, called Tyrie. The argumentative part of the work was finished by him in 1568; but he sent it abroad at this time, with additions, as a farewell address to the world, and a dying testimony to the truth which he had so long taught and defended.* Along with it he published one of the religious letters which he had formerly written to his mother-in-law, Mrs. Bowes; and in an advertisement prefixed to this, he informs us that she had lately departed this life, and that he could not allow the opportunity to slip of acquainting the public, by means of this letter, with the principal cause of that intimate Christian friendship which had so long subsisted between them.

The ardent desire which he felt to be released, by death, from the troubles of the present life, appears in all that he wrote about this time. "Wearie of the world," and "thristing to depart," are expressions frequently used by him. The dedication of the above work is thus inscribed: "John Knox, the Servant of Jesus Christ, now wearie of the world, and daylie luiking for the resolution of this my earthly tabernakle, to the faithful that God of his mercie shall appoint to fight after me." In the conclusion of it he says, "Call for me, deir brethren, that God, in his mercy,

* Tyrie published a reply under the title of "The Refutation of ane Answer made be Schir Johne Knox to ane Letter, send be James Tyrie, to his vmquhyle brither." Paris, 1573. Keith says, speaking of this book,

"Mr. Knox makes some good and solid observations, from which, in my opinion, the Jesuit [in his reply] has not handsomely extricated himself." History, App. p. 255.

will pleis to put end to my long and painful battell. For now being unable to fight, as God sometymes gave strenth, I thrist an end, befoir I be moir troublesum to the faithfull. And yet, Lord, let my desyre be moderat be the holy spirit." In a prayer subjoined to the dedication are these words. "To thee, O Lord, I commend my spirit. For I thrist to be resolved from this body of sin, and am assured that I sall rise agane in glorie; howsoever it be that the wicked for a tyme sall trode me and others thy servandes under their feit. Be merciful, O Lord, unto the kirk within this realm; continew with it the light of thy evangell; augment the number of true preicheris. And let thy mercyfull providence luke upon my desolate bedfellow, the fruit of hir bosome, and my two deir children, Nathanael and Eleazar. Now, Lord, put end to my miserie." The advertisement "to the Faithful Reader," dated from St. Andrew's, 12th July, 1572, concludes in the following manner: "I hartly salute and take my good night of all the faithful in both realmes, earnestly desyring the assistance of their prayers, that without any notable slander to the evangel of Jesus Christ, I may end my battel. For, "*as the worlde is wearie of me, so am I of it.*"

The General Assembly being appointed to meet at Perth on the 6th August, he took his leave of them in a letter, along with which he transmitted certain articles and questions which he recommended to their consideration. The Assembly returned him an answer, declaring their approbation of his propositions, and their earnest desires for his preservation and comfort.* The last piece of public ser-

* Bannatyne, 364-369. Cald. ii. 355, 366. There is no record of this valedictory letter in the Booke of the Universall Kirke; but in Session 3d of this year, we find the following unanimous protest against the late prelatie innovations: "Forswameikle as in the Assembly halden in Leith in January last, there was certaine Commissioners appointit to trauell with the Nobilitie and their Commissioners, to reasone and conclude upon diverse articles and heads, then thocht good to be conferrit upon; according to the whilk Commissione they have proceidit to diverse dyatts and conventions, and finallie concludit for that tyme upon the saids heads and articles; as the same product in this Assemblie reports: In the qwhilks, being considerit and read, are found certain names, sic as Arch Bishope, Deane, Archdeane, Chamber, Chap-

ter; qwhilks names war thocht sclanderous and offensive to the eares of many of the brethren, appeirand to sound to Papistrie; therefore the haill Assembly, in ane voyce, alsweel they that was in Commissione at Leith as uthers, solemnly protests, that they intend not be using sic names, to ratify, consent and agree to any kinde of Papistrie or superstitione, and wisches rather the saids names to be changit in uthers, that are not sclanderous or offensive; and, in lyke manner, protests that the saids heids and articles agriet upon, be only receavit as ane interim, untill farther and mair perfect order be obtaynit, at the hands of the King's Majesty's Regent and Nobilitie, for the whilk they will preass, as occasion shall serve: Unto the qwhilk protestation the haill Assemblie, in ane voice, adheres." Booke of the Universall Kirk, Peterkin's Edit. p. 133.

vice which he performed at their request, was examining and approving a sermon which had been lately preached by David Ferguson, minister of Dunfermline. His subscription to this sermon, like every thing which proceeded from his mouth or pen, about this time, is uncommonly striking. "John Knox, with my *dead hand*, but *glaid heart*, praising God, that of his mercy he levis such light to his kirk in this desolatioun."*

From the rapid decline of our Reformer's health, in spring 1572, there was every appearance of his ending his days in St. Andrew's; but it pleased God that he should be restored once more to his flock, and allowed to die peaceably in his own bed. In consequence of a cessation of arms, agreed to in the end of July, between the Regent and the adherents of the Queen, the city of Edinburgh was abandoned by the forces of the latter, and secured from the annoyance of the garrison in the castle. As soon as the banished citizens returned to their houses,† they sent a deputation to St. Andrew's, with a letter to their minister, expressive of their earnest desire "that once again his voice might be heard among them," and entreating him immediately to come to Edinburgh, if his health would at all permit him, for, said they, "Leath we are to diseas or hurt your persone ony wayis, and far leather to want you."‡ After reading the letter, and conversing with the commissioners, he agreed to return; but under the express condition, that he should not be urged to observe silence respecting the conduct of those who held the castle against the Regent; "whose treasonable and tyrannical deeds," he said, "he would cry out against, as long as he was able to speak." He, therefore, desired them to acquaint their con-

* "Ane sermone prechit before the Regent and nobilitie, upon a part of the third chapter of Malachi, [verse 7-12.] in the Kirk of Leith, at the time of the Generall Assemblie, on Sondag the 13. of Januarie. Anno Do. 1571. Be David Fergusone, minister of the evangell at Dunfermyne. Imprintit at Sanctandrois, be Robert Lekpreuik. Anno Do. MDLXXII." The dedication to the Regent Mar is dated 20th August, 1572.

† Previous to the cessation of arms, the banished citizens (who had taken up their residence chiefly in Leith) entered into a solemn league, by which they engaged "in the fear of

God the Father, of his Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, and of the Holie Spirit, tackand to witness his holie name," that they would with their lives, lands, and goods, promote the Gospel professed among them, maintain the authority of the King and Regent, assist and concur with others against the enemies in the castle, defend one another if attacked, and submit any variances which might arise among themselves to brotherly arbitration, or to the judgment of the Town Council. Bannatyne, 361-364.

‡ Bannatyne, 370-373.

stituents with this, lest they should afterwards repent of his austerity, and be apprehensive of ill-treatment on his account. This he repeated upon his return to Edinburgh, before he entered the pulpit. Both the commissioners and the rest of their brethren assured him, that they did not mean to put a bridle in his mouth ; but wished him to discharge his duty as he had been accustomed to do.*

On the 17th of August, to the great joy of the Queen's faction, whom he had overawed during his residence among them, the Reformer left St. Andrew's, along with his family, and was accompanied on his journey by a number of his brethren and acquaintances. Being obliged by his weakness to travel slowly, it was the 23d of the month before he reached Leith, from which, after resting a day or two, he came to Edinburgh. The inhabitants enjoyed the satisfaction of seeing him again in his own pulpit, on the first Sabbath after he arrived ; but his voice was now so enfeebled that he could not be heard by the half of the congregation. Nobody was more sensible of this than himself. He therefore requested his session to provide a smaller house in which he could be heard, if it were only by a hundred persons ; for his voice, even in his best time, was not able to extend over the multitude which assembled in the large church, much less now when he was so debilitated. This request was accordingly complied with.†

During his absence, a coolness had taken place between his colleague and the parish, who found fault with him for temporizing during the time that the Queen's faction retained possession of the city. In consequence of this, they had separated, and Craig was gone to another part of the country.‡ Knox, perceiving that he would not long be able to preach, and that he was already incapacitated for all other ministerial duties, was extremely solicitous to have one settled as his colleague, that the congregation might not be left “ as sheep without a shepherd,” when he was called away. The kirk-session had petitioned the last General Assembly for leave to choose from the ministry a colleague to the Reformer. This request was granted ; and

* Bannatyne, 371, 373.

† Ibid. p. 373, 385. Smetoni Respons, pp. 117, 118.

‡ See Note B.—Period Eighth.

liberty being given them to choose any minister within the kingdom, those of Dundee and Perth excepted, they now unanimously fixed upon James Lawson, sub-principal of the College of Aberdeen. This choice was very agreeable to the Reformer, who, in a letter sent along with those of the superintendent and session, urged him to comply with the call without delay. Though this letter has already appeared in print,* yet as it is not long, and is very descriptive of his frame of mind at this interesting period, I shall lay it before the reader.

“ All worldie strenth, yea ewin in thingis spirituall, decayes ; and yit sall never the work of God decay. Belovit brother, seeing that God of his mercie, far above my expectatione, has callit me ones agane to Edinburgh, and yit that I feill nature so decayed, and daylie to decay, that I luke not for a long continewance of my battell, I wald gladlie anes discharge my conscience into your bosome, and into the bosome of vtheris, in whome I think the feare of God remanes. Gif I hath had the habilitie of bodie, I suld not have put you to the pane to the whilk I now requyre you, that is, anes to visit me, that we may conferre together of heawinlie things ; for into earth there is no stabilite, except the kirk of Jesus Christ, ever fightand under the crosse, to whose myghtie protectione I heartlie commit you. Of Edinburgh the vii of September, 1572. JHONE KNOX.”

In a postscript these expressive words were added “ Haste, brother, lest you come too late.”

In the beginning of September, intelligence reached Edinburgh, that the Admiral of France, the brave, the generous, the pious Coligni, was murdered in the city of Paris, by the orders of Charles IX. Immediately on the back of this, tidings arrived of that most detestable and unparalleled scene of barbarity and treachery, the general massacre of the Protestants throughout that kingdom. Post after post brought fresh accounts of the most shocking and unheard-of cruelties. Hired cut-throats, and fanatical cannibals marched from city to city, paraded the streets, and entered into the houses of those that were marked out for

* Bannatyne, 386.

destruction. No reverence was shewn to the hoary head, no respect to rank or talents, no pity to tender age or sex. Aged matrons, women upon the point of their delivery, and children, were trodden under the feet of the assassins, or dragged with hooks into the rivers; others, after being thrown into prison, were instantly brought out, and butchered in cold blood. Seventy thousand persons were murdered in one week. For several days the streets of Paris literally ran with blood. The savage monarch, standing at the windows of the palace, with his courtiers, glutted his eyes with the inhuman spectacle, and amused himself with firing upon the miserable fugitives who sought shelter at his merciless gates.*

The intelligence of this massacre (for which a solemn thanksgiving was offered up at Rome by order of the Pope)† produced the same horror and consternation in Scotland as in every other Protestant country.‡ It inflicted a deep wound on the exhausted spirit of Knox. Besides the blow struck at the whole reformed body, he had to lament the loss of many individuals, eminent for piety, learning, and rank, whom he numbered among his acquaintances. Being conveyed to the pulpit, and summoning up the remainder of his strength, he thundered the vengeance of heaven against that cruel murderer and false traitor, the King of France, and desired Le Croc, the French Ambassador, to tell his master, that sentence was pronounced against him in Scotland, that the divine vengeance would never depart from him, nor from his house, if repentance did not ensue; but his name would remain an execration to posterity, and none proceeding from his loins would enjoy that kingdom in peace. The ambassador complained of the indignity offered to his master, and required the Regent to silence the preacher; but this was refused, upon which he left Scotland.§

* *Memoires de Sully*, tom. i. 16. Paris, 1664. *Brantôme Memoires*, apud Jurieu, *Apologie pour la Reformation*, tom. i. 420. *Smetoni Respons. ad Hamilt. Dial.* p. 117.

† The Pope's Bull for the Jubilee may be seen in *Strype's Life of Archbishop Parker*, App. No. 68, p. 108.

‡ The Regent Mar issued a proclamation on the occasion, summoning a general convention of deputies from all parts of the kingdom, to deliberate on the measures proper to

be adopted for defence against the cruel and treasonable conspiracies of the Papists. *Bannatyne*, 397-401. *Strype* has inserted the preamble, and one of the articles of a supplication presented by this convention to the Regent and Council. *Annals*, ii. 180, 181. This may be compared with the more full account of their proceedings, in *Bannatyne*, 406-411.

§ *Bannatyne*, 401, 402.

Lawson, having received the letters of invitation, hastened to Edinburgh, and had the satisfaction to find that Knox was still able to receive him. Having preached to the people, he gave universal satisfaction.* On the following Sabbath, 21st September, Knox began to preach in the Tolbooth Church, which was now fitted up for him. He chose for the subject of his discourses, the account of our Saviour's crucifixion, as recorded in the xxvii. chapter of the Gospel according to Matthew, a theme upon which he often expressed a wish to close his ministry. On Sabbath the 9th of November, he presided in the installation of Lawson as his colleague and successor. The sermon was preached by him in the Tolbooth Church; after it was ended, he removed, with the audience, to the large Church, where he went through the accustomed form of admission, by proposing the questions to the minister and people, addressing an exhortation to both, and praying for the divine blessing upon the connection. Upon no former occasion did he deliver himself more to the satisfaction of those who were able to hear him. After declaring the mutual duties of pastor and congregation, he protested, in the presence of Him before whom he expected soon to appear, that he had walked among them with a good conscience, preaching the Gospel of Jesus Christ in all sincerity, not studying to please men, nor to gratify his own affections; he praised God, that he had been pleased to give them a pastor in his room, when he was now unable to teach; he fervently prayed, that any gifts which had been conferred on himself might be augmented a thousand fold in his successor; and in a most serious and impressive manner, he exhorted and charged all present to adhere stedfastly to the faith which they had professed. Having finished the service, and pronounced the blessing with a cheerful but exhausted voice, he came down from the pulpit, and, leaning upon his staff, crept down the street, which was lined with the audience, who, as if anxious to take the last sight of their beloved pastor, followed him until he entered his house, from which he never again came out alive.†

* Mr. James Melville, speaking of Lawson, calls him, "a man of singular learning, zeal, and eloquence, whom I never hard preache

bot he meltit my heart with teares" MS. Diary, p. 28.

† As it is unnecessary to repeat the quota-

On the Tuesday following, (Nov. 11,) he was seized with a severe cough, which, together with the defluction, greatly affected his breathing. When his friends, anxious to prolong his life, proposed to call in the assistance of physicians, he readily acquiesced, saying that he would not neglect the ordinary means of health, although he was persuaded that the Lord would soon put an end to all his troubles.* It had been his ordinary practice to read every day some chapters of the Old and New Testaments; to which he added a certain number of the Psalms of David, the whole of which he perused regularly once a month. On Thursday the 13th, he grew worse, and was obliged to desist from his course of reading; but he gave directions to his wife, and to his secretary, Richard Bannatyne, that one of them should every day read to him, with a distinct voice, the 17th chapter of the Gospel according to John, the 53d of Isaiah, and a chapter of the Epistle to the Ephesians. This was punctually complied with during the whole time of his sickness; so that scarcely an hour passed in which some part of Scripture was not read. Besides the above passages, he, at different times, fixed on certain Psalms, and some of Calvin's French sermons on the Ephesians. Sometimes as they were reading these sermons, thinking him to be asleep, they asked him if he heard, to which he answered, "I hear, (I praise God,) and understand far better," which words he uttered for the last time, about four hours before his death.

The same day on which he fell sick, he desired his wife to discharge the servants' wages; and next day wishing to pay one of his men servants himself, he gave him twenty

tions, the reader may be informed, once for all, that the account of the Reformer's last illness and death is taken from the following authorities: "Eximii viri Joannis Knoxii, Scoticanæ Ecclesiæ instauratoris, Vera extremæ vitæ et obitus Historia," published by Thomas Smeton, principal of the University of Glasgow, at the end of his "Responsio ad Hamiltonii Dialogum. Edinburgi, apud Johannem Rosseum. Pro Henrico Charteris. Anno Do. 1579. Cum Privilegio Regali:"—"Journal of the Transactions in Scotland, (Annis) 1570-1573, by Richard Bannatyne, secretary to John Knox," 413-429, edited from an authentic MS. by J. Graham Dalyell,

Esq. Anno 1806;—Spotswood's History, p. 265-267. Anno 1677, and Calderwood's MS. History, ad ann. 1572; copy in Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, transcribed anno 1634. The two first of these works contain the most ancient and authentic narratives, both being written at the time of the event, and by persons who were eye and ear-witnesses of what they relate.

* The house then occupied by the Reformer, was near the bottom of the High Street, opposite Tweeddale Court, a little below the Fountain Well. It had upon it the inscription, ΘΕΟΣ, DEUS, GOD. In the winter of 1838, it narrowly escaped being consumed by fire.

shillings above his fee, adding, "Thou wilt never receive more of me in this life." To all his servants he gave suitable exhortations to walk in the fear of God, and as became Christians who had been educated in his family.

On Friday the 14th, he rose from bed sooner than his usual hour; and thinking that it was the Sabbath, said that he meant to go to church, and preach on the resurrection of Christ, upon which he had meditated through the whole night. This was the subject upon which he should have preached in his ordinary course. But he was so weak, that he needed to be supported from his bed-side by two men, and it was with great difficulty that he could sit on a chair.

Next day at noon, John Durie, and Archibald Steward, two of his intimate acquaintances, came into his room, not knowing that he was so sick. He rose, however, on their account; and having prevailed on them to stay dinner, he came to the table, which was the last time that ever he sat at it. He ordered a hogshead of wine which was in his cellar to be pierced; and with a hilarity which he delighted to indulge among his friends, desired Archibald Steward to send for some of it as long as it lasted, for he would not tarry until it was all drunk.

On Sabbath the 16th, he kept his bed, and mistaking it for the first day of the Fast appointed on account of the French massacre, refused to take any dinner. Fairley of Braid, who was present, informed him that the fast did not commence until the following Sabbath, and sitting down, and dining before his bed, prevailed on him to take a little food.

He was very anxious to meet once more with the session of his church, to leave them his dying charge, and bid them a last farewell. In compliance with his wish, his colleague, the elders, and deacons, with David Lindsay, one of the ministers of Leith, assembled in his room on Monday the 17th, when he addressed them in the following words, which made a deep and lasting impression on the minds of all: "The day now approaches, and is before the door, for which I have frequently and vehemently thirsted, when I shall be released from my great labours

and innumerable sorrows, and shall be with Christ. And now, God is my witness, whom I have served in spirit, in the gospel of his Son, that I have taught nothing but the true and solid doctrine of the gospel of the Son of God; and have had it for my only object to instruct the ignorant, to confirm the faithful, to comfort the weak, the fearful, and the distressed, by the promises of grace, and to fight against the proud and rebellious, by the divine threatenings. I know that many have frequently and loudly complained, and do yet complain, of my too great severity; but God knows that my mind was always void of hatred to the persons of those against whom I thundered the severest judgments. I cannot deny but that I felt the greatest abhorrence at the sins in which they indulged, but I still kept this one thing in view, that, if possible, I might gain them to the Lord. What influenced me to utter whatever the Lord put into my mouth so boldly, without respect of persons, was a reverential fear of my God, who called, and of his grace appointed me to be a steward of divine mysteries, and a belief that he will demand an account of my discharge of the trust committed unto me, when I shall stand before his tribunal. I profess, therefore, before God, and before his holy angels, that I never made merchandise of the sacred word of God, never studied to please men, never indulged my own private passions or those of others, but faithfully distributed the talent intrusted to me, for the edification of the church over which I watched. Whatever obloquy wicked men may cast on me respecting this point, I rejoice in the testimony of a good conscience. In the mean-time, my dearest brethren, do you persevere in the eternal truth of the Gospel; wait diligently on the flock over which the Lord hath set you, and which he redeemed with the blood of his only begotten Son. And thou my brother, Lawson, fight the good fight, and do the work of the Lord joyfully and resolutely. The Lord from on high bless you, and the whole church of Edinburgh, against whom, as long as they persevere in the word of truth which they have heard of me, the gates of hell shall not prevail." Having warned them against

countenancing those who disowned the king's authority, and made some observations on a complaint which Maitland had lodged against him before the session, he was so exhausted that he was obliged to desist from speaking. Those who were present were filled with both joy and grief by this affecting address. After reminding him of the warfare which he had endured, and the triumph which awaited him, and joining in prayer, they took their leave of him drowned in tears.

When they were going out, he desired his colleague and Lindsay to remain behind, to whom he said:—"There is one thing that greatly grieves me. You have been witnesses of the former courage and constancy of Grange in the cause of God; but now, alas! into what a gulph has he precipitated himself! I intreat you not to refuse to go, and tell him from me, that John Knox remains the same man now when he is going to die, that ever he knew him when able in body, and wills him to consider what he was, and the estate in which he now stands, which is a great part of his trouble. Neither the craggy rock, (the Castle,) in which he miserably confides, nor the carnal prudence of that man (Maitland) whom he esteems a demi-god, nor the assistance of strangers, shall preserve him; but he shall be disgracefully dragged from his nest to punishment, and hung on a gallows before the face of the sun, unless he speedily amend his life, and flee to the mercy of God. That man's soul is dear to me, and I would not have it perish, if I could save it." The ministers undertook to execute this commission, and going up to the Castle, obtained an interview with the governor, and delivered their message. He at first exhibited some symptoms of relenting, but having consulted with Maitland, he returned and gave them a very unpleasant answer. This being reported to Knox, he was much grieved, and said that he had been very earnest in prayer for that man, and he still trusted that his soul would be saved, although his body should come to a miserable end. After the Castle surrendered, and Kirkaldy was condemned to die, Lindsay attended him at his earnest desire, and received much satisfaction from conver-

sation with him. When he was on the scaffold, he desired the minister to repeat Knox's last words about him, and said that he hoped they would prove true.*

This tragical fate of Kirkaldy, if we may credit Mr. James Melvill, was foretold by our Reformer during his last residence in St. Andrew's. The account which he gives of Knox's prophetic warnings, as well as of the "verie soar threatening of his sermons," is too interesting to be omitted. "Ther was twa in St. Andros wha war his aydant heirars, and wrot his sermons, an my condisciple Mr. Andro Yowng, now minister of Dumblean, wha transleated sum of tham in Latin, and read tham in the hall of the Collage instead of his orations: that vther was servant to Mr. Robert Hamilton, minister of the town, whom Mr. Robert causit to wrait, for what end God knawes. The threatenings of his sermons war verie soar, and sa particular, that sic as lyket nocht the cause, tuk occasion to reprotche him as a rashe raler without warrand. And Mr. Robert Hamilton himselff being offendit, conferrit with Mr. Knox, asking his warrand of that particular thretning against the Castell of Edinbruche, that it sould run lyk a sand glass; it sould spew out the Captan with scham, he sould nocht com out at the yet, bot down ower the walles—and sic lyk. Mr. Knox answerit, 'God is my warrant, and yie sall sie it.' Whill as the vther was skarslie satisfieit, and tuk hardlie with it, the nixt sermon from pulpit, he repeates the threatnings, and addes therto, 'Thow that will nocht beleive my warrand sall sie it with thy eis that day, and sall say, What haif I to do heir?' This sermon the said Mr. Robert's sarvand wrot, and being with his maister in Edinbruche a twa yeir thereafter at the taking of the Castell, they ged vpe to the Castell-hill, saw the forwark of the Castell all demolished, and rinning lyk a sandie bray; they saw the men of wear all sett in ordour. The Captan, with a lytle cut of a staff in his hand, taking down ower the wals vpon the leathers, and Mr. Robert, trouplet with the thrang of the peiple, sayes to his man, "Go, what half I ado heir!" and in going away, the servant remem-

* Diary, printed copy, 26. 29.

bers his maister of that sermont, and the words; wha was compellit to glorifie God, and say, he was a trew prophet.

“Ane vther strange particular was recompted to me be Mr. David Lindsay, minister of Leithe: That efter Mr. Knox haid taken bed, he cam in to visit him, as he was accustomed, and asked him whow he did. He answerit, ‘Weill, brother, I thank God; I haiff desyrd all this day to haif yow, that I may send yow yit to yon man in the Castell, whom yie ken I haif loued sa deirlie: Go, I pray, and tell him that I haif send yow to him yit annes to warn and bid him, in the nam of God, leaue that euill cause, and gif ower that Castell; gift nocht, he salbe brought down ower the wals of it with shame, and hing against the sune: Sa God has assurit me.’ Mr. David, whowbeit he thought the message hard, and the thretning ower particular, yit obeyit, and past to the Castell; and meiting with Sir Robert Meluill walkin on the wall, tauld him, wha was, as he thought, mikle movit with the mater. Therefter communed with the Captan, whom he thought also sumwhat moved; but he past from him in to the Secretar Lithintone, with whom, when he haid conferrit a whyll, he cam out to Mr. David again, and said to him, ‘Go, tell Mr. Knox he is bot a drytting prophet.’ Mr. David returning, tauld Mr. Knox he haid dischargit the commissoin fathfullie, but that it was nocht weill accepted of efter the Captan had conferrit with the Secretar. ‘Weill,’ sayes Mr. Knox, ‘I haif bein earnest with my God anent tha twa men; for the an I am sorrie that sa sould befall him, yit God assures me ther is mercie for his saul; for that vther I haif na war-rand that euer he salbe weill.’ Mr. David sayes, he thought it hard, yit keipit it in mynd till Mr. Knox was at rest with God. The Engliss armie cam in with munition meit for the seage of the castell, and within few dayes the captean is fean to rander, and com down the leathers ower the wals; he is committed to a ludging in the town with a custodie of souldarts. Mr. David, because of grait acquaintance, comes to visit him, whom he employes to go to the Erle of Morton and offer him his haill heritage, the band of manrent of all his frinds, and to pass af the countrie in exyll during his will. Mr. David goes that night and

speakes the Erle, then being Regent, proponing to him the offers. The Regent goes asyde and consultes with the Abbot of Dumfermling and Clark Register, thereafter Mr. Daud comes craving his answer. It was giffen, It could nocht be; the peiple could nocht be satisfeit, nor ther cause clerit and crowned with [out] exemplar punishment of that man and his counsellour the Secretar. Mr. Daud the morn be nyne hours comes agean to the Captean, the Lard of Grange, and taking him to an fore stare of the ludgin apart, resoules him it behoued him to suffer. 'O then, Mr. Daud,' sayes he, 'for our auld frindschipe and for Chryst's seak, leaue me nocht.' So he remeans with him, wha paessing vp and down a whyll, cam to a schot, and seeing the day fear, the sune cleir, and a skaffald preparing at the Cross in the Hiegatt, he falls in a grait studie, and alters countenance and cullour; quhilk, when Mr. Daud perceaved, he cam to him and askes him what he was doing. 'Fathe, Mr. Daud,' sayes [he], 'I perceaue weill now that Mr. Knox was the trew servant of God, and his thretning is to be accomplisshed;' and desyred to hear the treuthe of that againe. The quhilk Mr. Daud rehersed, and addit thervnto, that the sam Mr. Knox at his retourning had tauld him that he was earnest with God for him, was sorie, for the loue he buir him, that that sould com on his bodie, bot was assurit ther was mercie for his saull. The quhilk he wald haiff repeated ower againe to him, and thervpon was graitlie comforted, and becam to be of guid and cheirfull cowrage; sa that he dyned moderatlie, and thereafter tuk Mr. Daud aparte for his strenthning to suffer that dethe, and in end beseikes him nocht to leaue him, bot convoy him to the place of execution. 'And tak heid,' sayes he, 'I hope in God, efter I salbe thought past, to giff yow a taken of the assurance of that mercie to my saull according to the speakine of that man of God.' Sa about thrie hours efter none, he was brought out and Mr. Daud with him, and about foure the sune being wast about af the northwert nuk of the steiple, he was put af the leddar, and his face first fell to the est, bot within a bonie whyll turned about to the west, and ther remeaned against the sune; at quhilk tyme Mr. Daud, euer present,

sayes, he marked him when all thought he was away, to lift vpe his hands that war bund befor him, and ley tham doun again saftlie, quhilk moued him with exclamation to glorifie God befor all the peipil. This last part of his execution I hard also of Jhone Durie, wha was present with him on the skaffald.

“Sa in lyk maner whateuer he spak concerning the Hamiltones and the Quein, whowbeit in appeirance in the mean tyme bot contrar, and monie guid folks thought hard and strange, yit cam to pass, and was marked in particular to the grait glorie of God, terrour of the enemies, and ioy of the godlie.”

After Knox's interview with the session, he was much worse: his difficulty of breathing increased, and he could not speak without obvious and great pain. Yet he continued still to receive persons of every rank, who came in great numbers to visit him; and he suffered none to go away without exhortations, which he uttered with such variety and suitableness as astonished those who waited upon him. Lord Boyd came in and said, “I know, Sir, that I have offended you in many things, and am now come to crave your pardon.” His answer was not heard, as the attendants retired and left them alone. But his Lordship returned next day, in company with the Earl of Morton, and the laird of Drumlanrig. His conversation with Morton was very particular, as related by the Earl himself before his death. He asked him, if he was previously acquainted with the design to murder the late King. Morton having answered in the negative,* he said, “Well, God has beautified you with many benefits which he has not given to every man; as he has given you riches, wisdom, and friends, and now is to prefer you to the government of the realm.† And therefore, in the name of God, I charge you to use all these benefits aright, and better in time to come than ye

* He acknowledged afterwards that he did know of the murder; but excused himself for concealing it. The Queen, he said, was the doer, and as for the King, he was “sic a bairne, that thair was nothing tauld him but he wald reveill it to hir.” Bannatyne, 494, 497.

† The Regent Mar died on the 29th October preceding. The nobility were at this time met to choose his successor, and it was

understood that Morton would be raised to that dignity. He was elected Regent on the day of Knox's death. Bannatyne, 411, 412, 427. The author of the Historie of King James the Sext, says, that the Regent died October 18, and adds, “after him dyed Johne Knox, in that same moneth,” p. 197. But he has mistaken the time.

have done in times bypast ; first to God's glory, to the furtherance of the evangel, the maintainance of the Church of God, and his ministry ; next for the weal of the King, and his realm, and true subjects. If so ye shall do, God shall bless you and honour you ; but if ye do it not, God shall spoil you of these benefits, and your end shall be ignominy and shame."*

On Thursday the 20th, Lord Lindsay, the Bishop of Caithness, and several gentlemen visited him. He exhorted them to continue in the truth which they had heard, for there was no other word of salvation, and besought them to have nothing to do with those in the castle. The Earl of Glencairn (who had often visited him) came in, with Lord Ruthven. The latter, who called only once, said " If there be any thing, Sir, that I am able to do for you, I pray you charge me." His reply was, " I care not for all the pleasure and friendship of the world."

A religious lady of his acquaintance desired him to praise God for what good he had done, and was beginning to speak in his commendation, when he interrupted her. " Tongue, tongue, lady, flesh of itself is over proud, and needs no means to esteem itself." He put her in mind of what had been said to her along ago, " Lady, lady, the black one has never trampit on your fute," and exhorted her to lay aside pride, and be clothed with humility. He then protested as to himself, as he had often done before, that he relied wholly on the free mercy of God, manifested to mankind through his dear Son Jesus Christ, whom alone he embraced for wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption. The rest of the company having taken their leave of him, he said to the laird of Braid, " Every one bids me good night, but when will you do it? I have been greatly indebted unto you, for which I shall never be able to recompense you ; but I commit you to one that is able to do it, to the eternal God."

Upon Friday the 21st, he desired Richard Bannatyne to order his coffin to be made. During that day, he was

* Morton gave this account of his conference with the Reformer, to the ministers who attended him, before his execution. Being asked by them if he had not found Knox's

admonition true, he replied, " I have fand it indeid." Morton's Confession, apud Bannatyne, 508, 509.

much engaged in meditation and prayer. These words were often in his mouth ; “ Come, Lord Jesus. Sweet Jesus, into thy hands I commend my spirit. Be merciful, Lord, to thy Church which thou hast redeemed. Give peace to this afflicted commonwealth. Raise up faithful pastors who will take the charge of thy Church. Grant us, Lord, the perfect hatred of sin, both by the evidences of thy wrath and mercy.” In the midst of his meditations, he would often address those who stood by, in such sentences as these : “ O serve the Lord in fear, and death shall not be terrible to you. Nay, blessed shall death be to those who have felt the power of the death of the only begotten Son of God.”

On Sabbath 23d, (which was the first day of the national Fast,) during the afternoon-sermon, he, after lying a considerable time quiet, suddenly exclaimed, “ If any be present, let them come and see the work of God.” Richard Bannatyne thinking that his death was at hand, sent to the church for Johnston of Elphinston. When they came to his bed-side, he burst out in these rapturous expressions : “ I have been these two last nights in meditation on the troubled state of the Church of God, the spouse of Jesus Christ, despised of the world, but precious in the sight of God. I have called to God for her, and have committed her to her head, Jesus Christ. I have fought against spiritual wickedness in heavenly things, and have prevailed. I have been in heaven, and have possession. I have tasted of the heavenly joys, where presently I am.” He then repeated the Lord’s prayer and creed, interjecting some aspiration at the end of every petition, and article.

After sermon many came in to visit him. Perceiving that he breathed with great difficulty, some of them asked if he felt much pain. He answered that he was willing to lie there for years, if God so pleased, and if he continued to shine upon his soul, through Jesus Christ. When they thought him asleep, he was employed in meditation, and at intervals exhorted and prayed. “ Live in Christ. Live in Christ, and then flesh need not fear death. Lord, grant true pastors to thy Church, that purity of doctrine may be retained. Restore peace again to this Commonwealth,

with godly rulers and magistrates. Once, Lord, make an end of my trouble." Stretching his hands toward heaven, he said, "Lord, I commend my spirit, soul, and body, and all, into thy hands. Thou knowest, O Lord, my troubles: I do not murmur against thee." His pious ejaculations were so numerous, that those who waited on him could recollect only a part of them; for seldom was he silent, when they were not employed in reading or in prayer.—During the course of that night his trouble greatly increased.

Monday, the 24th of November, was the last day that he spent on earth. That morning he would not be persuaded to lie in bed, but, though unable to stand alone, rose between nine and ten o'clock, and put on his stockings and doublet. Being conducted to a chair, he sat about half an hour, and then went to bed again. In the progress of the day, it appeared evident that his end drew near. Besides his wife and Richard Bannatyne, Campbell of Kinyeancleugh, Johnston of Elphingston, and Dr. Preston, three of his most intimate acquaintances, waited by his bedside. Mr. Campbell asked him if he had any pain. "It is no painful pain, but such a pain as shall, I trust, put end to the battle. I must leave the care of my wife and children to you," continued he, "to whom you must be a husband in my room." About three o'clock in the afternoon one of his eyes failed, and his speech was considerably affected. He desired his wife to read the 15th chapter of 1st Corinthians. "Is not that a comfortable chapter?" said he, when it was finished. "O what sweet and salutary consolation the Lord hath afforded me from that chapter!" A little after, he said, "Now, for the last time, I commend my soul, spirit, and body, (touching three of his fingers,) into thy hand, O Lord." About five o'clock he said to his wife, "Go, read where I cast my first anchor;" upon which she read the 17th chapter of John's gospel, and afterwards a part of Calvin's sermons on the Ephesians.

After this he appeared to fall into a slumber, during which he uttered heavy moans. The attendants looked every moment for his dissolution. At length he awaked as if from sleep, and being asked the cause of his sighing

so deeply, replied, " I have formerly, during my frail life, sustained many contests, and many assaults of Satan ; but at present that roaring lion hath assailed me most furiously, and put forth all his strength to devour, and make an end of me at once. Often before has he placed my sins before my eyes, often tempted me to despair, often endeavoured to ensnare me by the allurements of the world ; but with these weapons, broken by the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God, he could not prevail. Now he has attacked me in another way ; the cunning serpent has laboured to persuade me that I have merited heaven and eternal blessedness, by the faithful discharge of my ministry. But blessed be God who has enabled me to beat down and quench this fiery dart, by suggesting to me such passages of Scripture as these, *What hast thou that thou hast not received ? By the grace of God I am what I am : Not I, but the grace of God in me.* Being thus vanquished, he left me. Wherefore I give thanks to my God through Jesus Christ, who was pleased to give me the victory ; and I am persuaded that the tempter shall not again attack me, but within a short time, I shall, without any great bodily pain, or anguish of mind, exchange this mortal and miserable life for a blessed immortality through Jesus Christ."

He then lay quiet for some hours, except that now and then he desired them to wet his mouth with a little weak ale. At ten o'clock they read the evening-prayer, which they had delayed beyond their usual hour, from an apprehension that he was asleep. After they were concluded, Dr. Preston asked him, if he had heard the prayers. " Would to God," said he, " that you and all men had heard them as I have heard them : I praise God for that heavenly sound." The doctor rose up, and Mr. Campbell sat down before the bed. About eleven o'clock, he gave a deep sigh, and said, *Now it is come.* Richard Bannatyne immediately drew near, and desired him to think upon those comfortable promises of our Saviour Jesus Christ, which he had so often declared to others ; and perceiving that he was speechless, requested him to give them a sign that he heard them, and died in peace. Upon this he lifted up

one of his hands,* and sighing twice, expired without a struggle.

He died in the sixty-seventh year of his age, not so much oppressed with years, as worn out and exhausted by his extraordinary labours of body and anxieties of mind. Few men ever were exposed to more dangers, or underwent such hardships. From the time that he embraced the Reformed religion, till he breathed his last, seldom did he enjoy a respite from these ; and he emerged from one scene of difficulties, only to be involved in another, and a more distressing one. Obligated to flee from St. Andrew's to escape the fury of Cardinal Beaton, he found a retreat in East Lothian, from which he was hunted by Archbishop Hamilton. He lived for several years as an outlaw, in daily apprehension of falling a prey to those who eagerly sought his life. The few months during which he enjoyed protection in the castle of St. Andrew's, were succeeded by a long and rigorous captivity. After enjoying some repose in England, he was again driven into banishment, and for five years wandered as an exile on the Continent. When he returned to his native country, it was to engage in a struggle of the most perilous and arduous kind. After the Reformation was established, and he was settled in the capital, he was involved in a continual contest with the Court. When he had retired from warfare, and thought only of ending his days in peace, he was again called into the field ; and although scarcely able to walk, was obliged to remove from his flock, and to avoid the hatred of his enemies, by submitting to a new banishment. Often had his life been threatened ; a price was publicly set upon his head ; and persons were not wanting who were disposed to attempt his destruction. No wonder that he was weary of the world, and anxious to depart. With great propriety might it be said, at his decease, that "*he rested from his labours.*"

On Wednesday the 26th of November, he was interred

* Bannatyne (p. 427) says " he lifted up his head ;" but I have followed the account of Smeton, (p. 123), which seems more natural : " Manum itaque, quasi novas vires jamjam moriturus concipiens, cœlum versus eriget,

duobusque emissis suspiriis, e mortale corpore migravit, citra ullum aut pedum, aut aliarum partium corporis motum, ut potius dormire quam occidisse videretur."

in the churchyard of St. Giles.* His funeral was attended by the newly-elected Regent, Morton, the nobility who were in the city, and a great concourse of people. When his body was laid in the grave, the Regent pronounced his eulogium, in the well-known words, "*There lies He, who never feared the face of man.*"

The character of this extraordinary man has been drawn with very opposite colours, by different writers, and at different times. The changes which have taken place in the public opinion about him, with the causes which have produced them, form a subject not uncurious, nor unworthy of attention.

The interest excited by the ecclesiastical and political revolutions of Scotland, in which he acted so conspicuous a part, caused his name to be known throughout Europe, more extensively than those of most of the Reformers. When we reflect that the Roman Catholics looked upon him as the principal instrument of the overthrow of their religious establishment in this country, we are prepared to expect that the writers of that persuasion would represent his character in an unfavourable light; and that, in addition to the common charges of heresy, and apostacy, they would describe him as a man of a restless, turbulent spirit, and of rebellious principles. We will not even be greatly surprised though we find them charging him with whoredom, because, being a priest, he entered into wedlock, once and a second time; or imputing his change of religion to a desire of throwing off the bonds by which the Popish clergy were so strictly tied to celibacy. But all this is nothing to the portraits which they have drawn of him, in which he is unblushingly represented, to the violation of all credibility, as a man, or rather a monster, of the most profligate character, who gloried in depravity, avowedly

* Cald. MS. ad ann. 1572. Bannatyne, 429. Spotswood, 267. The area of the Parliament Square was formerly the church-yard of St. Giles. Some think that he was buried in one of the aisles of his own church. The place where the Reformer preached is that which is now called The Old Church. It has, however, undergone a great change since his time. The place now occupied by the pulpit,

and the greater part of the seats, was then an aisle; and the church was considerably more to the north of the building than at present. The small church fitted up for him a few weeks before his death, is called by Bannatyne the Tolbooth. Whether it was exactly that part of the building now called the Tolbooth Church, I do not know.—See Note C. Period Eighth.

indulged in the most vicious practices, and to crown the description, upon whom Providence fixed an evident mark of reprobation at his death, which was accompanied with circumstances that excited the utmost horror in the beholders.* This might astonish us, did we not know, from undoubted documents, that there was a number of writers, at that time, who, by inventing or retailing such malignant calumnies, attempted to blast the fairest and most unblemished characters among those who appeared in opposition to the Church of Rome; and that, ridiculous and exaggerated as the accusations were, they were greedily swallowed by the slaves of prejudice and credulity. The memory of none was loaded with a greater share of this obloquy than our Reformer's. But these accounts have long ago lost every degree of credit; and they now remain only as a proof of the spirit of lies, or of strong delusion, by which these writers were actuated, and of the deep and deadly hatred which was conceived against the accused, on account of his strenuous and successful efforts to overthrow the fabric of Papal superstition and despotism.

Knox was known and esteemed by the principal persons among the Reformed in France, Switzerland, and Germany. We have had occasion repeatedly to mention his friendship with the Reformer of Geneva. Beza, the successor of Calvin, was personally acquainted with him; in the correspondence which was kept up between them by letters, he expressed the warmest regard, and highest esteem for him; and he afterwards raised an affectionate tribute to his memory, in his "*Images of Illustrious Men.*" This was done, at a subsequent period, by the German biographer, Melchior Adam, the Dutch Verheiden, and the French La Roque. The late historian of the literature of Geneva,† (whose religious sentiments are very different from those of his countrymen in the days of Calvin,) although he is displeased with the philippics which Knox sometimes pronounced from the pulpit, says, that he "immortalized himself by his courage against Popery, and his firmness against the tyranny of Mary," and that though a

* See Note D.—Period Eighth.

† Mons. Senebier, *Hist. Lit. de Geneve*, i. 377.

violent, he was always an open and honourable enemy to the Catholics.

The affectionate veneration in which his memory was held in Scotland after his death, evinces that the influence which he possessed among his countrymen during his life, was not constrained, but founded on the opinion which they entertained of his virtues and talents. Bannatyne has drawn his character in the most glowing colours ; and although allowances must be made for the enthusiasm with which a favourite servant wrote of a beloved and revered master, yet as he lived long in his family, and was himself a man of respectability and learning, his testimony is by no means to be disregarded. In a speech which he delivered in the General Assembly, 10th March, 1571, Bannatyne says :—" It has plesit God to mak me a servant to that man Jhone Knox, whom I serve, as God beiris me witnes, not so mekle in respect of my worldlie commoditie, as for that integrity and vprightness which I have ever knowin, and presentlie vnderstandis to be in him, especiallie in the faythfull administratione of his office, in teaching of the word of God ; and gif I vnderstude, or knew that he ware a fals teacher, a seducer, a rasere of schisme, or ane that makis divisione in the kirk of God, as he is reported to be by the former accusationes, I wald not serve him for all the substance in Edinburgh."* The same person in his Journal, after giving an account of Knox's death, adds :—" In this manner," says he, " departed this man of God ; the light of Scotland, the comfort of the Church within the same, the mirror of godliness, and pattern and example to all true ministers, in purity of life, soundness in doctrine, and boldness in reprovng of wickedness ; one that cared not the favour of men, how great soever they were. What dexterity in teaching, boldness in reprovng, and hatred of wickedness was in him, my ignorant dulness is not able to declare, which if I should preist† to set out, it were as

* Journal, p. 104, 105. The reader will observe, that the word servant, or servitor, in those days was used with greater latitude than in our time, and in old writings often signifies the person whom we call by the more honourable names of clerk, secretary, or man of business. As the drawing of the principal

ecclesiastical papers, and the compiling of the history of public proceedings was committed to our Reformer, from the time of his last return to Scotland, he kept a person of this description in his family, and Bannatyne held the situation.

† i. e. labour.

one who would light a candle to let men see the sun ; seeing all his virtues are better known, and notified* to the world a thousand fold than I am able to express."†

Principal Smeton's character of him, while it is less liable to the suspicion of partiality, is equally honourable and flattering. " I know not," says he, " if ever so much piety and genius were lodged in such a frail and weak body. Certain I am, that it will be difficult to find one in whom the gifts of the Holy Spirit shone so bright, to the comfort of the Church of Scotland. None spared himself less in enduring fatigues of body and mind : none was more intent on discharging the duties of the province assigned to him." And again, addressing his traducer, Hamilton, he says, " This illustrious, I say *illustrious*, servant of God, John Knox, I will clear from your feigned accusations and slanders, rather by the testimony of a venerable assembly than by my own denial. This pious duty, this reward of a well-spent life, all of them most cheerfully discharge to their excellent instructor in Christ Jesus. This testimony of gratitude they all owe to him who, they know, ceased not to deserve well of all, till he ceased to breathe. Released from a body exhausted in Christian warfare, and translated to a blessed rest, where he has obtained the sweet reward of his labours, he now triumphs with Christ. But beware, sycophant, of insulting him when dead ; for he has left behind him as many defenders of his reputation as there are persons who were drawn, by his faithful preaching, from the gulph of ignorance to the knowledge of the gospel."‡

The divines of the Church of England who were contemporary with our Reformer, entertained a great respect for his character. I have already produced the mark of esteem which Bishop Bale conferred on him, as also the terms of approbation in which he was mentioned by the learned Dr. Fulke.§ Aylmer, in a work written to confute one of his opinions, bears a voluntary testimony to his learning and integrity.|| Bishop Ridley, who stickled more

* In the printed book it is " not hid." I suppose it should be " notified."

† Bannatyne, 427, 429.

‡ Smetoni, Resp. ad. Hamilt. Dial. p. 95, 115.

§ See above, p. 135, note ‡.

|| Harborowe for Faithful and Trewe Subjects, B. B. 2. C. C. 2. Life of Aylmer, p. 238.

for the ceremonies of the Church than any of his brethren at that period, and was displeased with the opposition which Knox made to the introduction of the English liturgy at Frankfort, expressed his high opinion of him, as “a man of wit, much good learning, and earnest zeal.*” Whatever dissatisfaction they felt at his pointed reprehensions of several parts of their ecclesiastical establishment, the English dignitaries, under Elizabeth, rejoiced at the success of his exertions, and without scruple expressed their approbation of many of his measures which were afterwards severely censured by their successors.† I need scarcely add, that his memory was held in veneration by the English puritans. Some of the chief men among them were personally acquainted with him, during his residence in England, and on the Continent; others corresponded with him by letters. They greatly esteemed his writings, eagerly sought for his manuscripts, and published several of them, with testimonies of their high commendation.‡

But towards the close of the sixteenth century, there arose another race of prelates, of very different principles from the English Reformers, who began to maintain the divine right of diocesan episcopacy, with the intrinsic excellency of a ceremonious worship; and to adopt a new language respecting other Reformed Churches. Dr. Bancroft, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, was the first writer among them who spake disrespectfully of Knox,§ after whom it became a fashionable practice among the hierarchical party. This was resented by the ministers of Scotland, who warmly vindicated the character of their

* Strype's Life of Grindall, p. 19, 20.

† Burnet, vol. ii. Appendix, part iii. B. vi. p. 351, 352.

‡ In a dedication of Knox's Exposition of the Temptation of Christ, John Field, the publisher, says, “If ever God shall vouchsafe the Church so great a benefite; when his infinite letters, and sundry other treatises shall be gathered together, it shall appear what an excellent man he was, and what a wonderfull losse that Church of Scotland sustained when that worthie man was taken from them. If, by yourselfe or others, you can procure any other his writings or letters here at home, or abroad in Scotland, be a meane that we may receive them. It were great pittie that any the least of his writinges should be lost; for

he evermore wrote both godly and diligently in questions of divinitie, and also of church policie; and his letters being had together, would together set out an whole historie of the churches where he lived.

§ In a sermon preached by him at Paul's Cross, before the Parliament of England, Feb. 9, 1588, on 1 John iv. 1. and afterwards published. He enlarged on the subject in two posterior treatises, the one entitled “Dangerous Positions; or Scottish Genevating, and English Scottizing;” the other, “A survey of the Pretended Holy Discipline.” Mr. John Davidson, minister first at Liberton, afterwards at Prestonpans, answered Bancroft in a book entitled, “Dr. Bancroft's Rashness in Rayling against the Kirk of Scotland.”

Reformer, at the price of incurring the deep and lasting displeasure of their sovereign King James, who began to long for his accession to the throne of England, and was carrying on a private correspondence with Bancroft for introducing Episcopacy into Scotland. His Majesty took great offence at this, and said that Knox, Buchanan, and the Regent Murray, "could not be defended but by traitors and seditious theologues." Andrew Melville told him that they were the men who set the crown on his head, and deserved better than to be so traduced. James complained that Knox had spoken disrespectfully of his mother; to which Patrick Galloway, one of the ministers of Edinburgh, replied, "If a King or a Queen be a murderer, why should they not be called so?" Walter Balcanquhal, another minister of the city, having, in a sermon preached October 29, 1590, rebuked those who disparaged the Reformer, the King sent for him, and in a passion protested, that "either he should lose his crown, or Mr. Walter should recant his words." Balcanquhal "prayed God to preserve his crown, but said, that if he had his right wits, the King should have his head, before he recanted any thing he spake."* The antipathies of James and his son Charles I. to the Presbyterian form of worship, are matters of history; but all their efforts to establish prelacy and passive obedience were ineffectual. Long after the government of the Church of Scotland was conformed to the English model, the Scots prelates professed to look back to their national Reformer with gratitude and veneration; and as late as 1639, Archbishop Spotswood described him as "a man endued with rare gifts, and a chief instrument that God used for the work of those times.†"

Our Reformer was never a favourite with the friends of absolute monarchy. The prejudices which they entertained against him, were taken up in all their force, subsequent to the Revolution of 1689, by the adherents of the Stuart family, whose religious notions, approximating very nearly to the Popish, joined with their slavish principle respecting non-resistance of kings, led them to disapprove of almost every measure adopted at the time of the Reformation,

* Cald. MS. add ann. 1590, quarto copy in Adv. Lib. vol. ii. p. 260, 261.

† Spotswood, 261.

and to condemn the whole as a combination of disorder, sedition, and rebellion against lawful authority. The spirit by which the Jacobite faction was actuated, did not become extinct with the family which was so long the object of their devotion ; and though they transferred their allegiance to the House of Hanover, they did not renounce their political principles. The alarm produced by that revolution which of late has shaken the thrones of so many of the princes of Europe, has greatly increased this party ; and with the view of preserving the present constitution of Britain, principles have been widely disseminated, which, if they had been generally received in the sixteenth century, would have perpetuated the reign of Popery and arbitrary power in Scotland. From persons of such principles, nothing favourable to our Reformer can be expected. But the greatest torrent of abuse poured upon his character, has proceeded from those literary champions who have come forward to avenge the wrongs, and vindicate the innocence of the peerless, and immaculate Mary, Queen of Scots. Having conjured up in their imagination the image of an ideal goddess, they have sacrificed to the object of their adoration, all the characters which, in that age, were most estimable for learning, patriotism, integrity, and religion. As if the quarrel which they had espoused exempted them from the ordinary laws of controversial warfare, and conferred on them the absolute and indefeasible privilege of calumniating and defaming at pleasure, they have pronounced every person who spake, wrote, or acted against that Queen, to be a hypocrite or a villain. In the raving style of these writers, Knox was "a fanatical incendiary, a holy savage, the son of violence and barbarism, the religious Sachem of religious Mohawks." *

The increase of infidelity, and of indifference to religion in modern times, especially among the learned, has contributed, in no small degree, to swell the tide of prejudice against our Reformer. Whatever satisfaction such persons may express or feel at the reformation from Popery, as the means of emancipating the world from superstition

* Whitaker's Vindication of Queen Mary, *passim*. The same writer designs Buchanan "a serpent—daring calumniator—leviathan of slander—the second of all human forgers, and the first of all human slanderers." Dr

Robertson he calls "a disciple of the old school of slander—a liar—and one for whom bedlam is no bedlam." See Note E. Period Eighth.

and priestcraft, they must necessarily despise or dislike men who were inspired with the love of religion, and in whose minds the acquisition of civil liberty, and the advancement of literature, held a subordinate place to the propagation of the doctrines and institutions of Jesus Christ. Nor can it escape observation, that even among the friends of the Reformed doctrine, in the present day, prejudices against the characters and proceedings of our Reformers, are far more general than they were formerly among the adherents to the discipline and government of the Presbyterian Church. Impressed with the idea of the high illumination of the present age, and having formed a correspondingly low estimate of the attainments of those which preceded it; imperfectly acquainted with the enormity and extent of the corrupt system of religion which existed in this country at the era of the Reformation; inattentive to the spirit and principles of the adversaries with which our Reformers were obliged to contend, and to the dangers and difficulties with which they struggled,—they have too easily received the calumnies which have been circulated to their prejudice, and rashly condemned measures which may be found, upon examination, to have been necessary to secure and to transmit the invaluable blessings which they now enjoy.

Having given this account of the opinions entertained respecting our Reformer, I shall endeavour to sketch, with as much truth as I can, the leading features of his character.

That he possessed strong natural talents is unquestionable. Inquisitive, ardent, acute; vigorous and bold in his conceptions, he entered into all the subtleties of the scholastic science then in vogue; yet, disgusted with its barren results, he sought out a new course of study, which gradually led to a complete revolution in his sentiments. In his early years, he had not access to that finished education which many of his contemporaries obtained in foreign universities, and he was afterwards prevented, by his unsettled and active mode of life, from prosecuting his studies with leisure; but his abilities and application enabled him in a great measure to surmount these disadvantages, and he remained a stranger to none of the branches of learning

cultivated in that age by persons of his profession. He united the love of study with a disposition to active employment, two qualities which are not always found in the same person. The truths which he discovered, he felt an irresistible impulse to impart unto others, for which he was qualified by a bold and fervid eloquence, singularly adapted to arrest the attention, and govern the minds of a fierce and unpolished people.

From the time that he embraced the Reformed doctrines, the desire of propagating them, and of delivering his countrymen from the delusions and corruptions of Popery, became his ruling passion, to which he was always ready to sacrifice his ease, his interest, his reputation, and his life. An ardent attachment to civil liberty held the next place in his breast to love of the Reformed religion. That the zeal with which he laboured to advance these, was of the most disinterested kind, no candid person who has paid attention to his life can doubt for a moment, whatever opinion he may entertain of some of the means which he employed for that purpose. "In fact, he thought only of advancing the glory of God, and promoting the welfare of his country."* Intrepidity, a mind elevated above sordid views, indefatigable activity, and constancy which no disappointments could shake, eminently qualified him for the hazardous and difficult post which he occupied. His integrity was above the suspicion of corruption; his firmness proof equally against the solicitations of friends, and the threats of enemies. Though his impetuosity and courage led him frequently to expose himself to danger, we never find him neglecting to take prudent precautions for his safety. The opinion which his countrymen entertained of his sagacity as well as honesty, is evident from the confidence which they reposed in him. The measures taken for advancing the Reformation, were either prompted at his suggestion, or adopted by his advice; and we must pronounce them to have been as wisely planned as they were boldly executed.

His ministerial functions were discharged with the greatest assiduity, fidelity, and fervour. No avocation or infr-

* Mons. Senebier.

mity prevented him from appearing in the pulpit. Preaching was an employment in which he delighted, and for which he was qualified, by an extensive acquaintance with the Scriptures, and the happy art of applying them, in the most striking manner, to the existing circumstances of the Church, and of his hearers. His powers of alarming the conscience, and arousing the passions, have been frequently mentioned; but he excelled also in opening up the consolations of the Gospel, and calming the breasts of those who were agitated with a sense of their sins. When he discoursed of the griefs and joys, the conflicts and triumphs of genuine Christians, he declared what he himself had known and felt. The letters which he wrote to his familiar acquaintances, breathe the most ardent piety. The religious meditations in which he spent his last sickness, were not confined to that period of his life; they had been his habitual employment from the time that he was brought to the knowledge of the truth, and his solace amidst all the hardships and perils through which he passed.

With his brethren in the ministry he lived in the utmost cordiality. We never read of the slightest variance between him and any of his colleagues. While he was dreaded and hated by the licentious and profane, whose vices he never spared, the religious and sober part of his congregation and countrymen felt a veneration for him, which was founded on his unblemished reputation, as well as his popular talents as a preacher. In private life, he was beloved and revered by his friends and domestics. He was subject to the occasional illapses of melancholy, and depression of spirits, arising partly from natural constitution, and partly from the maladies which had long preyed upon his health; which made him (to use his own expression) *churlish*, and less capable of pleasing and gratifying his friends than he was otherwise disposed to be. This he confessed, and requested them to excuse;* but his friendship was sincere, affectionate, and steady. When free from this morose affection, he relished the pleasures of society, and, among his acquaintances, was accustomed to

* See Extracts from his Letter to "Mrs. in England, 19th August, 1569;" in the Appendix, 6th April, 1559;" and to "A Friend

unbend his mind from severer cares, by indulging in innocent recreation, and the sallies of wit and humour, to which he had a strong propensity, notwithstanding the grave tone of his general deportment.

Most of his faults may be traced to his natural temperament, and the character of the age and country in which he lived. His passions were strong; he felt with the utmost keenness on every subject which interested him; and as he felt he expressed himself, without disguise or affectation. The warmth of his zeal was apt to betray him into intemperate language; his inflexible adherence to his opinions inclined to obstinacy; and his independence of mind occasionally assumed the appearance of haughtiness and disdain. A stranger to complimentary or smooth language, little concerned about the manner in which his reproofs were received, provided they were merited, too much impressed with the evil of the offence, to think of the rank or character of the offender, he often "uttered his admonitions with an acrimony and vehemence more apt to irritate than to reclaim." But he protested, at a time when persons are least in danger of deception, and in a manner which should banish suspicions of the purity of his motives, that in his sharpest rebukes he was influenced by hatred of the vices, not the persons of the vicious, and that his aim was always to discharge his own duty, and if possible to reclaim the guilty.

Those who have charged him with insensibility and inhumanity, have fallen into a mistake very common with superficial thinkers, who, in judging of the characters of persons living in a state of society very different from their own, have pronounced upon their moral qualities from the mere aspect of their exterior manners. He was stern, not savage; austere, not unfeeling; vehement, not vindictive. There is not an instance of his employing his influence to revenge any personal injury which he had received. Rigid as his maxims as to the execution of justice were, there are more instances on record of his interceding for the pardon of criminals, than perhaps of any man of his time; and unless when crimes were atrocious, or the safety of the State was at stake, he never exhorted the executive authority to

the exercise of severity. The boldness and ardour of his mind, called forth by the peculiar circumstances of the time, led him to push his sentiments on some subjects to an extreme, and no consideration could induce him to retract an opinion of which he continued to be persuaded; but his behaviour after his publication against female government, proves that he was not disposed to hazard the disturbance of the public peace by urging their adoption. His conduct at Frankfort evinced his moderation in religious differences among brethren of the same faith, and that he was disposed to make all reasonable allowances for those who could not go the same length with him in Reformation, provided they abstained from imposing upon the consciences of others. The liberties which he took in censuring from the pulpit the actions of individuals of the highest rank and station, appear the more strange and intolerable to us, when contrasted with the silence and timidity of modern times; but we should recollect that they were then common, and that they were not without their utility, in an age when the licentiousness and oppression of the great and powerful often set at defiance the ordinary restraints of law.

In contemplating such a character as that of Knox, it is not *the man*, so much as *the Reformer*, that ought to engage our attention. The admirable wisdom of Providence in raising up persons endued with qualities suited to the work allotted them to perform for the benefit of mankind, demands our particular consideration. The austere and rough Reformer, whose voice once cried in the wilderness of Judea, who was “clothed with camel’s hair, and girt about the loins with a leathern girdle,” who came neither eating nor drinking, who, laying the axe to the root of every tree, warned a generation of vipers to flee from the wrath to come, saying even to the tyrant upon the throne, “It is not lawful for thee;” he, I say, was fitted for “serving the will of God in his generation;” and “wisdom was justified”* in him, according to his rank and place, as well as in his Divine Master whose advent he announced,

* Luke vii. 35.

who “did not strive, nor cry, nor cause his voice to be heard in the streets; nor break the bruised reed, nor quench the smoking flax.” To those who complain, that they are disappointed at not finding, in our national Reformer, a mild demeanour, courteous manners, and a winning address, we may say, in the language of our Lord to the Jews concerning the Baptist,—“What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind? What went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings’ courts. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.” Those talents which fit a person for acting with propriety and usefulness in one age and situation, would altogether unfit him for another. Before the Reformation, superstition, shielded by ignorance and armed with power, governed with gigantic sway. Men of mild spirits, and gentle manners, would have been as unfit for taking the field against this enemy, as a dwarf or a child for encountering a giant. “What did Erasmus in the days of Luther? What would Lowth have done in the days of Wickliffe, or Blair in those of Knox?” It has been justly observed concerning our Reformer, that “those very qualities which now render his character less amiable, fitted him to be the instrument of Providence for advancing the Reformation among a fierce people, and enabled him to face danger, and surmount opposition, from which a person of a more gentle spirit would have been apt to shrink back.”* Viewing his character in this light, if we cannot regard him as an amiable man, we may, without hesitation, pronounce him a Great Reformer.

There are perhaps few who have attended to the active and laborious exertions of Knox, who have not been led insensibly to form the opinion that he was of a robust constitution. This is however a mistake. He was of small stature, and of a weakly habit of body;† a circumstance which serves to give a higher idea of the vigour of his mind. His portrait seems to have been taken more than

* Dr. Robertson.

† “Haud scio an unquam—magis ingenium

in fragili et imbecillo corpusculo collocarit.”
Smetoni Respons. ad Dialog. Hamilt. p. 115.

once during his life, and has been frequently engraved. It continues still to frown in the chamber of Queen Mary, to whom he was often an ungracious visitor. We discern in it the traits of his characteristic intrepidity, austerity, and keen penetration. Nor can we overlook his *beard*, which, according to the custom of the times, he wore long, and reaching to his middle; a circumstance which I mention the rather, because some writers have assured us, that it was the chief thing which procured him reverence among his countrymen.† A Popish author has informed us, that he was gratified with having his picture drawn, and expresses much horror at this, after he had caused all the images of the saints to be broken.‡

There is one charge against him which I have not yet noticed. He has been accused of setting up for a prophet, of presuming to intrude into the secret counsel of God, and of enthusiastically confounding the suggestions of his own imagination, and the effusions of his own spirit, with the dictates of inspiration, and immediate communications from heaven. Let us examine the grounds of this accusation a little. It is proper to hear his own statement of the grounds upon which he proceeded, in many of those warnings which have been denominated predictions. Having, in one of his treatises, denounced the judgments to which the inhabitants of England exposed themselves, by renouncing the Gospel, and returning to idolatry, he gives the following explication of the warrant which he had for his threatenings. “Ye wald knaw the groundis of my certitude. God grant that, hering thame, ye may understand, and stedfastlie believe the same. My assurances ar not the marvelles of Merlin, nor yit the dark sentences of prophane prophetes; but the plane treuth of Godis word, the invincibill justice of the everlasting God, and the ordinarie cours of his punishmentis and plagis frome the beginning, ar my as-

* A print of him, cut in wood, was inserted, by Beza, in his *Icones*. There is another in *Verheideni Imagines*. See also Grainger's *Biogr. History of England*, i. 164.

† Henry Fowles, apud Mackenzie's *Lives of Scottish Writers*, iii. 131, 133. The learned Fellow of Lincoln College had perhaps discovered that the magical virtue, ascribed to Knox by Popish writers, resided in his beard.

‡ Laingæus de *Vita et Moribus Hæretic*. p. 65, 66. The same writer tells us, as a proof of Calvin's vain-glory, that he allowed his picture to be carried about on the necks of men and women, like that of a god; and that when reminded that the picture of Christ was as precious as his, he returned a profane answer, “fertur eum hoc tantum respondisse, Qui huic rei invidet crepet medius.” *Ibid*

surance and groundis. Godis word threatneth destruction to all inobedient; his immutabill justice must requyre the same; the ordinar punishments and plaguis schawis exemplis. What man then can ceis to prophesie?"* We find him expressing himself in a similar way, in his defences of the threatenings which he uttered against those who had been guilty of the murder of King Henry, and the Regent Murray. He denies that he had spoken "as one that entered into the secret counsel of God," and insisted that he had merely declared the judgment which was pronounced in the divine law against murder, and which had often been exemplified in the vengeance that overtook them even in this life.† In so far then his threatenings, or predictions (for so he repeatedly calls them) do not stand in need of an apology.

There are, however, several of his sayings which cannot be vindicated upon these principles, and which he himself rested upon different grounds.‡ Of this kind were, the assurance which he expressed, from the beginning of the Scottish troubles, that the cause of the Congregation would ultimately prevail; his confident hope of again preaching in his native country and at St. Andrew's, avowed by him during his imprisonment on board the French galleys, and frequently repeated during his exile; with the intimations which he gave respecting the death of Thomas Maitland, and Kircaldy of Grange. It cannot be denied that his contemporaries considered these as proceeding from a prophetic spirit, and have attested that they received an exact accomplishment.

The most *easy* way of getting rid of this delicate question is, by dismissing it at once, and summarily pronouncing that all pretensions to extraordinary premonitions, since the completing of the canon of inspiration, are unwarranted: that they ought, without examination, to be discarded and treated as fanciful and visionary. Nor would this fix any peculiar imputation on the character or talents of our Reformer, when it is considered that the most learned per-

* Letter to the Faithfull in Londoun, Newcastle, and Barwick, apud MS. Letters, p. 113.

† Bannatyne, 111, 112, 420, 421.

‡ See the Epistle to the Reader, prefixed to his Sermon, apud History, p. 113. Edin. 1644, 4to.

sons of that age were under the influence of a still greater weakness, and strongly addicted to the belief of judicial astrology. But I doubt much if this method of determining the question would be consistent with doing justice to the subject. I cannot propose to enter into it in this place, and must confine myself to a few general observations. *Est periculum, ne, aut neglectis his, impia fraude, aut suspectis, anili superstitione, obligemur.** On the one hand, the disposition which mankind discover to pry into the secrets of futurity, has been always accompanied with much credulity, and superstition; and it cannot be denied, that the age in which our Reformer lived was prone to credit the marvellous, especially as to the infliction of divine judgments upon individuals. On the other hand, there is great danger of running into scepticism, and of laying down general principles which may lead us obstinately to contest the truth of the best authenticated facts, and even to limit the Spirit of God, and the operation of Providence. This is an extreme to which the present age inclines. That there are instances of persons having presentiments and premonitions as to events that happened to themselves and others, there is, I think, the best reason to believe. The *esprits forts* who laugh at vulgar credulity, and exert their ingenuity in accounting for such phenomena upon ordinary principles, have been exceedingly puzzled with these, a great deal more puzzled than they have confessed; and the solutions which they have given are, in some instances, as mysterious as any thing included in the intervention of superior spirits, or divine intimations.† The canon of our faith is contained in the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament; we must not look to impressions, or new revelations, as the rule of our duty; but that God may, on particular occasions, forewarn persons of some things which shall happen, to testify his approbation of them, to encou-

* Cicero de Div. lib. i.

† This is acknowledged by one who laboured more in this employment than any of them, and with more acuteness. "De tels faits, dont l'univers est tout plein, embarrassent plus les esprits forts qu'ils ne le témoignent." Bayle, Dictionnaire, Art. Maldonat. Note G. He elsewhere says, that dreams "contain

infinitely less mystery than the multitude believe, and a little more than sceptics believe;" and that those who reject them wholly, give reason either to suspect their sincerity, or to charge them with prejudice, and incapacity to discern the force of evidence. Ibid. Art. Majus. Note D.

rage them to confide in him in peculiar circumstances, or for other useful purposes, is not, I think, inconsistent with the principles of either natural or revealed religion. If this is enthusiasm, it is an enthusiasm into which some of the most enlightened and sober men, in modern as well as ancient times, have fallen.* Some of the Reformers were men of singular piety; they “walked with God;” they “were instant in prayer;” they were exposed to uncommon opposition, and had uncommon services to perform; they were endued with extraordinary gifts, and, I am inclined to believe, were occasionally favoured with extraordinary premonitions, with respect to certain events which concerned themselves, other individuals, or the Church in general. But whatever intimations of this kind they enjoyed, they did not rest the authority of their mission upon them, nor appeal to them as constituting any part of the evidence of those doctrines which they preached to the world.

Our Reformer left behind him a widow, and five children. His two sons, Nathanael and Eleazar, were born to him by his first wife, Mrs. Marjory Bowes. We have already seen that, about the year 1566, they went to England, where their mother's relations resided. They received their education at St. John's College, in the University of Cambridge, and after finishing it, died in the prime of life.† It appears that they died without issue, and the family of the Reformer became extinct in the male line. His other three children were daughters of his second wife.‡ Dame Margaret Stewart, his widow, afterwards married Sir Andrew Ker of Fadounside, a strenuous supporter of the Reformation.§ The names of his daughters

* “Setting aside these sorts of divination as extremely suspicious,” says a modern author, who was not addicted to enthusiastic notions, “there remain predictions by dreams, and by sudden impulses, upon persons who were not of the fraternity of impostors; these were allowed to be sometimes preternatural, by many of the learned Pagans, and cannot, I think, be disproved, and should not be totally rejected.” Dr. Jortin's Remarks on Ecclesiastical History, vol. i. p. 93. See also p. 45, 77. Lond. 1805. The learned reader may also consult the *Epicrisis* of Witsius upon this question: the whole dissertation, in which he exposes the opposite extreme, is well entitled to a perusal. *Miscellanea Sacra*, tom. i. p. 391.

† See Note F. Period Eighth.

‡ In the Records of the General Assembly, March 1573, is the following act: “The Assemblie, considering that the travells of umqll Johne Knox merits favourable to be remembrit in his posteritie, gives to Margaret Stewart, his relict, and hir thrie daughters, of the said umqll Johne, the pensione qlk he himselfe had, in his tyme, of the kirk, and that for the year next approachand, and following his deceis, of the year of God, 1573, to their education and support, extending to five hundred merks money, twa ch. quhait, sax ch. beir, four ch. aittes.” *Buik of the Universal Kirk*, p. 56.

§ Douglas's Peerage of Scotland, p. 522.

were Martha, Margaret, and Elizabeth. The first was married to Mr. James Fleming, a minister of the Church of Scotland;* the second to Zachary Pont, son of Mr. Robert Pont, minister of St. Cuthbert's,† near Edinburgh; and the third to Mr. John Welch, minister of Ayr.‡

Mrs. Welch seems to have inherited a considerable portion of her father's spirit, and she had her share of hardships similar to his. Her husband was one of those who resisted the arbitrary measures pursued by James VI. for overturning the government and liberties of the Presbyterian Church of Scotland. As a prelude to this, the King had determined to abolish the General Assembly, the stated meetings of which he had for a considerable time prevented by successive prorogations. The ministers, however, unawed by the despotism of the Court, resolved to keep the diet which had been appointed to be held at Aberdeen, in July, 1605. On the day of meeting, the King's Commissioner charged them to dissolve, which was immediately obeyed; nevertheless, several of the leading members, including Welch and five of his brethren, were thrown into prison. When called before the Privy Council, they declined the jurisdiction of that Court, as not the proper judges of their cause, whereupon they were arraigned, and by a packed and corrupted jury, found guilty, and condemned to the death of traitors.§ Leaving her children at Ayr, Mrs. Welch attended her husband in prison, and was present at Linlithgow, with the wives of the other pannels, on the day of trial. When informed of the sentence, these

* He was the grandfather of Mr. Robert Fleming, minister in London, and author of the well-known book, *The fulfilling of the Scriptures*. But Mr. Robert's father was of a different marriage. Fleming's *Practical Discourse on the Death of King William*, preface, p. 14. Lond. 1702.

† See Note G. Period Eighth.

‡ Life of Mr. John Welch, 11, prefixed to his sermons, Glas. 1771. He was the father of Mr. Josias Welch, minister of Templepatrick in Ireland, and grandfather of Mr. John Welch, minister of Irongray, in Galloway, who lived during the Scots Episcopal Persecution.

§ The most of the jury were not present during the reasoning on the libel. When the jury were enclosed, the Justice-Clerk went in and sat among them. The greater part demurring to find the pannels guilty, the Chan-

cellor went out and consulted with the other lords, who dealt with the reluctant jurymen to condemn the pannels, in order to please his Majesty, promising that no punishment should be inflicted. By such disgraceful and illegal means, they at last obtained a majority of three. The *Reformation of Religion in Scotland*, written by Mr. John Forbes. MS. p. 131-151. The copy of this History, which is now before me, was transcribed "ex Authoris authographo," in the year 1726. The author was one of the condemned ministers. The History begins at the year 1580; but is chiefly occupied in detailing the transactions which preceded and followed the Assembly at Aberdeen. It contains a number of particulars respecting these, not to be found in other histories, and an account of a plot formed for displacing the Lord Chancellor and President.

heroines, instead of lamenting their fate, praised God who had given their husbands courage to stand to the cause of their Master ; adding that, like Him, they had been judged and condemned under the covert of night.*

The sentence having been commuted into banishment, she accompanied her husband to France, where they remained for sixteen years.† Mr. Welch having lost his health, and the physicians informing him that the only prospect which he had of recovering it, was by returning to his native country, ventured, about the year 1622, to come to London. His wife, by means of some of her mother's relations at Court, obtained access to the king, to petition for liberty to him to go to Scotland for the sake of his health. The following conversation is said to have taken place on that occasion. His Majesty asked her, who was her father. She replied, Mr. Knox. "Knox and Welch!" exclaimed he, "the Devil never made such a match as that."—"Its right like, Sir," said she, "for we never speired‡ his advice." He asked her, how many children her father had left, and if they were lads or lasses. She said, three, and they were all lasses. "God be thanked!" cried the king, lifting up both his hands; "for an they had been three lads, I had never bruiked§ my three kingdoms in peace." She urged her request, that he would give her husband his native air. "Give him the devil!" a morsel which James had often in his mouth. "Give that to your hungry courtiers," said she, offended at his profanity. He told her at last that, if she would persuade her husband to submit to the bishops, he would allow him to return to Scotland. Mrs. Welch, lifting up her apron, and holding it towards the King, replied, in the true spirit of her father, "Please your Majesty, I'd rather kep|| his head there."¶

* Row's MS. Historie, p. 111, 122.

† See Note H. Period Eighth.

‡ i. e. asked. § i. e. enjoyed.

|| i. e. receive.

¶ I met with the account of this conversation in a MS. written by Mr. Robert Traill, minister in London, entitled, "An Accompt of Several Passages in the Lives of some Eminent Men in the Nation, not recorded in any History." It is inserted in the heart of a commonplace book, containing notes of sermons, &c. written by him when a student of divinity at

St. Andrew's, between 1659 and 1663. He received the account from aged persons, and says the conference between King James and Mrs. Welch, is "current to this day in the mouths of many." I have since seen the same story in Woodrow's MSS. Collections, vol. i. Life of Welch, p. 27. Bibl. Coll. Glas. James stood much in awe of Mr. Welch, who often reproved him for his habit of profane swearing. It is said, that if he had at any time been swearing in a public place, he would turn round, and ask if Welch was near. Traill's

The account of our Reformer's publications has been partly anticipated in the course of the preceding narrative. Though his writings were of great utility, it was not by them, but by his personal exertions, that he chiefly advanced the Reformation, and transmitted his name to posterity. He did not view this as the field in which he was called to labour. "That I did not in writing communicate my judgment upon the Scriptures," says he, "I have ever thought myself to have most just reason. For, considering myself rather called of my God to instruct the ignorant, comfort the sorrowful, confirm the weak, and rebuke the proud, by tongue and lively voice, in these most corrupt days, than to compose books for the age to come, (seeing that so much is written, and by men of most singular erudition, and yet so little well-observed;) I decreed to contain myself within the bounds of that vocation, whereunto I found myself especially called."* This resolution was most judiciously formed. His situation was very different from that of the early Protestant Reformers. They found the whole world in ignorance of the doctrines of Christianity. Men were either destitute of books, or such as they possessed were calculated only to mislead. The oral instructions of a few individuals could extend but a small way; it was principally by means of their writings, which circulated with amazing rapidity, that they benefited mankind, and became not merely the instructors of the particular cities and countries where they resided and preached, but the Reformers of Europe. By the time that Knox appeared on the field, their judicious commentaries upon the different books of Scripture, and their able defences of its doctrines, were laid open to the English reader.† What

MS. It appears Welch died soon after the occurrence mentioned above. "This month of May, 1622," says one of his intimate friends, "we received intelligence of the death of that holy servant of God, Mr. Welch, one of the fathers and pillars of that Church, and the light of his age, who died at London, an exile from his native country, on account of his opposition to the re-establishment of Episcopal government, and his firm support of the Presbyterian and Synodical discipline, received and established among us; and that after eighteen years' banishment—a man full of the Holy Spirit, zeal, charity, and incredible diligence in the duties of his office."

* Preface to his Sermon, apud History, p. 113. Edin. 1664.

† Those who have not directed their attention to this point, cannot easily conceive to what extent the translation of foreign theological books into our language was carried at that time. There was scarcely a book of any celebrity published in Latin by the continental Reformers, that did not appear in an English version. Bibliographers, and the annalists of printing, are very defective in the information which they communicate on this branch.

was more immediately required of him was to use the peculiar talent in which he excelled, and “by tongue and lively voice,” to imprint the doctrines of the Bible upon the hearts of his countrymen. When he was deprived of an opportunity of doing this during his exile, there could not be a more proper substitute than that which he adopted, by publishing familiar epistles, exhortations, and admonitions, in which he briefly recalled to their minds the truths which they had received, and excited them to adhere unto them. These were circulated and read with far more ease, and to a far greater extent, than large treatises could have been.

Of the many sermons preached by him during his ministry, he never published but one, which was extorted from him by peculiar circumstances; and that one affords a very favourable specimen of his talents,—proving, at the same time, that if he had applied himself to writing, he was qualified for excelling in that department. He had a ready command of language, expressed himself with perspicuity, and with great animation and force. Though he despised the tinsel of rhetoric, he was acquainted with the principles of that art, and when he had leisure and inclination to polish his style, wrote both with propriety and elegance. Those who read his letter to the Queen-Regent, his answer to Tyrie, his papers in the account of the dispute with Kennedy, or even his sermon, will be satisfied of this. During his residence in England, he acquired the habit of writing the language according to the manner of that country; and in all his publications which appeared during his lifetime, the English and not the Scottish orthography and mode of expression, are used.* In this respect, there is a very evident difference between them and the vernacular writings of Buchanan.

The freedoms which have been used with his writings, in the editions commonly read, have greatly injured the author's literary reputation. They were translated into the language which was used in the middle of the seven-

* It is to this that Ninian Winzet refers, in one of his letters addressed to Knox. “Gif ye, throw curiositie of novationis, hes forzet our auld plane Scottis, quhilk zour mother

lerit zow, in tymes cuming I sall wrytt to zow my mynd in Latin, for I am nocht acqyntit with zour Southeroun,” Keith, App. 254.

teenth century, by which they were deprived of the antique costume which they formerly wore, and contracted an air of vulgarity that did not originally belong to them. Besides this, they have been reprinted with innumerable omissions, interpolations, and alterations, which frequently affect the sense, and always enfeeble the language. The two works which have been most read, are the least accurate and polished, as to style, of all his writings. His tract against female Government was hastily published by him, under great irritation of mind at the increasing cruelty of Queen Mary of England. His History of the Reformation was undertaken during the confusions of the civil war, and was afterwards continued, at intervals snatched from numerous avocations. The collection of historical materials is a work of labour and time; but the digesting and arranging of them into a regular narrative, require much leisure, and undivided attention.* The want of these sufficiently accounts for the confusion that is often observable in that work. But notwithstanding of this, and of particular mistakes, it still continues to be the principal source of information as to ecclesiastical proceedings in that period; and although great keenness has been discovered in attacking its genuineness and accuracy, it has been confirmed, in all the leading facts, by the examination of other documents, which the research of later times has brought to light.

His defence of *Predestination*, the only theological treatise of any size which was published by him, is rare, and has been seen by few. It is written with perspicuity, and discovers his controversial acuteness, with becoming caution, in handling that delicate question. A catalogue of his publications, as complete as I have been able to draw up, shall be inserted in the notes.†

I have thus attempted to give an account of our national Reformer, of the principal events of his life, of his sentiments, his writings, and his exertions in the cause of religion and liberty. If what I have done shall contribute to set his character in a more just and correct light, than that

* See Note I.—Period Eighth.

† See Note K.—Period Eighth.

in which it has been generally represented; if it shall be subservient to the illustration of the ecclesiastical history of that period, or excite others to pay more attention to the subject; above all, if it shall be the means of suggesting, or confirming proofs of the superintendence of a wise and merciful Providence, in the accomplishment of a revolution of all others the most interesting and beneficial to this country, I shall not think any labour which I have bestowed on the subject to have been thrown away, or unrewarded.

NOTES.

PERIOD FIRST.

NOTE A, p. 1.—Beza, who was contemporary and personally acquainted with our Reformer, designs him "*Joannes Cnoxus, Scotus, Giffordiensis*," *Icones Virorum Illustrium*, Ee. iij. anno 1580. Spotswood says he was "born in Gifford, within Lothian," *History*, p. 265, edit. 1677. David Buchanan, in the *Memoir of Knox*, prefixed to the edition of his *History of the Reformation*, published in 1644, gives the same account; which has been adopted in all the sketches of his life that have accompanied his history, even in the edition by Matthew Crawford, printed from authentic MSS. anno 1732; and by Wodrow in his *Manuscript Collections* respecting the Scottish Reformers, in *Bibl. Coll. Glasg.* In a "*Genealogical Account of the Knoxes*," in the possession of the family of the late Mr. James Knox, minister of Scoon, the Reformer's father is said to have been a brother of the house of Ranferlie, proprietor of the estate of Gifford. Scott's *History of the Reformers in Scotland*, p. 94. On the other hand, Archibald Hamilton, a contemporary and a countryman of Knox, says the place of his birth was the town of Haddington. "*Obscuris natus parentibus in Hadintona, oppido in Laudonia*." *De Confusione Calvinianæ Sectæ apud Scotos*, *Dialogus*, fol. 64. Parisiis, 1577. Hamilton, indeed, is a writer entitled to no credit when he had any temptation to lie; but as to such a circumstance as this, there is no reason to suspect him of intentional falsification. Another Scotsman who wrote at that period, says he was born "*prope Hadintonam*," near Haddington. Laingæus (*Scotus*) *De Vita, et Moribus, atque rebus gestis Hæreticorum nostri temporis*. Fol. 113. Parisiis, 1581. The testimony of Archibald Hamilton, though not altogether without weight, may be considered as set aside by Spotswood's statement; for as the Archbishop could scarcely be ignorant of Knox's birth-place, and as he fixes it at Gifford, it is reasonable to suppose he had good reasons for differing from a preceding authority. Dr. Barclay, late minister of Haddington, was of opinion that the Reformer was born in the Giffordgate. *Transactions of the Society of Antiquaries in Scotland*, p. 69, 70. The grounds of this opinion were merely the tradition of the place, and the circumstance that the house in which he was alleged to have been born, with some adjoining acres of land, belonged for a number of generations to a family of the same name, who claimed kindred with the Reformer, and who lately sold the property to the Earl of Wemyss. It appears from the title-deeds, that the lands in question belonged to the Abbey of Haddington; and as they must have been annexed to the Crown subsequently to the Reformation, they could not be the property of the family of Knox at the time of our Reformer's birth. The tradition, therefore, of his being born in the Giffordgate, is supported merely by the possibility that his parents might have resided in that house whilst it was the property of the Abbey. As the sons of the Reformer died without issue, there is no reason to think that the family which resided in the Giffordgate was lineally descended from him. According to the title-deeds in the possession of Lord Wemyss, William Knox in Moreham, and Elizabeth Schortes his wife, were infeft in subjects in the Nungate (Haddington) in 1598, by virtue of a crown-charter; but no such names occur in the genealogy of the Knox family which belonged to the late Mr. Knox, minister of Scoon. The opinion, therefore, seems best entitled to credit, that the Reformer was born in the village of Gifford.

NOTE B, p. 3.—So early as the twelfth century there was a school at Abernethy, and one at Roxburgh. Sir James Dalrymple's *Collections*, p. 226, 255. Other schools in that and the following century are mentioned in *Charters apud Chalmers' Caledonia*, i. p. 76. It is probable that schools for teaching the Latin tongue were at first attached to monasteries, and it was long a com-

mon practice among the barons to board their sons with the monks for their education. *Caledonia*, i. p. 78. When the regular clergy had degenerated, and learning was no longer confined to their order, grammar-schools were erected in the principal towns, some of which acquired great celebrity, owing to the skill of the masters who presided over them. Among the grammar-schools in Scotland, those of Aberdeen and Perth seem to have been distinguished, during the first half of the sixteenth century. John Vaus was rector of the former about the year 1520, and is commended by Boece, at that time Principal of the University of Aberdeen, for his knowledge of the Latin tongue, and success in the education of youth. From Boece's account, a very close connection seems to have been established between his school and the university. *Boetii Vitæ*, ut supra, fol. xxx. Vaus was the author of a Latin Grammar, printed at Edinburgh, by R. Lepreuik, anno 1566, which is now exceedingly rare. Andrew Simson was master of the school of Perth, although at a period somewhat later than the former, and taught Latin with much success. A greater number of learned men proceeded from his school than from any other in the kingdom. He had sometimes under his charge 300 boys, many of them sons of the principal nobility and gentry in the kingdom. Row's MS. *Historie*, p. 3, 4. He left Perth at the establishment of the Reformation, 1560, and became minister of Dunning and Cargill, from which he was translated, anno 1564, to Dunbar, where he sustained the double office of master of the grammar-school, and minister of the parish. He was the author of *Latin Rudiments*, which continued to be taught in the schools until the time of Ruddiman, and were much esteemed by that excellent scholar. Row, ut supra, Keith, p. 534. Chalmers' *Life of Ruddiman*, p. 21, 22, 63. At the Reformation, the Protestant clergy recommended, and earnestly pressed, the erection of a school in every parish. *First Book of Discipline*, p. 40. In many instances this was complied with; but it was not enacted by Parliament until anno 1633.

NOTE C, p. 4.—In this note I shall throw together such facts as I have met with, relating to the introduction of the Greek language into Scotland, and the progress which it made during the sixteenth century, referring what relates to the Hebrew to Note C, Period Sixth. They are bare gleanings; but such as they are, I trust they will not be altogether unacceptable to those who take an interest in the subject.

In the year 1522, Boece mentions George Dundas as a good Greek scholar. He was afterwards master of the Knights of St John in Scotland, and had, most probably, acquired the knowledge of the language in France. "*Georgius Dundas grecas atq. latinas literas apprime doctus, equitum Hierosolymitanorum intra Scotorum regnum magistratum multo sudore (superatis emulis) postea adeptus.*" *Boetii Vitæ* Episcop. Murth. et Aberdon. fol. xxvii. b. It is reasonable to suppose that other individuals in the nation might acquire it in the same way; but Boece makes no mention of Greek among the branches taught at the universities in his time, although he is minute on this head. Nor do I find any other reference to the subject previous to the year 1534, when Erskine of Dun brought a learned man from France, and employed him to teach Greek in Montrose, as mentioned above in that part of the text to which this note refers. At his school, George Wishart, the martyr, must have obtained the knowledge of the language; and he seems to have been assistant or successor to his master. But the bishop of Brechin, (William Chisholm,) hearing that Wishart taught the Greek New Testament, summoned him to appear before him on a charge of heresy, upon which he fled the kingdom. This was in 1538. Petrie, part ii. p. 182. It is likely that Knox first derived his knowledge of Greek from George Wishart after his return from England. Buchanan seems to have acquired it during his residence on the Continent. *Buch. Ep.* p. 25, edit. Rud.

Lesly says that when James V. in his progress through the kingdom anno 1540, came to Aberdeen, among other entertainments which were given to him, the students of the university "recited orations in the *Greek* and Latin tongue, composed with the greatest skill." "*Orationes in Græca Latinaque lingua, summo artificio instructæ.*" *Leslæus de rebus gestis Scotorum*, lib. ix. p. 430, edit 1675. When we consider the state of learning at that period in Scotland, there is reason to suspect that the bishop's description is highly coloured; yet as he entered that university a few years after, we may conclude from it that some attention had been paid to the Greek language at that time in Aberdeen. It had most probably been introduced by Hector Boece, the learned Principal of that university. If the king was entertained with the

great learning of the students of Aberdeen, the English ambassador was no less diverted, on the very same year, with the ignorance which our bishops discovered of the Greek tongue. The ambassador, who was a scholar as well as a statesman, had caused his men to wear on their sleeves the following Greek motto, ΜΟΝΩ ΑΝΑΚΤΙ ΔΟΥΛΕΤΩ, *I serve the king only*. This the Scottish bishops (whose knowledge did not extend beyond Latin) read MONACHULUS, *a little monk*, and thereupon circulated the report that the ambassador's servants were monks, who had been taken out of the monasteries lately suppressed in England. To counteract this report, Sadler was obliged to furnish a translation of the inscription. "It appeareth (says he) they are no good Grecians. And now the effect of my words is known, and they be well laughed at for their learned interpretation." Sadler's Letters, i. 48, 49. Edinb. 1809. *Græcum est, non legitur*, continued to be an adage in Scotland, to a much later period, even among men who had received a university education. Row's MS. History of the Kirk, p. 96, copy in Divinity Libr. Edin.

To return to the school at Montrose: it was kept up, by the public spirit of its patron, until the establishment of the Reformation. Some years before that event, the celebrated scholar Andrew Melville received his education at it, under Pierre de Marsiliers, a Frenchman. He had made such proficiency in Greek when he entered the university of St Andrews, about the year 1559, that he was able to read Aristotle in the original language, "which even his masters themselves understood not." Life of Andrew Melville, p. 2, apud Wodrow's MSS. Collections, vol. i. Mr. James Melville's Diary, p. 32. For although the logicks, ethics, &c. of Aristotle were then read in the colleges, it was in a Latin translation. The regent of St Leonard's (says James Melville) "tauld me of my uncle Mr. Andro Melvill, whom he knew, in the tyme of his cours in the new collag, to use the Greik logicks of Aristotle, quhilk was a wounder to them, he was so fyne a scholar, and of sic expectation." MS. Diary, p. 25.

By the first book of Discipline, it was provided, that there should "be a reader of Greek" in one of the colleges of each university, who "shall compleat the grammar thereof in three months," and "shall interpret some book of Plato, together with some places of the New Testament, and shall compleat his course the same year." Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 553. The small number of learned men, deficiency of funds, and the confusions in which the country was afterwards involved, prevented, in a great degree, the execution of this wise measure. Owing to the last of these circumstances, some learned Scotsmen devoted their talents to the service of foreign seminaries, instead of returning to their native country. Buchanani Epist. p. 7, 9, 10, 33.* On account of the scarcity of preachers, it was also found necessary to settle several of the learned men in towns which were not the seat of a university. Some of them undertook the instruction of youth, along with the pastoral inspection of their parishes. John Row taught the Greek tongue in Perth. It does not appear that the venerable teacher, Andrew Simpson (see p. 332), was capable of this task; but he was careful that his son Patrick should not labour under the same defect. He was sent to the university of Cambridge, in which he made great proficiency, and after his return to Scotland taught Greek at Spot, a village in East Lothian, where he was minister. Row's MS. p. 96 of copy in the Divinity Lib. Edin. It is reasonable to suppose, that this branch of study would not be neglected at St Andrews during the time that Buchanan was Principal of St Leonard's College, from 1565 to 1570. Patrick Adamson, to whom he demitted his office, and whom he recommended for his "literature and sufficiency," (Buch. Op. i. 10,) was not then in the kingdom: and the state of education languished for some time in that university. James Melville, who entered it in 1570, gives the following account:—"Our regent begoud, and taught us the a, b, c, of the Greik, and the simple declinationis, but went no farder." MS. Diary, p. 26.

Of his own education the said James gives some interesting particulars. He entered school first at Logie, about the year 1662, and was afterwards removed to Montrose. "About the fyft yeir of my age, the Grate Buik was put in my hand, and when I was seavine, lytle therof haid I learnit at hame; therfor my father put my eldest and onlie brother Daid, about a yeir and a halff in age aboue me, and me togidder, to a kinsman and brother in the ministerie of his to scholl, a guid, lerned, kynd man, whome for thankfulnes I name Mr.

* One of these was Henry Scrimger, a good Grecian. Some particulars respecting him, not so commonly known, may be seen in Senebier, Hist. Litter. de Geneve, tom. i. art. Scrimger. See also Teissier, Eloges, tom. iii, 383-385. Leide, 1715.

Wilyam Gray, Minister at Logie, Montrose..... We lerned ther the Rudiments of the Latin grammair, withe the vocables in Latin and Frenche, also divers speitches in Frenche, with the reiding and right pronounciation of that tounge. We proceidit fordar to the Etymologie of Lilius, and his Syntax, as also a lytle of the Syntax of Linacer; therwith was ioyned Hunter's Nomenclatura, the Minora Colloquia of Erasmus, and sum of the Eclogues of Virgill and Epist. of Horace; also Cicero his epistles ad Terentiam. He haid a verie guid and profitable form of resolving the authors, he teatched grammaticallie bathe according to the Etymologie and Syntax; bot as for me, the trewth was, my ingyne and memorie war guid aneuche, bot my iudgment and understanding war as yit smored and dark, sa that the thing quhilk I gat was mair be rat ryme nor knowlage. Ther also we haid the aire guid, and fields reasonable fear; and be our maister war teached to handle the bow for archerie, the glub for goff, the batons for fencing; also to rin, to loope, to swoum, to warsell, to proue pratteiks, euerie ane haiffing his matche and andagonist, bathe in our lessons and play. A happie and golden tyme indeid, giff our negligence and vnthankfulnes haid nocht moued God to schorten it, partlie be deceying of the number, quhilk caused the maister to weirie, and partlie be a pest quhilk the Lord, for sinne and contempt of his gospell, send vpon Montrose, distant from Ouer Logie bot twa myles; sa that scholl skall-ed, and we war all send for and brought hame." Five or six years afterwards he was sent to Montrose. "Sa I was put to the scholl of Montrose, finding, of God's guid providence, my auld mother Mariorie Gray, wha parting from hir brother at his mariage, haid takin vpe hous and scholl for lasses in Montrose; to hir I was welcome againe as hir awin sone. The maister of the scholl, a lerned, honest, kynd man, whom also for thankfulnes I name Mr. Andro Miln, Minister at Fedresso; he was verie skilfull and diligent; the first yeir he causit ws go throw the Rudiments againe, thereafter enter and pas throw the first part of Grammer of Sebastian, therwith we hard Phormionem Terentii, and war exerceisd in composition; efter that entered to the second part, and hard therwith the Georgics of Wirgill, and dyvers vther things. I never gat a strak of his hand, whowbeit I committed twa lourd faultes, as it war with fyre and sword: Haiffing the candle in my hand on a wintar night, before sax hours, in the scholl sitting in the class, bernlie and negligentlie pleying with the beut, it kendlit sa on fyre, that we haid all ado to put it out with our feit. The vther was being molested by a condisciple, wha cutted the stringes of my pen and ink-horn with his pen-knyff, I minting with my pen-knyff to his legges to fley him, he feared, and lifting now a lag, now the vther, rasht on his lag vpon my knyff and strak himselff a deiye wound in the schin of the lag, quhilk was a quarter of a yeir in curing..... The Lard of Done, mentioned befor, dwelt oft in the town, and of his charitie interteined a blind man, wha haid a singular guid voice; him he causit the doctor of our scholl teatche the wholl Psalmes in miter, with the tones therof, and sing tham in the kirk; be heiring of whome I was sa delyted, that I lernit manie of the Psalmes and toones therof in miter, quhilk I haiff thought euer sen syne a grait blessing and comfort." Melvill's Diary, printed copy, pp. 13, 14, 17, 18.

The example of Montrose, St Andrews, and Perth seems to have been followed by other burghs; and so early as 1566 we find the burgesses of Elgin so deeply impressed with the importance of education, that they engaged "Maister Patrick Balfour, son to the umquhill Patrick Balfour of Oldmylls, and some tyme student in Santtandrows," to teach within the grammar school, grammar, oratory, poetry, civil manners, rhetoric, and, as "need sall requir," Greek, Hebrew, philosophy, and logic! for the sum of ten pounds yearly and his "meit honestly" in the houses of the subscribers alternately during the year. The following is a copy of the original contract betwixt the magistrates and town council, and the said Mr. Patrick.

"At Elgin, ye tent day of September, ye zeir off God, m.v.c. sixty-six zeirs. It is appointit, contractit, finalie endit, and agreit, betwix ye parties following, viz. ye provost, balzies, and consall, in name off themselves, and for ye rest of ye communitie of ye burt of Elgin, on ye tane part, and Maister Patrick Balfour, son to umqll Patrick Balfour of Oldmyll, somtyme student in Santtandrows, on ye uther pt. in maner, forme, and effectt, as efter folois. That is to say, ye said Master Patrick Balfour is become faythfullie obliest lyk as he be ye tenor heirop, faythfullie obleisses him to teche, instruct, and learn ye bairns, burgesses' sonnes, and uthers inhabitants sonnes wtin yis burt off Elgin, and uthers gentillmenis bairns off ye countrie yat pleisses to send them to yis burt wtin ye grammer scuill yrof, sufficientlie in grammer, oratorie, and poetrie, civill manneris, rhetoric, and as neid sall requir, and yai cummand to

perfectioun, sall reid and teiche Greik and Ebrew, philosophie, and logik, and yat for ye space off thrie zeirs nixt followand ye feist off Mertinmess, ye zeir of God forsaid, and to continue and induir in teching reiding, instructing, and upbringin off ye saidis bairns in ye artis above wrettin, so far as yay, or ony of them, ar abill to ressaive, and sall entier in ye said scuill daylie, at sex hors, and remain techand ye saidis bairns qll nine hors, and fra ten hors, till twelf hors, and fra ane afrnowne till sex hors at ewin, and gair ye bairns, ilk Sondag, and uther festual tymes appointed be ye Kirk, to be present at ye sermone and afrnowne's prayris, being instructit in ye Catechess for making ansr. to ye minister yt. prechis of ye said Catechess; and ye said Master Patrick sall uss nor accept na burden of ministerie, nor ony uther occupation upon him induring ye said space, bot only to await upon ye said grammer scuill, teching and instructing ye saids bairns, and his awin studies yranent; for ye qlk ye saids provost, balzies, and consall, oblisses them, and their successors, to content and pay to ye said Mastr Patrick Balfour ye sowm of ten pundis, usuall money of Scotland, for his fie, together with his meit honestly as effeirs in yir personis howssis following, viz.—Master Alex. Douglass, Johne Annand, Wm. Gatherar, Wm. Hay, Alex. Winchester, minister, Thomas Umfra, and Alex. Gothary, ane day in the week in ilk ane off ye saids person's housses, and swa weklie for the space of ane zeir, in witness of ye qlks, both ye saids parties hes subscrivit yis present contract with yair hand, day, zeir, and place forsaid, before these witnesses,—Sir William Douglas, scribe of consistorie, and Jhon Cupar, indwellar wtinye College off ye Cathedrall Kirk of Murray, and George Dowglass, student in Elgin, wt. uthers divers.

JOHN ANNAND, Pvost of Elgin, wt. my hand ssr.

Maister PATRICK BALFOUR, wt. my hand."

The return of Andrew Melville in 1573, gave a new impulse to literature in Scotland. That celebrated scholar had perfected himself in the knowledge of the languages during the nine years which he spent on the Continent, and had astonished the learned at Geneva by the fluency with which he read and spoke Greek. Ut Supra, p. 33. He was first placed as Principal of the university of Glasgow, and afterwards removed to St. Andrew's. Such was his celebrity, that he attracted students from England and foreign countries, whereas formerly it had been the custom for the Scottish youth to go abroad for their education. Spotswood, with whom he was no favourite, and Calderwood, equally bear testimony to his profound knowledge of this language. Soon after Melville's arrival, Thomas Smeton, another good Greek scholar, came, and was made Principal of the university of Glasgow. I may mention, although it belongs to the subject of typography, that there appear to have been neither Greek nor Hebrew types in this country in 1579, when Smeton's Answer to Archibald Hamilton was printed; for blanks are left or all the phrases and quotations in these languages, which the author intended to introduce. In my copy of the book, a number of these have been filled up with a pen by the author's own hand.

NOTE D, p. 12.—We have no good *Monasticon* of Scotland; and it is now impossible to ascertain the exact number of regular clergy, or even religious houses, that were in this country. The best and most particular account of the introduction of the different monastic orders from England and the Continent, is contained in the first volume of Mr. Chalmers's Caledonia. Dr. Jamieson, in his history of the ancient Culdees, lately published, has traced, with much attention, the measures pursued for suppressing the ancient monks, to make way for the new orders which were immediately dependent upon Rome. In Spotswood's Account, published at the end of Keith's Catalogue of Bishops, 170 religious houses are enumerated; but his account is defective. Mr. Dalryell, upon the authority of a MS. has stated the number of the monks and nuns in this country as amounting only to 1114 about the period of the Reformation. Cursory Remarks prefixed to Scottish poems of the 16th century, vol. i. p. 38, 39. Edin. 1801. Taking the number of monasteries, according to Spotswood's Account, this would allow only seven persons to each house on an average, a number incredibly small. It will be still smaller, if we suppose that there were 260 religious houses, as stated by Mr. Dalryell in another publication. Dalryell's Fragments of Scottish History, p. 11, 28. In the year 1542, there were 200 monks in Melrose alone. Ibid. The number in Dunfermline seems to have varied from 30 to 50. Dalryell's Tract on Monastic Antiquities, p. 13. Paisley, Elgin, and Arbroath, were not inferior to it in their endowments. In general it may be observed, that the passion for the monastic life appears not to have been on the increase, even in the early part of the 16th cen-

ture. But if we would form an estimate of the number of the monks, we must allow for a great diminution of them from 1538 to 1559. During that period, many of them, especially the younger ones, embraced the reformed opinions, and deserted the convents. Cald. MS. i. 97, 100, 151. When the monastery of the Greyfriars at Perth was destroyed in 1559, only eight monks belonged to it. Knox, *Historie*, p. 128.

NOTE E, p. 14.—The *corpse-present* was a forced benevolence, not due by any law or canon of the church, at least in Scotland. It was demanded by the vicar, and seems to have been distinct from the ordinary dues exacted for the interment of the body, and deliverance of the soul from purgatory. The perquisite consisted of the best cow which belonged to the deceased, and the uppermost cloth or covering of his bed, or the uppermost of his body-clothes. It has been suggested, that it was exacted on pretext of dues which the person might have failed to pay during his life-time. Whatever might afterwards be made the pretext, I think it most probable that the clergy borrowed the hint from the perquisites common in feudal times. The “*cors-presant kow*” answers to the “*hereyeild horse*,” which was paid to a landlord on the death of a tenant. The uppermost cloth seems to have been a perquisite belonging to persons occupying certain offices. When Bishop Lesly was relieved from the Tower of London, a demand of this kind was made upon him: “The gentleman-porter of the Tower (says he) retained my satin gown as due to him, because it was my *uppermost-cloth* when I entered in the Tower.” *Negotiations*, apud Anderson’s *Collections*, iii. 247. The *corpse-present* was not confined to Scotland. We find the English House of Commons complaining of it, anno 1530 (Fox, 907). It was exacted with great rigour in Scotland; and if any vicar, more humane than the rest, passed from the demand, he gave an unpardonable offence to his brethren (Lindsay of Pitscottie’s *Hist.* p. 151. Edin. 1728, fol. Fox, 1153). It was felt as a very galling oppression, and is often mentioned with indignation in the writings of Sir David Lindsay.

Schir, be quhat law, tell me, qubarefor, or why?

That ane vickar suld take fra me thre ky.

Ane for my father, and for my wyfe ane uther,

And the third cow he tuke for Mald my mother.

Thay haif na law, exceptand consuetude,

Quhilk law, to thame, is sufficient and gude.

* * * * *

And als the vicar, as I trow,

He will nocht fail to tak ane kow

And upmaist claith, thocht babis thame ban

From ane pure selie husbandman;

Quhen that he lyis for til de

Having small bairnis twa or thre,

And hes thre ky withoutin mo,

The vicar must have ane of tho,

With the gray cloke that happis the bed

Howbeit that he be purelye cled;

And gif the wyfe de on the morne,

Thocht all the babis suld be forlorne,

The uther kow he cleikis away,

With her pure cote of roplock gray;

And gif, within twa days or thre,

The eldest chyld hapnis to de,

Of the thrid kow he will be sure.

Quhen he his all then under his cure,

And father and mother baith ar deid,

Beg mon the babis, without remeid.

Chalmers’s *Lindsay*, ii. 7, 8. iii. 105.

When the alarming progress of the new opinions threatened the overthrow of the whole establishment, the clergy professed themselves willing to remit, or at least moderate, this shameful tribute. But they did not make this concession until a remonstrance on the subject was laid before the Provincial Council, (1558-9,) complaining that these gifts, which were originally merely discretionary, had become compulsory, and were exacted under pain of censure and excommunication. Upon this the council came to the following resolution: That to “take away the murmurs of those who spoke against mortuaries,” when any person died, his goods, after paying his debts, should be divided into due portions, and if the *dead’s part* did not exceed ten pounds

Scots, the vicar should compound for his mortuary and uppermost cloth, by taking forty shillings; if it was under ten pounds, and not below twenty shillings, that he should compound according to the above proportion; but if it was under twenty shillings, that the vicar should make no demand. With respect to barons and burgesses, and all persons whose portion exceeded ten pounds, the old custom was to remain in force: and the ordinary remedy was to be used against those who should make wrong inventories; *i. e.* they should be subjected to excommunication and its penalties. With respect to *pasch-offerings*, and *small tithes*, the council decreed, that "for avoiding popular murmur, especially at the time of Easter," the vicars should, a little before Lent, in the month of February, settle with their parishioners for their small tithes, both personal and mixed, and also for other offerings due to the Church; and that there should be no exactions during Easter, although spontaneous oblations might still be received at that time. Can. Concil. 21 and 32: Wilkins, Concil. ut supra, pp. 214, 216. I need scarcely add, that this, along with similar grievances, were abolished, at the establishment of the Reformation. "The uppermost claith, corps-present, clerk-maile, the pasche-offering, teind-aile, and all handlings upaland, can neither be required nor received of good conscience." First Book of Discipline, p. 48, printed anno 1621. Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 563.

NOTE F, p. 20.—We are indebted to the industrious English martyrologist John Fox, for the greater part of the facts respecting our countrymen who suffered for the reformed doctrines. John Davidson, minister of Prestonpans, composed, in Latin, an account of the Scottish martyrs, which, if it had been preserved, would have furnished us with more full information respecting them. Calderwood, however, had the use of it when he compiled his history. A late author has said, that "most of those martyred seem to have been weak illiterate men; nay they appear even to have been deficient in intellect." Cursory Remarks, prefixed to Scottish Poems of 16th century, i. 24. I must take it for granted, that this author had not in his eye Patrick Hamilton, whose vigorous understanding discovered truth in the midst of darkness worse than Cimmerian, who obtained the praises of Luther, Melancthon, and Lambert of Avignon, and of whom Pinkerton has said that he received "the eternal fame of being the proto-martyr of the freedom of the human mind;" nor George Wishart, whose learning, fortitude, and mild benevolence, have been celebrated by writers of every description. But even as to those who suffered from Hamilton to Wishart, I think there is scarcely one who was not above the ordinary class, as to learning and talents. Henry Forrest, who suffered at St. Andrew's in 1530, for possessing a copy of the New Testament, and affirming that Patrick Hamilton was a true martyr, had been, though a young man, invested with the orders of Bennet and Colet. Fox, 895. Knox, 19. Spottis. 65. David Straiton was a gentleman, being brother to the laird of Lauriston. He was instructed in the Protestant principles by John Erskine of Dun, who had newly arrived from his travels. In 1534 he was committed to the flames at Greenside, in the neighbourhood of Edinburgh. His fellow-sufferer, Norman Gourley, was in secular orders, and "a man of reasonabell eruditioun." He had been abroad, and had married upon his return, which was the chief offence for which he suffered. "For (says Pitscottie) they would thole no priest to marry, but they would punish, and burn him to the dead; but if he had used then ten thousand whores, he had not been burnt." History, p. 150, 152. Fox, 896. Knox, 21, 22. Spottiswood, 66. In 1538, two young men of the most interesting characters suffered, with the greatest heroism, at Glasgow. The one was Jerom Russel, a Cordelier friar, "a young man of a meek nature, quick spirit, and of good letteris;" the other was a young gentleman of the name of Kennedy, only eighteen years of age, and "of excellent ingyne for Scottische poetry." Knox, 22. Spottis. 67. Keith, 9. During the same year, five persons were burned on the Castle-hill of Edinburgh; Robert Forrester was a gentleman, Sir Duncan Simpson* was a secular priest, Beveridge and Kyllor were friars. The last of these had (according to the custom of the times) composed a tragedy on the crucifixion of Christ, in which he painted, in a very lively manner, the conduct of the Popish clergy, under that of the Jewish priests. Ut supra.

The other person who suffered at the same time was Thomas Forrest, commonly called the vicar of Dollar. I shall add some particulars respecting this excellent man, which are not to be found in the common histories.

* Sir was a title given to priests. Spottis. 95.

He was of the house of Forret, or Forrest, in Fife, and his father had been master-stabler to James IV. After acquiring the rudiments of grammar in Scotland, he was sent abroad by the kindness of a rich lady, and prosecuted his education at Cologne. Returning to his native country, he was admitted a canon regular in the monastery of St. Colm's Inch. It happened that a dispute arose between the abbot and the canons, respecting the allowance due to them, and the latter got the book of foundation to examine into their rights. The abbot, with the view of inducing them to part with this, gave them a volume of Augustine's works, which was in the monastery. "O happy and blessed was that book to me (did Forrest often say afterwards), by which I came to the knowledge of the truth!" He then applied himself to the reading of the Scriptures. The epistle to the Romans attracted his particular attention. He converted a number of the young canons; "but the old bottles (he used to say) would not receive the new wine." The abbot frequently advised him to keep his mind to himself, else he would incur punishment. "I thank you, my lord (was his answer); ye are a friend to my body, but not to my soul." He was afterwards admitted to the vicarage of Dollar, in which situation he rendered himself obnoxious to his brethren, by his diligence in instructing his parish, and his benevolence in freeing them from oppressive exactions. When the agents of the Pope came into his bounds to sell indulgences, he said, "Parishioners, I am bound to speak the truth to you. This is but to deceive you. There is no pardon for our sins that can come to us, either from Pope or any other, but only by the blood of Christ." He composed a short catechism. It was his custom to rise at six o'clock in the morning, and study till mid-day. He committed three chapters of the Bible to memory every day, and made his servant hear him repeat them at night. He was often summoned before the bishops of Dunkeld and St. Andrew's. These facts were communicated by his servant, Andrew Kirkie, in a letter to John Davidson, who inserted them in his account of Scottish martyrs. Cald. MS. i. 99, 100, 151.

An amusing account of his examination before the bishop of Dunkeld may be seen in Fox, 1153; and an interesting account of his trial, in Pitscottie, 150-152. But both these authors are wrong as to the time of his martyrdom, the latter placing it in 1530, and the former in 1540, instead of 1538. Fox says, that three or four men of Stirling suffered death at the same time, because they were present at the marriage of "the vicar of Twybodye, (Tullybody,) near Stirling, and did eat flesh in lent, at the said bridall," p. 1154. From our ancient records, which abound with curious facts respecting those who suffered for the reformed opinions in Scotland, it appears that the persecutions for heresy, from 1534 to 1539, were numerous. It is impossible to ascertain the number, as the names only of those who possessed property, and were punished by fines and confiscation, are specified in these old documents. Many poor persons doubtless suffered, of whom no memorial has been preserved. In the Treasurer's Accounts and Register of Privy Seal, between the years 1534 and 1539, the names of nearly three score individuals, male and female, are entered, as having suffered death or confiscation of goods and property, on charges of heresy. Most of these persons belonged to Dundee, Perth, Stirling, Ayr, &c. In September 1536, the sum of twenty shillings is paid to James Bissat, "to pas with lettres to the provost and bailies of Dundee, and Sanct Johnestoun, to serche and seik John Blacat and George Lovell, suspect of hanging of the image of Sanct Francis." A like sum is given (May 1537) "to Cudde George, to pas to summon the men of Aire to compeir befor the lordis, anent the geir of theme quhilk was convict of heresy." Among convicted persons in Dundee, we find the names of Gilbert Wedderburn, John Paterson, Thomas Kidd, Robert Paterson, Alexander Annand, James Rollock, John Wedderburn, Richard Rollock, John Duncan, James Hay, David Straiton, &c. In Perth there occur among the names of "persouns delatet," John Cameron, "declarit heretyke," and John Steuart, son to Henry Lord Methven. Several burgesses of Stirling are recorded as sufferers. Thomas Cocklaw, curate of Tullibody, and Margaret Jamieson of the same place, are condemned for heresy. In December 1546, "Janet Monnypennie, dochter of the laird of Pitmilley, is summoned for remaining in the castle (of St. Andrew's) and assisting Leslie and his complices." In the same month, summonses of treason were also issued against the laird of Pitmilley and Henry Balnaves. Walter Stewart, son of Lord Ochiltree, was fined in his whole estates; and "ane letter maid (December 1538) to Andro, lord Vchiltre, of the gift of all eschete gudis movabill and vnmovabill, als wele of the byrun malis of parroche clerkschippis, as vtherwais pertenyng to our souerane lord, be resoun that

the said Walter was abiurit of heresy, etc. There is no doubt that a diligent search into our ancient records would add to the number of those who were persecuted on account of their religious opinions, long before the Reformation had been established in Scotland.

NOTE G, p. 20.—I shall in this note, mention a few facts respecting those eminent men who were obliged to forsake their native country at this period, in consequence of having expressed their friendship to the Reformation.

Gawin Logie, who, in his important station of rector of St Leonard's College, was so useful in spreading the reformed doctrine, drew upon himself the jealousy of the clergy. More decided in his sentiments, and more avowed in his censure of the prevailing abuses, than the sub-prior of the abbey, (who seems to have maintained his situation until the establishment of the Reformation,) Logie found it necessary to consult his safety by leaving the country in 1533. Cald. MS. i. 82. I have not seen any notice taken of him after this. Robert Logie, a kinsman of his, was a canon regular of Cambuskenneth, and employed in instructing the noviciates. Having embraced the reformed sentiments, he, in 1538, fled into England, and became a preacher there. Thomas Cocklaw, parish priest of Tullibody, seems to have accompanied him, and was employed in the same manner. Ibid. p. 97.

Alexander Seatoun was confessor to James V. The cause of his flight from Scotland, his letter to the king, and his retiring to England, are recorded in our common histories. Fox (p. 1000,) informs us that he was accused of heresy before Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, in 1541, and induced to recant certain articles which he had preached. Spotswood (p. 65,) speaks of "the treatises he left behind him," and, among others, "his examination by Gardiner and Bonner," from which it appears that "he never denied any point which formerly he taught." Fox had not seen this. We learn from another quarter, that after his trial he continued to preach the truths of which he had been accused. Bale mentions "*Processum suæ Examinationis*" among his works, and says, that he died in the family of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, who retained him as his chaplain. He places his death in 1542. Balei Script. Brytan. post. pars, p. 224.

Alexander Aless was a canon of the metropolitan church of St Andrew's. His conversion to the Protestant faith was very singular. Being a young man of quick parts, well acquainted with scholastic theology, and having studied the Lutheran controversy, he undertook to reclaim Patrick Hamilton from heresy, and held several conferences with him for this purpose. But instead of this, he was himself staggered by the reasoning of that gentleman. His doubts were greatly strengthened by the constancy with which he saw Hamilton adhere to his sentiments to the last, amidst the scorn, rage, and cruelty of his enemies. Alesii Præfat. Comment. in Joannem. Jacobi Thomasii Oratio de Alex. Alesio. Lipsiæ, 1683, apud Bayle, Dictionnaire, art. *Ales*. A short time after, he delivered a Latin oration before an ecclesiastical synod, in which he censured the vices of the clergy, and exhorted them to diligence and a godly life. This bringing him under suspicion, he was thrown into prison, from which, after being confined a year, he made his escape, and getting into a vessel which lay on the coast, eluded his persecutors. This was in 1532. Cald. MS. i. 76. On leaving his native country, Aless went to Germany, where he was virulently attacked by Cochläus, whom the Scots bishops hired to abuse him.* On the invitation of Lord Cromwell and Archbishop Cranmer, he came to England in 1535, and was appointed Professor of Theology in the university of Cambridge. But he had scarcely commenced his lectures, when the patrons of Popery excited such opposition to him, that he resolved to relinquish his situation. Having, at a former period of his life, applied to medical studies, he went to Dr. Nicol, a celebrated physician in London, and after remaining with him for some years, commenced practice, not without success. In 1537, Lord Cromwell having met him one day accidentally on the street, carried him to the convocation, and persuaded him to engage, without preparation, in a dispute with the bishop of London on the subject of the sacraments; of which Aless has given a particular account in one of his publications. *De Autoritate Verbi Dei Liber Alexandri Alesii, contra Episcopum Lundinensem*, p. 13-31. Argentorati, apud Cratonem Mylium, An. M.D.XLII. Henry VIII. used to call him *his Scholar*. Archbishop Par-

* In the Treasurer's Accompts, under the year 1534, is the following entry:—"Item, to ane servand of Cocleus, quhilk brot fra his maister ane buik intitulat to his reward, . xli."

ker calls him *virum in theologia perductum*. In 1540 he returned to Germany, and was made professor of Divinity at Leipsic. He assisted at a public conference between the Roman Catholics and Protestants; wrote many books which were much esteemed; and was alive in 1557. Strype's Cranmer, p. 402, 403. Bayle, Dict. ut supra. Bishop Bayle was personally acquainted with him, and has enumerated his works, p. 176.

John Fife also fled from St Andrew's, accompanied Aless to Germany, and shared in his honours at Leipsic. He returned to Scotland, acted as a minister, and died at St Leonard's, soon after the Reformation. Cald. MS. i. 78. Knox 20. Strype's Cranmer, 403.

John M'Bee (whose proper name is said to have been Macalpine), known on the Continent by the name of Dr. Maccabæus, fled to England, where he was entertained by Bishop Shaxton. He afterwards retired to Denmark, and was of great use to Christian III. in the settlement of the reformed religion in his dominions. He was made a professor in the University of Copenhagen. Gerdessii Historia Evang. Renovat. iii. 417—425. The Danish monarch held him in great esteem, and at his request, wrote to Queen Mary of England, in behalf of his brother-in-law Miles Coverdale, bishop of Exeter, the venerable translator of the Bible, who was released from prison through his importunity. Bale, ut supra, p. 226. Fox, 1390. Maccabæus was one of the translators of the Danish Bible, first printed at Copenhagen in 1550. Mattaire, apud Chalmers's Lyndsay, i. 82. An edition of Lindsay's "Monarchie" bears on the title-page that it was "imprintit at the command and expensis off Dr. Machabæus, in Capmanhouin." But the editor of Lyndsay insists that this is "a deceptious title-page." Ibid. 80, 81. Maccabæus was alive, and in the University of Copenhagen, anno 1557. Albert Thura, Histor. Literar. Danorum, p. 333. This writer (p. 274) mentions, "Annot. in Matthæum," as written by him, but does not say whether it was a MS. or printed book. Bale mentions another work of his, p. 226.

Macdowal repaired to Holland, and was so esteemed that he was raised, though a stranger, to the chief magistracy in one of its boroughs. Knox, 20.

John Mackbray, or Mackbrair, a gentleman of Galloway, fled to England about 1538, and at the death of Edward VI. retired to Frankfort, where he preached to the English congregation. Troubles of Franckford, p. 13, 20, 25. Spotswood, 97. He returned to England upon the accession of Elizabeth, and became a preacher in that country. He is called "an eminent exile." Strype's Annals, i. 130. Grindal, p. 26. On the 13th November 1568, he was inducted to the vicarage of St. Nicholas, in Newcastle, and was buried there in November 1584. Dr. Jackson complains that "Mackbray, Knox, and Udale had sown their tares in Newcastle." Heylin speaks in the same strain. Brand's Hist. of Newcastle, p. 303. Bale (p. 229) says that Mackbray "wrote elegantly in Latin." Spotswood mentions some of his works. Ut supra.

Of the celebrated Buchanan I shall say nothing here. His memoirs have been lately written by Dr. Irving. James Harrison was a native of the south of Scotland, and liberally educated, says Bale. He seems to have gone to England at a period somewhat later than the others mentioned in this note. He wrote a treatise De Regnorum Unione, in which he warmly recommended to his countrymen the advantages of a union with England. It was dedicated to the Duke of Somerset, in 1547. Bale (p. 225) gives the first words of it, and calls it "elegans ac mellitum opus." Robert Richardson was a canon of the monastery of Cambuskenneth, and fled to England in 1538. Cald. MS. i. 97. I suppose this to be the same person who is called "Sir Robert Richardson, priest," in Sadler's Letters. He was sent into Scotland, in 1543, by Henry VIII. with a recommendation to the regent Arran, who employed him in preaching through the kingdom, along with Guillaume and Rough. When the regent apostatized from the reformed cause, he withdrew his protection from Richardson, who was obliged to flee a second time into England, to escape the cardinal's persecution. Sadler's State Papers, i. 210, 217, 344.

NOTE H, p. 21.—Those who have investigated the causes of the Reformation from Popery, have ascribed no small share of influence to the writings of poets. Boccacio, Dante, Petrarch, and other poets and satirists of Italy, by descanting upon the ambition, luxury, and scandalous manners of the clergy, contributed greatly to lessen the veneration in which they had been long held, and to produce in the minds of men a conviction of the necessity of a reformation. The writings of Chaucer, but especially of Langland, had the same effect.

in England. When the religious struggle had actually commenced, and became hot, a diversion, by no means inconsiderable, was made in favour of the reformers by the satirists and poets of the age. A pantomime, intended to degrade the court of Rome and the clergy, was acted before Charles V. at the Augustan assembly. Lud. Fabricius de Ludis Scenicis, p. 231. Gerdesii Historia Evangel. Renovat. tom. ii. Docum. No. 7, p. 48. In 1524, a tragedy was acted at Paris, in the presence of Francis I., in which the Pope and cardinals were ridiculed, and the success of Luther represented, by kindling a fire which all their efforts could not extinguish. Jacob. Burchard. de Vita Ulrici Hutteni, pars ii. 293, pars iii. p. 296, apud Gerdes. ut supra. As late as 1561, the Pope's ambassador complained to the queen-mother of France, that the young king, Charles IX., had assisted at a show, in which he had counterfeited a friar. Letters of the Cardinal de St Croix, prefixed to Aymons, Synodes Nationaux de France, tom. i. p. 7—11. Similar exhibitions took place in Holland. Brand's Hist. of the Reformation, i. 127, 128. Lond. 1720. In Switzerland, where Nic. Manuel wrote certain comedies of the same description in 1522. Gerdes, ii. 451. And in England. Burnet's Hist. of the Reform. i. 318.

In Scotland, the same weapons were employed in attacking the church. The first Protestant books circulated in Scotland came chiefly from England. Mr. Chalmers has mentioned "the very first reforming treatise, which was, probably, written in Scotland," compiled by "Johne Gau," and printed at Malmoe, in Sweden, anno 1533. We would have been still more obliged to the learned author, if he had given us some idea of its contents, instead of dismissing it with the flourish, "Had all been like this!" which, whether he meant to apply to the elegance of the printing, or the orthodoxy of the sentiments, it is difficult to say. Caledonia, ii. 616. Calderwood seems to say, that books against Popery began to be printed in this country in 1543. MS. ad h. ann. But previous to that period, the reformed sentiments were diffused by metrical and dramatic writings. The satire of Buchanan against the Franciscan friars, for which he was thrown into prison, was elegant and pungent; but being written in Latin, it could be felt only by the learned. The same may be said as to his Baptistes. Kennedy and Kyllor, both martyrs, had a rich vein for Scottish poetry. Kyllor's scripture-drama (see p. 408,) was exhibited before James V. at Stirling about the year 1535; and the most simple perceived the resemblance between the Jewish priests and the Scottish clergy, in opposing the truth, and persecuting its friends. Knox, 22. Soon after, Alexander Lord Kilmaurs wrote his Epistle from the hermit of Lareit to the grey-friars. Ibid. 24, 25. James Stewart, son of Lord Methven, composed poems and ballads in a similar strain, after the death of the vicar of Dollar; and Mr. Robert Alexander, advocate, published the Earl of Errol's Testament, in Scots metre, which was printed at Edinburgh. Cald. MS. i. 103. But the poet who had the greatest influence in promoting the Reformation, was Sir David Lindsay. His "Satyre on the Three Estates," and his "Monarchie," had this for their principal object. The former was acted at Cupar in Fife in the year 1535; at Linlithgow, before the king and queen, the court, and country, in 1540; and at Edinburgh, before the queen regent, a great part of the nobility, and an exceeding great number of people, in 1554. Chalmers's Lindsay, i. 60, 61. Row says that it was also acted "in the amphitheatre of St Johnstoun." MS. p. 3. It exposed the avarice, luxury, and profligacy of the religious orders; the temporal power and opulence of the bishops, with their total neglect of preaching; the prohibition of the reading of the scriptures in the vulgar tongue; the extolling of pardons, relics, &c. In his "Monarchies," composed by him at a subsequent period, he traced the rise and progress of the Papacy, and has discovered a knowledge of history, and of the causes that produced the corruption of Christianity, which would not disgrace any modern author. The poems of Lindsay were read by "every man, woman, and child." Row, in his Historie of the Kirk, has preserved a striking instance of their influence in making converts to the reformed doctrines. Some time between 1550 and 1558, a friar was preaching at Perth, in the church where the scholars of Andrew Simson attended public worship. In the course of his sermon, after relating some of the miracles wrought at the shrines of the saints, he began to inveigh bitterly against the Lutheran preachers, who were going about the country and endeavouring to withdraw the people from the Catholic faith. When he was in the midst of his invective, a loud hissing arose in that part of the church where the boys, to the number of three hundred, were seated, so that the friar, abashed and affrighted, broke off his discourse, and fled from the pulpit. A complaint having been made to the master, he instituted an

inquiry into the cause of the disturbance, and to his astonishment found that it originated with the son of a craftsman in the town, who had a copy of Lindsay's "Monarchies," which he had read at intervals to his schoolfellows. When the master was about to administer severe chastisement to him, for the tumult which he had occasioned, and also for retaining in his possession such a heretical book, the boy very spiritedly replied, that the book was not heretical, requested his master to read it, and professed his readiness to submit to punishment, provided any heresy was found in it. This proposal appeared so reasonable to Simson, that he perused the work, which he had not formerly seen, and was convinced of the truth of the boy's statement. He accordingly made the best excuse which he could to the magistrates for the behaviour of his scholars, and advised the friar to abstain in future from extolling miracles, and from abusing the Protestant preachers. From that time Simson was friendly to the Reformation." MS. *Historie of the Kirk*, p. 3, 4. James Wedderburn, son of a merchant in Dundee, converted the history of the beheading of John the Baptist into a dramatic form, and also the history of the tyrant Dionysius, which were acted at Dundee. In both, the Popish religion was attacked. Cald. MS. ad ann. 1540. Dalzell's *Cursory Remarks*, p. 31.

In every Protestant country, a metrical version of the Psalms, in the vernacular language, appeared at a very early period. The French version begun by Clement Marot, and completed by Beza, contributed much to the spread of the Reformation in France. The Psalms were sung by Francis I. and Henry II., and by their courtiers: even Catholics flocked for a time to the assemblies of the Protestants to listen to their psalmody. Bayle, *Dictionnaire*, art. Marot, Notes N, O, P. At a later period, Cardinal Chastillon proposed to the Papal ambassador, as the best method for checking the progress of heresy, that his holiness should authorize some good and godly songs to be sung by the French, "*cantar alcune cose in lingua Francese, le quali pero fossero parole buono et sante, et prima approvate de sua Beatitudine.*" *Lettres de St. Croix, chez Aymons, ut supra*, tom. i. 7, 9, 11. It has been said that there was a Scots version of the Psalms at a very early period. Dalzell's *Cursory Remarks*, p. 35. It is more certain, that before the year 1546, a number of the Psalms were translated in metre; for George Wishart sung one of them (the 51st) in the house of Ormiston, on the night in which he was apprehended. Knox, *Historie*, p. 49. The two lines quoted by Knox answer to the beginning of the second stanza of the 51st Psalm, inserted in Scottish poems of the 16th century, p. 111. They were commonly sung in the assemblies of the Protestants, anno 1556. Knox, 96. John and Robert Wedderburn, brothers to the poet mentioned above, appear to have been the principal translators of them. Cald. MS. i. 108, 109. The version was not completed; and at the establishment of the Reformation, it was supplanted in the churches by the more exact and improved version begun by Sternhold and Hopkins, and finished by the English exiles, at Geneva, where it was published in 1559.

But the most singular measure adopted for circulating the reformed opinions in Scotland, was the composition of "Gude and godly ballates, changed out of prophaine sanges, for avoyding of sinne and harlotrie." John and Robert Wedderburn seem also to have been the chief authors of this composition. Cald. *ut supra*. Row's *Hist. of the Kirk*, p. 4. The title sufficiently indicates their nature and design. The air, the measure, the initial line, or the chorus of the ballads most commonly sung by the people at that time, were transferred to hymns of devotion. Unnatural, indelicate, and gross as this association must appear to us, these spiritual songs edified multitudes at that time. We must not think that this originated in any peculiar depravation of taste in our reforming countrymen. Spiritual songs constructed upon the same principle obtained in Italy. Roscoe's *Lorenzo de Medici*, i. 309, 4to. At the beginning of the Reformation in Holland, the very same practice was adopted as in Scotland. "The Protestants first sung in their families and private assemblies, the Psalms of the noble lord of Nievelte, which he published in 1540, *ut homines ab amatoriis, haud rare obscœnis, aliisque vanis canticis, quibus omnia in urbibus et vicis personabant, avocaret. Sed quia modulationes vanarum cantionum (alias enim homines non tenebant) adhibuerat, &c.*" Gisberti Voetii *Politica Ecclesiastica*, tom. i. p. 534. Amstælod. 1663, 4to. Florimond de Remond objected to the Psalms of Marot, that the airs of some of them were borrowed from vulgar ballads. A Roman Catholic version of the Psalms in Flemish verse, printed at Anvers, by Simon Cock, anno 1540, has the first line of a ballad printed at the head of every Psalm. Bayle, *Dict. art. Marot*, Note N. The spiritual songs of Colletet, which were com-

posed a century after our "Godly Ballates," and printed at Paris, with the royal license, were formed upon the model of such ballads as this, *Il faut chanter une histoire de la femme d'un manant, &c.* Jurieu, *Apologie pour les Reformateurs, &c.* tom. i. 129, 4to.

PERIOD SECOND.

NOTE A. p. 24.—The following very interesting account of him is given by one of his scholars at Cambridge, in a letter which he transmitted to John Fox, who inserted it in his *Martyrology*, p. 1155, ed. 1596.—"About the yeare of our Lord, a thousand, five hundreth, fortie and three, there was, in the University of Cambridge, one Maister George Wischart, commonly called Maister George of Bennet's Colledge, who was a tall man, polde headed, and on the same a round French cap of the best. Judged of melancholye complexion by his physiognomie, black haired, long bearded, comely of personage, well spoken after his country of Scotland, courteous, lowly, lovely, glad to teach, desirous to learne, and was well travailed. Having on him for his habit or clothing never but a mantell frieze gowne to the shoes, a black Milian fustian dublet, and plain black hosen, course new canvasse for his shirtes, and white falling bandes and cuffes at the hands. All the which apparell he gave to the poore, some weekly, some monethly, some quarterly, as he liked; saving his Frenche cappe, which he kept the whole yeare of my being with him. He was a man modest, temperate, fearing God, hating covetousnesse: for his charitie had never ende, night, noone, nor daye. He forbare one meale, one day in four for the most part, except something to comfort nature. [When accused, at his trial, of contemning fasting, he replied, 'My Lordis, I find that fasting is commendit in the scriptur.—And not so only; bot I have leirnit by experience, that fasting is gude for the healthe and conversatioun of the body.' Knox, 60.] Hee lay hard upon a pousse of strawe course new canvasse sheetes, which, when he changed, he gave away. He had commonly by his bedside a tubbe of water, in the which (his people being in bed, the candle put out, and all quiet) hee used to bathe himself.—He taught with great modestie and gravitie, so that some of his people thought him severe, and would have slaine him; but the Lord was his defence. And hee, after due correctioun for their malice, by good exhortation amended them, and he went his way. O that the Lord had left him to me his poore boy, that he might have finished that he had begunne! His learning no less sufficient than his desire, alwayes prest and readie to do good in that he was able, both in the house privately, and in the school publikely, professing and reading diverse authors." Letter of Emery Tylney, apud Fox, 1155.

A particular account of Wishart's trial and execution was published in England, apparently soon after the assassination of Beatoun. The general title is: "The tragical death of Daud Beatō, Bishoppe of saint Andrewes in Scotland; Whereunto is ioyned the martyrdom of maister George Wyseharte gentleman, for whose sake the aforesayed bishoppe was not longe after slayne. Wherein thou maist learne what a burnynge charitie they shewed not only towardses him; but vnto al suche as come to their hādes for the blessed Gospels sake." After the preface is the following title of the Tragedy or Poem: "Here followeth the Tragedy of the late moste reuerende father Daud, by the mercie of God Cardinall and archbishoppe of saint Andrews. And of the whole realme of Scotland primate, legate and chaunceler. And administrator of the bishoprich of Merapois in Fraunce. And comendator perpetuall of the abbay of Aberbrothoke, compiled by sir Daud Lindsaye of the mounte Knyghte. Alias, Lione, kyng of armes. Anno M.D. xlvi. Ultimo Maii. The wordes of Daud Beaton the cardinall aforesaid at his death. Alas, alas, slaye me not; I am a priest." The tragedy of Beatoun is printed in small, and the account of Wishart's trial in large black letter. The date of printing is not mentioned. Those who have fixed on the year 1546, have been influenced by the occurring of this date on the title of the tragedy, which evidently refers to the time of Beatoun's death. It is probable, however, from some expressions in the preface, as well as from other considerations, that it was printed soon after that event. Fox has embodied the whole account of Wishart's trial in his *Acts and Monuments*, pp. 1154-1158, "*Ex Histor. Impressa.*" Knox has transcribed it from Fox. *Histories*, p. 72.

Wishart had travelled on the Continent, but whether previous to his banishment, anno 1538, or after it, does not appear. Knox, 56. Buchanan calls him Sophocardius, supposing his name to be Wiseheart, a mistake which has been corrected by an intelligent foreign historian, who says that the original name was Guiscard, a name common in France, from which country the Wischards (for so Knox writes it) originally came to Scotland. Gerdesii Hist. Reformat. tom. iv. p. 314.

NOTE B. p. 28.—Mr. Hume has, not very philosophically, inferred the savageness of Knox's temper from the evident satisfaction with which he wrote of Cardinal Beaton's assassination; and in this judgment he has been followed by many. If to express satisfaction at the cutting off of one who was regarded as a public enemy, be viewed as an infallible mark of cruelty, we must pronounce the verdict upon many who were never before suspected of such a disposition. The manner in which the Christian fathers expressed themselves respecting the death of the persecutors of the church is not unknown. See Julian the apostate, chap. vii. viii. apud Works of the Rev. Samuel Johnson, p. 22—24. Bayle, Critique Générale de l'Histoire du Calvinisme, p. 295. Even the mild and philosophical Erasmus could not refrain from declaring his joy at the violent death of two of the most learned and eminent Reformers. "Be-ne habet," says he, "quod duo Coriphæi perierunt, Zuinglius in acie, Oecolampadius paulo post febris et apostemate. Quod si illis favisset Εὐαγγέλιος, actum est de nobis." Epist. 1205, apud Jortin's Life of Erasmus, ii. 28. Mr. Walter Scott, in his Cadyow Castle (see Lyric Pieces), has lately employed all his poetic powers to invest Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh with the character of a hero, in assassinating the Regent Murray, a person who is no more to be compared to Cardinal Beaton than "Hyperion to a Satyr." I know the apology that will be made for the poet (although I think he might have found, in this and in many other instances, a subject infinitely more worthy of his muse); but what shall we say of the historian, who narrates the action of Bothwellhaugh approvingly, celebrates the "happy pencil" of the poet in describing it, and insults over the fall of Murray, by quoting a sarcastic line from the poem, in the very act of relating his death! Chalmers's Caledonia, ii. 571. Yet this same writer is highly displeased that Sir David Lindsay, in his Tragedy of Beaton, has "no burst of indignation" at the Cardinal's murder; and twice over in the same work has related, with indignation, that on the margin of one edition of Knox's history, the part which James Melvin acted in that scene is called a "godly fact." Chalmers's Works of Lyndsay, vol. i. 34, 35. ii. 231. I mention these things to show the need which certain writers have to look at home, and to judge of characters and actions with a little more impartiality, or at least consistency.

"It is very horrid," says Mr Hume, "but at the same time somewhat amusing, to consider the joy, alacrity, and pleasure, which that historian [Knox] discovers in his narrative of this assassination." History of England, vol. vi. chap. iv. The historian makes a partial apology for Knox, by the description which he gives of his own feelings; while he allows that what, in the main, excites horror, may produce some amusement. It is well known that there are writers who can treat the most *sacred* subjects with a levity bordering upon profanity. Must we at once pronounce them profane? and is nothing to be set down to the score of natural temper inclining them to wit and humour? The Reformer rejoiced at the death of Beaton. And even those who could not approve of the act of the conspirators, were happy that he was taken away.

"As for the Cardinal, we grant
He was a man we weell might want,
And we'll forget him sone:
And yet I think, the sooth to say,
Although the lown was weell away,
The deed was foully done."

The pleasantry which Knox has mingled with his narrative of his death and burial is unseasonable and unbecoming. But it is to be imputed, not to any pleasure which he took in describing a bloody scene, but to the strong propensity which he had to indulge his vein of humour. Those who have read his history with attention, must have perceived that he is not able to check this, even on very serious occasions. I shall at present refer to one instance only. None will doubt that his mind was deeply affected in relating the trial and execution of his much esteemed friend and instructor, George Wishart. Yet even in the midst of his narrative of this, he could not abstain from inserting

the truly ludicrous description of a quarrel which arose on the occasion between the Archbishops of St. Andrews and Glasgow; for which he apologises thus: "Gif we interlace merrines with ernest matters, pardone us, gude reidare; for the fact is sa notable, that it deservis lang memorie." See *Historie*, p. 51.

NOTE C. p. 31.—The fathers of the English Reformation were very far from entertaining such ridiculous and illiberal sentiments. Knox's call to the ministry was never questioned, but his services readily accepted, when he afterwards went to England. Archbishop Cranmer, in the reign of Edward VI. and all the bishops in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, corresponded with, and cheerfully owned the foreign reformed divines as brethren, and fellow-labourers in the ministry of the gospel. In the year 1582, Archbishop Grindal, by a formal deed, declared the validity of the orders of Mr. John Morrison, who had been ordained by the Synod of Lothian, "according to the laudable form and rite of the reformed church of Scotland" (says the instrument), *per generalem Synodum sive Congregationem illius comitatus juxta laudabilem Ecclesiæ Scotiæ reformatæ formam et ritum ad sacros ordines et sacrosanctum ministerium per manuum impositionem admissus et ordinatus*.—Nos igitur formam ordinationis et præfectionis tuæ hujusmodi, modo præmisso factam, quantum in nos est, et jure possumus, approbantes et ratificantes, &c. *Strype's Life of Grindal*. Append. book. ii. Numb. xvii. p. 101. The objection raised by some that Grindal was under sequestration at the time the license ratifying Morrison's ordination was granted, and that it was not granted by him, but by Dr. Aubrey, as vicar-general, is of no weight, since, even during the period of sequestration, all licenses were granted with deference to the archbishop, and consultation with him; and, moreover, the license in question bears that it was granted with his grace's consent and express command. *Strype, ut supra*. Whittingham, Dean of Durham, was ordained in the English church at Geneva, of which Knox was pastor; and Travers, the opponent of Hooker, was ordained by a presbytery at Antwerp. Attempts were made by some highflyers to invalidate their orders, and induce them to submit to re-ordination, but they did not succeed. *Strype's Annals*, vol. ii. 520-4.

NOTE D. p. 40.—I shall transcribe his account of the exercise of his mind, during his confinement in the galleys, from the MS. copy of the Treatise on Prayer in my possession, preserving the original orthography, which is altered in the printed edition. Those who have access to the latter can compare the two together.

"I mene not," says he, "that any man, in extreamitie of trubill, can be without a present dolour, and without a greater feir of trubill to follow. Trubill and feir are the verie spurris to prayer. For when man, compassit about with vehement calamiteis, and vexit with continewall sollicitude, having by help of man no hope of deliverance, with soir oppressit and punissit hart, feiring also greater punishment to follow, from the deip pit of tribulation, doith call to God for comfort and support, such prayer ascendeth into Godis presence, and returneth not in vane." Having illustrated this from the exercise of David, as described in the viith Psalm, he proceeds: "This is not written for David onlie, but for all suche as sall suffer tribulation to the end of the world. For I, the wryter hereof (lat this be said to the laude and prais of God allone), in angusche of mynd, and vehement tribulation and affliction, called to the Lord, when not onlie the ungodlie, but evin my faithfull brether, ye and my awn self (that is, all natural understanding) judgeit my cause to be irremeable; and yit in my greatest calamitie, and when my panis wer most cruell, wold his eternall wisdom that my suld wryt far contrarie to the judgement of carnall reasone, whilk his mercie hath pruned trew. *Blessit be his halie name*.* And therefore dar I be bold, in the veritie of Godis word, to promeis that, notwithstanding the vehemencie of trubill, the long continewance thairof, the desperatioun of all men, the feirfulnes, danger and angusche of oure awn hartis, yit, yf we call constantlie to God, that, beyound expectatioun of all men, he sall deliver." P. 52—54. After showing that prayers for temporal deliverance ought always to be offered up with submission to the divine will, that God often delays the deliverance of the body while he mitigates the distress of the spirit, and sometimes permitteth his saints "to drink, before the maturity of age, the bitter cupe of corporall death, that thairby thay

* The words in Italics are not in the printed copies.

may receive medicine, and cure from all infirmities," he adds: "Albeit we sie thairfoir no appeirand help to ourselves, nor yit to othiris afflictit, lat ws not ceis to call (thinking our prayeris to be vane), for whatsoever cum of our bodies, God sall gif unspeikabill comfort to the spreit, and sall turne all to our comodities beyound our awn expectation. The caus that I am so lang and tedious in this matter is, that I know how hard the battell is between the spreit and the flesh, under the hevie cros of afflictioun, whair no warldlie defence, but present death dois appeir. I know the grudgeing and murmuring complaints of the flesche; I know the anger, wrath, and indignatioun, whilk it consaveth aganis God, calling all his promissis in dout, and being readie everie hour utterlie to fall from God: aganis whilk restis onlie faith provoking us to call erneistlie, and pray for assistance of Godis spreit, whairin if we continew, our maist desperat calamiteis sall hie turne to gladnes, and to a prosperous end.* To thee, O Lord, alone be prais; for with experience I wryt this, and speak." MS. Letters, p. 52—54; 65, 66.

The edition was printed most probably in England (Rome is in the title-page) during the persecution, from a MS. sent by Knox from Dieppe, and is so incorrect that it is often impossible to make sense of it. The following are specimens. "Diffysed," fol. 2; "difficil," MS. "A pure word of God," fol. 2; "a puritie allowit of God," MS. "Consent," fol. 3; "conceat," MS. "May any other Jesus Christ, except I, in these wordes make intercession for sinners?" fol. 11; "May any other (Jesus Christ except) in these wordis mak intercession for sinneris?" MS. the transcriber having mistaken the concluding mark of parenthesis for the pronoun *I*. "Carkese slepe," fol. 16; "careleslie slepeth," MS. In quoting Isa. lxiv. 5, the printed edition has employed a word which I have not seen in any old version of the Bible. "Thou art crabbid, O Lord, because we have sinned," fol. 4; and again in verse 9, "Be not crabbid, O Lord, remember not our iniquities for ever." In the MS. it is *angrie* in both instances. In fol. xvi. is a greater variation. "For with such as do aleage that God may not chaunge his sentence, and our prayers therefore to be vayne, can I no wyse agree." Instead of this the MS. has "whilk thing if we do unfeanedlie, he will revoke his wrath, and in the middis of his furie think upon mercie."—There are similar variations between the MS. and the printed copies of most of his other tracts. They show that the MS. which I possess has not been transcribed from these copies, according to a custom pretty common in that age.

NOTE E. p. 42.—In reading the writings of the first reformers, there are two things which must strike our minds. The first is the exact conformity between the doctrine maintained by them respecting the justification of sinners, and that of the apostles. The second is the surprising harmony which subsisted among the reformers as to this doctrine. On some questions respecting the sacraments, and the external government and worship of the church, they differed; but upon the article of free justification, Luther and Zuinglius, Melancthon and Calvin, Cranmer and Knox, spoke the very same language. This was not owing to their having read each other's writings, but because they copied from the same divine original. The clearness with which they understood and explained this great truth is also very observable. More learned and able defences of it have since appeared; but I question if ever it has been stated in more scriptural, unequivocal, decided language, than it was in the writings of the early reformers. Some of their successors, by giving way to speculations, gradually lost sight of this distinguishing badge of the Reformation, and landed at last in Arminianism, which is nothing else but the Popish doctrine in a Protestant dress. Knox has informed us, that his design in preparing for the press the Treatise written by Sir Henry Balnaves, was to give, along with the author, his "confession of the article of justification therein contained." I cannot, therefore, lay before the reader a more correct view of his sentiments upon this fundamental article of faith, than by quoting from a book which was revised and approved by him.

Having given the philosophical definition of justice or righteousness, and explained what is meant by civil and ceremonial justice, the author proceeds as follows: "The justice of the law morall or Moses's law, which is the law of God, exceedeth and is far above the other two justices. It is the perfite obedience required of man, according to all the works and deeds of the same. Not only in externall and outward deed, but also with the inward affections

* The P. C. instead of "end," have "fyne," a word sometimes used in the MS. letters.

and motions of the hart, conforme to the commandement of the same (say-
ing), Thou shalt love thy Lord God with all thy hart, with all thy mind, with
all thy power, and strength, and thy neighbour as thyselfe. This is no other
thing but the law of nature, prented in the hart of man, in the beginning;
nowe made patent by the mouth of God to man, to utter his sin, and make
his corrupted nature more patent to himselfe. And so is the lawe of nature
and the law of Moyses joyned together in a knot; which is a doctrine, teach-
ing all men a perfite rule, to know what he should do, and what he should
leave undone, both to God and his neighbour. The justice of the lawe, is to
fulfill the law; that is, to doo the perfite workes of the law as they are re-
quired, from the bottome of the hart, and as they are declared and expound-
ed by Christ; and whosoever transgresseth the same, shall never be pro-
nounced just of the law. But there was never man that fulfilled this lawe to
the uttermost perfection thereof (except onely Jesus Christ). Therefore, in
the lawe can we not find our justice, because of the deedes of the lawe no flesh
shall be made just before God." P. 57, 58.

"For transgression of the commandement of God, our forefather Adam
was exiled and banished forth of Paradise, and spoiled of the integrity, per-
fection, and all the excellent qualities, dignities, and godlie vertues, with
which he was endued by his creation, made rebell, and disobedient to God in
his owne default. And therefore he might not fulfill the law to the perfec-
tion as the same required. For the lawe remaining in the owne perfection,
just, holie, and good, requireth and asketh the same of man, to be in deed
fulfilled. But all men proceeding from Adam, by naturall propagation, have
the same imperfection that hee had; the which corruption of nature resisteth
the will and goodnes of the law, which is the cause that wee fulfill not the
same, nor may not of our power and strength, through the infirmitie and
weaknes of our flesh, which is enemie to the spirit, as the apostle saith." P. 79, 80.

"Notwithstanding, after the fall of man, remained with our first parents
some rest, and footsteppes of this lawe, knowledge, and vertues, in the which
he was created, and of him descended in us; by the which, of our free will
and power, we may do the outward deedes of the law, as is before written.
This knowledge deceived and beguiled the philosophers; for they looke but
to the reason and judgement of man, and could not perceave the inward cor-
ruption of nature, but ever supposed man to bee clean and pure of nature,
and might, of his own free wil and naturall reason, fulfill all perfection. And
when they perceaved the wickednes of man from his birth, thay judged that
to be by reason of the planete under whome he was borne, or through evill
nourishing, upbringing, or other accidents, and could never consider the cor-
rupted nature of man, which is the cause of all our wickednes; and there-
fore they erred, and were deceived in their opinions and judgments; but the
perfite Christian man should looke first in his corruption of nature, and con-
sider what the law requireth of him, in the which he finding his imperfection
and sinnes accused (for that is the office of the law, to utter sinne to man, and
giveth him no remedy), then of necessitie is he compelled either to despaire,
or seek Christ, by whom he shall get the justice that is of value before God,
which can not be gotten by any law or works, because by the deedes of the
law no fleshe shall be justified before God." P. 81—83. * * * *

"But think not that I intende through these assertions to exclude good
works; no, God forbid, for good workes are the gift of God, and his good
creatures, and ought and should be done of a Christian, as shalbe shoven here-
after at length in their place; but in this article of justification, yee must
either exclude all workes, or els exclude Christ from you, and make your selves
just, the which is impossible to do. Christ is the end of the law (unto right-
eousnes) to all that beleve, that is, Christ is the consummation and fulfilling
of the lawe, and that justice whiche the lawe requireth; and all they which
beleve in him, are just by imputation through faith, and for his sake are re-
pute and accepted as just. This is the justice of faith of the which the apostle
speaketh, Rom. the 10. chapter: therefore, if yee wilbee just, seeke Christ, and
not the law, nor your invented workes, which are lesse then the law. Christ
will have no mixtion with the law, nor works thereof, in this article of justi-
fication; because the law is as contrarie to the office of Christ as darknes to
light, and is as farre different as heaven and earth; for the office of the law is
to accuse the wicked, feare them, and condemne them, as transgressours of the
same; the office of Christ is to preache mercy, remission of sinnes, freely in
his bloude, through faith, give consolation, and to save sinners; for hee came
not in to this world to call them which ar just, or think themselves just, but to
call sinners to repentance." P. 100, 126, 127, 128.

"This faith which only justifieth and giveth life, is not idle, nor remaineth alone; nevertheless, it alone justifieth, and then it workes by charitie; for unfained faith may no more abyde idle from working in love, than the good tree may from bringing forth her fruit in due time: and yet the fruite is not the cause of the tree, nor maketh the tree good, but the tree is the cause of the fruit: and the good tree bringeth forth good fruite, by the which it is known goode; even so it is of the faithfull man, the workes make him not faithfull nor just, nor yet are the cause thereof; but the faithfull and just man bringeth forth and maketh good works, to the honor and glorie of God, and profit of his neighbour, which beare witnesse of his inward faith, and testify him to be just before man." P. 131, 132. In the following part of the Treatise, the author shows at large, that the doctrine of gratuitous justification does not release Christians from obligation to perform good works, and inculcates the duties incumbent upon them in the different spheres of life in which they may be placed.—"Confession of Faith; conteining how the troubled man should seeke refuge at his God; compiled by M. Henry Balnaves of Halhill, and one of the Lords of Session of Scotland, being a prisoner within the old pallaice of Roane, in the year 1548." T. Vautrollier, Edin. 1584.

NOTE F. p. 44.—It is observed by Mr. Tytler, in his History of Scotland, (vol. vi. p. 88), that none of Knox's biographers had discovered in what manner the Reformer recovered his liberty when released from the French galleys. Dr. M'Crie admits this to be a point which he cannot certainly determine; yet it is rather singular, that amidst the various conjectures on the subject, it did not occur to this learned biographer, that the treaty of peace concluded between France, England, and Scotland, at the very period of Knox's liberation, might afford at least a probable solution of the mystery. Knox obtained his liberty in February 1549 or 1550, according to the modern reckoning. The peace was concluded March 24th, and published the 12th day of April the same year, "This same zeire, ther was a peace tratted and concludit at Bolloyne, betuix the Scotts, Frenche and Englishe; Panter, Bischope of Rosse, for the Scotts, Chattelone for the French, and for the Englishe the Earle of Bedford. This peace was publisht the 12 day of Apryle. The young Lord Erskyne, and Henrey St. Clare, Dean of Glasgow, goes ambassadors to England, and seeis the peace signed and suorne; and from thence to Flanders, quher they lykwayes conclude a peace." That this pacification smoothed the way for the release of Knox and the other Scottish prisoners, there can be no doubt. The fact itself, however, has been established by the more recent researches of Mr. Tytler, in the State-Paper Office, while investigating that important period of Scottish and English history. In his volumes entitled "England under the Reigns of Edward VI. and Mary," consisting chiefly of original letters never before printed, we find several new documents respecting passages in the life of our Reformer. In a letter dated June 14, 1550, addressed to the council in London by Sir John Masone, who was then in Paris watching the secret intrigues between the French Court and the Irish chiefs, who had proposed to Henry II. to cast off their dependence on England, and become subjects of France, provided the Pope's consent and assistance in men and money could be procured, the situation of the Scottish prisoners is alluded to, from which it appears these captives obtained their freedom from the French king at the earnest and repeated application of Edward VI. In narrating one of his interviews with Henry II. Sir John proceeds: "Finally, I besought him [the king] to remember the Scots of St. Andrew's. He said, he thought the Constable had therein taken order, to whom he bade me go to know the certainty thereof. Thus, after many good and friendly words, I took my leave of him, and strait repaired unto the Constable, to whom I declared both my commission and the king's answer thereunto." * * * "Touching the Scots at St. Andrew's, he told me that the Lord Grange and his brother are flown he wist not whether, and two others were already set at liberty; and that the rest, at the king my master's contentation, should out of hand be put at large. Marry, out of the realm they should not yet go. All other Scots that had served the king in his wars, should also out of hand be set at liberty, the places being known where they do remain. And for that purpose he sent for the Prior of Capua, and asked him whether all Englishmen that were prisoned in the galleys were not at liberty. He answered that he thought assuredly they were all abroad, for he had long since taken order therefore. I pray you, quoth I, yet write once again therein, and require the certificate of the execution thereof to be sent to you, which I would be glad to see. He promised that he would not fail so

to do. Yea, quoth the Constable; and let the like order be taken with the Scots, if you have any that have served the king of England in his wars." In a subsequent letter from Sir John Masone to the council, dated Rouen, 6th October 1550, the release of the Scottish prisoners is again alluded to as having been a subject of conference with the queen-dowager of Scotland, then on a visit to the Court of France, where "she was almost worshipped as a goddess." "Since my coming hither, I have been in hand with the Constable touching my last communication with the king, which was concerning the quarrels that the Scots pick daily with us, the liberty of the Scots of St. Andrew's, and the commissioners to be appointed for matters of depredation. For the Scottish quarrels I am answered that the master of Erskine is now at the court of England, and is looked for here within three or four days; at which time the matter shall be weighed and considered, according as may appertain to the continuation of the amity. Touching the Scots of St. Andrew's, the queen hath not yet been spoken with therein, but shall be very shortly, trusting that I shall have therein a good answer." * * * * *

"I have this day visited the queen dowager of Scotland, who, being accompanied with a great company of Scottish gentlemen, arrived here the 25th of Sept. and was received with much honour. I used to her such general words of the king's rejoicing of her safe arrival, and of the trust he had of her forwardness to the continuation of the peace, as methought were most meet for the time. She took the visitation very thankfully, and prayed me most humbly in her behalf to yield thanks therefore unto his majesty, who was, both by reason of his most gentle passport, and the good entertainment which by his commandment she received by the way in his ports, the only occasion of her safe coming hither." * * * * *

"Your Lordships shall herewith receive the names of the principal Scots that are here arrived with the dowager of Scotland, who with their bands fill all this court; and such brawling, chiding, and fighting make they here for their lodgings, and others' quarrels, as though they lately came from some new conquest. It is thought the king will tarry here yet eight or ten days. From hence he goeth to Dieppe, and so to the rest of his havens and fortresses upon the sea-side; minding, as he goeth, to see the musters of his garrisons." Tytler's *Reigns of Edward VI. and Mary*, vol. i. pp. 294-96, 326-29.—*Ed.*

PERIOD THIRD.

NOTE A. p. 49.—The following quotations are given from the MS. of Knox's defence before Tonstall, bishop of Durham, in my possession. It agrees in point of orthography with the printed copy, with a remarkable degree of exactness.*

"The fourt of Apryle in the yeir 1550, was appoyntit to Johne Knox, preacher of the halie evangell of Jesus Chryst, to gif his confessioun why he affirmed the mas idolatrie: whilk day, in presence of the consale and congregation, amangis whome was also present the bischope of Duram and his doctors, on this maner he beginneth:"

"This day I do appeir in your presence, honourabill audience, to gif a reason why so constantlie I do affirme the mes to be, and at all times to haif bene, idolatrie, and abominatioun before God; and becaus men of great eruditoun, in your audience, affirmed the contrarie, most gladlie wold I that heir thay wer present, either in proper persone, or els by thair learnit men, to ponder and wey the causis moveing me thairto: for unles I evidentlie prufe myne intent be Goddis halie scriptures, I will recant it as wickit doctrine, and confes my self maist worthie of grevous punisment. How difficill it is to pull furth of the hartis of the pepill the thing whairin opinioun of holines standeth, declareth the great tumult and uprore moveit aganis Paule by Demetrius and his fellowis, who by idolatrie gat great vantage, as oure priestis have done be the mase in tymes past. The pepill, I say, heering that the honor of thair great goddes Diana stood in jeopardie, with furious voces cryit, great is Diana of the Ephesians;—and heirunto wer thay moveit be lang custome and fallis opinioun. I knaw, that in the mass hath not onlie bene estemit great holines and honoring of God, but also the ground and foundatioun of oure religioun, so that in the opinioun of many, the mas taken away, thair resteth no trew wirschipping nor honoring of God n the erth. The deiper hath it persit the

* The orthography of the MS. is retained; only the contracted syllables are extended.

hartis of men yat it occupyith the place of the last and mistical supper of our Lord Jesus. But if I sal be plane and evident, scriptures prove the mass, in hir maist honest garment, to haif bene idolatrie before God, and blasphemous to the death and passioun of Chryst, and contrarie to the supper of Jesus Chryst, than gude hope have I, honorable audience, and belovit brethrene, that the feir, love, and obedience of God, who in his scriptures hath spokin all veritie necessarie for oure salvatioun, sall move you to gif place to the same. O Lord eternal ! move and governe my tounge to speak the veritie, and the hartis of thir pepill to understand and obey the same." P. 1, 2.

In proof of his assertion, he advanced and defended two syllogisms. The first is thus stated : " All wirschipping, honoring, or service inventit by the brane of man, in the religioun of God, without his expres commandement, is idolatrie. The mase is inventit by the brane of man without any commandement of God. Thairfoir it is idolatrie." The second syllogism is thus framed : " All honoring or service of God whairunto is added a wickit opinioun, is abominatioun. Unto the mes is addit a wickit opinioun. Thairfoir it is abominatioun." P. 3-21. The manner in which our Reformer proceeded in this controversy, by resting his defence upon these propositions, especially the first, corresponds with the boldness which characterized all his proceedings. A more cautious and timid disputant would have satisfied himself with attacking the more gross notions entertained by the Papists on this subject, and the glaring abuses practised in the celebration and selling of masses. He aimed his blow directly at the root of all these evils, by advancing a principle which, provided it was established, overthrew the whole system of superstition and will-worship. In support of the major proposition of his first syllogism, he argues from 1 Sam. xiii. 11-14. xv. 22, 23; Deut. iv. 2. xii. 8-32; 1 Cor. xi. 23. Take the following as a specimen. " We may not think us so frie nor wyse that we may do unto God, and unto his honour, what we think expedient. No: the contrarie is commandit of God, saying, ' Unto my word sall ye ad nothing, nothing sall ye diminische thairfrome, that ye might observe the preceptes of your Lord God.' Whilk wordis ar not to be understaud of the decalogue and law moral onlie, but of statutis, rytes, and ceremonies; for equall obedience of all his lawis requyreth God. And in witnes thair of, Nadab and Abihu offering strange fyre, whair of God had gevin unto thame na charge, wer instantlie, as thay offerit, punissit to death by fyre.—In the punishment of theis two afoirsaid is to be observit, that Nadab and Abihu wer the principal preists nixt to Aron their father, and that thay wer comprehendit, nether in adulterie, covetusnes, nor desyre of warldlie honor, but of a gud zeall and simpill intent wer making sacrifice, desyring no profit of the pepill thairby, but to honor God, and to metigate his wraith. And yet in the doing of this self same act and sacrifice wer thay consumit away with fyre; whair of it is plane, that nether the pre-eminence of the persone, or man that maketh or setteth up an religion without the express commandement of God, nor yet the intent whair of he doith the same, is acceptit befor God; for nothing in his religioun will he admit without his awn word, but all that is addit thairto doith he abhor." P. 6, 7.

The following extracts will exemplify the irony with which he treated the Popish tenets. " Jesus Chryst sayeth, ' I will lay upon you none other burdene than I haif alreide;' and, ' that whilk ye haif observe diligentlie!' O God eternal ! hast thou laid none burdene upon our backis than Jesus Christ laid be his word? Then who hath burdened ws with all theis ceremoneis? prescribid fasting, compellit chastitie, unlawful vowis, invocatioun of sanctis, and with the idolatrie of the mese? The divill, the divill, brethrene, inventit all theis burdenis to depres imprudent men to perdition." P. 10. Speaking of the canon of the mass, he saith, " I will preve, that thairin is indigest, barbarous, folische congestion of wordis, imperfection of sentences, ungodlie invocationes, and diabolicall conjurationes. And this is that holie canon whois autoritie precelleth all scriptures, and was so holie as might not be spokin planelie as the rest, but secreitlie it behoved to be whisperit! That was not evil devysit; for yf all men had hard it, sum wold have espyit the vanitie thair of.—Thay say, hoc est enim corpus meum. I pray thame schew whair fund thay *enim*? O! heir mak thay a great matter; and heir lyeth a secreit misterie, and hid operatioun! For in fyve wordis conceaved the virgin Marie, say thay, when scho conceavit the Sone of God. What yf sche had spoken sevin, ten, or twentie wordis? or what yf sche had spokin thrie? Suld thairby the determinat consalle bene impedit? O Papists! is God a juglar? Useth hie certane noumer of wordis in performing his intent?" P. 18, 19.

Quentin Kennedy, abbot of Crossraguel, whose name will be introduced in

a subsequent Period, made some remarks on Knox's book against the mass, in "Ane Oratioune," composed by him in the year 1561. "Shortly," says the abbot, "will we call to remembrance ane notable syllogisme (or argument) sett furth be ane famous preachour, callit John Knox, in his sermon againis the mess, in manner as efter followis." And having quoted the first syllogism, as already expressed in this note, he answers: "As to the first part of his syllogisme, quhar he dois affirme all worschipping of God inuentit be the brayne of manne without express command of God to be ydolatrie, it is als falss as Goddis wourd is trew; for quhy? did not Abel, Abraham, Noe, and diuerse vtherse of the aulde fatheris, inuent meanis and ways to the worschipping of God, without expres commande of God, and wes acceptable to the Lord God, as the Aulde Testament teches ws? Did not Cornelius centurio in likewise inuent meanis and ways to the worschipping of God, without expres commande of God, quhilk wes acceptable to God, as the New Testament plainly teachis ws? Thus ma we clearlie persauie that this wickit syllogisme aboue rehersit is express againis the Scripture of Almychtie God, bayth Aulde Testament and New. Secundlie, to preve his fals and wickit syllogisme, impropirly callis he to remembrance the Scripture of Almychti God, quhare mentione is maid how King Saul made sacrifice onto God of his owne brayne, and wes nocht acceptable to the Lorde God. Mark this place of the Scripture, and it salbe easely persavit that it is all wayis impropirly appliit; for quhy, his syllogisme makis mentione of the worschipping of God inuentit be the brayne of manne, without expres commande of God; and this place of Scripture testifeis plainly of the worschipping of God inuentit be the brayne of manne, express contrar to the commande of God. And sua may we clearly vnderstand that this first part of his syllogisme differis far fra the testimonie of Scripture, adducit be him for confirmatione of the samin; bicaus thair is ane grete difference betuix the worschipping of God inuentit be manne, without expres commande of God; and the worschipping of God inuentit be manne, express contrar to the commande of God; the ane may neuer stand with the Scripture; the vther agreis with the Scripture, bayth Aulde Testament and New, as I haif all reddy declarit." In fine, the abbot insists that Saul "committit na ydolatrie," for "albeit the Scripture dois affirme that stubbornness is as the wicketnes of ydolatrie, nochttheles stubbornnes is nocht ydolatrie." Ane Oratioune set furth be Master Quintine Kennedy, Commendatour of Corsraguell, ye zeir of God, 1561, p. 5-8. Edinburgh, 1812.

NOTE B. p. 50.—In the Communion-book, as set forth anno 1548, the words pronounced by the minister at delivering the bread were, "The body of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was given for thee, preserve thy body and soul into everlasting life." And at the delivery of the cup, "The blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was shed for thee, preserve," &c. As altered in the revised Prayer-book of Edward VI. the words pronounced were, "Take and eat this in remembrance that Christ died for thee, and feed on him in thy heart by faith.—Drink this in remembrance Christ's blood was shed for thee, and be thankful." A rubric was also added, to be read at the celebration of the communion, declaring, that although the posture of kneeling was retained to signify our humble and grateful acknowledgment of the benefits of Christ, and to prevent profanation and disorder; yet "no adoration is intended or ought to be done, either to the sacramental bread and wine there bodily received, or unto any corporal presence of Christ's natural flesh and blood; for the bread and wine retained their natural substances, and Christ's natural body was in heaven, and could not be in more places than one at the same time." Collier, ii. 310. Records, No. 70.

In the settlement of religion, at the commencement of Elizabeth's reign, the old form of words at delivering the elements, was superinduced upon the new, which, like the patching of old and new cloth upon a garment, marred the whole, and pleased neither Protestants nor Papists. The rubric, explanatory of kneeling, was thrown out. At the restoration of Charles II. "the church thought fit (says Collier) to condescend so far as to restore the rubric of King Edward's reign," to please "some people either of weak judgments or contentious humours." A piece of condescension with which the historian pretty plainly intimates his dissatisfaction.—In the liturgy which was attempted to be imposed upon the Scottish church, anno 1637, all the qualifications and explications in the last prayer-book of Edward VI. were completely excluded, and various expressions, postures, and gestures, favourable to the Popish notions and superstition, were unblushingly borrowed from the mass-book. But the rulers of the church in the three kingdoms were then posting fast to Rome, when they were overturned in their mad career.

NOTE C. p. 58.—In a note to page 59, Dr. M'Crie thinks it probable that the bishopric offered to Knox by Edward VI. was Newcastle, which it was proposed to erect about that time, by dividing the extensive diocese of Durham into two, on the sequestration of Bishop Tonsal. This conjecture, which appears to have been founded on a passage in Brand's History of Newcastle, is now proved to be incorrect. The date of the offer, as well as the particular see, neither of which had hitherto been discovered, are now ascertained, by a letter from the Duke of Northumberland to Cecil, dated October 28, 1552, and printed from the original, in the State Paper Office, in Mr. Tytler's "Reigns of Edward VI. and Mary." From this document, the proffered see appears to have been the bishopric of Rochester; and the offer was made and declined by Knox, not in 1553, but in the same month in which he had been consulted upon the Articles of Religion, previously to their ratification by Parliament, namely, in October 1552. The following is the letter:—NORTHUMBERLAND TO CECIL.—"I would to God it might please the King's Majesty to appoint Mr. Knoxs to the office of Rochester bishoprick; which, for three purposes, should do very well. The first, he would not only be a whetstone, to quicken and sharp the Bishop of Canterbury, whereof he hath need; but also he would be a great confounder of the Anabaptists lately sprung up in Kent. Secondly, he should not continue the ministration in the North, contrary to this set forth here. Thirdly, the family of the Scots, now inhabiting in Newcastle, chiefly for his fellowship, would not continue there, wherein many resorts unto them out of Scotland, which is not requisite. Herein I pray you desire my Lord Chamberlain and Mr. Vice-chamberlain, to help towards this good act, both for God's service and the King's. And then for the North, if his Majesty make the Dean of Durham Bishop of that see, and appoint him one thousand marks more to that which he hath in his deanery,—and the same houses which he now hath, as well in the city as in the country, will serve him right honourably,—so may his Majesty receive both the castle, which hath a princely site, and the other stately houses which the Bishop hath in the country, to his Highness; and the Chancellor's living to be converted to the deanery, and an honest man to be placed in it; the Vice-chancellor to be turned into the Chancellor; and the Suffragan, who is placed without the King's Majesty's authority, and also hath a great living, not worthy of it, may be removed, being neither preacher, learned, nor honest man: and the same living, with a little more to the value of it—a hundred marks, will serve to the erection of a Bishop within Newcastle. The said Suffragan is so pernicious a man, and of so evil qualities, that the country abhors him. He is most meet to be removed from that office and from those parts. Thus may his Majesty place godly ministers in these offices as is aforesaid, and receive to his crown 2000*li* a year of the best lands within the north parts of his realm. Yea, I doubt not it will be *iiii*^m marks a year of as good revenue as any is within the realm; and all places better and more godly furnished than ever it was from the beginning to this day. * * Scribbled in my bed, as ill at ease as I have been much in all my life.—Your assured friend,
NORTHUMBERLAND."

The reason assigned for Knox's preferment, that he might "sharp the Bishop of Canterbury," and be "a great confounder of the Anabaptists," is curious enough: but Northumberland's eagerness in this matter, as well as his anxiety for the division of the diocese of Durham into two moderately endowed sees, so as to effect a saving to the King, appears to have been dictated by self interest, as he had an eye to the temporalities of the dissolved bishopric. This will appear in the sequel. From another letter of his to Cecil, of date December 7, 1552, we find that the Duke's kind intentions towards our Reformer had given place to very different feelings. They had had a meeting for consultation; and, after a stormy interview, they separated with little regret on either side. Knox had too much penetration not to detect the ambition and selfishness of this domineering statesman, and too much sincerity not to tell him his faults to his face. Proving too conscientious—certainly too stubborn—to lend himself to his crafty and avaricious designs, the Reformer is sent back to Cecil as a man neither "grateful nor pleaseable." In the "Admonition to the Professors of the Faith in England," (alluded to at page 50,) Knox shews an intimate knowledge of the characters of Northumberland, and Paulet Marquis of Winchester; the first, as he says, "ruling the roast by stout courage and proudness of stomach:" the other, under the name of Shebna the treasurer, acting like "a crafty fox, showing a fair countenance to the King, but under it concealing the most malicious treason."

The most interesting portion of this letter, however, is that in which Northumberland alludes to his own religious faith; which, he assures us, had continued firm to the Protestant creed for twenty years:—little more than a year elapsed, when this unhappy man was executed, professing himself a Roman Catholic.

“NORTHUMBERLAND to CECIL.—“ Master Knox’s being here to speak with me, saying that he was so willed by you, I do return him again, because I love not to have to do with men which be neither grateful nor pleasable. I assure you I mind to have no more to do with him but to wish him well, neither also with the Dean of Durham, because, under the colour of a false conscience, he can prettily malign and judge of others against good charity upon a froward judgment. And this manner you might see in his letter, that he cannot tell whether I be a dissembler in religion or not: but I have for twenty years stand [stood] to one kind of religion, in the same which I do now profess; and have, I thank the Lord, passed no small dangers for it.”

After Knox’s citation before the Privy Council, as has been already stated, the Duke affected a tone of patronizing pity towards the Reformer. He speaks of him as “poor Knoxe”—a “poor soul,” to whom it would be charity in Cecil to minister a few words of comfort in his perplexed and heart-broken state. The letter in which the Duke thus speaks of “the poor man and his proceedings,” is very characteristic of the writer. It bears date December 8, same year, and is addressed to Cecil:—“After my right hearty commendations. Herewith I do return unto you as well Mr. Morison’s letters as also the Lord Wharton’s, and do also send with the same such letters as I have received from the said Lord Wharton of the 2nd and 3rd of this instant, with also one letter from poor Knoxe, by the which you may perceive what perplexity the poor soul remaineth in at this present; the which, in my poor opinion, should not do amiss to be remembered to the rest of my Lords, that some order might be taken by their wisdoms for his recomfort. And as I would not wish his abode should be of great continuance in those parts, but to come and to go as shall please the King’s Majesty and my Lords to appoint him, so do I think it very expedient that his Highness’ pleasure should be known, as well to the Lord Wharton as to those of Newcastle, that his Highness hath the poor man and his doings in gracious favour; otherwise some hindrance in the matters of religion may rise and grow amongst the people, being inclined of nature to great inconstancy and mutations. And the rather do I think this meet to be done, for that it seemeth to me that the Lord Wharton himself is not altogether without suspicion how the said Knoxe’s doings hath been here taken: wherefore I pray you that something may be done whereby the King’s Majesty’s pleasure to my Lords may be indelayedly certified to the said Lord Wharton, of the King’s Majesty’s good contentation towards the poor man and his proceedings, with commandment that no man shall be so hardy to vex him or trouble him for setting forth the King’s Majesty’s most godly proceedings, or [what he] hereafter by his Majesty’s commandment shall do; for that his Majesty mindeth to employ the man and his talent from time to time in those parts, and elsewhere, as shall seem good to his Highness for the edifying of his people in the fear of God. And that something might be written to the Mayor for his greedy accusation of the poor man, wherein he hath, in my poor opinion, uttered his malicious stomach towards the King’s proceedings if he might see a time to serve his purpose; as knoweth God, to whose infinite goodness let us pray that all things may prosper, to his glory, and to the honour and surety of the King’s Majesty.—From Chelsey, this 9th day of January 1552, your assured loving friend,
NORTHUMBERLAND.”

It may sound strange to our ears to hear the stern and indomitable Reformer, who stood undaunted in the presence of kings and queens, and made the highest princes and nobles of the land to tremble, described in terms of mock commiseration approaching to contempt. As for his alleged “malicious stomach towards the King’s proceeding,” this calumny is refuted by the affectionate language in which Knox always spoke of his Majesty, as well as tears of sincere grief which he shed at his premature death. The letter from “poor Knoxe,” addressed to his accusers, Lord Wharton and the Mayor of Newcastle, was sent enclosed by Northumberland to Cecil. It might have thrown some additional light on this passage of his history; but Mr. Tytler informs us it is not to be found. Tytler’s *Reign of Edward VI. and Mary*, vol. ii. p. 158.—ED.

NOTE D. p. 63.—I shall endeavour to compress the body of evidence which

can be produced for the conformity between the private sentiments of the English reformers respecting worship and church-government, and those of Knox along with the reformers of Switzerland and Geneva. Hooper, in a letter dated Feb. 8, 1550. informs Bullinger that "the archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of Rochester, Ely, St. David's, Lincoln, and Bath, were sincerely bent on advancing the purity of doctrine, agreeing IN ALL THINGS with the Helvetic churches." Burnet, iii. 201. Parkhurst, bishop of Norwich, in a letter to Gualter, Feb. 4. 1573, fervently exclaims, "O! would to God, would to God, once at last, all the English people would in good earnest propound to themselves to follow the church of Zurich as the most absolute pattern," Strype's Annals, ii. 286, 342.

Cranmer expressed his opinion formally in writing, that "the bishops and priests were at one time, and were no two things, but both ONE OFFICE in the beginning of Christ's religion."—"The bishop of St. David's, my lord elect of Westminster, Dr. Cox, Dr. Redman, say that at the beginning they were all ONE." Collier, ii. Records, No. 49. Burnet, i. Append. p. 223-225. Thirteen bishops, with a great number of other ecclesiastics, subscribed this proposition, "that in the New Testament there is no mention made of any degrees or distinctions in orders, but only of deacons or ministers, and of priests or bishops." Burnet, ut supra, p. 324. Cranmer says, "In the New Testament he that is appointed a bishop or a priest needeth not consecration by the scripture, for election, or appointment thereto, is sufficient." Of the same judgment was the bishop of St. David's. Ibid. 228-230. Latimer and Hooper maintained the identity of bishops and presbyters, by divine institution. Voetii Polit. Eccles. tom. ii. p. 837. This was also the opinion of Pilkington, bishop of Durham. Treatise on the burning of St. Paul's, apud Cald. Altare Damas, p. 204. Bishop Jewel assents to it in his apology against Harding, p. 121. Upon the accession of Elizabeth, he expressed his hope that "the bishops would become pastors, labourers, and watchmen, and that the great riches of bishoprics would be diminished and reduced to mediocrity, that, being delivered from regal and courtly pomp, they might take care of the flock of Christ." Burnet, iii. 288. In the same year, Dr. Aylmer addressed the right reverend bench in these terms: "Come of, you bishops, away with your superfluities, yield up your thousands, be content with hundreds, as they be in other reformed churches, where there be as great learned men as you are. Let your portion be priestlike, and not princelike. Let the Queen have the rest of your temporalities and other lands to maintain these warres which you procured, and your mistresse left her; and with the reste builde and found scholes thorow outte the realme; that every parishe church may have his preacher, every city his superintendent, to live honestly and not pompously; which will never be, onles your landes be dispersed and bestowed upon many which now feedeth and fatteth but one.—I would our countryman Wiclief's book which he wrote, De Ecclesia, were in print, and there should you see that your wrinches and cavillations be nothing worthe. It was my chaunce to happen of it in ones hand that brought it out of Bohemia." An Harborowe for faithful and trewe subjects. O. 4. Cranmer expressed himself in a similar strain respecting the vain-glorious styles and pomp which were come into the church through the working of the spirit of Diotrophes, and professed his readiness to lay them aside. Strype's Cranmer, Append. p. 20. Burnet, iii. 105. Append. p. 88. In fact, the title of bishop was very generally disused in common speech, during the reign of Edward VI. and that of superintendent substituted in its place. Ponet, bishop of Winchester, vindicated this practice, in an answer which he published to a Popish writer. Strype's Memorials of the Reformation, ii. 444, 445.

It was proposed by Cranmer to erect courts similar to the kirk sessions and provincial synods afterwards introduced into the Scottish church. Burnet, iii. 214. Reformatio Leg. Eccles. cap. 8, 10. He ardently wished the suppression of prebendaries, "an estate which St. Paule, reckoning up the degrees and estates allowed in his time, could not find in the church of Christ." Burnet, iii. Append. p. 157, 158. All the Protestant bishops and divines, in the reign of Edward VI. were anxious for the introduction of ecclesiastical discipline. Dr. Cox (Oct. 5, 1552) complains bitterly of the opposition of the courtiers to this measure, and says, that if it should not be adopted, "the kingdom of God would be taken away from them." Latimer's Sermons, fol. cix. b. Lond. 1570. Strype's Memor. of the Reform. ii. 366. Repository of Orig. p. 150.

Cranmer, with his colleagues, were far from being satisfied with the purity of the last common prayer-book of Edward, and he had drawn up one which is

said to have been "an hundred times more perfect." Troubles at Franckfort, p. 50. He and Ridley intended to procure an act for abolishing the sacerdotal habits; "for they only defended their lawfulness, but not their fitness." Burnet's Letters respecting Switzerland, &c. p. 52. Rotterdam, 1686. When Grindall was appointed to the bishopric of London, he "remained under some scruples of conscience about some things, especially the habits and certain ceremonies required to be used of such as were bishops. For the reformed in these times (says Strype) generally went upon the ground, that, in order to the complete freeing of the church of Christ from the errors and corruptions of Rome, every usage and custom practised by that apostate and idolatrous church should be abolished,—and that the service of God should be most simple, stript of all that show, pomp, and appearance that had been customarily used before, esteeming all that to be no better than superstitious and antichristian." Life of Grindal, p. 28. Horn and others had the same views and scruples. "By the letters (says Bishop Burnet) of which I read the originals [In the Archives of Zurich] it appears that the bishops preserved the habits rather in compliance with the queen's inclinations than out of any liking they had to them; so far were they from liking, that they plainly expressed their dislike of them." Burnet's Letters, ut supra, p. 51. Before they accepted the office, they endeavoured to obtain the abrogation of the ceremonies; and when the act enjoining them passed, they were induced to comply chiefly by their fears that Papists or Lutherans would occupy their places. Strype's Annals, i. 175. Burnet, ii. 376. Sermon on Psal. cxliv. 15, preached before the House of Commons, Jan. 1688. Cox writes to Bullinger, 5th May 1551. "I think all things in the church ought to be pure and simple, removed at the greatest distance from the pomps and elements of the world. But in this our church, what can I do in so low a station." Strype's Memor. of the Reform. ii. 305. Burnet, iii. 202. Jewel, in a letter to Martyr, Nov. 5, 1559, calls the clerical habits "a stage-dress" (*vestis scenica*), to which those alone were attached who "had nothing else to recommend them to the people, but a comical dress, stipites sine ingenio, sine doctrina, sine moribus, veste saltem comica volebant populo commendari." He engages that no exertions of his should be wanting to banish utterly these ludicrous fooleries, "*ludicris ineptiis*," and relics of the Amorites, as his correspondent (he says) had well designed them. And at a later period (Feb. 8, 1566) he wrote to Bullinger that he "wished that the very slightest footsteps of Popery might be removed out of the church and minds of men; but the queen would at that time suffer no change in religion." Burnet, iii. Append. p. 291, ii. Append. p. 351. Strype's Annals, i. 174. Grindal and Horn wrote to Zurich that they did not approve of, but merely suffered kneeling in the eucharist, and signing with the cross in baptism, with other ceremonies, hoping that they would speedily obtain their abrogation. Burnet, ii. 310, 314. As to Parkhurst, bishop of Norwich, Pilkington of Durham, and Sands of Worcester, the non-conformists bear testimony that they discovered the greatest zeal in endeavouring to procure their abrogation. Ibid. iii. 316. The most respectable of the clergy in the lower house were of the same sentiments with the bishops on this subject. In the year 1562, the abrogation of the most offensive ceremonies was, after long reasoning, put to the vote in the convocation, and carried by a majority of those present, but, when the proxies were included, there was found a majority of one for retaining them. The arguments used by archbishop Parker's chaplains, to prevail upon the house to agree to this, derived their chief force from their being understood to be the sentiments of the queen. Burnet, ii. Append. p. 319, 320. Strype's Annals, i. 298-300.

From these facts (and a collection much more ample could easily be made), the reader will see who were the first Puritans, and how very different the sentiments of the early English reformers were from those of their successors. Those good men who had the direction of ecclesiastical affairs in the reign of Edward VI., thought it most prudent to proceed gradually and slowly, in removing the abuses, and correcting the evils, which had overspread the church, to indulge the people for a season with those external forms to which they had been habituated, that they might draw them more easily from their superstitious notions and practices, and in due time perfect the reformation to the satisfaction of all. The plan was plausible; but its issue was very different from what was intended by those who proposed it. This was not unforeseen by some who wished well to the church of England. After the bishops had resolved to rest satisfied with the establishment which they had obtained, and felt themselves disturbed by the complaints of the Puritans (as

they were afterwards called), they endeavoured to engage the foreign divines on their side; and having, by partial representations, and through the respect entertained for the government of England, obtained letters from them somewhat favourable to their views, they employed these to bear down such as pleaded for a more pure reformation. Whitgift made great use of this weapon in his controversy with Cartwright. Bishop Parkhurst wrote to Gualter, a celebrated Swiss divine, cautioning him on this head, adding, that he had refused to communicate some of Gualter's letters to Whitgift; because, "if any thing made for the ceremonies, he presently clapped it into his book, and printed it." Strype's Annals, ii. 286, 287. But these divines had formerly delivered their unbiassed judgment, disapproving of such temporising measures. Cranmer having signified to the Genevan Reformer, that he "could do nothing more profitable to the church than to write often to the king." Calvin wrote a letter to the archbishop in 1551, in which he lamented the procrastination used, and expressed his fears, that "a long winter would succeed to so many harvests spent in deliberation." Epist. p. 62. Oper. tom. ix. Strype's Cranmer, p. 413. Peter Martyr, in June 1550, expressed it as his opinion, that "the innumerable corruptions, infinite abuses, and immense superstition, could be reformed only by a simple recurrence to the pure fountain, and unadulterated original principles." The prudential advice, that as few changes as possible should be made, he called "a device of Satan to render the regress to Popery more easy." Burnet, iii. Append. p. 200. Gualter, in a letter dated Jan. 16, 1559, says, that such advices, though "according to a carnal judgment full of modesty, and apparently conducive to the maintenance of concord," were to be ascribed to "the public enemy of man's salvation," and prophetically warned those who suffered abuses to remain and strengthen themselves in England, that "afterwards they would scarcely be able to eradicate them by all their efforts and struggles." Ibid. iii. 273. Append. p. 265. Fuller says, that the English Reformers "permitted ignorant people to retain some fond customs, that they might remove the most dangerous and destructive superstitions; as mothers, to get children to part with knives, are content to let them play with rattles." Very good: but if mothers suffer their children to play too long with rattles, they are in great danger of not parting with them all their days.

NOTE E. p. 63.—A plan of improvements in the English church, which Edward VI. drew with his own hand, may be seen in Strype's Memorials of the Reformation, ii. 341-343. He was desirous of the establishment of ecclesiastical discipline, but sensible that the incumbent bishops were in general of such a description as to be unfit for its exercise. "Some for papistry (says he), some for ignorance, some for their ill-name, some for all these, are men unable to execute discipline." Accordingly, he adds, "as for discipline, I would wish no authority given generally to all bishops; but that commission be given to those of the best sort of them to exercise it in their dioceses." King Edward's Remains, apud Burnet, ii. Records, p. 69.

Omitting other proofs of his intentions, I shall produce the decisive one of his conduct towards the foreign church settled in London under the inspection of John a Lasco. A Lasco was a Polish nobleman, who had forsaken his native country, from regard to the reformed religion. He enjoyed the friendship of Erasmus, who, in one of his letters, has passed a high encomium upon him. "Senex, juvenis convictu, factus sum melior, ac sobrietatem, temperantiam, verecundiam, linguæ moderationem, modestiam, prudentiam, integritatem, quam juvenis a sene discere debuerat, a juvene senex didici." Epist. lib. 28. ep. 3. After remaining some time in Friesland, he left it on account of the disturbances produced by the Interim. In the year 1550, he came into England, with his congregation, at the request of Cranmer, and procured from the government a place of worship in London. He was of the sentiments of the Swiss church, and was unfriendly to the English ceremonies. Burnet, ii. 154. Notwithstanding of this, he was held in great esteem by the young king, who granted him letters patent, erecting him and the other ministers of the foreign congregation into a body corporate. The patent runs in these terms. "Edward, &c. We being specially induced, by great and weighty considerations, and particularly considering how much it becomes Christian princes to be animated with love and care of the sacred gospel of God, and apostolical religion, begun, instituted, and delivered by Christ himself, without which, policy and civil government can neither subsist long, nor maintain their reputation, unless princes and illustrious persons whom God hath appointed for the government of kingdoms do first of all take

care, that pure and uncorrupted religion be diffused through the whole body of the commonwealth, and that a church instituted in truly Christian and apostolical doctrines and rites—be preserved, &c. with this intent and purpose, that there may be an uncorrupted interpretation of the holy gospel, and administration of the sacraments, according to the word of God, and apostolical observance by the ministers of the church of the Germans, &c. we command and strictly charge the mayor, &c. that they permit the said superintendent and ministers, freely and quietly, to enjoy, use, and exercise their own rites and ceremonies, and their own peculiar ecclesiastical discipline, notwithstanding that they do not agree with the rites and ceremonies used in our kingdom," &c. The patent may be seen at large in Burnet, ii. Records, p. 202.

But the ulterior design which the king intended by the incorporation of this church, is what I have particularly in view. This is explicitly stated by A Lasco, in a book which he published anno 1555. In his dedication of it to Sigismond, king of Poland, he says: "When I was called by that king [Edward VI.] and when certain laws of the country stood in the way, so that the public rites of divine worship used under Popery could not immediately be purged out (which the king himself desired); and when I was earnest for the foreign churches, it was at length his pleasure, that the public rites of the English churches should be reformed by degrees, as far as could be got done by the laws of the country; but that strangers, who were not strictly bound to these laws in this matter, should have churches granted unto them, in which they should freely regulate all things wholly according to apostolical doctrine and practice, without any regard to the rites of the country; that by this means the English churches also might be excited to embrace the apostolical purity, by the unanimous consent of all the states of the kingdom. Of this project, the king himself, from his great piety, was both the chief author and the defender. For, although it was almost universally acceptable to the king's council, and the archbishop of Canterbury promoted it with all his might, there were not wanting some who took it ill, and would have opposed it, had not his majesty checked them by his authority and the reasons which he adduced for the design." Again, in the Appendix to the same book, p. 649, he says,—“The care of our church was committed to us chiefly with this view, that in the ministration thereof, we should follow the rule of the divine word and apostolical observance, rather than any rites of other churches. In fine, we were admonished both by the king himself, and his chief nobility, to use this great liberty granted to us in our ministry, rightly and faithfully, not to please men, but for the glory of God, by promoting the reformation of his worship.” *De Ordinatione Ecclesiarum peregrinarum in Anglia. Dedic. et* p. 649. Larger extracts from this work may be seen in Voetii Politic. Eccles. tom. i. 420-422.

Note F. p. 65.—The following account of the freedom used by the chaplains of Edward VI. in reproving the vices of the courtiers, is given by Knox, in his “Letter to the Faithful in London, &c.” I quote from the MS.

“How boldlie thair synes wer rebukeit, evin in thair faces, suche as wer present can witnes with me. Almost thair wes none that occupyit the place [pulpit] but hie did prophesie, and planelie speak the plaguis that ar begun, and assuredlie sall end: Mr. Grindall planelie spak the deth of the kingis majestie, complaynyng on his houshold servandis and officeris who nether eschameit nor feirit to rail aganis Goddis trew word, and aganis the precheris of the same. The godlie and fervent man, Maister Lever, planelie spak the desolatioun of the common weill, and the plaguis whilk suld follow schortlie. Maister Bradforde (whom God, for Chryst his Sone's sake, comfort to the end) spared not the proudest; but boldie declairit that Godis vengeance suld schortlie stryke thame that than wer in autoritie, becaus thay abhorrit and lothed the trew word of the everlasting God. And amangis many uther willet thame to tak exampill be the lait duck of Somerset, who became so cald in hering Godis word, that the yeir befor his last apprehensioun, hie wald ga visit his masonis, and wald not dingyie* himself to ga from his gallerie to his hall for hering of a sermone. God punnissit him (said the godlie preacher) and that suddanlie; and sall hie spair you that be dowbill mair wickit? No: hie sall not. Will ye, or will ye not, ye sall drink the cupe of the Lordis wreith. *judicium domini! judicium domini!* the judgement of the Lord! the judgement of the Lord; lamentabillie cryit he, with weipping teiris. Maister Had-

* i. e. deign. In the printed copies it is “disease himself.”

den most learnedlie opinnit the caussis of the bypast plagis, affirming that the wors wer to follow, unles repentance suld schortlie be found. Thir things, and mekil mair I hard planelie spokin, efter that the haille consale had said thay wald heir no mo of thair sermonis; thay wer but indifferent fellowis; ye, and sum of thame eschameit not to call thame prating knaves. But now will I not speik all that I knaw, for yf God continew my lyfe in this trubill, I intend to prepar ane dische for such as than led the ring in the gospell: but now thay haif bene at the scule of *Placebo*, and amangis laddis [ladies] hes learnit to dance, as the devill list to pype!" p. 120, 121.

With Knox's representation agrees exactly the affecting "Lamentation for the change of religion in England," composed in prison by bishop Ridley, in which he names our countryman along with Latimer, Lever, and Bradford, as distinguishing themselves by the faithfulness and boldness with which they censured the vices that reigned at court. I would willingly make extracts from it, but must refer the reader to the paper itself, which they will find inserted at large in the account of the bishop's trial and martyrdom, in Fox, p. 1614-1620. Edit. anno 1596.

Grindal was an exile during the reign of Mary, and under Elizabeth was made successively bishop of London, archbishop of York, and archbishop of Canterbury. Thomas Lever was a very learned man, and Master of St. John's College, Cambridge. He was Knox's colleague at Frankfort. Upon the accession of Elizabeth, he was admitted to a prebend in the cathedral of Durham, but was afterwards deprived of it on account of non-conformity. He seems to have been allowed to preach through the country, and, in 1577, died Master of Sherburn Hospital. Some of his sermons are in print. *Troubles of Frankford*, p. 13, 28. *Strype's Parker*, p. 212. App. 77. Grindal, 170. *Annals* iii. 512-514. *Hutchinson's Durham*, ii. 594. John Bradford was in prison when Knox wrote the above account of him, and was martyred under Queen Mary. James Haddon had been a chaplain to the Duke of Suffolk, and went to Strasbourg at the death of Edward VI. He was chosen, along with Knox, to be one of the ministers of the English church at Frankfort, but declined to accept the office. *Troubles*, &c. 13, 16, 23. *Strype's Annals*, ii. App. p. 46.

NOTE G. p. 67.—The Confession or Prayer, composed and used by Knox, after the death of Edward VI. and the accession of Mary, shews the state of his mind at that crisis, and refutes the unfounded charges of the Popish, and of some episcopal writers, that he was guilty of rebellious practices against the queen. I extract it from his *Treatise on Prayer*, printed in 1554, which is now exceedingly rare.

"Omnipotent and everlasting God, father of our Lorde Jesus Chryste, who, be thy eternal providence, disposeth kingdoms as best seameth to thy wisdom, we acknowledge and confesse thy judgmentis to be righteous, in that thou hast taken from us, for our ingratitude, and for abusinge of thy most holy word, our native king, and earthly comforter. Justly may thou poure forth upon us the uttermoste of thy plagues; for that we have not knowen the dayes, and tymes of our merciful visitacion. We have contempned thy worde, and despised thy mercies. We have transgressed thy lawes: for deceitfully have we wrought everie man with our neighbours; oppression and violence we have not abhorred; charitie hath not appeared among us, as our profession requireth. We have little regarded the voices of thy prophetes; thy threatnings we have esteemed vanitie and wynd: so that in us, as of ourselfis, restis nothing worthy of thy meercies. For all are found frutless, even the princes with the prophetes, as withered trees apt and mete too be burnt in the fyre of thy eternal displeasure. But, O Lord, behold thy own mercy and goodness, that thou may purdge and remove the most filthy burden of oure most horrible offences. Let thy love overcome the severitie of thy judgmentis, even as it did in geving to the world thy onely Sonne Jesus, when all mankynde was lost, and no obedience was lefte in Adam nor in his sede. Regenerate our hartes, O Lord, by the strength of the Holy Ghost. Convert thou us, and we shall be converted. Work thou in us unfeigned repentance, and move thou our hartes too obey thy holy lawes. Behold our troubles and apparant destruction; and stay the sword of thy vengeance, before it devoure us. Place above us, O Lord, for thy great mercies' sake, such a head, with such rulers and magistrates, as feareth thy name, and willethe the glory of Christ Jesus to spread. Take not from us the light of thy evangely, and suffer thou no papistry to prevail in this realme. Illuminate the harte of our soveraigne lady, quene Marie, with prignant gifts of thy Holy Ghoste. And inflame the hartes of her counsayl with thy trew fear and love. Represse thou the pryde of those

that wolde rebelle. And remove from all hartes the contempte of the worde. Let not our enemies rejoyce at our destruction; but loke thou too the honor of thy owne name. O Lorde, and let thy gospell be preached with boldenes, in this realme. If thy justice must punish, then punish our bodies with the rodde of thy mercy. But, O Lord, let us never revolte nor turne back to idolatrie agayne. Mytigate the hartes of those that persecute us, and let us not faynte under the crosse of our Saviour; but assist us with the Holy Ghoste, even to the end."

PERIOD FOURTH.

NOTE A. p. 76.—After illustrating the obligations which lay upon Christians to abstain from giving any countenance to an idolatrous worship, the plagues which they would escape, and the benefits which they would secure to themselves, and their posterity, by adhering to the true religion, he thus addresses the Protestants of England.

"Allace! sall we, after so many graces that God has offerit in our dayis, for pleasure, or for vane threatnyng of theme whome our hart knaweth, and our mouthes have confessit, to be odious idolateris, altogidder without resistance turne back to our vomit and dampnabill ydolatrie, to the perdition of us and our posteritie? O horribill to be hard! Sall Godis halie preceptis wirk no greater obedience in ws? Sall nature no otherwayis molifie our hartis? Sall not fatherlie pitie overcum this cruelnes? I speik to you, O naturall fatheris. Behold your children with the eie of mercie, and consider the end of thair creatioun. Crueltie it wer to saif your selves, and damp thame. But, O! more than crueltie, and madnes that can not be expressit, gif, for the pleasure of a moment, ye depryve yourselves and your posteritie of that eternal joy that is ordanit for thame that continewis in confessioun of Christis name to the end. Gif natural lufe, fatherlie affectioun, reverence of God, feir of torment, or yit hoip of lyfe, move you, then will ye ganestand that abominabill ydol. Whilk gif ye do not, then, allace! the sone is gone doun, and the lycht is quyte lost, the trompet is ceissit, and ydolatrie is placeit in quietnes and rest. But gif God sall strenthin you (as unfainedlie I pray that his majestie may) then is their but ane dark clude overspred the sone for ane moment, whilk schortlie sall vanische, sa that the beames efter salbe sevin fald mair bryht and amiable nor thay wer befoir. Your patience and constancie salbe a louder trumpet to your posteritie, than wer the voces of the prophetis that instructit you; and so is not the trompit ceissit sa lang as any baldlie resisteth ydolatrie. And, thairfoir, for the tender mercies of God, arme yourselves to stand with Christ in this his schorte battell.

"Lat it be knawin to your posteritie that ye wer Christianis, and no ydolateris; that ye learnit Chryst in tyme of rest, and baldlie professit him in tyme of trubill. The preceptis, think ye, ar scharpe and hard to be observit; and yet agane I affirme, that compareit with the plagis that sall assuredlie fall upon obstinat ydolateris, thay salbe fund easie and lycht. For avoyding of ydolatrie ye may perchance be compellit to leive your native contrie and realme; but obeyeris of ydolatrie without end salbe compellit to burne in hell. For avoyding ydolatrie your substance salbe spoillit; but for obeying ydolatrie heavenlie ryches salbe lost. For avoyding of ydolatrie ye may fall in the handis of earthly tirants; but obeyeris, manteaneris, and consentaris to ydolatrie sall not eschaip the handis of the liveing God. For avoyding of ydolatrie your children salbe depryvit of father, friendis, ryches and of rest; but be obeying ydolatrie thay salbe left without God, without the knowledge of his word, and without hoip of his kingdome. Consider, deir brethrene, that how meikill mair dolorous and feirfull it is to be tormentit in hell than to suffer trubill in erth; to be depryvit of heavenlie joy, than to be rubbit of transitorie ryches; to fall in the handis of the liveing God, than to obey manis vane and uncertain displeasure; to leif oure childrene destitute of God, than to leif thame unprovydit befoir the world;—sa mekill mair fearful it is to obey ydolatrie, or by dissembling to consent to the same, than by avoyding and flying from the abominatioun, to suffer what inconvenients may follow theirupon.

"Ye feir corporall deth. Gif nature admittit any man to live ever, then nad your feire sum aperance of reasone. But gif corporall deth be commoun to all, why will ye jeopardde to lois eternall lyfe, to eschaip that which nether

rvche nor pure, nether wysé nor ignorant, proud of stomoke nor febill of courage, and finally, no earthlie creature, be no craft nor ingyne of man, did ever avoid. Gif any eschaipit the uglie face and horribell feir of deth, it was thay that baldlie confessit Chryst befoir men.—Why aucht the way of lyfe [to] be so feirfull, be reasone of any pane, considering that a great number of oure brethrene has past befoir ws, be lyke dangeris as we feir? A stout and prudent marinell, in tyme of tempest, seeing but one or two schippis, or like weschells to his, pas throughout any danger, and to win a sure harborie, will have gud esperance, be the lyke wind, to do the same. Allace! sall ye be mair feirful to win lyfe eternall, than the natural man is to save the corporal lyfe? Hes not the maist part of the sanctis of God from the begynning enterit into thair rest, be torment and trubillis? And yet what complaynt is find we in thair mouthis, except it be the lamenting of thair persecutoris? Did God comfort thame? and sall his Majestie despyse us, gif, in fichting aganst iniquitie we will follow thair futstepis? He will not.”—Letter to the Faythfull in Londoun, &c. apud MS. Letters, p. 147-151, 156.

NOTE B, p. 91.—“*Quis tulerit Gracchos de seditione querentes?*”—Knox was accused by the English exiles of high treason, because he charged Queen Mary with cruelty, and said that the emperor was as great an enemy to Christ as Nero. But his accusers, it might easily be shewed, used stronger language on this subject than ever he did. Mr. Strype informs us that the Protestants who felt and outlived the persecution of Mary, used the very worst epithets in speaking of her character. Memorials of the Reform. iii. 472. We need no other proof of this than the Oration composed by John Hales, and pronounced by a nobleman before Queen Elizabeth, at her entrance upon the government. Speaking of the late persecution, the orator says: “O cruelty! cruelty! far exceeding all crueltys committed by those ancient and famous tyrants, and cruel murderers, Pharaoh, Herod, Caligula, Nero, Domitian, Maximine, Dioclesian, Decius; whose names for their cruel persecution of the people of God, and their own tyranny practised on the people, have been, be, and ever shall be in perpetual hatred, and their souls in continual torments in hell.” The late queen he calls “Athalia, malicious Mary, unnatural woman; no, no woman, but a monster, and the Devil of hell, covered with the shape of a woman.” See works of the Rev. Samuel Johnson, p. 144.

Nor did they speak in more civil terms of foreign princes. Take for an example the invective of Aylmer against the French king, Henry II. “Is he a king or a devil, a Christian or a lucifer, that bi his cursed confederacie so encourageth the Turke?—Oh! wicked catife and firebrand of hell, which for th’ increasing of his pompe and vayn glory (which he shall not long enjoy) wil betray Christ and his cross to his mortal enemy. Oh foolish Germans! which see not their own undoing, which conspire not together with the rest of Christian princes to pull such a traytour to God, and his kingdom, by the eares out of Fraunce, and hang him against the sonne a drying. The devill hath none other of his sede now but him, to maintaine both the spiritual and the temporall antichryste, the Pope and the Turke. Wherefore seeing he hath forsaken God, lyke an apostata, and sold himself to the Devell, let us not doubte but God will be with us against him, whensoever he shall seek to wrong us; and I trust he will now in the latter age of the worlde shew his myght in cuttynge of this proude Holofernes’ head, by the handes of our Judith. Oh! blessed is that man that loseth his lyfe against such a Terma-gaunt; yea more blessed shall they be that spend their lyves against him than against his great maister the Turke: for the Turke never understode the crosse of Christ; but this Turkish apostata is named a devellis name, Christianissimus, and is in the very heart of Christendome, and like a traitorous Saracene is Christ’s enemy.” Harborowe for Faithfull Subjects, Q. 1. anno 1559.

I do not find Collier, nor other high-church historians, quoting or commenting upon such language. On the contrary, Aylmer is praised for his handsome pen, while every opportunity is taken to inveigh against the virulence of our Reformer. It may be safely said that he has not any where indulged in language so intemperate as what is quoted above.

NOTE C. p. 97.—The 21st canon of the council which met in 1549, ordains that there should be a reader of theology in each cathedral church, whose lectures should be attended by the bishop and canons, “*si voluntas fuerit;*” and also a lecturer on canon law. The 22d canon decrees that there should be a lecturer on theology in each monastery. Wilkins Concilia, iv. 52. The

26th canon enjoins the rectors of universities to see that the students are well instructed in Latin grammar and in logic. The 28th appoints the ordinaries to call all the curates within their bounds before them, to examine them anew, and to reject those who are found insufficient for their office. The last eight canons were intended to regulate the consistorial courts. Ibid. p. 53, 58, 59. To the 14th canon of the Council which sat in 1551-2, we owe the establishment of our parochial registers of proclamation of banns and baptisms. After renewing former statutes against clandestine marriages, and in favour of proclamation of banns of marriage, the canon goes on to enact, "Ut singuli curati deinceps habeant registrum, in quo nomina infantum baptizatorum inscribantur, una cum nominibus personarum, quæ talium baptizatorum parentes communiter habenter et reputantur, nec non compatrum et commatrum, cum die, anno, mense, adscriptis etiam duobus testibus notent; quod etiam ipsum in bannorum proclamationibus servetur, quas præsens conventio in ecclesiis parochialibus tam viri quam mulieris respective, si diversarum fuerint parochiarum, fieri mandat; quæ equidem registra inter pretiosissima ecclesiæ jocalia conservari vult et præcipit, quodque decani in suis visitationibus desuper diligentem indaginem faciant, et deficientes ad commissarios referant, ut graviter in eosdem animadvertatur." Wilkins, ut sup. ap. 71, 72. The 6th canon enacts regulations respecting testaments. On this subject, the following quotation, from the proceedings of a council in 1420, will serve to explain the canon which modified the exaction of mortuaries, mentioned in p. 386. The clergy of each diocese reported on oath to the council, "That the practice was first to pay the debts of the deceased, and then to divide his effects into three equal portions, whereof one was given to his widow, and one to his children: That the executors bestowed the remaining third in payment of legacies, and for the soul of the deceased, (pro exequiis et anima defuncti :) That of this third or dead's part (defuncti pars) the executors were wont to pay, or to compound with the ordinary, at the rate of five per cent. for the expense of confirmation." Chartulary of Moray, apud Lord Hailes's Prov. Councils, p. 23. Besides the five per cent. claimed by the bishop, we have already seen that the vicar had twenty per cent., even according to the mitigated arrangement, before any legacy was paid. No mention is made of the case of a person leaving neither wife nor children; "and *there* it was," says Lord Hailes, "that the clergy reaped their harvest."

NOTE D. p. 110.—See Appendix, No. V. p. 430.

PERIOD FIFTH.

NOTE A. p. 129.—The view which Aylmer has given of the English constitution, is very different from that which a celebrated historian of England has laboured to establish, by dwelling upon some arbitrary measures of the house of Tudor. As this work is seldom consulted, I may be excused for inserting here an extract from it on this subject. It will be seen that he carefully distinguishes between the principles of the constitution, and those proceedings which were at variance with them. "But if this be utterly taken from them [women] in this place what maketh it against their government in a politike weale, where neither the woman nor the man ruleth (if there be no tyrants) but the laws. For, as Plato saith, Illi civitati paratum est exitium ubi magistratus legibus imperat, et non leges magistratui: That city is at the pit's brinke, wherein the magistrate ruleth the lawes, and not the lawes the magistrate." And a little afterwards: "Well; a woman may not reigne in Englande. Better in Englande, than any where, as it shall wel appere to him that, with out affection, will consider the kind of regimen. Why I confer ours with other (as it is in itselfe, and not maimed by usurpacion) I can find none either so good or so indifferent. The regemente of Englande is not a mere monarchie, as some for lacke of consideracion thinke, ner a mere Oligarchie nor Democracie, but a rule mixed of all these, wherein ech one of these have or should have like authoritie. The image whereof, and not the image, but the thinge in dede is to be sene in the parliament hous, wherein you shall find these 3 estats; the King or Quene which representeth the Monarchie, the Noblemen which be the Aristocratie, and the Burgesses and Knights the Democracie.—If the parliament use their privileges, the king can ordain nothing without them: if he do, it is his fault in usurping it, and their fault in permitting it. Wherefore, in my judgement, those that in king Henry the VIII.'s daies would not graunt him that his proclamations should

have the force of a statute, were good fathers of the countrie, and worthy commendacion in defending their liberty. Wold God that that court of late daies had feared no more the fearceness of a woman, than they did the displeasure of such a man. Then should they not have stouped, contrary to their othes and alledgeaunce to the crowne, against the privilege of that house, upon their marye bones to receive the Devil's blessenge brought unto them by Satan's apostle, the cardinal. God forgeve him for the doing, and them for obeying! But to what purpose is all this? To declare that it is not in England so daungerous a matter to have a woman ruler, as men take it to be.—If on thother part, the regement were such as all hanged upon the king's or quene's wil, and not upon the lawes written; if she might decre and make lawes alone, without her senate; if she judged offences according to her wisdom and not by limitation of statutes and laws; if she might dispose alone of war and peace, if, to be short, she wer a mer monarch, and not a mixed ruler, you might peradventure make me to fear the matter the more, and the less to defend the cause." Harborowe for Faithfull and Trewe Subjects. H. 2 & 3.

NOTE B. p. 130.—"Our countryman, John Knox, has been much censured for want of civility and politeness to the fair sex; and particularly for sounding a first and second 'blast of the trumpet against the monstrous regiment of women.' He was indeed no milk-sop courtier, who can sacrifice the public weal to the punctilios of politeness, or consider the interests of nations as a point of gallantry. His reasons for the abolition of all female government, if they are not entirely convincing, may be allowed at least to be specious; and might well be indulged as a harmless speculative opinion, in one who was disposed as he was to make no bad use of it in practice, and to give all dutiful respect to whomsoever the will of God and the commonwealth had assigned the sovereign power. But though the point may be conceded in regard to secular government, in ordering of which the constitutions and customs and mere pleasure of communities may be allowed to establish what is not morally evil; it will not follow that the essential order and positive law of the spiritual kingdom may also be sported with and subverted.—Let the English, if they please, admit a weak, fickle, freakish, bigotted, gallantish or imperious woman, to sway the sceptre of political dominion over millions of men, and even over her own husband in the croud, to whom at the altar she had previously vowed obedience, they shall meet with no opposition from the Presbyterians; provided, they do not also authorize her to lord it, or lady it, over their faith and consciences, as well as over their bodies, goods, and chattels.

"By the laws of the Romish Church no female can be admitted to a participation of clerical power. Not so much as the ancient order of deaconesses now remain in her. Her casuists have examined and debated this thesis; Whether a woman may have the degree of Doctor of Divinity conferred upon her; and have determined it in the negative.* But of the philosophical dignity they are not quite so jealous. Helen Lucrecia Piscopia Cornaca, of famous memory, once applied for her degree in divinity in an Italian university; but Cardinal Barbarigo, bishop of Padua, was far from being disposed to grant it; so that this learned lady was obliged to content herself with a doctorate in philosophy, which, with universal applause, was actually conferred upon her, June 25, 1678.† But the English climate savours nothing of this Italian jealousy; nor are the divines in it so niggardly of their honours. We do not hear indeed that they have formally matriculated any ladies, in the universities, or obliged them by canon, or act of parliament, to take out degrees, either in law, in philosophy or divinity, to qualify them for ecclesiastical preferment, (even the highest pinnacle of it;) though their laws hold males utterly unqualified for holding any lucrative place in the church, or in ecclesiastic courts, without these: Nor can a man be admitted to the lowest curacy, or be fellow or student in an university, until he have learned and digested all the articles, homilies, canons, rubrics, modes and figures of the Church of England, as he cannot even be serjeant or excisemen, till he understand perfectly the superior devotion of kneeling above sitting. But it is very possible, though they do not bear the learned titles, the ladies may know as much of learning and divinity, as those who do. And though they may not receive ordination on Ember-week for the inferior orders, yet it is enacted and provided, that one of their number may be raised at once *per saltum* not only above all the peers and peeresses, but over all the graduates, reverend dignitaries, and mitred

* Carol. Rinaldinij. *Math. Analit. art. pars 3tia.* † *Nouvelle. de la Republ. de Lett.* 1685.

heads in the kingdom. The solemn inaugurating unction once applied, then *Cedite Romani Doctores, cedite Graij.* Hence forward, as the queen of Sheba came from the uttermost end of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and to have every enigma and hard question solved, so must every master, doctor, heads of universities, every diocesan and metropolitan, however wise, have recourse to their queen, by reference or appeal, with every difficult question, and every learned and deep controversy, and be responsible to her for their every decision. How flattering a constitution this to woman-kind—if they be indeed so very fond of precedence and rule, as is commonly said! She must have an unreasonable and unbounded ambition indeed whom this will not content; though she should not be also further told in plain terms, that she is a goddess, and in her office superior to Christ; as some court-clergymen have ventured to affirm of their visible head.” A *Historico-Politico-Ecclesiastical Dissertation on the Supremacy of Civil Powers in Matters of Religion, particularly the Ecclesiastical Supremacy annexed to the English Crown*, by Archibald Bruce, p. 46, 47, 49, 50, Edinburgh, 1802.

NOTE C. p. 134.—In the text I have confined myself to a summary statement of the measures pursued by the Protestant leaders at that time. I shall here add a few particulars. Their petition to the Regent, presented by Sir James Sandilands of Calder, contained five requests. 1. That they should be allowed to assemble, either publicly or privately, to read the scriptures and the common prayers in the vulgar tongue. 2. That it should be lawful for “any qualified person in knowledge” to expound any difficult place of Scripture which occurred in the course of reading, subject to the judgment of the most learned and godly men in the kingdom. 3. That baptism should be administered in the vulgar language. 4. That the Lord’s supper should be administered in the same manner, and in both kinds. 5. That the scandalous lives of the clergy should be reformed, according to the precepts of the New Testament, the writings of the Fathers, and the godly constitutions of Justinian.—Historians differ as to the time at which this petition was presented. I am inclined (after examining the different statements) to prefer the account given by Knox, who expressly asserts that it was presented before the martyrdom of Walter Milne. He had the best opportunity of ascertaining the fact. This was the part of his History which was first written by him, soon after his arrival in Scotland, when the transaction must have been fresh in the recollection of all his associates. There is no reference to this illegal execution in the petition, which would scarcely have been omitted if it had previously taken place. The objection urged by Keith, from the clause in the petition which supposes that the queen was married, does not appear to have great strength. The Parliament, in December 1557, had agreed to the solemnization of the marriage; their commissioners had sailed for France in February to be present at the ceremony, which was appointed to take place on the 24th of April. In these circumstances the Protestants might, without any impropriety, request that they might be allowed liberty to use the common prayers in the vulgar tongue, to the end that they might “be induced in fervent and oft prayers to comend unto God—the queen our soverane, hir honourabill and gracious husband,” &c. Keith is wrong when he says that Knox has fixed the execution of Milne “to the 8th of April, which was above two weeks before the queen’s marriage.” History, p. 80. Note. Knox says he was put to death “the twenti aucht day of Aprylle,” which was four days after the marriage. Historie, p. 122.

After the martyrdom of Milne, the Protestant leaders renewed their application to the Regent, with a heavy complaint against the cruelty of the clergy. Partly encouraged by the Regent’s answer to their petitions, and partly from irritation at the conduct of the Archbishop of St. Andrew’s, they used the liberty of worship for which they had petitioned. The new petition which they prepared for the Parliament in November, 1558, related to the penalties unto which they were subjected by the existing laws, and the prosecutions which might be raised against them by the clergy. And the protestation which they actually prescribed to that assembly, was intended to exonerate them from all blame and responsibility, in using their Christian liberty, after they had regularly craved the reformation of manifest abuses.

But there was a measure adopted by them previous to either of these applications to the Queen and Parliament. Immediately after subscribing the bond on the 3d of Dec. 1557, it was agreed in a meeting of the Protestant lords and barons:—1. That in all parishes of the realm, the Common Prayers should be read weekly on Sunday and other festival days, publicly in the

parish kirks, with the lessons of the Old and New Testament, conform to the order of the book of Common Prayers.—2. That preaching should be confined to private houses, until they could obtain it in public with the consent of the Government. Knox, *Historie*, p. 101. The first of these heads is said to have been “thoicht expedient, devyisit and ordainit.” This has been viewed by some as an assumption of authority over the whole kingdom, in the way of setting aside the established worship and substituting a new one; and it must be confessed, that the words at first view seem to suggest this idea. Yet the supposition is irreconcilable with the situation in which they were placed at that time, and the language which they afterwards used, in which they declare, that as to “public reformation” they “would attempt nothing without the knowledge of the sacred authority.” P. 118. I therefore understand it merely as an agreement among themselves, expressive of their opinion as to what individuals of their number might lawfully do in their respective places where they resided and had influence. And when we consider the total neglect of worship in many places of the kingdom, and the general ignorance that prevailed, it was certainly a very moderate and reasonable measure to provide that the Scriptures and Common Prayers should be read to the people in their mother tongue.

It is natural to inquire here what is meant by “The Buik of Commoun Prayeris” which was appointed to be read. Was it the Common Prayer-Book of Edward VI. or was it a different one? This subject was keenly contested between the Episcopalians and Presbyterians in Scotland, about the beginning of last century. Mr. Anderson, the most acute opponent of the Episcopalians, at that period, has canvassed this question very minutely, and in opposition to the author of the Fundamental Charter of Presbytery, has adduced a number of strong arguments to prove that it was not the Liturgy of Edward VI. but the Liturgy of the English Church at Geneva, of which Knox was minister. The *Countrie-man's Letter to the Curate*, p. 65-77, printed in 1711. I shall state a few facts, without entering into reasoning. Mr. Anderson says that he had in his possession a copy, in Latin, of the Liturgy used in the English Church at Frankfort, the Preface of which bears date the 1st of September, 1554. He adds that it had been translated from English into Latin; and that the prayers in it are exactly the same with those which are found in the Book of Common Order; only there are some additional prayers in the latter adapted to the circumstances of Scotland. *Ibid.* p. 64. This must have been the form of worship agreed to by the exiles immediately after their arrival at Frankfort. *Troubles of Franckford*, p. 7. Before the end of that year, the form of worship observed by the Genevan Church was printed in English. *Ibid.* p. 27. In the beginning of the following year, the form afterwards used by the English Church at Geneva was composed, which differed very little from that which was first used at Frankfort. *Ibid.* p. 37. This was printed in the beginning of 1556. Dunlop's *Confessions*, ii. 401. It is very likely that Knox, in his visit to Scotland in 1555, would carry with him copies of the two former Liturgies, and that he would send copies of the latter, upon his return to Geneva. After all, I think it extremely probable, that copies of the Liturgy of Edward VI. were still more numerous in Scotland at this time, and that they were used by some of the Protestants at the beginning of the Reformation. This appears from a letter of Cecil to Throckmorton, 9th July, 1559. “The Protestants be at Edynborough. They offer no violence, but dissolve religiose howsees; directyng the lands thereof to the Crowne, and to ministry in the Chirch. The parish churches they deliver of altars and imagees, and have received the service of the Church of England, accordyng to King Edward's Booke.” Forbes's *State Papers*, i. 155. Another thing which inclines me to think that the English Liturgy was in the eye of those who made the agreement in Dec. 1557, is, that they mention the reading of “the lessonis of the New and Auld Testament, conforme to the ordour of the Buik of Commoun-Prayeris.” The reply which Anderson gives to this does not appear to me satisfactory. At the same time, it is certain that the order of the English Church at Geneva was used in Scotland, previous to the time of its being formally authorised by the Book of Discipline in 1560. Dunlop's *Confessions*, ii. 520.

But though the Scottish Protestants, at this time, made use of the prayers and Scripture-lessons contained in the English Liturgy, it cannot be inferred from this, that they approved of it without limitations, or that they meant to bind themselves to all its forms and ceremonies. The contrary is evident. It appoints lessons to be read from the Apocrypha; but they expressly confined their reading to “the lessons of the New and Old Testament.” A great

part of the English Liturgy can be read by a priest only; but all that they proposed to use could be performed by "the most qualifeit in the parochin," provided the curate refused or was unqualified. I need scarcely add, that if they had adopted that Liturgy, the invitation which they gave to Knox must have come with a very bad grace. According to Anderson's language, it must have been to this purpose, "Pray, good Mr. Knox, come over and help us; and for your encouragement against you come, you shall find the English Liturgy, against which you preached in Scotland, against which you declared before the Council of England, for opposing which you were brought in danger of your neck at Francford; this English Liturgy you shall find the authorised form of worship, and that by an ordinance of *our* making." The use of the Book of Common Order, (Order of Geneva,) by the Church of Scotland, may be traced back from the year 1564. The General Assembly, Dec. 26, 1564, ordained "that everie minister, exhorter, and reader sall have one of the Psalme Bookes latelie printed in Edinburgh, and use the order contained therein in prayers, marriage, and ministration of the sacraments." Keith, 538. This refers to the edition of the Geneva Order and Psalms, which had been printed during that year by Lepreuik. "In the generall assemblie convened at Edinr. in Decr. 1562, for printing of the psalmes, the kirk lent Rob. Lickprivick, printer, tva hundreth pounds, to help to buy irons, ink, and papper, and to fie craftesmen for printing." Reasons for continuing the use of the old metrical Version of the Psalms, p. 232, of a MS. (written in 1632) belonging to Robert Græme, Esq. advocate. But although this was the first edition of the book printed in this country, it had been previously printed both at Geneva and in England; and was used in the Church of Scotland. For in the assembly which met in Dec. 1562, it was concluded, "that an uniforme Order sould be kept in ministration of the sacraments, solemnization of marriages, and burial of the dead, according to the Booke of Geneva." Keith, 519. Petrie, part ii. p. 233. Nor was it then introduced for the first time; for the Abbot of Crossraguel, in a book set forth by him in 1561, mentions it as the established form of prayers at the time he wrote. "I will call to remembrance," says he, "the sayings of quhilkis ar written to the redar, in *their buke callit the forme of prayeris*, as eftir followis, viz. 'As for the wourdis of the Lord's supper, we rehers thaim nocht bicaus thai sulde change the substance of the breid and wine, or that the repetitione tharof, with the entent of the sacrificear, sulde make the sacraments, (as the papists falslie belevis.')" Ane Oratioune be Master Quintine Kennedy, p. 15. Ed.n. 1812. The passage quoted by Kennedy is in the Book of Common Order. Dunlop ii. 454. The First Book of Discipline, framed in 1560, expressly approves of the Order of Geneva, which it calls "*our* Book of Common Order," and mentions its being "used in some of our churches," previous to that period. Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 520, 548, 583. From these facts it is evident that, although the Scripture lessons and the prayers in the English Liturgy were at first used by some of the Scottish Protestants, yet they never received that book as a whole; that the Order of Geneva was introduced among them before the establishment of the Reformation; and that it became the universal form of worship as soon as a sufficient number of copies of it could be procured. If any other evidence of this were necessary, I might produce the testimony of Sir Francis Knollys, the English ambassador. When queen Mary fled into England in 1568, she feigned her willingness to give up with the mass and adopt the English Common Prayer Book, provided Elizabeth would assist her in regaining her crown. Lord Herries having made this proposal in her name, Sir Francis replied, "that yf he meant thereby to condempne the form and order of Common Prayer now used in Skotland, agreeable with divers well reformed churches,—or that he meant to expell all the learned preachers of Skotland, yff they wold not return back to receave and wayr cornered capes and tuppets, with surples and coopes, which they have left by order *continually since their first receaving of the orel into that realme*; then he myght so fyght for the shadow and image of religion that he myght bring the body and truth in danger"—Anderson's Collections, vol. iv. part i. p. 110, 111.

As this subject has been introduced, I may make an observation or two respecting the form of prayers used in the Church of Scotland at the beginning of the Reformation. What has been called *Knox's Liturgy*, was the *Book of Common Order*, first used by the English Church at Geneva. It contains forms of prayer for the different parts of public worship; and this is the only resemblance which it bears to the English Liturgy. But there is this important difference between the two; in the latter, the minister is restricted to

the repetition of the very words of the prayers; in the former he is left at liberty to vary from them, and to substitute prayers of his own in their room. The following quotations will exemplify the mode. "When the congregation is assembled at the houre appointed, the minister useth one of these two confessions, *or like in effect.*"—"The minister after the sermon useth this prayer following, *or such like.*" Similar declarations are prefixed to the prayers to be used at the celebration of baptism and the Lord's Supper. And at the end of the account of the public service of the Sabbath, is this intimation: "It shall not be necessarie for the minister daylie to repeat all these things before-mentioned, but beginning with *some* manner of confession to proceed to the sermon; which ended, he either useth the prayer for all estates before-mentioned, or else prayeth as the Spirit of God shall move his heart, framing the same according to the time and matter which he hath entreated of." Knox's Liturgy, p. 74, 83, 86, 128. Edin. 1611. Dunlop's Confessions, i. 417, 421, 426, 443, 450. At the end of the *Form of Excommunication*, it is signified, "This order may be enlarged or contracted as the wisdom of the discreet minister shall think expedient; for we rather shew the way to the ignorant, than prescribe order to the learned, that cannot be amended." Dunlop, ii. 746. The Scottish prayers, therefore, were intended as a help to the ignorant, not as a restraint upon those who could pray without a set form. The readers and exhorters commonly used them; but even they were encouraged to perform the service in a different manner. Knox's Liturgy, *ut supra*, p. 189. Dunlop, ii. 694.

NOTE D. p. 140.—I am sensible that my account of the conduct of the Queen-Regent to the Protestants, differs from that which has been given by Dr. Robertson in his history of this period. He imputes her change of measures entirely to the over-ruling influence of her brothers, and seems to acquit her of insincerity in the countenance which she had shewed, and the promises which she had repeatedly made to the Protestant leaders. In any remarks which I shall make upon his account, I wish to be understood as not detracting in the slightest degree from the merits of his able, accurate, and luminous statement of the plans conceived by the Princes of Lorraine. Having mentioned the first symptoms of the Regent's alienation from the Reformers, Dr. Robertson says: "In order to account for this, our historians do little more than produce the trite observations concerning the influence of prosperity to alter the character and corrupt the heart." I do not know the particular historians to whom he may refer, but those of the Protestant persuasion whom I have consulted, impute her change of conduct, not to the above cause, but to the circumstance of her having accomplished the great objects which she had in view, upon which she no longer stood in need of the assistance of the Reformers. Accordingly, they charge her with duplicity in her former proceedings with them. Knox, 96, 110, 122, 125. Buchanan, i. 312. Spotswood, 117, 119, 120. I think they had good reasons for this charge. At a very early period, she gave a striking proof of her disposition and talents for the most deep dissimulation. I refer to her behaviour in the intercourse which she had with Sir Ralph Sadler, in 1543, on which occasion she acted a part not less important than the Cardinal himself, threw the ambassador into the greatest perplexity, and completely duped the English monarch. Sadler, i. 84-88, 100, 111-113, 249-253. The governor wanted not reason to say, "as she is both subtle and wily, so she hath a vengeable engine and wit to work her purpose." It is impossible to read the account of her smooth conduct to the Reformers, without perceiving the art with which she acted. There is also reason for thinking that she was privy to the execution of Walter Milne, and had encouraged the Archbishop of St. Andrew's to take that step. Indeed, in his letter to the Earl of Argyle, written a few weeks before that event, the Archbishop expressly says that she murmured heavily against him, because he did not use severe measures to check the progress of heresy; and Argyle, in his answer, does not call this in question. Knox, 103, 108.

I do not doubt that the Regent was precipitated into the most violent measures, which she adopted by the counsels of her brothers; and that she remonstrated against the impolicy of these, is attested by Castelnau, to whom Dr. Robertson refers as one of his authorities. But I think that she had altered her conduct to the Protestants, and declared her resolution to abet the measures of the clergy against them, previous to the time that she is said to have received these strong representations from France. This appears even from the narrative of Castelnau, who has connected the advice given by the princes of Lorraine with the mission of La Brosse and the Bishop of Amiens,

who did not arrive in Scotland until September, 1559, after the civil war was kindled. Jebb. ii. 446. Keith, 102. Sadler, i. 470. But it will be still more apparent from an examination of the testimony of Sir James Melvil, the other authority to whom Dr. Robertson appeals. He says, that after the treaty of Chateau-Cambrensis was concluded, Bettancourt was sent into Scotland to procure the ratification of it from the Queen-Regent; and that he was charged by the Cardinal of Lorraine, to inform her that the Popish princes had agreed to join in extirpating heresy, and to require that she should immediately take steps for suppressing the Protestants in that country. Melvil adds, that these instructions, mixed with some threatenings, having been received, the Queen-Regent "determined to follow them. She therefore issued out a proclamation *a little before Easter*, commanding every man, great and small, to observe the Roman Catholic religion." Melvil's Memoirs, pp. 23. 24. Lond. 1683. The proclamation to observe Easter in the Catholic manner, is mentioned by all our historians as the decisive declaration of the Queen's change of measures. Now the treaty of the Chateau-Cambrensis was not concluded until the 2d of April, 1559. Forbes, i. 68, 81. But Easter fell that year on the 29th of March, six days before Bettancourt could undertake his journey to Scotland. The proclamation respecting the observance of that festival, must have been emitted some weeks previous to this. Nay, we know from other evidence, that the breach between the Queen-Regent and the Protestants had taken place on the 6th of March; for this is the date from which the Oblivion afterwards granted is reckoned. Keith, 141, 151. There is, therefore, a glaring anachronism in Melvil's narrative; and whatever influence Bettancourt's embassy had in instigating the Regent to more violent measures, she had previously taken her side, and declared her determination to oppose the progress of the Reformation.

There are several other mistakes which Sir James Melvil has committed in his narrative of the transactions of this period. Even in the account of the important embassy into Scotland, committed to him by Henry II. and of the speech which the Constable Montmorency made to him on that occasion, he has introduced the Constable, as mentioning, among his reasons, the shipwreck of the Marquis D'Elbeuf, which did not happen till some months after, when the French King was dead. Memoirs, ut supra, p. 31. Sadler, i. p. 417. In my humble opinion, all our historians have given too easy credit to Melvil, both in his statement of facts, and in his representation of characters.

NOTE E. p. 146.—We shall subjoin a fuller detail of the correspondence of the Protestant leaders with the Queen-Regent, from Tytler's History of Scotland, vol. vi. p. 118. "Soon after they drew up three letters in justification of their proceedings. In the first, which was addressed to the Queen-Regent, they informed this princess, that, although they had till now served her with willing hearts, they should be constrained, if she continued her unjust persecution, to take the sword of just defence. They were ready, they added, to obey their Sovereign and her husband under the single condition that they might live in peace, and have the word of Jesus Christ truly preached, and his sacraments rightly administered. Without this they were determined never to be subject to mortal men. They declared that they were about to notify what they had done to their Sovereign and the King of France, and they conjured her, in the name of God, and as she valued the peace of the realm, not to invade them till they had received their answer. The second letter of the Congregation, which was a more elaborate defence, was directed to the Nobility of Scotland. They knew, they said, that the nobles were divided in opinion. Some regarded them as a faction of heretics and seditious men who troubled the commonwealth, and against whom no punishment could be too severe; others were persuaded of the justice of their cause, nay, had for some time openly professed it, and after having exhorted them to the enterprise, had deserted them in their extreme necessity. To the first, they alleged, that none could prove such offences against them, all that they had done being in obedience to God, who had commanded idolatry and its monuments to be cast down and destroyed. "Our earnest and long request," they continued, "hath been and is, that in open assembly it may be disputed, in presence of indifferent auditors, whether these abominations, named by the pestilent Papists Religion, which they by fire and sword defend, be the true Religion of Jesus Christ or not. Now, this humble request being denied us, our lives are sought in a most cruel manner, and ye the nobility whose duty it is to defend innocents and to bridle the fury and rage of wicked men, were ye of Princes or Emperors, do notwithstanding follow their appetites, and arm

yourselves against your brethren and natural countrymen. If ye think that we be criminal because we dissent from you in opinion, consider, we beseech you, that the prophets under the law, the Apostles of Christ Jesus, after his ascension, the primitive church and holy martyrs did disagree with the whole world in their days; and will ye deny that their action was just, and that all those who persecuted them were murderers before God? May not the like be true this day? What assurance have ye this day of your Religion, which the world that day had not of theirs? Ye have a multitude that agree with you, and so had they—ye have antiquity of time, and that they lacked not—ye have councils, laws, and men of reputation that have established all things as ye suppose; but none of all these can make any religion acceptable to God, which only dependeth upon his own will revealed to man in his most sacred word. Is it not then a wonder that ye sleep in so deadly a security in the matter of your own salvation?" To the second class, those of the nobles who had first espoused their cause, and now deserted it, they directed an indignant remonstrance, "Unless," said they, "ye again join yourselves to us, we declare that as of God ye are reputed traitors, so shall ye be excommunicated from our society, and from all participation with us in the administration of the sacraments; the glory of this victory which God will give to his church, yea, even in the eyes of men, shall not appertain to you; but the fearful judgment which apprehended Annanias and his wife Sapphira, shall apprehend you and your posterity." The spirit and contents of the third letter of the Congregation may be divined from its extraordinary superscription. It was directed "To the generation of Anti-Christ, the pestilent Prelates, and their shavelings within Scotland." It contained a tremendous anathema against those who in their blind fury had caused the blood of martyrs to be shed; it warned them, that if they proceeded in their cruelty, they should be made the subjects of a war of extermination such as Israel carried on with the Canaanites; it arrogated to themselves the appellation of the Congregation of Christ; it stigmatized their opponents as the offspring of the man of sin, and concluded by uniting, in a manner which none can read without sorrow, expressions of extremest vengeance and wrath, with the holy name of God, and the Gospel of peace and love, which was preached by his Son.

It was not to be expected that such violent measures should be attended with pacific effects; the army of the Protestants was inferior to their opponents, and the Queen-Regent, confident of victory, had disdainfully rejected all proposals of negotiation, when the arrival of Glencairn in the camp of the Congregation, at the head of two thousand five hundred men, induced her to hesitate. By the mediation of the Earl of Argyle and the Lord James, a cessation of hostilities was agreed on. Both armies consented to disperse—the town was to be left open to the Queen-Regent. No person was to be troubled or brought to answer for the late changes in religion, and abolishing of idolatry; the religion begun was to be suffered to go forward; no Frenchman was to approach within three miles of the town; when the Queen retired, no French garrison was to be left within it; and in the meantime, all controversies were to be reserved till the meeting of Parliament."

NOTE F. p. 151.—"Truely, among all their deeds and devises, the casting doune of the churches was the most foolish and furious worke, the most shreud and execrable turne that ever *Hornok* himself culd have done or devised. For out of al doubt that great grandfather of Calvine, and old enemie of mankind, not only inspired every one of those sacrelegious hellhounds with his flaming spirit of malice and blasphemie, as he did their forefathers Luther and Calvine: bot also was then present, as *maister of worke*, busily beholding his servands and hirelings working his wil and bringing to pass his long desired contentment.—They changed the churches (which God himself called his *house of prayer*) into filthie and abominable houses of sensual men, yea, and of unreasonable beasts: when as they made stables in Halyrud-hous, sheep-houses of S. Antone and S. Leonard's chapels, tolbooths of S. Gillis, &c. which this day may be seene, to the great grieve and sorrow of al good Christians, to the shame and confusion of Edinburg, and to the *everlasting damnation* of the doers thereof, the sedicious ministers, Knox and his complices." After weeping over the ruins of "Abbirbroth," the writer turns to St. Giles, and represents our Saviour as lamenting its profanation by the setting up of "the abomination of desolation" the courts of justice, within that holy ground. "How wold he say, if he were now entering in at S. Giles, and looking to bare wals, and pillars al cled with dust, sweepings and cobwebs, insted of painting and tapestrie; and on every side beholding the restlesse re-

sort of people treating of their worldly affaires, some writing and making of obligations, contracts and discharges, others laying countes or telling over sowmes of money, and two and two walking and talking to and fro, some about merchandise or the lawes, and too many, alas ! about drinking and courting of woemen, yea and perhaps about worse nor I can imagine, as is wont to be done al the day long in the common Exchanges of London and Amsterdam and other great cities. And turning him farther towards the west end of the church, which is divided in a high house for the Colledge of Justice, called the *Session* or *Senat-house*, and a lower house called the *low Tolbooth*, where the balives of the town use to sit and judge common actions and pleas in the one end thereof, and a number of harlots and scolds for flyting and whoredome, inclosed in the other: And these, I mean, if our Saviour were present to behold such abominable desolation, that where altars were erected, and sacrifices, with continual praises and praiers, were wont to be offered up to the Lord, in remembrance of that bloody sacrifice of Christ on the crosse, there are now holes for whores, and cages for scolds, where nothing is heard bot banning and swearing, and every one upbraiding another: O what grieve and sorrow wold our Lord tak at the beholding of such *profanation and sacrilege!*"—Father Alexander Baillie's True Information of the unhallowed offspring, progress, and impoison'd fruits of our Scottish-Calvinian Gospel and Gospellers. P. 24, 25, 27, 28. Wurtsburg, 1628.

NOTE G. p. 153.—It would be endless to enter into an examination of the exaggerated accounts which have been given of the "pitiful devastation" committed by the reformers. I shall content myself with stating a few facts, which may satisfy the candid and considerate that no such great blame is imputable to them. The demolition of the monasteries, with their dependencies, will be found to comprehend the sum of what can be justly charged against them. And yet again I would ask those who are most disposed to blame them for this, What other purpose could the allowing of these buildings to stand have served, if not to cherish the hopes and excite the desires of the Catholics to regain possession of them? To what use could the reformers possibly have converted them? Is it to be supposed that they could form the idea of preserving them for the gratification of a race of antiquaries, who were to rise up in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries? Have these gentlemen, with all their zeal, ever testified their regard for these sacred monuments, by associations and subscriptions to preserve the mouldering remains from going to their original dust? The reformed ministers had enough to do, in exciting the nobility and gentry to keep the parish churches in decent repair, without undertaking the additional task of supporting huge and useless fabrics. But enough of this.—Let not any distress themselves by supposing that the costly furniture of the monasteries and churches was all consumed by the flames. Fanatical as the reformers were, they "reservit the best part thair of unburnt," and converted it into money, some of which went into the public purse, but the greater part into the private pockets of the nobles. Winzet, apud Keith, Ap. p. 245. The idols and images were indeed committed to the flames without mercy; but considering the examples that their adversaries had set them of consigning *the living images of God* to this fate, the retaliation was certainly moderate; and that these were the only sacrifices which they offered up, we have the testimony of a Popish writer. Leslæus, de reb. gest. Scotorum, lib. x. p. 537. edit. 1675.

The act of Privy Council for demolishing idolatrous houses, did not extend to cathedrals or parish churches. Spotswood, pp. 174, 175. In the first Book of Discipline, indeed, cathedral churches, if not used as parish churches, are mentioned among the places to be suppressed; but so far from this case occurring, it was found necessary to employ many of the chapels attached to monasteries, and collegiate churches, as places for the Protestant worship. That in the first effervescence of popular zeal, some of the cathedrals and other churches should have suffered, is not much to be wondered at. "What you speak of Mr. Knox preaching for the pulling down of churches, (says Mr. Baillie, in his answer to Bishop Maxwell,) is like the rest of your lies. I have not heard that in all our land above *three or foure* churches were cast down." Historical Vindication of the Government of the Church of Scotland, p. 40. Lond. 1646. Mr. Baillie had the historical collections of Calderwood in his possession when he composed that work. The same thing is evident from the testimony of Cecil, in the letter quoted above, (p. 446.) The churches were merely to be stripped of the monuments of idolatry and instruments of superstition; and in carrying this into effect, great care was taken that the build-

ings should not be injured. The Lord James (afterwards Earl of Murray) was the person to whom the execution of the act in the northern part of the kingdom was committed; and we have an authentic document of the manner in which he proceeded, in an order issued by him, and written with his own hand, for purging the cathedral church of Dunkeld. The following is an exact copy of that order:

"To our Traist friendis, the Lairds of Arntilly and Kinvaid.
 "Traist friendis, after maist harty commendacion, we pray yow faill not to
 "pass incontinent to the kyrk of Dunkeld, and tak down the haill images
 "thereof, and bring furth to the kyrk-zayrd, and burn thaym oppinly. And
 "siclyk cast down the altaris, and purge the kyrk of all kynd of monuments
 "of idolatrye. And this ze faill not to do, as ze will do us singular emple-
 "seur; and so committis you to the protection of God. From Edinburgh,
 "the xii. of August, 1560.
 "Faill not, bot ze tak guid heyd (Signed)
 "that neither the dasks, windocks, "AR. ERGYLL.
 "nor durris, be ony ways hurt "JAMES STEWART.
 "or broken . . . eyther
 "glassin wark or iron wark. "RUTHVEN."*

We may take it for granted that the same caution was used in other places. If it be asked, how it happened that the cathedrals and many other churches fell into such a ruined state, the following quotations may throw some light upon the subject. They are taken from a scarce work written by Robert Pont, Commissioner of Murray, and one of the Lords of Session. "Yet, a great many, not onely of the raskall sorte, but sundry men of name and worldly reputation, joyned themselves with the congregation of the reformers, not so much for zeale of religion, as to reape some earthly commoditie, and to be enriched by spoyle of the kirkes and abbey places. And when the preachers told them that such places of idolatrie should be pulled downe, they accepted gladly the enterprise; and rudely passing to worke, pulled down all, both idoles and places where they were found. Not making difference betweene these places of idolatrie, and many parish-kirks, where God's word shuld have bin preached in many parts where they resorted, as in such tumultes and sud-dainties useth to come to passe; namelye, among such a nation as we are."

"An other thing fell out at that time, which may be excused by reason of necessitie: when as the lordes, and some of the nobilitie, principall enterprisers, of the Reformation, having to do with the Frenchmen, and many their assisters of our owne nation enemies to these proceedings, were forced, not onely to ingage their owne landes, and bestowe whatsoever they were able to furnishe of their owne patrimonie, for maintenance of men of warre, and other charges, but also to take the lead and belles, with other jewelles and ornaments, of kirkes, abbayes, and other places of superstition, to employ the same, and the prises thereof, to resist the enemies. The most parte of the realme beand in their contrarie. This, I say, cannot be altogether blamed." Against Sacrilege, Three Sermons preached by Maister Robert Pont, an aged Pastour in the Kirk of God. B. 6, 7. Edinburgh, 1599. Compare Keith, p. 468.

But what shall we say of the immense loss which literature sustained on that occasion? "Bibliotheks destroyed, the volumes of the Fathers, Councils, and other books of humane learning, with the registers of the church, cast into the streets, afterwards gathered in heapes, and consumed with fire." Spotswood's MS. apud Keith, p. 508. May not such conduct be justly equalled with the fanaticism of the Mahometan chieftain who deprived the world of the invaluable Alexandrine library?—As every one is apt to deplore the loss of that commodity upon which he sets the greatest value, I might feel more inclined to join in this lamentation, were I not fully convinced that the real loss was extremely trifling, and that it has been compensated ten thousand fold. Where, and of what kind were these bibliotheks? *Omne ignotum magnificum*. The public was long amused with the tale of a classic library at Iona, which promised a complete copy of Livy's works, not to be found in all the world beside; a miracle which Mr. Gibbon, in the abundance of his literary faith, seems to have been inclined to admit. Danes, and Reformers, and Republicans, were successively anathematised, and consigned to the shades of barbarism, for the destruction of what (for ought that appears) seems to have existed only in the brains of antiquarians. It has been common to say, that all the learning of the times was confined to monasteries. This

* Statistical Account of Scotland, vol. xx. p. 422.

was true at a certain period; but it had ceased to be the fact in the age in which the Reformation took place. Low as literature was in Scotland at the beginning of the 16th century, for the credit of my country, I trust that it was not in so poor a state in the universities as it was in the monasteries. Take the account of one who has bestowed much attention on the monastic antiquities of Scotland. "Monkish ambition terminated in acquiring skill in scholastic disputation. If any thing besides simple theology was read," [I greatly doubt if there is any good evidence of this being a practice at the period of which I speak] "it might consist of the legends of saints, who were pictured converting infidels, interceding for offenders, and over-reaching fiends; or of romances, recording the valour of some hardy adventurer, continually occupied in wars with Pagans, or in vanquishing giants, foiling necromancers, and combating dragons. Some were chroniclers; and books of the laws *might* be transcribed or deposited with the monks, some *might* be conversant in medicine and the occult sciences." Dalyell's *Cursory Remarks*, prefixed to *Scottish Poems*, i. 17, 18.

But we are not left to conjecture, or general inferences, as to the state of the monastic libraries. We have the catalogues of two libraries, the one of a monastery, the other of a collegiate church; which may be deemed fair specimens of the condition of the remainder, in the respective ages to which they belonged. The former is the catalogue of the library of the Culdean monastery at Lochleven. It consisted of *seventeen* books, all of them necessarily in manuscript. Among these were a *pastorale*, *graduale*, and *missale*, books common to all monasteries, and without which their religious service could not be performed; the Text of the Gospels, and the Acts of the Apostles; an Exposition of Genesis; a Collection of Sentences; and an Interpretation of Sayings. The rest appear to have consisted of some of the writings of Prosper, and perhaps of Origen and Jerom. Jamieson's *Historical Account of the ancient Culdees*, p. 376-8. It may be granted that this collection of books was by no means despicable in that age; but certainly it contained nothing the loss of which has been injurious to literature. I have no doubt that, if a copy of the Gospels, with the Lochleven seal or superscription, (whether authentic or fictitious) were to occur; with antiquarians it would give as high a price as a Polyglot; but there can be as little question that one copy of the Greek Testament is of more real value. From the 12th to the 16th century, the monastic libraries did not improve. The catalogue of the library at Stirling, exhibits the true state of learning at the beginning of the last mentioned period. It contained, indeed, a copy of Gospels and Epistles in manuscript, most probably in Latin; the remainder of its contents was purely monkish. There were four *missals*, two *psalters*, four *antiphonies*, three *breviaries*, two *legends*, four *graduals*, and ten *processionals*. Dalyell's *Fragments of Scottish History*, p. 77.

So far as I have observed in the course of my reading, the monasteries did not possess more than perhaps an odd volume or two of the writings of the Fathers; but whatever books of this kind were to be found in them the Reformers would be anxious to preserve, not to destroy. The *chartularies* were the most valuable writings deposited in monasteries: and many of these have been transmitted to us. The Reformers were not disposed to consume these records, and we find them making use of them in their writings. Knox, *Historie*, p. 1, 2, 3. The mass-books were the most likely objects of their vengeance, and I have little doubt that a number of them were committed to the flames, in testimony of their abhorrence of the Popish worship. Yet they were careful to preserve copies of them, which they produced in their disputes with the Roman Catholics. *Ibid.* p. 261.

But whatever literary ravages were committed, let them not be imputed exclusively to the tumultuary Reformation of Scotland, to the fanaticism of our Reformers, or the barbarous ignorance of our nobles. In England, the same proceedings took place to a far greater extent, and the loss must have been far greater. "Another misfortune," says Collier, "consequent upon the suppression of the abbeys, was an ignorant destruction of a great many valuable books. The books, instead of being removed to royal libraries, to those of Cathedrals, or the Universities, were frequently thrown in to the grantees, as things of slender consideration. Their avarice was sometimes so mean, and their ignorance so undistinguishing, that when the covers were somewhat rich, and would yield a little, they pulled them off, threw away the books, or turned them to waste paper. — "A number of them which purchased these superstitious mansions," says Bishop Bale, "reserved of those library books, some to serve their jakes, some to scour their candlesticks, and

some to rub their boots; and some they sold to the grocers and soap-sellers; and some they sent over sea to bookbinders, not in small numbers, but at times *whole ships full*. Yes, the Universities are not all clear in this detestable fact; but cursed is the belly which seeketh to be fed with so ungodly gains, and so deeply shameth his native country. I know a merchantman (which shall at this time be nameless) that bought the contents of two noble libraries for forty shillings price: a shame it is to be spoken. This stuff hath he occupied instead of grey paper by the space of more than these ten years, and *yet hath he store enough for as many years to come.*—Bale's Declaration, &c. apud Collier's Eccles. Hist. ii. 166.

NOTE H. p. 160.—The personal aversion of Elizabeth to engage in the war of the Scottish Reformation, has not, as far as I have observed, been noticed by any of our historians. It is, however, a fact well authenticated from State Papers, whether it arose from extreme caution at the commencement of her reign, from her known parsimony, or from her high notions respecting royal prerogative. Cecil mentions it repeatedly in his correspondence with Throckmorton. "God trieth us," says he, "with many difficulties. The Queen's majestie never liketh this matter of Scotland: you knowe what hangeth thereupon; weak-hearted men, and flatterers will follow that way. I have had such a torment herein with the Queen's majestie, as an ague hath not in five fitts so much abated."—Forbes, i. 454, 455. In another letter he says, "What will follow of my going towardes Scotlande, I know not; but I feare the success, quia, the Queen's majestie is so evil disposed to the matter, which troobleth us all." Ibid. 460. It was not until her Council had presented a formal petition to her, that she gave her consent. Ibid. 390. Even after she had agreed to hostilities, she began to waver, and to listen to the artful proposals of the French Court, who endeavoured to amuse her until such time as they were able to convey more effectual aid to the Queen-Regent of Scotland. Killigrew, in a letter to Throckmorton, after mentioning the repulse of the English army in an assault upon the fortifications of Leith, says, "This, together with the bischope's [of Valence] relation unto the Queen's majestie, caused her to *renew* the opinion of Cassandra." Ibid. 456. This was the principal cause of the suspension of hostilities, and the premature attempt to negotiate, in April, 1560, which so justly alarmed the Lords of the Congregation; an occurrence not adverted to in our common histories. Haynes, apud Sadler, i. 719, 721. The Scottish Protestants were much indebted to Cecil and Throckmorton, for the assistance which they obtained from England. A number of the Counsellors, who had been in the Cabinet of Queen Mary, did all in their power to foster the disinclination of Elizabeth. Lord Grey, in one of his dispatches, complains of the influence of these ministers, whom he calls *Philipians*, from their attachment to the interest of the King of Spain. Haynes, p. 295.

NOTE I. p. 162.—As Knox's conduct, in his application to England for military aid, has been censured by historians, it may not be out of place to quote the account of this transaction given by two living authors, Mr. Tytler and Dr. Cook. "The great difficulty lay in the circumstance that both countries were at peace, and that any active co-operation with the reformed faction would justly be considered as an open declaration of war. Some time before this, (25th October, 1559,) Knox had suggested to Sir James Crofts, the Governor of Berwick, a crafty political expedient by which a thousand or more men might, without breach of league with France, be sent to their assistance in Scotland. It was free, he said, for English subjects to serve any nation or prince in war who paid their wages; and if this was questioned, he recommended that Elizabeth should first send the auxiliaries into Scotland, and then declare them rebels, after they had embraced the service of the Congregation. Crofts either was, or affected to be shocked by such advice at the time, but on the arrival of Maitland at the English Court, his representation of the desperate condition of the affairs of the Protestants, induced Elizabeth and her Council to adopt a line of policy essentially the same as that recommended by the Reformer. It was resolved to enter into a solemn agreement with the leaders of the Congregation, the terms of which were to be discussed in a secret meeting of Commissioners from both countries, to be held at Berwick. Preparations, at the same time, were made for the equipment of a fleet, which was to cruise in the Firth; and orders were given to assemble an army, which might co-operate with the reduced forces of the Protestants. This grateful intelligence was brought to the Reformers on the 15th of December, by Robert

Melvil, who, along with Randolph, had accompanied Lethington to the English Court, and enjoyed the confidence of Elizabeth.

It is curious to observe the extraordinary circumspection and care used by the English Queen, in the steps which she now took. She transmitted to the Reformers exact directions regarding the manner in which they were to apply to her for relief. The instructions to Lethington, when he took his journey to the English Court, were drawn up in strict accordance to a paper sent by Cecil; and special pains were taken, that in the application which they made, there was no mention of religion. The single ground upon which they entreated succour from England, was the tyranny of France, the evident intention of that kingdom to make a conquest of Scotland, and ultimately to dispossess Elizabeth of the throne. "Most true it is," say they, "that this practice of the French is not attempted only against this kingdom of Scotland, but also against the Crown and kingdom of England and Ireland, for we know most certainly that the French have devised to spread abroad, though most falsely, that our Queen is right heir to England and Ireland, and to notify the same to the world, have in paintings at public jousts at France and other places, this year, caused the arms of England, contrary to all right, to be borne quarterly with the arms of Scotland, meaning nothing less than any augmentation to Scotland, but to annex them both perpetually to the Crown of France. We have here a strong presumption that Elizabeth was inimical to what she esteemed the ultra-Protestant reformation established in Scotland; nor can it be denied that this transaction presents us with a somewhat mortifying view of the early Reformers in this country, when we find, that after all the solemn warnings denounced against trusting too exclusively to an arm of flesh, Knox, who then acted as secretary to the Council of the Congregation in the west, and Balnevis, who filled the same situation in the Council established at Glasgow, consented to purchase the co-operation of mere human power, by omitting all allusion to that great cause of religious reformation which they had so repeatedly represented as the paramount object for which they had taken up arms, and were ready to sacrifice their lives. Tytler's Hist. of Scot. vol. vi. p. 178-79.

It appears, from the correspondence, that the English Government anxiously avoided taking any open part. It was probably struck with the ignominy which a flagrant breach of treaty, without any ostensible provocation, would fix upon it; and hence it not only limited its assistance to supplies of money, but it cautiously abstained from sending the coins of England, lest the rapid increase of their circulation might discover from what source they had been poured into the country. Knox, it is true, soon perceived that this kind of assistance would be unavailing; and so early as the end of October he wrote, under a feigned name, to Crofts, pointing out to him the importance of aiding the Congregation by a military force. Sensible, however, that this decided undisguised interference would appear improper, he endeavoured to enforce it by a mode of reasoning, shewing too plainly how much attachment to party may warp the soundest understanding, and lead it to approve maxims which, had it been unbiassed, it would have rejected with abhorrence. Crofts, who saw the difficulty, either condemned the sophistry of Knox, or chose to appear as if he did so; and he answered in such a manner as inspired the Reformer with more correct sentiments; but while he held this language, he was so deeply impressed with the interesting nature of the information which he had obtained, from one so eminently qualified to convey it, that he communicated it to the Council, and even expressed his opinion that open aid must in the end be given. The Council accordingly sent down a faithful messenger to Scotland, to promise military and naval support, about the very time that the Lords sent Maitland to the English Queen. As they, however, were necessarily ignorant of this determination in their favour, and were most solicitous to know precisely what they had to expect, they evinced much wisdom in making a direct appeal to Elizabeth. Cook's Hist. of Reformation, vol. ii. p. 236.

NOTE K. p. 163.—The hostile advance of the Regent against Perth first drove the Lords of the Congregation to take arms in their own defence. Her reiterated infraction of treaties, and the gradual developement of her designs by the introduction of French troops into the kingdom, rendered the prospect of an amicable and permanent adjustment of differences very improbable, and dictated the propriety of strengthening their confederation, that they might be prepared for a sudden and more formidable attack. These considerations are sufficient to justify the posture of defence in which they kept themselves

during the summer of 1559, and the steps which they took to secure assistance from England. If their exact situation is not kept in view, an accurate judgment of their conduct cannot be formed, and their partial and temporary resistance to the measures of the Regent will be represented as an avowed rebellion against her authority. But whatever be the modern ideas on this subject, they did not consider the former as necessarily implying the latter; and they continued to profess not only their allegiance to their Sovereign, but also their readiness to obey the Queen-Regent in every thing not inconsistent with their security, and the liberties of the nation; nay, they actually yielded obedience, by paying the taxes to the officers appointed by her, and in other ways. Knox, p. 176. Private and confidential letters are justly considered as the most satisfactory evidence as to the intentions of men. Our Reformer, in a letter written to Mrs. Locke on the 25th of June, 1559, says,—“The Queen is retired into Dunbar. The fine [end] is known unto God. We mean no tumult, no alteration of authority, but only the Reformation of religion, and suppressing of idolatry.” Cald. MS. i. 429. At an early period, indeed, she accused them of a design to throw off their allegiance. When the Prior of St. Andrew's joined their party, she industriously circulated a report that he ambitiously aimed at the sovereignty, and that they intended to confer it upon him. Knox, 149. Forbes, i. 180. It was one of the special instructions given to Sir Ralph Sadler, when he was sent down to Berwick, that he should “explore the very trueth” as to this report. Sadler, i. 731. In all his confidential correspondence with his court, there is not the slightest insinuation that he had discovered any evidence to induce him to credit that charge. This is a strong proof of the Prior's innocence, if it be taken in connection with what I shall immediately state; not to mention the testimony of Melvil. Memoirs, p. 27.

When the Earl of Arran joined the Congregation, the Queen-Regent circulated the same report respecting him. Knox, p. 174. As far as the Congregation were concerned, this accusation was as unfounded as the former. Ibid. p. 176. But there are some circumstances connected with it which deserve attention, as setting the loyalty of the Scottish Protestants in a very clear light. The Earl of Arran, and not the Prior of St. Andrew's, was the favourite of the English Court. Messengers were appointed by them to bring him over from the Continent, and he was conducted through England into Scotland, to be placed at the head of the Congregation. Forbes, i. 164, 166, 171, 216. Sadler, i. 417, 421, 437, 439. There is also evidence that the ministers of Elizabeth wished him to be raised to the throne of Scotland, if not also that they had projected the uniting of the two crowns by a marriage between him and Elizabeth. “The way to perfait this assuredly,” says Throckmorton to Cecil, “is, that the Erle of Arraine do as Edward the IV. did, when he landed at Ravenspurg: (he pretended to the duchy of York; and having that, he would not leave till he had the *diademe*) for then of necessitie the erle of Arran must depend upon the devotion of England, to maintein and defend himself. I feare all other devises and handelings will prove like an apotecary his shop; and therefore I leave to your discretion to provyde by all meanes for this matter, both there and in Scotland.” And again: “Methinks, the Lord of Grange, Ledington, Balnaves, and the chief doers of the Congregation (which I wold wish specially to be done and procured by the Prior of St. Andrewes) should be persuaded to set forward these purposes before: for there is no way for them to have any savety or surety, onles thei *make the Earl of Arran king*; and as it is their surety, so it is also ours. In this mater there must be used both wisdome, courage, and spede.” Forbes, i. 435, 436. Throckmorton, it is to be observed, was at this time the most confidential friend of Cecil, and, in his despatches from France, pressed the adoption of those measures which the Secretary had recommended to the Queen and Council. Had not the Congregation been decidedly averse to any change of the government which would have set aside their Queen, it seems highly probable that this plan would have been carried into execution. The report of an intended marriage between Elizabeth and Arran was general at this time; and whatever were the Queen's own intentions, it seems to have been seriously contemplated by her ministers. Ibid. 214, 215, 282, 288. This accounts for the recommendation of this measure by the Scottish Estates, after the conclusion of the civil war. Keith, 154.

NOTE L. p. 170.—I shall produce some extracts from Knox's writings, relating to the principal points touched in the statement of his political sentiments. “In few wordis to speik my conscience; the regement of princes is

this day cum to that heap of iniquitie, that no godlie man can bruke office or autoritie under thame, but in so doing hie salbe compellit not onlie aganis equitie and justice to oppres the pure, but also expressedlie to fycht aganis God and his ordinance, either in maintenance of idolatrie, or ellis in persecuting Godis chosin childrene. And what must follow heirof, but that ether princeis be reformat and be compellit also to reform their wickit lawis, or els all gud men depart fra thair service and companie?" Additions to the Apology of the Parisian Protestants, apud M.S. Letters, p. 477. Dr. Robertson has ascribed to Knox and Buchanan an "excessive admiration of ancient policy." He says their "principles, authorities, and examples were all drawn from ancient writers," and their political system founded "not on the maxims of feudal, but of ancient republican government." History of Scotland, vol. i. b. ii. p. 391. Lond. 1809. These assertions need some qualification. If republican government be opposed to absolute monarchy, the principles of Knox and Buchanan may be denominated republican; but if the term (as now commonly understood) be used in contradistinction to monarchy itself, it cannot be shewed that they admired or recommended republicanism. They were the friends of limited monarchy. It is the excellence of the government of Britain, that the feudal maxims which once predominated in it have been corrected, or their influence counteracted, by others borrowed from republican constitutions. And it is not a little to the credit of the moderation and good sense of these writers, that, notwithstanding all their admiration of ancient models of legislation, in comparison with the existing feudal monuments, they contented themselves with recommending such principles as were requisite for restraining the arbitrary power of kings, and securing the rights of the people. Nor were *all* their authorities and examples drawn from ancient writers, as may be seen in the Dialogue, *De jure regni apud Scotos*.

In a letter written by him to the Queen-Dowager, a few days after her suspension from the Regency, he says, "My tounge did bothe perswade and obtain, that your authoritie and regiment suld be obeyed of us in all things lawfull, till ye declair yourself opinemie to this comoun welthe; as now, allace! ye have done." Historie, p. 180. This declaration is justified by the letters which he wrote to his brethren before his arrival in Scotland. The following extract from a letter addressed to the Protestant nobility, Dec. 17th, 1557, is a specimen: "But now no farder to trubill you at the present, I will onlie advertis you of sic brut as I heir in thir partis uncertanlie noysit, whilk is this, that contradioun and rebelloun is maid to the autoritie be sum in that realme. In whilk poynt my conscience will not suffer me to keip back from you my consall, ye, my judgment and commandement, whilk I communicat with yow in Godis feir, and by the assurance of his treuth, whilk is this, that nane of you that seik to promot the glorie of Chryst do suddanlie disobey or displeas the establissit autoritie in things lawfull, neither yit that he assist or fortifie such as, for thair awn particular caus and warldlie promotioun, wald trubill the same. But, in the bowallis of Chryst Jesus, I exhort yow, that with all simplicitie and lawfull obedience, with boldness in God, and with opin confessioun of your faith, ye seek the favour of the autoritie, that by it (yf possible be) the caus in whilk ye labour may be promotit, or at the leist, not persecutit. Whilk thing, efter all humill requist, yf ye can not atteane, then with oppin and solemp protestation of your obedience to be given to the autoritie in all thingis not planelie repugnying to God, ye lawfullie may attempt the extreamitie, whilk is, to provyd (whidder the autoritie will consent or no) that Chrystis evangell may be trewlie preachit, and his halie sacramentis rychtly ministerit unto yow and to your brethren, the subjectis of that realme. And farder, ye lawfullie may, ye, and thairto is bound, to defend your brethren frome persecutioun and tiranny, be it aganis princes or emprioris, to the uttermost of your power; provyding alwayis (as I have said) that neither your self deny lawfull obedience, nether yit that ye assist nor promot thois that seik autoritie and pre-eminence of warldlie glorie." M.S. Letters, p. 434, 435.

In his conversation with Queen Mary at Lochleven, we find him inculcating the doctrine of a mutual compact between rulers and subjects. "It sall be profitabill to your Majesty to consider quhat is the thing your grace's subjects luiks to receive of your Majesty, and quhat it is that ye aucht to do unto thame by *mutual contract*. They ar bound to obey you, and that not bot in God; ye ar bound to keip lawes unto thame. Ye crave of thame service they crave of you protectioun and defence against wicked doars. Now, madam, if you sall deny your dewty unto thame (quhilk especialy craves that ye

punish malefactors) think ye to receive full obedience of thame?" *Historie*, p. 327. This sentiment was adopted by his countrymen. The committee appointed by the Regent-Murray to prepare overtures for the Parliament, which met in December, 1567, (of which committee our Reformer was a member,) agreed to this proposition. "The *band* and *contract* to be *mutuale* and *reciprous* in all tymes cuming betwixt the prince and God, and his faithful people, according to the word of God." Robertson's *Records of Parliament*, p. 796. This was also one of the articles subscribed at the General Assembly in July preceding; only the language there is more clear and express,—“mutual and reciproque in all tymes coming betwixt the prince and God, and also *betwixt the prince and faithful people*.” Buik of the *Universall Kirk*, p. 34, *Adv. Lib.* Keith, 582. See also the proclamation of the King's authority. Anderson's *Collections*, vol. ii. p. 205. Keith, 441. The right of resistance was formally recognised in the inscription upon a coin stamped soon after the coronation of James VI. On one of the sides is the figure of a sword with a crown upon it, and the words of Trajan circumscribed, *Pro me; si mereor, in me; i. e. Use this sword for me: if I deserve it, against me*. Cardonell's *Numismata Scotiæ*, plate ix. p. 101. Our Reformer's *Appellation* may be consulted for the proof of what has been asserted, (p. 163, 164,) as to his endeavours to repress aristocratical tyranny, and to awaken the mass of the people to a due sense of their rights. See also *Historie*, p. 100. The effect of the Reformation in extending popular liberty, was very visible in the Parliament which met in August, 1560, in which there were representatives from all the boroughs, and a hundred lesser barons, “with mony otheris baronis, fre halderis, and landit men.” Keith has mentioned, that during a space of no less than seventy-seven years preceding “scarcely had *one* of the inferior gentry appeared in Parliament. And therefore,” adds he, “I know not but it may be deemed somewhat *unusual*, for a hundred of them to jump all at once into the Parliament, especially in such a juncture as the present was.” *History*, p. 147, 148. The petition presented by the lesser barons, for liberty to sit and vote in the Parliament, has this remarkable clause in it; “otherwise we think that whatsoever ordinances and statutes be made concerning us and our estate, we not being required and suffered to reason and vote at the making thereof, that the same should not oblige us to stand thereto.” Robertson's *History of Scotland*, Append. No. 4.

Liberal principles respecting civil government accompanied the progress of the Reformation. Knox had the concurrence of English bishops in his doctrine concerning the limited authority of kings, and the lawfulness of resisting them. He had the express approbation of the principal divines in the foreign churches. *Historie*, 363, 366. In the 17th century, some of the French divines, in their great loyalty to the *Grand Monarque*, disclaimed all approbation of our Reformer's political sentiments, and represented them as proceeding from the fervid and daring spirit of the Scots nation, or the peculiar constitution of their government. Riveti *Castig. in Balzacum*, cap. xiii. § 14. apud *Oper.* tom. iii. p. 539. See also the quotations from other French authors in Bayle, *Dict. Art.* Knox, Note E. In the controversy occasioned by the execution of Charles I. our Reformer's name and principles were introduced. Milton appealed to him, and made quotations from his writings, in defence of that deed. One of Milton's opponents says that he had only a single Scot to produce, “whom his own age could not suffer, and whom all the reformed, especially the French, condemned in this point.” *Regii Sanguinis Clamor ad cœlum*, p. 129. Hagæ-Comit. 1652, written by Peter du Moulin, the son. Milton, in his *Rejoinder*, urges with truth, that Knox had asserted, that his opinions were approved by Calvin, and other eminent divines of his acquaintance. *Miltoni Defensio secundo pro Pop. Anglic.* p. 101. Hagæ-Comit. 1654. See also Milton's *Prose Works*, by Symmons, vol. ii. p. 291-2, 307, 378. Lond. 1806. But long before this controversy arose, Milton had expressed himself in terms of high praise concerning our Reformer. “Nay, which is more lamentable, if the work of any deceased author, though never so famous in his lifetime, and even to this day, come to their hands for license to be printed or re-printed, if there be found in his book one sentence of a venturous edge, uttered in the height of zeal, (and who knows whether it might not be the dictate of a divine spirit?) Yet not suiting with every low decrepit humour of their own, though it were Knox himself, the reformer of a kingdom, that spake it, they will not pardon him their dash: the sense of that great man shall to all posterity be lost for the fearfulness, or the presumptuous rashness of a perfunctory licenser. And to what an author this

violence hath bin lately done, and in what book of greatest consequence to be faithfully publisht, I could now instance, but shall forbear till a more convenient season." Milton's *Prose works*, ut supra, vol. i. p. 311. This work of Milton first appeared in 1644, the year in which David Buchanan's edition of Knox's *History* was published.

NOTE M. p. 175—The following is the account of this pretended miracle, as related in Row's *MS. Historie of the Kirk*, p. 356.

"In the neighbourhood of Musselburgh was a chapel dedicated to our Lady of Loretto, the sanctity of which was increased from its having been the favourite abode of the celebrated Thomas the Hermit. To this sacred place the inhabitants of Scotland, from time immemorial, had repaired in pilgrimage, to present their offerings to the Virgin, and to experience the efficacy of her prayers, and the healing virtue of the wonder-working "Hermit of Lareit." In the course of the year 1559, public notice was given by the friars, that they intended to put the truth of their religion to the proof, by performing a miracle at this chapel upon a young man who had been born blind. On the day appointed, a vast concourse of spectators assembled from all parts of Lothian. The young man, accompanied with a solemn procession of monks, was conducted to a scaffold, erected on the outside of the chapel, and was exhibited to the multitude. Many of them knew him to be the blind man whom they had often seen begging, and whose necessities they had relieved; all looked on him, and pronounced him stone blind. The friars then proceeded to their devotions with great fervency, invoking the assistance of the Virgin, at whose shrine they stood, and that of all the saints whom they honoured; and after some time spent in prayers and religious ceremonies, the blind man opened his eyes, to the astonishment of the spectators. Having returned thanks to the friars and their saintly patrons for this wonderful cure, he was allowed to go down from the scaffold to gratify the curiosity of the people, and to receive their alms.

"It happened that there was among the crowd a gentleman of Fife, Robert Colville of Cleish, who, from his romantic bravery, was usually called Squire Meldrum, in allusion to a person of that name who had been celebrated by Sir David Lindsay. He was of Protestant principles, but his wife was a Roman Catholic, and, being pregnant at this time, had sent a servant with a present to the chapel of Loretto, to procure the assistance of the Virgin in her labour. The Squire was too gallant to hurt his lady's feelings by prohibiting the present from being sent off, but he resolved to prevent the superstitious offering, and with that view had come to Musselburgh. He witnessed the miracle of curing the blind man with the distrust natural to a Protestant, and determined, if possible, to detect the imposition before he left the place. Wherefore, having sought out the young man from the crowd, he put a piece of money into his hand, and persuaded him to accompany him to his lodgings in Edinburgh. Taking him into a private room, and locking the door, he told him plainly that he was convinced he was engaged in a wicked conspiracy with the friars to impose on the credulity of the people, and at last drew from him the secret of the story. When a boy, he had been employed to tend the cattle belonging to the nuns of Sciennes, in the vicinity of Edinburgh, and had attracted their attention by a peculiar faculty which he had of turning up the white of his eyes, and of keeping them in this position, so as to appear quite blind. Certain friars in the city, having come to the knowledge of this fact, conceived the design of making it subservient to their purposes; and having prevailed on the sisters of Sciennes to part with the poor boy, lodged him in one of their cells. By daily practice he became an adept in the art of counterfeiting blindness; and after he had remained so long in concealment as not to be recognized by his former acquaintance, he was sent forth to beg as a blind pauper; the friars having previously bound him, by a solemn vow, not to reveal the secret. To confirm his narrative, he "played his pavier" before the Squire, by "flypping up the lid of his eyes, and casting up the white," so as to appear as blind as he did on the scaffold at Loretto. The gentleman laid before him the iniquity of his conduct, and told him that he must next day repeat the whole story publicly at the cross of Edinburgh; and as this would expose him to the vengeance of the friars, he engaged to become his protector, and to retain him as a servant in his house. The young man complied with his directions, and Cleish, with his drawn sword in his hand, having stood by him till he had finished his confession, placed him on the same horse with himself, and carried him off to Fife. The detection of this imposture was quickly published throughout the country, and covered the friars with confusion."

PERIOD SIXTH.

NOTE A. p. 186.—I shall, in this note, add some particulars respecting the early practice of the Reformed Church of Scotland, under different heads.

Of Doctors.—The doctrine of the Church of Scotland, and, indeed, of other Reformed Churches, on this head, has not been very uniform and decided. The first Book of Discipline does not mention doctors, but it seems to take for granted what had been stated respecting the officers of the Church in the Book of Common Order, where they are declared to be “a fourth kind of ministers left to the Church of Christ,” although the English Church at Geneva could not attain them. Knox’s Liturgy, p. 14. Dunlop’s Confessions, ii. 409, 410. In the Second Book of Discipline, they are expressly mentioned as “ane of the twa ordinar and perpetuall functions that travell in the word,” and “different from the pastor, not only in name, but in diversity of gifts.” The doctor is to “assist the pastor in the government of the kirk, and concur with the elders, his brethren, in all assemblies,” but not “to minister the sacraments, or celebrate marriage.” Dunlop, ii. 773, 774. The Book of Common Order and Second Book of Discipline agree in comprehending, under the name and office of a doctor, “the order in schooles, colledges, and universities.” Ut supra. The fact seems to be, that there never were any doctors in the Church of Scotland, except the teachers of divinity in the universities. “Quamvis ecclesia nostra (says Calderwood) post primam Reformationem quatuor agnoscat ministrorum genera, pastorum, doctorum, presbyterorum, et diaconorum: tamen doctores alios nondum habuit quam scholarchas.” De Regimine Ecclesiæ Scoticanæ Brevis Relatio, p. 1, 2. Anno. 1618. Some writers have asserted that it was as doctors that both Buchanan and Andrew Melvillesat, and sometimes presided, in the church courts. The Episcopalians having objected that the Church of Scotland admitted persons to act as moderators in her assemblies who are in no ecclesiastical office, and instanced in the two persons above-mentioned, Mr. Baillie gives this answer: “Mr. Melvil was a doctor of divinity, and so long as episcopal persecution permitted, did sit with great renowne in the prime chair we had of that Faculty. George Buchanan had sometimes, as I have heard, been a preacher at St. Andrew’s: after his long travells he was employed by our church and state to be a teacher to King James and his family: of his faithfulness in this charge, he left, I believe, to the world, good and satisfactory tokens. The eminency of this person was so great, that no society of men need be ashamed to have been moderated by his wisdom.” Historical Vindication, p. 21, 22. The report which Mr. Baillie had heard of Buchanan having been a preacher, probably originated from the divinity lectures which Calderwood informs us he read with great applause in the University of St. Andrew’s. “Buchanan and Mr. Melvin were doctors of divinity,” says Rutherford, Lex Rex, pref. p. 5. Lond. 1644.

Of Readers.—Those employed as *readers* appear to have often transgressed the bounds prescribed to them, and to have both solemnized marriage and administered the sacraments. Different acts of Assembly were made to restrain these excesses. The General Assembly, October, 1576, prohibited all readers from ministering “the holie sacrament of the Lord, except such as hes the word of exhortation.” The Assembly, which met in July, 1579, inhibited them from celebrating marriage, unless they were found meet by “the commission, or synodal assembly.” At length, in April, 1581, the order was suppressed. “Anent readers: Forsameikle as in assemblies preceding, the office thereof was concludit to be no ordinar office in the kirk of God, and the admission of them suspendit to the present assemble; the kirk in ane voyce hes votit and concludit farder, that in na tymes coming any reider be admitted to the office of reider, be any having power within the kirk.” Buik of the Universall Kirk, in loc.

Of Superintendents.—The Church of Scotland did not consider superintendents as ordinary or permanent office-bearers in the church. They are not mentioned in the Book of Common Order. The first Book of Discipline explicitly declares that their appointment was a matter of temporary expedience, in the plantation of the church, and on account of the paucity of ministers. Its words are:—“Because we have appointed a larger stipend to them that shall be superintendents then to the rest of the ministers, we have thought good to signifie to your honours such reasons as moved us to make difference betwixt teachers *at this time*.” And again:—“We consider that

if the ministers whom God hath endowed with his singular graces amongst us should be appointed to severall places there to make their continual residence, that then the greatest part of the realme should be destitute of all doctrine: which should not onely be the occasion of great murmur, but also be dangerous to the salvation of many. And *therefore* we have thought it a thing *most expedient at this time*, that from the whole number of godly and learned men, now presently in this realm, be selected ten or twelve (for in so many provinces we have divided the whole) to whom charge and commandment should be given, to plant and erect kirkes, to set, order, and appoint ministers, as the former order prescribes, to the countries that shall be appointed to their care where none are now." First and Second Books of Discipline, p. 35. printed anno 1621. Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 538, 539. Archbishop Spotswood has not acted faithfully, if his History has been printed, in this place, exactly according to his manuscript. He has omitted the passages above quoted, and has comprehended the whole of the two paragraphs from which they are extracted in a short sentence of his own, which is far from being a full expression of the meaning of the compilers. History, p. 158. Lond. 1677. This is the more inexcusable, as he says, that for "the clearing of many questions which were afterwards agitated in the church," he "thought meet *word by word* to insert the same [the First Book of Discipline] that the reader may see what were the grounds laid down at first for the government of the church." Ibid. p. 152. He could not be ignorant that the grounds of the appointment of superintendents formed one of the principal questions agitated between him and his opponents. I have compared the copy of the First Book of Discipline, inserted in an old MS. copy of Knox's Historie, and find that it exactly agrees with the quotations which I have made from the editions published in 1621, and by Dunlop. Dr. Robertson has been misled by the Archbishop. "On the first introduction of his system," says he, "Knox did not deem it expedient to depart altogether from the ancient form. Instead of bishops, he proposed to establish ten or twelve superintendents in different parts of the kingdom." As his authority for this statement, he refers solely to the mutilated account in Spotswood. Robertson, ut supra, ii. 42, 43. Mr Laing, from an examination of the original documents, has given a more accurate account, and pronounced the appointment of superintendents a "temporary expedient." History of Scotland, vol. iii. p. 17, 18. Lond. 1804.

The superintendents were elected and admitted in the same manner as other pastors. Knox, 263. They were equally subject to rebuke, suspension, and deposition, with the rest of the ministers of the church. In the examination of those who were admitted by them to the ministry, they were bound to associate with them the ministers of the neighbouring parishes. They could not exercise any spiritual jurisdiction without the consent of the provincial synods, over which they had no negative voice. They were accountable to the General Assembly for the whole of their conduct. The laborious task imposed upon them is what few bishops have ever submitted to. "They must be preachers themselves;" they are charged to "remain in no place above twenty daies in their visitation, till they have passed through their whole bounds." They "must thrice everie week preach at the least." When they return to their principal town or residence, "they must be likewise exercised in preaching;" and having remained in it "three or foure monthes at most, they shall be compelled (unless by sicknesse they be retained) to re-enter in visitation." Dunlop, ii. 542. De Regimine Eccles. Scotican. brevis relatio, p. 5, 6. Anno 1618. Epistolae Philadelphi Vindiciae contra calumnias Spotswoodi apud Altare Damascenum, p. 724-727. edit. Lugd. Batav. 1708. In this tract (of which Calderwood was the author) the difference between the Scottish superintendents and Anglican bishops is drawn out under thirteen heads. Spotswood's treatise is entitled, Refutatio Libelli de Regimine Ecclesiae Scoticanæ, Lond. 1620.

The *visitors*, or *commissioners* of provinces, exercised the same power as the superintendents; the only difference between them was, that the former received their commission from one Assembly to another. Altare Damascenum, ut supra, p. 727. But these commissions appear sometimes to have been granted for a longer period; for one of Robert Pont's titles was commissioner of Murray. Perhaps, in this case, a commissioner differed from a superintendent, merely in not being obliged to have his stated residence within the bounds of the province committed to his inspection.

Of the weekly Exercise, or Prophesying.—This was an exercise upon the Scriptures, intended for the improvement of ministers, the trial of the gifts

of those who might be employed in the service of the Church, and the general instruction of the people. It was to be held in every town "where schools and repaire of learned men are." For conducting the exercise, there was an association of the ministers, and other learned men, in the town and vicinity, called "the company of interpreters." They alternately expounded a passage of Scripture; and others who were present were encouraged to deliver their sentiments. After the exercise was finished, the constituent members of the association retired, and pronounced their judgment on the discourses which had been delivered. Books of Discipline, *ut supra*, p. 60-62. Dunlop, ii. 587-591. After the erection of regular presbyteries, this exercise formed an important part of their employment; and at every meeting, two of the members by turns commonly expounded the Scriptures. *De Regimine Eccl. Scot. Brevis Relatio*, p. 3. Until lately some traces of this ancient practice remained, and there is reason to regret that it has generally gone into desuetude among Presbyterian bodies. Associations of the same kind were formed in England. From 1571 to 1576, they spread through that kingdom, and were patronised by the Bishops of London, Winton, Bath and Wells, Litchfield, Gloucester, Lincoln, Chichester, Exon, St. David's, Sandys Archbishop of York, and Grindall Archbishop of Canterbury. Several of the courtiers, as Sir Walter Mildmay, Sir Francis Knollys, and Sir Thomas Smith, greatly approved of them; and, at a future period, they were recommended to King James by Lord Bacon. But they were suppressed by an imperious mandate from Elizabeth. Some interesting particulars respecting their numbers, regulations, and suppression, may be seen in *Strype's Annals*, ii. 90-95, 219, 220, 318-324, 486. *Life of Grindal*, p. 219-227, 230, 299, 300. *Life of Parker*, 460-462. They were formed on the model of the Scottish exercises, and in the regulations, the very words of the First Book of Discipline are sometimes used. A species of ecclesiastical discipline was joined with them in some dioceses. I also observe a striking resemblance between the directions given by Bishop Scambler for the celebration of the Lord's Supper, and the mode which was then used in Scotland, particularly as to the circumstance of two communions or ministrations on the same day, and the early hour of the service. *Strype's Annals*, ii. 91. compared with *Scott's History of the Scottish Reformers*, p. 192.

Keith has given a quotation from the MS. copy of Spotswood's History, in which the Archbishop signifies, that, at the time of the compilation of the First Book of Discipline, several of the Reformed ministers wished to retain the ancient policy, after removing the more gross corruptions and abuses, but that Knox overruled this motion. Keith, 492. But there is no trace, in the authentic documents of that period, of any diversity of opinion among the Scottish Reformers on this head. The supposition is contradicted by Row. (see above, p. 183.) and by their own language, Dunlop, ii. 518. Knox, *Historie*, 282. It is probable that the Archbishop's story had its origin at a later period, when the design of conforming the Church of Scotland to the English model began to be entertained. I confess, I am not inclined to give much more credit to another of the Archbishop's tales, as to a message which Archbishop Hamilton is said to have sent to Knox by John Brand. *History*, 174. Keith, 495.

NOTE B. p. 187.—There were three objects to which the Reformed ministers wished the ecclesiastical revenues to be applied; to the maintenance of ministers, of the teachers of youth, and of the poor. For the ministers they required that "honest provision" should be made, so as to give "neither occasion of solicitude, neither yet of insolencie and wantonnesse." They thought it reasonable that provision should also be made for their wives and children after their death. In ordinary cases, they proposed forty bolls of meal, and twenty-six bolls of malt, as an adequate stipend. These stipends were to be paid from the tithes; but they proposed the abolishing of all illegal or oppressive exactions which had formerly been made by the clergy. The deacons, and not the ministers, were to collect the tithes, and after paying the stipends, to apply the remainder to the other purposes. For the support of the Universities, they proposed that the revenues of the bishoprics and collegiate churches, should be divided, and appropriated. *Dunlop's Confessions*, ii. 533, 534, 537, 538, 566.

This was very unpalatable doctrine to the most of the Protestant nobility and gentry. They had already cast a covetous eye upon the rich revenues of the Popish clergy. They had seized upon some of their lands, and they retained the tithes in their own hands. They had made private bargains with

some of the incumbents, and were anxious to have them legalised. Hence their aversion to ratify the Book of Discipline: hence the exception with which it was subscribed; hence the poverty and complaints of the ministers, and the languishing state of the universities. If we consider the extent of the establishments proposed, including the support of ministers, parochial teachers, city colleges, and national universities, the demand made by the ministers for the appropriation of all the funds devoted to the Church will not appear unreasonable; and they shewed themselves disinterested, by requiring a moderate allowance to themselves. They did not regard tithes as of divine right, nor think that it was sacrilegious in every case to apply to secular purposes funds which had been originally set apart to a religious use. But they held that, by the Christian as well as the Jewish law, a competent subsistence was appointed to be made for the ministers of religion; that it was incumbent on a nation which had received the true religion, to make public provision for the outward maintenance of its ordinances; that the appropriation of the tenth part of property for this purpose was at least recommended by primeval usage, by the sanction of divine wisdom in the Jewish constitution, and by the laws and practice of Christian empires and kingdoms; that property which had been set apart and given for religious ends could not justly, or without sacrilege, be alienated, *as long as it was needed for these purposes*: that though many of the donors might have the support of superstitious observances immediately in their eye, still it was with a view to religion that they made such gifts; and that in as far as it should appear that the ecclesiastical revenues were superabundant and unnecessary, they were willing that this should be applied to the common service of the state. To illustrate their sentiments on this subject, and the manner in which they urged their complaints, I shall add a few extracts from some of their writings which are not so commonly consulted.

My first extracts shall be from Ferguson's sermon, to which our Reformer set his hand a little before his death. Having given an account of the law of Moses, the ordinance of the New Testament, and the practice of the primitive church, he adds, "Ye se, then, that the ministers of the primitive kirk (that levit befor princes wer Christianes and nurischers of the kirk, as it was prophesit) wer na beggaris, suppois thay wer no lordis that aboundit in superfluous welth, as the papis bischoppis did; bot had sufficient asweill for the necessitie of thair owin families, as for the help of uther Christianes that now and then, as occasiounes servit, repairit to thair houses. Quhen the tyme come foirspoken bi David (Psal. lxxviii. and cii.) that kingis and empereouris, and thair kingdomes, suld serve the Lord, and bring giftes unto him," they, "following his exampil that only is wyse, ordainit be thair authoritie, that the tiendis sulde serve to the same use in the tyme of the gospell."—"Our youth also aucht to be nurischit and mantenit at the schuilis, that thairoutof efterward micht spring preicheris, counsellouris, physiciounis, and all other kinds of learnit men that we have neid of. For the scheulis are the seid of the kirk and commoun welth, and our childrene are the hope of the posteritie, quhilk being neglectit, thair can nathing be luikit for bot that barbarous ignorance sall overflow all. For suppois God has wonderouslie, at this tyme, steirit up preicheris amang us, evin quhen darknes and ignorance had the upperhand, he will not do sa heirefter, seeing we have the ordinarie meane to provide them, quhilk gif we contempne, in vane sall we loke for extraordinary proviscioun. Israel was miraculusslie fed in the wildernes with manna, bot how soon thay did eit of the corne of the land of Canaan the manna ceissit, nouthir had thay it ony moir, bot levit efterward on the frute of the ground, ordinarilie labourit with thair handis. I speik to prudent men that may understand and judge quhat I say." After deploring the decayed state of the churches and schools, and the poverty of the ministers, he adds: "I am compellit to speik this, thocht I be als plane as plesant, and appeir to yow as the greitest fule of the rest to stand up heir to utter that quhilk other men thinkis. Weill, let me be countit a fule for speiking the treuth. I regard not; nouthir may I spair to speik it, thocht I suld be judgeit in our awin caust to be carayit away with a particular affectioun; following herein the exampil of our prophet Malachie."—"Ye marvel, I doubt not, quhy ye have not prevailit aganis yone throtcutteris and unnaturall murtheres within the towne and castell of Edinburgh, specially ye heving a maist just actioun, being ma in number, and mair vailyeant men, and nathing inferiour to thame in wisdome, circumspectioun, or ony gude qualiteis outhir of body or mynd. Bot ceis to marvel: for the caus quhy that ye have not prevailit aganis thame long or now, amang mony uther your sinnis quhairwith ye are defylt, is this, that the spuilie of the

pure is in your housis; ye invaid that quhilk our forbearis gave of gude zeill to Goddis honour, and the commoun welth of the kirk; ye spuiye to your awin private usis, without outhir ryme or resoun, nouthir will ye be controlit. This, this, I say, is the chief caus that nathing prosperis in your handis. I grant that our fatheris, of immoderate zeill (besyde the teindis and necessarie rentis of the kirk,) gave thairunto superfluously, and mair nor aneuch. Quhat then is to be done, but that the preicheris of God's word be reasonablelie sustentit, seing thair is eneuch and over mekle to do it, the schullis and the pure be weill provydit, as they aucht, and the tempillis honestly and reverently repairit, that the pepill without injurie of wynd or wedder, may sit and heir Goddis word, and participat of his haly sacramentis. And gif thair restis ony thing unspendit quhen this is done (as na dout thair wil,) in the name of God, let it be bestowit on the nixt necessarie affairis of the commoun welth, and not to any mannis private commoditie." *Ane sermon preachit befor the regent and nobilitie—be David Fergusone.* B. iv. v. C. Lekpreuik, 1571.

The following extracts are taken from Sermons against Sacrilege, by Robert Pont, a son-in-law of our Reformer. "From the yeare of our Lorde 1560, unto this present time, the greatest study of all men of power of this land, hes bene, by all kinde of inventions, to spoyle the kirk of Christ of her patrimonie, by chopping and changing, diminishing of rentals, converting of victual in small sumes of money: setting of fewes within the availe, long tackes uppon tackes, with two or three life-rentes, with many twenty yeares in an tack, annexationes, erectiones of kirk-rentes, in temporall livings and heritage, pensiones, simple donationes, erecting of new patronages, union of teindes, making of new abbattes, commendatares, priors, with other papistical titles, which ought to have no place in a reformed kirk and countrie; with an infinite of other corrupt and fraudfull waies, to the detriment and hurte of the kirke, the schooles, and the poore, without any stay or gaine-calling.

"Treuth it is, parlamentes have bene conveyened, and acts have bene made, for providing ministers of competent livinges; for reparaling of parish kirkes, for trayning up the youth in schooles of theologie. It hath bene also promised, and subscribed in writte, by a greate parte of the nobilitie, that the poore labourers of the ground, should have an ease and reliefe of the rigorous exacting of their teindes: and many other good things have bene devised, tending to the advancement of the glorie of God, and establishing of Christ his kingdome. Amongst us, namely, in time of the governemente of that good Regente, (whome for honoures cause I name,) who, although he could not doe all that hee woould have done, (having so manie hinderances and enemies;) yet his dooings might have bin a perfite patterne of godlinesse to the rest of the nobilitie, to make them bene content to live uppon their owne rentes, and to cease from robbing and spoyling the patrimonie of the kirke." Having proposed the objection, that the Levitical Law of Moses is abrogated, and therefore his authorities from the Old Testament had no force under the Gospel, he adds,—“I aunswere concerning these landes or annuall rentes, out of landes deleted and given to the kirke, that although the Levitical Lawe, with the ceremonies thereof concerning the outwarde observation, hath taken an ende, and is fulfilled in Christ; yet the substance of the policie, concerning interteinment of the service of God, and up-hold of religion, still remaines. And it is no lesse necessarie, that the ministerie of God amongst us be maintained, and that sufficient provision be made to serve other godlie uses, whereunto the kirk-rentes ought to be applyed, nor it was that the priestes and Levites shoulde bene upholden in the time of the olde law. And as to the holinesse or unholines of these landes and revenues: albeit in their owne nature (as I saide in the former sermon) they be like other earthly possessiones: yet in so far as they were applyed to an holy use, they may wel be called holy possessiones and rents, as the kirk is holy, to whose use they are appointed. I will not deny but the teinds might be possibly changed, in other meanes of sufficient provision for the kirke, if such godly zeale were nowe amongst men as was of olde time. But in so farre as we see the plain contrarie, that men are now readier to take away than ever our predecessors were to give, it were a foolish thing to loose the certaine for the uncertaine, and that which is never likely to come to passe." Pont's Sermons against Sacrilege, B. 8. C. 2. C. 8. E. 6. Waldegrave, 1599.

NOTE C. p. 187.—A short account of John Row will introduce the particulars which I have to state respecting the study of the Hebrew language in Scotland. The account is taken from the Historie of his son, John Row, minister of Carnock; and the copy of the MS. which I quote in this Note, is one

transcribed in 1726. He was born in a place called *Row*, between Stirling and Dumblane. After finishing his education, and being laureated at St. Andrew's, he pleaded for some time as an advocate before the consistorial court in that city. Having resolved to travel, with the view of prosecuting his studies to greater advantage, he visited the Continent about the year 1550, and was intrusted by the Scottish clergy with the management of some of their affairs at the court of Rome. He applied himself to the acquisition of learning with great diligence. He did not, however, confine himself to one branch of study, but having an opportunity of acquiring Greek and Hebrew, he made himself master of these languages, and received the degree of *Doctor utriusque juris* from two Italian Universities. He was a favourite with two Pontiffs, Julius III. and Paul V. and had every prospect of preferment at Rome; but having lost his health, he resolved to return to his native country. Upon his departure from Rome, May 20, 1558, the Pope invested him with the public character of Nuncio, and gave him instructions for checking the progress of heresy in Scotland. Having arrived in this country, September 29, 1558, he exerted himself for some time in executing his commission, but was soon converted to the Protestant faith. Row's MS. Historie, ut supra, p. 308-310. The exposure of the pretended miracle wrought at Musselburgh was the first thing which staggered his mind. Being in the house of Meldrum, the gentleman in Fife who had detected the imposture, the young man who was said to have been cured of blindness was brought into his presence, where he "played his pavier," by "flying up the lid of his eyes and casting up the white." While Row was confounded at this discovery, Meldrum addressed him very seriously: "Weill, Mr. John Row, ye are a great clergyman, and a great linguist and lawyer, but I charge you, as you must answer to the great God at the last day, that ye do not now hold out any light that God offers you, but that ye will, as soon as ye come to your study, close the door upon you, and take your Bible, and seriously pray to God that ye may understand the Scriptures.—Read the 2d ch. of the 2d epistle of the Thessalonians; and if you do not see your master, the Pope, to be the great Antichrist who comes with lying wonders to deceive the people of God, (as now he and his deceiving rabble of clergy in Scotland have done lately at Musselburgh,) ye shall say Squire Meldrum has no skill. Row, p. 356. By conference with several of the Reformed ministers, particularly Knox, he was brought to an abjuration of Popery. "Ipse nuncius (says his grandson) nassa evangelii irretitus, ejus pura, pia, pathetica prædicatione inescatus, pontificiis syrtibus, famigerati Knoxii opera, extractus est." Hebrææ linguæ Institutiones, a M. Joa. Row, epist. dedic. A. 3. b. Glasguæ, 1644. In the beginning of the year 1560 he was admitted minister of Kinneuchar in Fife, where he married Margaret Beatoun, a daughter of the Laird of Balfour. Row's History, ut supra. Before the end of that year he was translated to Perth. Knox, 236. Keith, 498.

During his residence in Italy, he had made great proficiency in the knowledge of the Greek and Hebrew languages. The latter was at this time almost entirely unknown in Scotland, and he immediately began, at the recommendation of his brethren, to teach it. The grammar-school of Perth was the most celebrated in the kingdom, and the noblemen and gentlemen were accustomed to send their children there for their education. Many of these were now boarded with Mr. Row, who instructed them in Greek and Hebrew. As nothing but Latin was spoken by the boys in the school and in the fields, so nothing was spoken in Mr. Row's house but French. The passages of Scripture read in the family before and after meals, if in the Old Testament, were read in Hebrew, Greek, Latin, French and English; if in the New Testament, they were read in Greek, &c. His son, John, when he was between four and five years old, was taught the Hebrew characters, before he knew the English letters; and at eight years of age he read the Hebrew chapter in the family. When he went to the newly erected university of Edinburgh, his uncommon acquaintance with the Hebrew language attracted the particular notice of the learned and amiable principal Rollock. Row's Historie, 372-375. Hebrææ Ling. Institut. ut supra. Mr. Row instructed the master of the grammar-school in the Greek tongue, by which means it came to be taught afterwards in Perth. And in 1637 his own grandson (of the same name) was Rector of that school, in which he taught Latin, Greek and Hebrew. This produced the following encomiastic verses by Principal Adamson of Edinburgh:—

Perthana quondam Latialis linguæ schola
Laude cluebat, fueratque, unius labri;
Nunc est trilinguis, Latio jungens Græciam,
Et huic Palestinam; omnium linguis loquens.
O ter beatum te nunc Perthanam scholam!

O ter beatum Rollum rectorem tuum!
Per quem juvenus, barbariæ procul habitu,
Rudis et tenella primulis labellulis
Solymas, Athenas, et Romam scite sonat.

About the year 1567, James Lawson (afterwards Knox's successor at Edinburgh) returned from the Continent, where he had studied Hebrew. The professors of St. Andrew's prevailed on him to give lessons on that language in their university. Life of Lawson, p. 2. in Wodrow's MS. Collections, vol. i. Bibl. Coll. Glasg. As he was made sub-principal in the University of Aberdeen, anno 1569, it is to be presumed that he would also teach the language there. Lawson, after his settlement in Edinburgh, patronised the interests of literature in this city. It was chiefly by his exertions that the buildings for the High School was completed in 1578. His intentions were to have it erected into an university, or at least to make it *Schola Illustris*, with classes of logic and philosophy. The books destined for the library were kept in his house, previous to the foundation of the College. Crawford's History of the University of Edinburgh, p. 19, 20. I have already noticed the arrival of Andrew Melville in 1573, and the situation which he held both at Glasgow and St. Andrew's. After prosecuting his studies at Paris, under the celebrated masters, Turnebus, Mercerus, and Ramus, and professed philosophy at Poitiers, he had, during the five years that he spent at Geneva, learned the Hebrew, Chaldaic, and Syriac tongues, from Cornelius Bertram. The Regent Morton offered him the archbishopric of St. Andrew's, but he refused it, and chose an academical life. Life of Andrew Melville, apud Wodrow's MSS. ut supra. Calderwood, Epistolæ Philadelphi Vindiciæ, apud Altare Damascenum, p. 731. Spotswood, to whom he was a keen antagonist, allows that he was a great proficient in the three learned languages. "Andreas Melvinus bonis literis excultus, et trium linguarum, quarum eo seculo ignorantia illi famam et tantum non admirationem apud omnes peperit, calentissimus." Refutatio Libelli de Regim. Eccles. Scotic. p. 31. Thomas Smeton, who succeeded Melville at Glasgow, was also a Hebrician, as appears from his answer to Hamilton's Dialogue. Those who held the situation of principal in the universities at that time were accustomed to teach those branches which were most neglected.

I have said in the text, that the Reformers, while they exerted themselves to revive the knowledge of the learned languages, did not neglect the improvement of their native tongue. Among others, David Ferguson, minister of Dunfermline, distinguished himself in this department. He had not the advantage of the same learned education with many of his brethren; but possessing a lively wit and elegant taste, he applied himself particularly to the cultivation of the Scottish language. Smetoni Responsio ad Hamilt. Dialog. p. 92. Row's Coronis to his Historie, p. 314. of copy in Divinity Lib. Edin. The sermon which he preached at Leith before the Regent and nobility, and afterwards published, is a proof of this, and had it not been a *sermon*, would most probably have been republished before this time as a specimen of good Scottish composition. Extracts from it may be seen in the following note. John Davidson, then one of the regents at St. Andrew's, celebrated the success of the author in refining his vernacular language in the following Latin lines, which are prefixed to the sermon:

Graecia melifluo quantum det Nestoris ori,
Aut Demostheneo debeat eloquio;
Ipsi facundo quantum (mihi crede) parenti
Attribuat linguae turba togata suae;
Nos tibi, Fergusi, tantum debere fatemur,
Scotanam linguam qui reparare studes,

Sermonem patriam ditas; inculta vetustas
Horret qua longe barbariemque fugas;
Adde etiam, neque abest facundis gratia dictis,
Respondet verbis materia apta tuis.
Quod satis ostendit nobis tua concio praesens,
Qua nihil in lucem doctus ire potest.

Besides this sermon, Ferguson was the author of a collection of *Scottish Proverbs*, and of an *Answer* to the Rejoinder which the Jesuit Tyrie made to Knox. That abusive writer, James Laing, calls this last work "a barbarous and Scotican epistle," and rails against its author as an *ignorant sutor* and *glover*, who knew neither Hebrew, nor Greek, nor Latin. As for himself, although a Scotsman, he tells us, that he thought it beneath him to write in a language which was fit only for barbarians and heretics. "Tres sunt linguae elegantes et ingenuae, Hebraica, Graeca, et Latina, quae nobilibus principibus—sunt dignae: cæteras linguas, cum sint barbaræ, barbaris et hæreticis tanquam propriis relinquo." De Vita, &c. Hæreticorum, Dedic. p. ult. et p. 31. Notwithstanding this writer's boasting concerning his literature, and the opportunities which he takes to display it, if we may judge from his book, he did not know the top from the bottom of a Hebrew letter, p. 94. b. Laing's objection to the literature of Ferguson may, however, be thought as solid as that which another Popish writer has brought against his morals, by accusing

him of *using pepper instead of salt to his beef*. "At hi quibus carnem accendunt, irritantq. novas artes quotidie excogitant." And on the margin, "Exemplo est David Ferguson ad macerandas carnes Bubulas pipere pro sale utens." Hamilton, *De Confus. Calvinianæ Sectæ*, p. 76. But to do justice to Hamilton, it is proper to mention that *pepper* was at that time so high priced as to be a morsel only for a Pope, or a Cardinal, and very unfit for the mouths of barbers, cobblers, &c. of which rank he tells us the Reformed preachers generally were. Principal Smeton, after saying that Ferguson had reared a numerous family on a very moderate stipend, adds:—"Undenam ergo illi, amabo te, tantum piperis ad carnes quotannis macerandas, quantum *sexcentis* apud nos *aureis nummis* nemo unquam comparavit?" The truth is, there was rather too much salt and pepper in the writings of Ferguson for the Papists. His son-in-law, John Row, has recorded a number of Ferguson's witty sayings, and, among others, some of his repartees to James VI. who resided frequently at Dunfermline, and used to take great delight in his conversation. "David," said James to him one day, "why may not I have bishops in Scotland as well as they have in England?"—"Yea, Sir," replied Ferguson, "ye may have bishops here; but remember ye must make us all bishops, else will ye never content us. For if ye set up ten or twelve lowns over honest men's heads, (honest men will not have your antichristian prelacies,) and give them more thousands to debauch and mispend than honest men have hundreds or scores, we wil never al be content. We ar Paul's bishopis, Sir, Christ's bishopis; ha'd us as we are."—"The d—l haid aills you," replied James, "but that ye would all be alike; ye cannot abide ony to be abone you."—"Sir!" said the minister, "do not ban." Row's *Coronis to his Historie of the Kirk*, p. 314. Ferguson seems to have amused himself with some of those incidents which were generally reckoned ominous. The King having once asked him, very seriously, what he thought was the reason that the Master of Gray's house shook during the night, he answered, "Why should not the devil rock his awin bairns?" Having met at St. Andrew's along with other Commissioners of the Church, to protest against the inauguration of Patrick Adamson as Archbishop of that See, one came in and told them, that there was a crow "crouping" on the roof of the Church. "That's a bad omen," said he, shaking his head, "for inauguration is from *avium garritu*, the raven is omnimodo a black bird, and it cries *corrupt, corrupt, corrupt*." Row's *Historie*, p. 40.

NOTE D. p. 189.—In a letter, dated 28th August, 1559, Knox requests Calvin's opinion on the two following questions. 1. Whether bastards, the children of idolaters and excommunicated persons, should be admitted to baptism, before their parents gave satisfaction to the church, or they themselves were able to require it? 2. Whether monks and Popish priests, who neither serve the church, nor are capable of serving it, although they have renounced their errors, ought to have the annual rents of the church paid to them? Knox had maintained the negative on the last question. The latter is said to be written *raptim*. "Plura scribere vetant febris qua crucior, laborum moles qua premor, et Gallorum bombardæ, qui, ut nos opprimant, appulerunt." *Comp. Historie*, p. 161. Calvin, in a letter, dated Nov. 8, 1559, answers, that it was his opinion and that of his colleagues, on the first question, That the sacrament of baptism was not to be administered to those who were without the church, nor to any without proper sponsors; but the promise (upon which the right was founded) was not confined to the posterity in the first degree: therefore, those who were descended from godly parents were to be viewed as belonging to the church, although their parents or even grand-parents had become apostates, and such children were not to be refused baptism, provided persons appeared as sponsors, engaging for their religious education. "Adde quod alia est nunc renascentis ecclesiæ ratio, quam rite formatæ et compositiæ." *Comp. Dunlop*, ii. 573. On the second question, he says, that although those who performed no service in the church had not a just claim to be supported by its funds; still, as the Popish clergy had brought themselves under bonds in times of ignorance, and had consumed a part of their lives in idleness, it seemed harsh to deprive them of all support. He therefore advises a middle course to be adopted. *Calvini Epistolæ et Responsa*, p. 516-520. *Hanovix*, 1597. *Ibid.* p. 201, 202. *apud Oper. tom. ix. Amstælod.* 1667.

From another letter of Calvin to Knox, dated April 23, 1561, it appears that the Genevan Reformer had been consulted by our countrymen on some other points on which they were difficulted; most probably on those questions on which the nobility and the ministers differed. He wrote them accordingly,

but soon after was applied to a second time for his opinion on the same subject, as his first letter had miscarried. Knowing that his judgment was not altogether agreeable to some of them, he suspected that they wished to draw from him an answer more favourable to their own sentiments, and expressed his dissatisfaction at such conduct. Knox, who appears to have been employed in the correspondence, was grieved at this suspicion, and had purged himself from the imputation. Calvin in this letter apologizes for his severity, and assures him that he never entertained any suspicion of his integrity. "Te vero dolose quicquam egisse, neque dixi, neque suspicatus sum.—Ac mihi dolet, quod exciderat ex ore meo, sic in animum tuum penetrasse, ut putares mala fidei aut astutiæ, a qua te remotum esse judico, fuisse insimulatum. Facessat igitur metus ille vel cura." In both letters, Calvin signifies his high satisfaction at the wonderful success of the Reformation in Scotland. The conclusion of the last is expressive of the unaffected piety of the writer, and his warm regard for his correspondent. "Hic versamur inter multa discrimina. Una tantum cœlestis præsidii fiducia nos a trepidatione eximit: quamvis non simus metu vacui. Vale, eximie vir, et ex animo colende frater. Dominus tibi semper adsit, te gubernet, tueatur, ac sustentet sua virtute." Ut supra, p. 564-566. et in alter. edit. p. 150.

These are the only parts of the correspondence between Calvin and our Reformer which have been published; but Mons. Senebier, the librarian of Geneva, has informed us that there are a number of Knox's letters to Calvin preserved in the public library of that city. *Histoire Litteraire de Geneve*, tom. i. p. 380. During his residence at Geneva, Knox became acquainted with Beza, who then acted as professor of Greek in the neighbouring city of Lausanne, from which he was translated to Geneva, upon the erection of the university there, the same year in which our Reformer returned to Scotland. An epistolary correspondence was afterwards maintained between them. Two letters of Beza to Knox, the one dated June 3, 1569, the other April 12, 1572, are inserted in *Epistol. Theolog. Bezæ*, p. 333-336, 344-346, of the first edition; and p. 304-307, 314-316, of the second edition, Geneva, 1575. Both of them evince the writer's ardent regard for our Reformer, and his high opinion of our Reformation. The first letter is inscribed "To John Knox, *the Restorer of the Gospel of God in Scotland*," and begins with these words:—"Gratiam et pacem tibi, mi frater, omnibusque vestris sanctis ecclesiis opto a Deo et Patre Domini nostri Jesu Christi, cui etiam gratias ago assidue, tum de tanta ipsius in vos beneficentia, tum de vestra singulari in asserendo ipsius cultu constantia et animi fortitudine. Euge mi frater, quam recte illud quod disciplinam simul cum doctrina conjungitis? obsecro et obtestor ut ita pergatis, ne vobis idem quod tam multis eveniat, ut quia in limine impegerunt, progredi non possint, imo etiam interdum ne velint quidem, quod longe miserrimum est." The second letter, which behoved to be received by Knox only a few months before his death, could not fail to be gratifying to him, even although he had then taken a formal farewell of the world. It is addressed "To his dearest Brother and Colleague," and begins in the following lofty strain of affection: "Etsi tanto terrarum et maris ipsius intervallo disjuncti corporibus sumus, mi Cnoxe, tamen minime dubito quin inter nos semper viguerit, et ad extremum vigeat, summa illa animorum conjunctio, unius ejusdemque spiritus fideique vinculo sancita."

NOTE E. p. 192.—"Les Papistes (says Bayle, in a Treatise in which he pleads for toleration on a very extensive basis), Les Papistes eux-mêmes sont les premiers en ce pais-ci, à crier qu'il n'y a rien de plus injuste que de vexer la conscience. Pensée ridicule en leur bouche! et non seulement ridicule, mais traîtresse," &c. *i. e.* The Papists themselves are the first in this country [Britain] to exclaim that there is nothing more unjust than to distress conscience. A sentiment ridiculous in their mouth! and not only ridiculous, but treacherous; and marked with that dishonesty which they have uniformly discovered for so many ages. For they would not fail, in three years, to burn and butcher all who refused to go to mass, if they acquired the power, and could avail themselves of the baseness of a sufficient number of court parasites, men of venal souls, and unworthy of the Protestant name which they bear, to overturn the fundamental barriers which so salutarily restrain the royal power. *Commentaire Philosophique*, Pref. p. xiii. xiv. Anno, 1686.

The following passage is now become so antiquated and unintelligible, that I shall not risk my credit by venturing to translate it. "Les malheurs qui sont arrivez à nos frères de France, tourneront, comme il y a apparence, à notre

profit. Il nous ont remis dans la nécessaire défiance du Papisme, ils nous ont fait voir que cette fausse religion ne s'amende pas par le long âge, qu'elle est toujours, comme au tems jadis, animée de l'esprit de fourbe et de cruauté, et que malgré la politesse, l'honnêteté, la civilité, qui regne dans les manières de ce siècle plus qu'en aucun autre, elle est toujours brutale et farouche. Chose étrange ! tout ce qu'il y avoit de grossier dans les mœurs de nos ancêtres s'est évanoui ; à cet air rustique et sauvage des vieux tems, a succédé par toute l'Europe Chrétienne une douceur et une civilité extrême. Il n'y a que le Papisme qui ne se sent point du changement, et qui retient toujours son ancienne et habituelle ferocité. Nous nous imaginions nous autres [entre ?] Anglois, que c'étoit une bête apprivoisée, un loup et un tigre qui avoit oublié son naturel sauvage ; mais Dieu merci aux Convertisseurs de France nous sommes desabusez, et nous savons à qui nous aurions à faire si notre sort étoit entre leurs mains. Pesons bien cela et considérons quel malheur nous pendroit sur la tête, si nous laissions croître le Papisme dans ce bien heureux climats. Je ne veux pas que cela nous porte à faire aucunes représailles sur les papistes ; non, je deteste ces imitations ; je souhaite seulement qu'ils n'acquiescent pas la force d'exécuter sur nous ce qu'ils savent faire." Ut supra, xv. xviii. xix.

NOTE F. p. 196.—The following extract from a letter of Throckmorton's to Queen Elizabeth, dated 13th July, 1561, Paris, and preserved in the French Correspondence of the State Paper Office, evinces the strong aversion which the young Queen of Scots had conceived against the Reformer, previous to her arrival in her dominions.

"The said Queen's (Scotland) determination to go home continues still ; she goeth shortly from the Court to Fescamp, in Normandy, there to make her mother's funerals and burial, and from thence to Calais, there to embark. * * The late unquietness in Scotland hath disquieted her very much, and yet stayeth not her journey. The 5th of this present, the Earl of Bothwell arrived here in post. * * I understand that the Queen of Scotland, is thoroughly persuaded that the most dangerous man in all her realm of Scotland, both to her entent there, and the dissolving of the league between your Maj : and that realm, is Knokes. And therefore is fully determined to use all the means she can devise, to banish him thence, or else to assure them that she will never dwell in that country as long as he is there, and to make him the more odious to your Maj : and that at your hands he receive neither courage nor comfort ; she mindeth to send very shortly to your Maj : (if she have not already done it) to lay before you the book that he hath written against the Government of women, (which your Maj : hath seen already) thinking thereby to animate your Maj : against him, but whatsoever the said Queen shall insinuate your Maj : of him, I take him to be as much for your Maj : purpose, and that he hath done, and doth daily, as good service for the advancement of your Maj : desire in that country, and to establish a mutual benevolence, and common quiet between the two realms, as any man of that nation ; his doings wherein, together with his zeal well known, have sufficiently recompensed his faults in writing that book, and therefore (he) is not to be driven out of that realm."—Tytler's Hist. of Scotland, vol. vi. p. 467, 468.

NOTE G. p. 206.—The following extracts from the Records of the Town Council of Edinburgh, shew the attention which they paid to the support and accommodation of their minister.

May 8. 1560. The provost, baillies, and council ordain the treasurer to pay the sum of £40 Scots for furnishing of the minister John Knox in his household, and because he had been furnished on David Forrester's expenses since his coming to this town, for the space of fifteen days, ordains to receive David's accompts, and make payment.—"Penultimo Octobris 1560. The quhilk day, the provost, baillies, and counsaill ordanis James Barroun to pay to John Knox the soume of sax scoir pounds of the reddiest money of the solmes being in his hands, and sicklyk the soume of £20."—This last sum seems to have been allotted for repairs on his house.—"12th Dec. 1560. The provost, baillies, and counsaill ordanis James Barroun (Dean of Guild of last year) to pay and deliver to Johne Knox, minister, the soume of fiftie pound for supporting of his charges, and that incontinent after the sight heirof, and gif it beis funden that the said James be superexpendit, after the making of his accompt, precepts shall be given in maist strait forme, commanding the treasurer to mak him gud and thankfull payment of his haill superexpensis, within aught days nixt thairafter." From the minutes of Dec. 22, 1560. April 5,

and May 28, 1561, it appears that his fixed stipend was £200 a-year; for £ 50 is ordered, each time, for his "quarter payment" or "dues." Dec. 14, 1560, it was agreed that his house rent should afterwards be paid "at the rate of fifteen merks a year."

"Penultimo Octobris (1561.) The samine day the provost, bailies, and counsail ordanis the Dene of Gyld, with all diligence, to mak ane warme stuy-dye of dailles to the minister, Johne Knox, within his hous, abone the hall of the same, with lyht and wyndokis thereunto, and all uther necessaris: and the expenciss disbursitt be him salbe allowit to him in his accomptis."—"January 1561. (*i.e.* 1562.) the provost, baillies, and counsale, understanding that the minister, Johne Knox, is requyrit be the hale kirk to passe in the partis of Anguss and Mearnys, for electing of ane superintendent thare, to the quhilk they themselves has grantit, thairfoir ordains Alexander Guthrie, Dene of Gild, to pass in companie with him for furnishing of the said ministeris charges, and to deburse and pay the same of the readeast of the townis gudis in his handis, quhilk salbe allowit in his accomptis: And further haist the said minister hame, that the kirk hear be not desolait."

To these extracts respecting Knox, I may add one from the same records respecting Willock, who officiated in his place as minister of Edinburgh, during the civil war. "29 August 1560. The counsail ordains their treasurer to deliver to John Willock twenty-two crownes of the sone for recompense of the great traveill sustenit be him this hail yiere bygane, in preching and administring the sacramentis within this burgh, and ordanis ane member of the counsall to thank him for his greit benevolence, and for the greit travaill forsaid" Previous to this they had remunerated John Cairns, with whom that minister had lodged.

"In the text I have mentioned, that, after the arrangement made by the Privy Council respecting the thirds of benefices, Knox seems to have received his stipend from the common fund. The extracts which Keith has given from the books of assignation, mention only two allowances made to him. "To John Knox, minister, Wheat 2 c[halders], bear 6 c. meal o. oats 4 c." Whether this was for the year 1563, or not, Keith does not say. He adds in a note, "For the year 1568, I see £333. 6s. 8d. given to Mr Knox." History, App. 188. His stipend at the time of his death has been mentioned above, p. 326. Keith has inserted, from the same books, the prices of the principal articles of living at that time, from which an idea of the value of money may be formed. Ibid. 189. The following are a specimen. In Fyfe, Lothian, Merse and Teviotdale, for 1573, wheat L.26. 13s. 4d. the chalder; bear, L.21. 6s. 8d.; meal, L.16. oats, 20 merks. Or, according to another account, without expressing any county, wheat L.1. the boll; bear, L.1. 13s. 4d.; meal the same; oats, 10s.; malt, L.2; rye, and pease and beans, the same; mairts of Aberdeen, L.2. 13s. 4d. the piece; sheep, 9s.; poultry, 4s. the dozen; geese, 1s. the piece; cheese 6s. 8d. the stone.

NOTE H. p. 210.—"10th April, 1562.—The same day the counsale understanding the tedious and havie labours sufferit be the minister, Jhone Knox, in preiching thrise in the oulk, and twise on the Sounday, ordains, with ane consent, to solist and persuade Maister Jhone Craig, presentlie minister of the Canongait, to accept upoun him the half chargis of the preaching of the said kirk of Edinburgh, for sic gud deid as thai can aggre on."—That this measure was not carried into effect for some time after, appears from the following act of Council:—"18th June, 1563.—After lang reasoning upon the necessities of ministers, finds that there salbe ane uther minister elected be the provost, baillies, and counsale, dekynes, and elderis of this burgh, and addit to Johne Knox, minister." From the same act and subsequent measures, it is evident that the want of necessary funds was the cause of the delay. For the council resolved, that "for susteaning of thame baith, togidder with Jhone Cairns reider," the deacons should meet with the trades, and the merchants, to see what they would be willing to give. The reports made to the council did bear, that if they would fix a particular stipend, the trades were willing to pay a *fifth* of it, according to old custom. But although Craig had not been translated from the Canongate, he seems to have performed a part of the duty in Edinburgh; for, in the same month, I find the council appointing a number of persons "to go amang the faithfull who had communicate," and make a collection for "Johne Craig and Jhone Cairns, who had received nothing for a lang time." This expedient they were obliged afterwards to repeat. On the 26th September, 1561, the council had agreed to give "to John Cairns, lector of moirning prayeris, 100 merks a-year, in tyme to cum." Records of

Town Council. A more particular account of Craig will be found in Note B. Period Eighth.

NOTE I. p. 212.—Very different and opposite accounts have been given of the book usually called *Archbishop Hamilton's Catechism*. The following is drawn up from the Catechism itself, compared with the canon of the council which authorized it. The title is as follows: "*The Catechisme*, That is to say, ane cōmone and Catholick instructioun of the christin people in materis of our Catholick faith and religioun, quhilk na gud christin man or woman suld misknaw; set furth be ye maist reuerend father in God Johne, Archbischope of Sanct Androus, Legatnait and primat of ye kirk of Scotland, in his prouincial counsale haldin at Edinburgh the xxvi. day of Januarie, the zeir of our Lord 1551, with the aduise and counsale of the bischoippis and other prelatiis, with doctours of Theologie and Canon law of the said realme of Scotland present for the tyme.—S. Aug. libro 4. de trinitate, cap. 6, &c. Prentit at Sanct Androus, be the command and expēsis of the maist reuerend father in God Johne, Archbischope of sanct Androus, and primat of ye haill kirk of Scotland, the xxix. day of August, the zeir of our Lord M.D. lii." It does not appear by whom it was composed, but we may readily conclude that it was by some person or persons who had more knowledge of theology than there is any reason to think the Archbishop had, and who had more leisure than him to write a book consisting of 412 pages quarto. It was laid before the provincial council, which met at Edinburgh in January 155½, and was adopted and approved by them. The care of printing it was committed to the Archbishop, to whom it properly belonged, as metropolitan, to set it forth; and the colophon at the end of the work informs us, that it was printed by his "command and expensis," "the XXIX. day of August, the yeir of our Lord MD.LII." Spotswood (p. 92.) has confounded it with a treatise, called by the people *The Twa-Penny Faith*, which Knox informs us was set forth by the provincial council which was sitting when he returned to Scotland in 1559. *Historie*, p. 109, 110. The Archbishop's Epistle to "Personis, Vicars, and Curattis," prefixed to the Catechism, informs us of its design and use. "First to your awin instruction.—Secondly, According to the decreit maid in our provincial counsale, our will is that ye reid the samyn Catechisme diligently, distinctly, and plainly, ilk ane of yow, to your awn parochianaris, for thair common instructioun and spiritual edificatioun in the word of God, necessarie of thame to be knawin." The canon provides that it be read, "omnibus dominicis et festivis," which is thus explained in the close of the Archbishop's Epistle: "Everilk Sondag and principal halydaie, quhen yair cummis na precheour to thame to schaw thame the word of God, to have yis Catechisme usit and reid to thame instead of preching, quhil [until] God of his gudnes provide ane sufficient nowmer of catholyk and abil precheouris, quhilk sal be withen few yeiris as we traist in God." The clergy were aroused from their lethargy and indolence, be the preaching of the Protestants and the complaints of the people. But those whose province it was to preach were found generally incapable of performing the task. This book was therefore provided for them, that they might read it to the people instead of a sermon.

As it is intituled a Catechism, was printed in the vulgar language, is said to be designed for the instruction of the people, and no prohibition of its use is mentioned in the book itself, we might be apt to conclude, that it was intended to be circulated among the people, and promiscuously read. But this was very far from being the design of those who approved and set it forth. On the contrary, the canon of the Council expressly provides, "That all the copies not required for the use of the clergy be kept in safe custody (*firma custodia*) by the Archbishop," that he might distribute them, "prout tempus et necessitas postulaverint." The clergy are charged not to communicate their copies to secular persons, except with the allowance of their ordinaries (the bishops,) who were permitted to give copies to certain honest, grave, faithful, and discreet laics, especially such as seemed to desire them for the sake of instruction rather than out of curiosity. "Caveant vero ipsi rectores, vicarii, et curati, ne sua exemplaria secularibus quibuscunque indiscrete communicent, nisi ex judicio, consilio, et discretione sui ordinarii; quibus ordinariis licebit nonnullis probis, gravibus, bonæ fidei, ac discretis viris laicis, ejusdem catechismi exemplaria communicari, et iis potissimum, qui videbuntur potius suæ instructionis causa, quam curiositatis cujuscunque, eadem expetere." Wilkins, *Concilia*, IV. 72. and Lord Hailes, *Provincial Councils*, p. 36. Lord Hailes had therefore reason for saying (in opposition to Mackenzie's tale of the Archbishop allowing "the pedlars to take two pennies for

their pains in hawking it abroad") that the Council "uses as many precautions to prevent it from coming into the hands of the laity, as if it had been a book replete with the most pestilent heresy." It would have been imprudent to insert the prohibition in the book itself, copies of which, notwithstanding all their caution, would come into the hands of improper persons; but the canon of the Council remained the rule for regulating the clergy in the use of it. Nor is there any thing in the catechism which is inconsistent with the canon, or which implies that it was to come into the hands of the people. It is all along supposed that they were to be instructed by *hearing*, not by *reading* it. This is particularly evident from the concluding address. "O christin pepil, we exhort yow with all diligence, *heir*, understand, and keip in your remembrance, the halie wordis of God, quhilk in this present catechisme ar trewly and catholykly exponit to your spiritual edification." And again, "Gif ye persais be frequent *heiring* heirof your self spiritually instructed mair than ye haif bein in tymes bygane, geve the thankis thairof only to God." Fol. ccvi. If any of the hearers moved any controversy about its contents, he was to be delivered up to the *Inquisitors*. Wilkins, ut supra, p. 73.

Lord Hailes has animadverted on Keith for saying that the author of the catechism shews "his wisdom and moderation, in *handsomely eviting* to enter upon the controverted points," and he has given extracts from it asserting the doctrine of transubstantiation, the propriety of withholding the cup from the laity, and of prayers to the saints. Provincial Councils, ut supra, p. 35, 36. The use of images in worship, purgatory, prayers for the dead, the removal of original sin by baptism, the sinlessness of concupiscence after baptism, the mystical signification of the ceremonies practised in that ordinance, the exorcism, or blowing upon the child at the church door, and making the sign of the cross on its brow and breast, putting salt into its mouth, anointing its nostrils and ears with spittle, and its breast and back with oil, with the application of chrism to the forehead, the clothing of it with the cude or white linen cloth, and putting a lighted torch or candle into its hand; these, with other doctrines and ceremonies of the Popish Church, are all stated and vindicated. At the same time, while the opinions peculiar to Popery are stated and defended, there is an evident design of turning away the attention of the people from these controversies, as to which they are often reminded of their duty to "belief as the haly Catholic kirk belieffis," and a great part of the book is occupied in declaring duties and general doctrines about which there was no question. Considerable art is also used by introducing some of the most exceptionable articles of Popery under the cover of unquestionable truths. Thus under the question, "Quhat thing suld move us to belief the word of God?" The first reason which is given is, "Ye eternal and infallible verite of God, fra quhom na lesing may procede, na mair than myrknes may cum fra the cleir schenand sonne." But how gradually and artfully are the people led away from the Scriptures in what follows: "The secund thing that suld move us to belief the word of God, quhilk ar the haly bukis quharin the word of God is contenit, and quhat is the true sence of the same bukis, is ye consent and authorite of our mother the haly kirk, fra the apostils tyme hitherto, and specially quhen it is lawfully gadderit be the haly spirit in ane general counsel, quharof saint Augustine sais thus: 'I wald nocht gif credence to the evangel, except that the universal kirk warnis me sa to do.' And tharfor leir thir twa lessons. The ane is, quhatsoever the haly spirit revelis and schawis to us, other in the bukis of haly Scripture, or in the determinatiouns and diffinitionis of general councilles, lawfully gadderit for the corroboracion and maintenans of our faith, we suld beleif ye same to be the trew word of God, and thairto gyf ferme credens as to the verite that is infallible. The secund lesson, ye that ar simple and unleirnit men and women suld expressly belief al the artickils of your Crede, as for al uther hie misteries and matteris of the Scripture ye aucht to belief generally as the kirk of God belieffis. And this faith is sufficient to you, for the perfectioun of that faith quhilk ye ar bund to haif." Fol. xiii. b. xv. a. A specimen of the same kind occurs on the question, How is the true sense of the Scripture to be discerned? where, after being gravely taught the usefulness of the collation of one place with another, and the connexion of the passage, the people are told that this belongs to those who have the gift called *interpretatio sermonum*, and are then devoutly set down at the feet of the doctors of the Church, and taught implicitly to receive the decisions of councils. "Quarfor, he that will nocht heir, resais, and obey the diffinitionis and determinatiouns of lauchful general counsellis concerning materis of our faith, he is nocht to be accountit a true Christin man,

according to the wordis of our salviour, ' Gif he will nocht hear the kirk, lat him be to the as ane infidele, unchristinit, and ane publican.' Thus ye haif quha is an herityk, and how he brekis the first command." Fol. xviii. b. xix.

As all who question the infallible decisions of the Church are pronounced guilty of a breach of the first commandment, the Roman Catholics are, with no less ease, exculpated from a breach of the second, by throwing in a convenient parenthesis. The reader will observe, that, according to a division of the law first countenanced by Augustine, and of which the Popish Church is extremely fond, the first and second commandments are thrown into one, and, to make up the number, the tenth is divided into two; although the compilers of the Catechism found it impracticable to keep to this last division in their explication. The following is their enunciation of the first commandment, " I am the Lord thi God, quhilk hais brocht ye fra the land of Egypt, fra the house of bondage. Thou sall haif na other goddis but me, thou sall nocht mak to thee (*as gods*) ony gravit ymage, nother ony similitude of ony thing that is in the heven above, or in the erd beneth, nor of ony thing that is in the watter under the erd. Thou sall nocht adorne yame nor worship yame (*as goddis*)." Fol. xii. a. It is fair, however, to hear the explication which the authors of the Catechism give respecting images. " Ar ymagis aganis the first command? Na, sa thai be weil usit. Quhat is the rycht use of ymagis? Imagis to be made na haly writ forbiddis, says venerabil Bede, for the sycht of thame, specially of the crucifixe, giffis greit compunction to thame quhilk behaldis it with faith in Christ, and to thame yat are unletterat, it giffis a quik remembrance of the passion of Christ. Salomon in tyme of his wisdome, nocht without the inspiration of God, made ymagis in the temple. Moyses, the excellent prophet and trew servand of God, made and ereckit a brassin ymage of a serpent, (quhilk figurit the lifyng up of our salviour Jesus Christe upon the crosse) and als be the command of God, causit mak the imagis of twa angellis callit Cherubinis, quhilk thing thir twa sa excellent men in wisdome wald nevir haif done, gif the makin of imagis war aganis the command of God. Bot utterly yis command forbiddis to mak ymagis to that effect, that thai suld be adornit and wirschippit as goddis, or with ony godly honour, ye quhilk sentence is expremitt bi thir wordis: *Non adorabis ea neq. coles.* Thou shall nocht adorne thame nor worschip thame as goddis. Now we suld nocht gif goddis honour, or Christis honour to ony ymage, bot to God allanerly, representit be ane ymage." Fol. xxiii. b.

In the explication of the fifth article of the Creed, is a particular account of the four places in hell; *infernus damnatorum, puerorum, purgandorum, et patrum.* The following proof is given of our Saviour's descent into hell, to deliver the saints who had been confined in the last mentioned place until the time of his death,— " Also the same deliverance was prophesit bi the prophet Osee: *Ero mors tua, o mors, ero morsus tuus o inferne.* O dede (sais our Salviour) *I sall be thy dede—O hel, I sal byte the.* The man yat bytes ony thing, he takis part to him, and lattis part remane behind. Sa our Salviour passand doune to hel, he fulfylitt this prophesie, takand part of saulis out fra hell with him, and leiffand part behind him. Quhom tuk he with him? bot thame that was haly and gud, quhilk was haldin thair as presonaris." Fol. cviii. Upon the whole, this Catechism has been written with great care, and the style is by no means bad. It is singular that it should have been so little noticed at that time. I have not observed that it is mentioned by any of the writers of that age, either Popish or Protestant. This might induce us to conclude that it was very little used, even in the way directed by the canon of the provincial council.

NOTE K. p. 213.—After the particular account which I have given of the preceding work, it is not necessary to add large extracts from the *Compendious Tractive* of Kennedy, Abbot of Crossraguel. Having quoted John V. 39, he says, " Marke (gude redare) the Scripture to occupy the place of ane wytnes, and not the place of ane juge." A. iiij. In a posterior part of the work, he seems disposed to qualify what he had stated respecting the church being judge of all matters of religion,— " We never say in all our lytle tractive, that the kirk is juge to the Scripture, bot yat the kirk is juge to discern quhilk is the trew Scripture of God, and to mak manifest to the congregation the trew understanding of the samyn." H. v. This explication does not mend the matter; for certainly he who has the power of calling what witnesses he pleases, and of putting what sense he pleases upon their testimony, is to all intents and purposes the judge of the witnesses, as well as the panel. The Abbot repeatedly testifies the great reluctance with which he was

compelled to prove his principles, by persons who were "swa religious and clene fyngerit, that thair wil na thyng perswade thaim without testimony of Scripture." He gives this easy advice to those whose consciences were distressed with the "barbour and commoun" sayings of the Protestants, implying that every Christian should be satisfied in his own mind as to the doctrines of Scripture. "All Christin men havand ane generale understanding of the articles of our faith (conforme to the understanding that the kirk hes teacheit ws:) the ten commandments, the prayer of the Lord callit the *Pater noster*. It suffices to thame to quhame it does not appertene of thair office nor vocatioun, to occupy the place of the prechairis or techearis in the congregation. As to the sacramentis, and all uther secretis of the Scripture, stand to the jugement of thy pasture, without curious ressoning or cersing of the secretis of Godis word, quha beiris thy burding in all materis doutsum abone thy knowlege, conforme to the saying of the apostle, 'Obey unto your superioris, &c.' And in cais they be negligent, ressave doctryne of the kirk, as the tyme teicheis ws. Be this way (quhilk is conforme to Godis word and al veritie,) it sal be asie to all men, quhat place or estait in the congregatioun that ever he occupy, to beir his awin burding." *Ane Compendius Tractive*, &c. D. vii.

Another work of Kennedy has lately been printed, from a MS. in the Auchinleck library, under the following title:—"Ane oratioune in fauouris of all thais of the Congregatione, exhortand thaim to aspy how wonderfullie thai ar abusit be thair dissaitful prechouris, set furth be master Quintine Kennedy, Commendatour of Corsraguell, ye zeir of Gode 1561. Edinburgh, 1612. Perhaps this oration was printed in the year mentioned in the title, although no copy is now to be found, and was one of "his books," referred to by the Abbot in his dispute with Knox. I have already given extracts from this book, p. 352, 367. It concludes in the following manner:—"Quharfor, with all my hart exhortis, prays, and but mercie appellis thar pestilent precheouris," [on the margin, "Knox, Willock, Winrame, Gudmane, Dowglasse, Heriot, Spottiswoode, and all the rest,"] "puffit up with vane glore, quhilkis rackinnis thaimselfis of gretar knowlege nor Christis haill kirk, cum-and but autoritie, subuertand, subornande, and circumuenande the simple peple, cersande, thair pray like the deuillis rachis, barkand bauldly like bardis, aganis the blissit sacrament of the altare, the sacrifice of the mess, and all vther godlie ordinance of Jhesus Christ and his kirk, to priess their wittis and inginis, and to streik all their pennis in my contrar, makande the congregatioun and all vtheris to vnderstande, gif I do propirly, truely, and godly, or nocht, invey aganis thair deuillische doctrine and doyingis. Failye-ande thairof, recant, for schame, recant (ye famouse precheouris) and cum in obedience to the kirk of God, quhilk ye haue stubbornlie misknawin this lang tyme bypast, (and that nocht without grete dangere to your avne saulis and mony vtheris,) thairfor recant, in tyme, recant, as ye lufe your saluation, aud cry God mercie: To quham, with the Sone and Haly Gaist, be prayse, honour, and glore, for ever ande ever, Amen.

I mentioned it is probable that the book which George Hay published on the sacrament of the Supper was an answer to Kennedy's treatise on that subject. That it was so, appears from Ames, *Typographical Antiquities*, vol. iii. p. 1487. There is in the library of Alexander Boswell, Esq. of Auchinleck, a MS. by the Abbot, entitled, "Ane familiar commune, and ressoning anent the misterie of the sacrifice of the mess, betwixt twa brether, master Quintin Kennedy, commendator of Corsraguell, and James Kennedy of . . . In the yeir of God ane thousand, five hundred, three scoir ane yeir." It was answered by George Hay, in a work entitled, "The Confutation of the Abbote of Crosraguels Masse, set furth be Maister George Hay. Imprinted at Edinburgh by Robert Lekpreuik, 1563." The dedication is inscribed, "To the most noble, potent, and godlie Lord James Earle of Murray."

The following passage will serve as a specimen of Hay's style:—"Trew it is, that before this boke of the abbote of Crosraguel's wes set furth and published, sindrie and diuerse were the opinions of men concerning it. For the sorte of them that he cōmonly tearmed Papistes, aduersaries to all trew religion, thought in verie deid that they should receaue such a comfort, yea, such a gun as no munition myght withstand, no strengthe resiste, nether yet any maner of force repel. They were encuraged by the brute and fame of the man, who onely wolde appeare in these tymes to haue dexteritie of ingyne, helped and auanced by long progress of tyme spent in good letters, yea, ad besyde the Scriptures of God, will also appeare to haue the conference, judgment, and autoritie of the ancient Fathers and councils, which it may seme to the

reader that he feadeth (not unlyke the nyne Muses) in his bosome. I my self hauing hade some tymes credit and acquaintance of the man, loked for some what that might haue troubled the cōsciēces of waiklinges, and of such as stayed them selues vpon a glistering and semely ymagination of mans heart, rather then upon the written and reueiled treuth, by the spirite of God. For it wes not vnknawen to me how familiare he hath bene with the scolastike sophisters, their thornie questions, and scabrus conclusions, yea and some of the ancient doctors, whose writinges, what by ignorance of tyme seduced, what by affection carryed away, I thought wel he should wreist to his vngodly opinion." Fol. 3. a. Having pointed out a false quotation, which the abbot had made from Chrysostom, Hay adds, "Hereby it is sasy to perceauē how vainely ye ascribe such reading of the ancientes vnto your self, as in your writinges ye take vpon you, that you will seme in the eyes of the people, to be the onely he in this realme versed in antiquitie. And now to say my judgment frely, I truste ye haue no workes of such men as ye draw your authorities out of, but onely hath, I can not tell what lytle scabbed treaties of Eccius, Cochleuc, Hosius, Stanislaus youre new start up Campion, and of such others of your factiō, and taketh out of them, such thinges as ye think may serue to your wicked and blasphemus purpose. What credite now, or what authoritie ought to be given to such places, as thou draweth out of the doctors, who belyke neuer hath sene there workes, nether yet knoweth to what purpose they speak, if they speak of their owne mynde, or of their aduersaries, whither they speak by an interrogation or conclusiue, and determinatly, whither they speak *ὑπερβολικως*,* that is excessiue, to extoll the dignitie of the mater they haue in hand (which is not rare in this author) or simplie. Thus the text it self is to be considered, that it that preceadeth being conferred with it that followeth, the mynde and sentence of the author may be knowen perfytlye. Not that I will hereby damne yong men, who, ether excluded by tyme or els lacking bookes, muste giue credite to good authorities, but in this man who will seme to be an other Anacharses inter sordidos Scythas, it is intollerable, who is sequestrate frome the common societie of men, and trauell in the common wealth, hauing not else to do, but that he hath inioyned to himself, that is to ly by a pleasing bray, and cast in stones to trouble the faire and cleare rinning watter." Fol. 18. b. 19. a.

NOTE L. p. 220.—In the prologue to the Reasoning betwix Jo. Knox and the Abbote of Crossraguell, Knox adverts to the cavils of the Papists against the validity of the call of the Reformed ministers, and intimates his intention of returning an answer to the questions on this head which had been proposed to him by Ninian Winget, *the Procutor for the Papists*. There are some general remarks on this subject in his answer to Tyrie's Letter, but I do not think that he ever published any thing professedly on the point. There is a ridiculous tale told by a Popish writer, concerning a pretended convention among the Reformed ministers in Scotland, to determine in what manner they should proceed in the admission of ministers. Willock proposed as a weighty difficulty, that if they used imposition of hands, or any other ceremony usually practised in the church, they would be asked to shew that they themselves had been admitted by the same ceremonies, and thus the lawfulness of their vocation would be called in question. "Johann kmnox ansuerit maist resolutelie, *Buf, buf, man, we ar anes entered, let se quha dar put us out agane*; meaning that thair was not sa monie gunnis and pistollis in the countrie to put him out as was to intrud him with violence. Sua Johann kmnox, to his awin confusion, entered not in the kirk be ordinar vocatione or imposition of handis, but be imposition of *bullatis and pouldir in culringis and lang gunnis*; sua ye mister not to troubil you farder in seiking out of Johann kmnox vocatione."—This story "I understude (says the author) of ane nobil and honorabil man, quha can yit beir witnes gif I lea or not." But he takes care not to give the name of the nobleman. Nicol Burne's Disputation, p. 129. Parise, 1581.

NOTE M. p. 221.—The dealings of the kirk with Paul Methven, are recorded at length in the proceedings of the Eleventh General Assembly, held at Edinburgh in June 1566. "Anent the supplication given in be Paull Methven, makand a long rehearsall of his miserable estate, the supplication presented in his name to the Generall Assembly holden in Edinburgh in December 1564, of the estate of the answers thereto frome the said Assembly, of his

* The Greek word is inserted with a pen.

long and tedious journey out of England to Scotland, and impediments that chanced him in the way; finally requests for ane of thir two, That is, either to suspend excommunication of the Kirk for ane tyme, and receave him in the fellowship of the same as ane poor sheep, upon ane condition, wherever he chances to be, upon half ane year's warning, he shall be bound to returne againe at command of the Kirk, and obey sic injunctions as they would command him to doe; or if the Kirk pleased not this petition, then to committ his answer to such as the Kirk should appoint, who's judgment and determination (as his body might bear) he promised be God's grace to obey; Finally, all counsell that have followed heretofore, and himself most humbly, he submitted to the judgement of the present Assembly; as in the said supplication at length was contained: Last of all, it was ordained that he present himself personally before the Assembly; and being entered, prostrate himself before the haill brethren with weeping and howling, and commanded to ryse, might not expresse farther his request, being, as appeared, so farr troubled with anguish of heart, was desyred to be of good comfort, and to depart to his lodgeing whill order were taken anent his request. And forsuameikle as in the said Assembly holden in Edinburgh in December 1564, it was concluded to receave him to repentance, now rested to conclude upon the manner thereof that he should doe when and where; and for that purpose was appointed the Superintendant of Fyfe, Mr. John Dowglass, rector of St. Andrew's, David Forrest, Mr. Hugh Hay, minister of Ruthven, Mr. John Craig, minister of Edinburgh, John Row of St. Johnstone, William Christisone of Dundie, and Adam Herriot of Aberdeene, ministers, that they, seven or sex of them, should conveene the morrow, at seven houres before noone, and take order in the premises; and whatsomever the doe hereanent, to signifie the same to the Superintendant of Lowthiane and Session of the Kirk of Edinburgh, deliver the said ordinance to the Scribe of the Generall Assembly, that he may insert the same among uther acts of Generall Assembly for ane remembrance to the posteritie.

"The Commissioners appointed be the Generall Assembly for ordering of Paull Methwen his repentance, In consideration of the said Paul's lamentable supplication to the kirk, humble submission of himselfe to the same, and his absence out of this realme the space of two yeares or more, Ordaines the minister of Edinburgh, that he, upon ane Sondag after sermone, notifie unto the people the said Paull his supplicatione, and how the Generall Assembly hes ordained to receive him to repentance, with the conditions underwritten; and therefore to admonishe all faithfull brethren that they, within the nixt eight dayes, notifie the said minister of Edinburgh, if any of them hes any knowledge, or are fully informed of the said Paull his conversation and behaviour since his departure furth of this realme, whilk might impeded his receaving to repentance, whilk shall be on this manner, viz. The said Paull, upon the said two preaching dayes, betwixt the Sondages, shall come to the kirk doore of Edinburgh, when the second bell ringeth, clad in sackcloth, bareheaded and barefooted, and there remaine whill he be brought into the sermone, and planted in the publick spectacle above the people, in tyme of every sermone during the said two dayes; and on the next Sondag thereafter, shall compear in like manner, and in the end of the sermone, shall declare signes of his inward repentance to the people, humbly requireing that kirk's forgiveness: quhilk done, he shall be clad in his own apparell, and received in the societie of the kirk, as ane lyvely member thereof, and this same order to be observed in Dundie and Jedburgh, allwayes secluding him from any function of the ministrie in the kirk, and also from participation of the table of the Lord, unto the 25th of December next to come, when the Generall Assemblie of the Kirk conveens, into the whilk they ordain the said Paull to resort, bring-and with him sufficient testimoniall from authentick persons, of these places where he in the meanetyme shall chance to remaine, reportand his conversatione and behaviour; at the whilk tyme the kirk shall take further order what shall be done anent him." Booke of the Univ. Kirk, Peterkin's Edit. p. 44-46.

This form of satisfaction was appointed for all who had been excommunicated for murder, adultery, incest, or other aggravated crimes. The murderer was to bear in his hand "the same or lyke weapoun whairwith the murder was committit." Buik of the Univ. Kirk, p. 38. The other rules observed in cases of discipline may be seen in Knox's Liturgy, p. 55-67. edition 1611. and in Dunlop's Confessions, ii. 704-756. Impartiality, as well as severity, distinguished the discipline of these times. "*Gryt* men offending in sick crymes as deserves secklaith, they suld receave the same als weill as the *pure*. Na superintendant nor commissioner, with advyce of any particular kirk of

yair jurisdiction, may dispense with the extremitie of sackloth, prescrivit be the actes of the generall discipline, for any pecuniall sum or paine ad pios usus." Ibid. ad August, 1573. Dunlop, ii. 753. This was not a mere theoretic proposition. For in 1563 we find the Lord Treasurer making public satisfaction (Keith, 245, 529); in 1567, the Countess of Argyle (Buik of the Univ. Kirk, p. 37.); and in 1568 the Bishop of Orkney (Anderson's Collections, ii. 284.) The offence of the Countess is thus stated in the Assembly's proceedings, Sess. 5. Dec. 1567: "Anent the complaint give in against my Lady Argyle, declaring how sche once being at the table of the Lord Jesus, and professing his Evangell, had revolted therefrae, in giving her assistance and presence to the baptizing of the King in ane papisticall manner. The said lady being present, grantit that she had offended to the eternall God, and been ane sclander to the Kirk in committing the premises; and therefore willingly submitted herself to the discipline of the Kirk and discretione of them. Therefore, the Kirk ordaines the said lady to make publick repentance in the Chapell-Royall of Stirling, upon ane Sondag in tyme of preaching; and this to be done at sick tyme as the Kirk hereafter shall appoint to the Superintendant of Lowthaine, provyding alwayes it be before the next Assembly." Booke of the Univ. Kirk, p. 73. Let not our modern *fashionables* and great ones be alarmed at hearing of such things. These days are gone, and will not, it is likely, soon return.

It is a mistake, however, to represent the ecclesiastical courts as inflicting corporal punishments upon offenders. The Parliament, or the magistracy of particular burghs, enacted punishments of this kind against certain crimes which were ordinarily tried in the Church Courts. Some of these existed before the Reformation, and some of them were posterior to it; but the infliction, as well as the enacting of them, pertained to the civil magistrate. Knox, p. 269. The following extract will explain the occasion of the mistake, and the true state of the case. "What you bring," says Mr Baillie in his answer to Bishop Maxwell, "of pecuniary mulcts, imprisonments, banishments, jogges, cutting of haire, and such like, it becomes neither you to charge, nor us to be charged with any such matters: No Church Assembly in Scotland assumes the least degree of power, to inflict the smallest civill punishment upon any person; the Generall Assembly it selfe hath no power to fine any creature so much as in one groat: It is true, the lawes of the land, appoint pecuniary mulcts, imprisonment, joggs, pillories, and banishment for some odious crimes, and the power of putting these laws in execution is placed by the Parliament in the hands of the inferior magistrates in burroughs or shires, or of others to whom the counsel table gives a speciall commission for that end; ordinarily some of these civill persons are ruling elders, and sit with the eldership: So when the eldership have cognosced upon the *scandall* alone of criminall persons, and have used their spirituall censures only to bring the party to repentance, some of the ruling elders, by vertue of their civill office or commission, will impose a mulct, or send to prison, or stocks, or banish out of the bounds of some little circuit, according as the acts of Parliament or Counsell do appoint it. But that the eldership should imploy its ecclesiastick and spirituall power for any such end, none of us doe defend. That either in Scotland or any where else in the world the haire of any person is commanded to be cut by any church judicatory for disgrace and punishment, is (as I take it) but a foolish fable. That any person truely penitent is threatned in Scotland, with church censures for non-payment of monies, is in the former category of calumnies." Historical Vindication of the Government of the Church of Scotland, p. 17, 18. Lond. 1646. I have in my possession (extracted from the records of a kirk-session) a commission, granted in 1701, by the sheriff depute of Berwickshire, constituting one of the elders *session-baillie*, for executing the laws against profaneness, agreeably to an act of Parliament authorising the appointment of such an officer in parishes within which no ordinary magistrate resided.

NOTE N. p. 227.—The Parliament now met, and was heid with unusual poimp. Mary, surrounded by a brilliant cavalcade, rode in procession to the Tolbooth, where the Estates assembled; the hall was crowded, not only by the members, but glittered with the splendid dresses of the royal household and the ladies of the court, who surrounded the throne and filled the galleries. The extreme beauty of the Queen, and the grace with which she delivered the address, in which she opened the proceedings, surprised and delighted her people; many exclaimed, "May God save that sweet face! she speaks as properly as the best orator among them!"

Amidst this general enthusiasm, the preachers took great offence at the liberty of the French manners, and the extravagance of the foreign dresses. "They spake boldly," says Knox, "against the superfluities of their clothes, and affirmed, that the vengeance of God would fall, not only on the foolish women, but on the whole realm. To check the growing licentiousness, an attempt was made to introduce a sumptuary law; articles against apparel were drawn up, and it was proposed to take order with other abuses; but, to the extreme mortification of the Reformer, he was arrested in his career of legislation by the hand of the Lord James. This powerful minister, deemed it impolitic at this moment to introduce these enactments. "The Queen," he said, "had kept her promises, the religion was established, the mass-mongers were punished, if they carried things too high, she would hold no Parliament at all." Knox smiled significantly—Mar, he hinted, trembled for his new Earldom of Murray, and all must be postponed to have his grant confirmed, lest Mary should repent of her munificence; he denounced in strong terms, such selfish motives, reminded him of his solemn engagements to the Church, and accused him of sacrificing truth to convenience, and the service of his God to the interests of his ambition. The proud spirit of Murray could not brook such an attack, and he replied with asperity; the two friends parted in anger, and the Reformer increased the estrangement by addressing a letter in which, in his usual plain and vehement style of reproof, he exonerated himself of all further care in his lordship's affairs, committing him to the guidance of his own understanding, whose dictates he preferred to the advancement of the truth. "I praise my God," said he, "I leave you victor over your enemies, promoted to great honour, and in authority with your Sovereign. Should this continue, none will be more glad than I; but if you decay, (as I fear ye shall) then call to mind by what means the Most High exalted you. It was neither by trifling with impiety, nor maintaining pestilent Papists." So incensed was Murray with this remonstrance, that for a year and a half, he and Knox scarcely exchanged words together.—Tytler's Hist. of Scotland, vol. vi. p. 328-30.

NOTE O. p. 231.—The whole account which Mr. Hume has given of the conduct of the Protestant clergy towards Mary, from her arrival in Scotland until her marriage with Darnley, is very remote from sober and genuine history. It is rather a satire against the Reformation, which he charges with rebellion: the Presbyterian Church, whose genius he describes as essentially productive of fanaticism and vulgarity; and his native country, the inhabitants of which, without exception, he represents as overrun with rusticity, strangers to the arts, to civility, and the pleasures of conversation. History, Reign of Eliz. chap. i. near the close. "Il n'est rien de plus facile quand on a beaucoup d'esprit, et beaucoup d'expérience dans l'art de faire des livres, que de composer une Histoire satyrique, des même faits qui ont servi à faire une Eloge. Deux lignes supprimée, ou *pour* ou *contre*, dans l'exposition d'un fait, sont capables de faire paroître un homme ou fort innocent, ou fort coupable: et comme par la seule transposition de quelques mots, on peut faire d'un discours fort saint un discours impie; de même par la seule transposition de quelques circonstances, l'on peut faire de l'action la plus criminelle, l'action la plus vertueuse." Bayle, Critique Générale de l'Histoire du Calvinisme, p. 13. 2de edition, 1683. This is a charge to which the Historian of England has exposed himself on more than one occasion.

I cannot here expose all his mistatements in the passage to which I have referred. He keeps out of view the fixed resolution of the Queen to re-establish the Romish religion, with all the perils to which the Protestants were exposed. He artfully introduces his narrative, by placing her proclamation against altering the Protestant religion before the symptoms of popular discontent at her setting up mass; whereas the proclamation was emitted after these, and perhaps would never have appeared, had it not been found necessary to allay the apprehensions of the people. Knox, 285. Keith, 504, 505. As a proof that the preachers "took a pride in vilifying, even to her face, this amiable princess," he gives extracts from an address to her by the General Assembly, without ever hinting that this was merely a draught: that every offensive expression was erased from it; and that, when it was presented by the superintendents of Lothian and Fife, the Queen said, "Here are many fair words; I cannot tell what the hearts are." Knox, 315. Mr. H. goes on to say: "The ringleader in all these insults on Majesty, was John Knox.—His usual appellation for the Queen, was *Jezebel*." This is a mistake. Neither in his sermons, nor in his prayers, nor in conversation, did he give this

appellation to Mary, as long as she was queen ; but always honoured her before the people, as well as in her own presence, even when he lamented and condemned her errors. Afterwards, indeed, when for her crimes (of which no man was more convinced than Mr. H.) she was removed from the government, and he no longer acknowledged her as his sovereign, he did apply this name to her. It is so far from being true, that "the whole life of Mary was, from the demeanour of these men, filled with bitterness and sorrow," or that she "was curbed in all amusements by the absurd severity of these reformers," that she retained her "gaiety and ease," until by her imprudent marriage with Darnley, she with her own hands planted thorns under her pillow ; while the preachers were most free in their sermons, she enjoyed all manner of liberty ; her mass was never taken from her ; she was allowed to indulge her "feasting, finery, dancing, balls, and whoredom, their necessary attendant ;" nor was she ever interrupted in these amusements, except when her own husband deprived her of her favourite Italian fiddler, a loss for which she afterwards took ample vengeance. It is difficult to conceive how one acquainted with the history of that period, and the character of the Queen, could impute the "*errors* of her subsequent conduct" to the "harsh and preposterous usage which she met with" from the reformers. Nor can there be a greater satire upon the general character of Mary, (previous to her first marriage,) than to say, that she "found every moment reason to regret her leaving that country, from whose manners she had, in her early youth, received the first impressions." It is well known that the court at which she received her education was most dissolute ; and the supposition that she carried away the innocent polish and refinement of their manners, without contracting their criminal contagion, is not only incredible, but contradicted by the confessions of her friends. *Memoirs de Castelnau, augmentez par J. le Laboureur, Prior de Juvigné, tom. i. p. 528. A Bruxelles, 1731.* I have no desire, however, to dip into the subject, nor to draw forth to light facts unfavourable to that princess ; although the unwarranted and persevering attacks which have been made upon worthy men, with the view of reconciling the "future conduct" of Mary, with the "general tenor of her character," would justify greater freedoms than have been lately used in this way.

"We are too apt to figure to ourselves the Reformers of that age, as persons of impolitic and inflexible austerity." This is the remark of one who was much better acquainted with their history than Mr. Hume. Lord Hailes' *Historical Mem. of the Provincial Councils of the Scottish Clergy*, p. 41. *Comp. Knox, Historie*, p. 310. See also, in addition to the facts already produced in this work, what is contained in Note B.—Period Eighth.

Mr Hume's object, in the passage upon which I have animadverted, was to blacken the Reformers, rather than to exalt the Queen, of whose character he had at bottom no great opinion. "Tell Goodall," says he, in a letter to Dr. Robertson, "that if he can but give up Queen Mary, I hope to satisfy him in every thing else ; and he will have the pleasure of seeing John Knox, and the Reformers, made very ridiculous." Indeed, he confessed to his confidential friends, that he had, in his *History*, drawn the character of that princess in too favourable colours. "I am afraid," says he to the same correspondent, "that you, as well as myself, have drawn Mary's character with too great softenings. She was undoubtedly a violent woman *at all times*." *Stewart's Life of Robertson*, p. 37, 38, of the separate edition ; or, as reprinted with the *History of Scotland*, vol. i. p. 25. Lond. 1809.

NOTE P. p. 233.—"18mo Junii, 1563.—The samyn day, in presence of the baillies and counsale, comperit Jhone Gray, scribe to the kirk, and presentit the supplicatione following, in the name of the haill kirk, bering that it was laitlie cummen to thair knowlege, bi the report of faythfull bretherins, that within thir few dayis Eufame Dundas, in the presence of ane multitude, had spokin divers injurious and sclandarous wordis, baith of the doctrine and ministeris. And in especiall of Jhonne Knox, minister, sayand, that within few dayis past, the said Jhone Knox was apprehendit and tane forth of ane killogye with ane commoun hure ; and that he had bene ane commone harlot all his dayis. Quhairfore it was maist humblie desyrit that the said Eufane myt be callit and examinat upone the said supplicatione, and gif the wordis abone writtin, spokin bi hir, myt be knawin or tryit to be of veritie, that the said Jhonne Knox myt be punist with all rigour without favour : otherwyse to tak sic ordour with hir as myt stand with the glory of God, and that sclander myt be takin from the kirk. As at mair length is contenit in the said supplication. Quhilk beand red to the said Eufane, personallie pre-

sent in judgement, *scho denyit the samyn*, and Fryday the 25 day of Junii instant assignit to hir to here and see witnes producit for preving of the allegiance abone expremit, and scho is warnyt apud acta." Records of Town Council of Edinburgh, of the above date.

The minute of the 25th contains the account of the proof which Knox's procurator led to shew that Eufame Dundas had uttered the scandal which she now denied, and the appointment that the parties should be "*warnit literatorie* to hear sentence given in the said action." I have not observed any thing more respecting the cause in the minutes, and it is probable, that the Reformer, having obtained the vindication of his character, prevailed on the judges not to inflict punishment on the accuser.

NOTE Q. p. 233.—"C'est rendre sans doute," says Bayle, "quelques service a la memoire de Jean Knox, que de fair voir les extravagances de ceux qui ont dechiré sa reputation." And, having referred to the "gross and extravagant slanders" of one writer, he adds, "this alone is a sufficient prejudice against all which the Roman Catholic writers have published concerning the great Reformer of Scotland." Dict. art. Knox. If Mons. Bayle could speak in this manner upon a quotation from one author, what conclusion shall we draw from the following quotations?—The first writer who seems to have attacked Knox's character, after his death, was Archibald Hamilton, whose hostility against him was inflamed by a personal quarrel, as well as by political and religious considerations. (See above, p. 281.) His book shews how much he was disposed to recommend himself to the Papists, by throwing out whatever was most injurious to his former connexions. But there were too many alive at that time to refute any charge which might be brought against the Reformer's moral character. Accordingly, when he aimed the most envenomed thrust at his reputation, Hamilton masked it under the name of an apprehension or surmise. Having said that, upon the death of Edward VI. "he fled to Geneva with a noble and rich lady," (which by the bye is also a falsehood,) he adds in a parenthesis, "*qua simul et filia matris pellice familiariter usus fuisse putabatur.*" De Confusione Calvinianæ Sectæ, p. 65, a. Parisiis 1577. What Hamilton insinuated as a mere *surmise*, his successors soon converted into undoubted *certainty*. In 1579, Principal Smeton published his answer to Hamilton's book, in which he repelled the charges which he had brought against Knox, and pronounced the above mentioned surmise a malicious calumny, for which the accuser could not adduce the slightest proof, and which was refuted by the spotless character which the Reformer had maintained before the whole world. Smetoni Responsio ad Virulent. Dial. Hamiltonii, p. 95. Edinb. 1579. It now behoved Hamilton either to retract or to prove his injurious insinuation. But how did he act in his reply to Smeton? Under the pretence of repeating what he had said in his former book, he introduces a number of other slanders against Knox's character, of which he had not given the most distant hint before; and (incredible to be told!) he absolutely avers, that he had formerly specified all these crimes, and condescended upon the places, times, and other circumstances of their commission; although, in his former publication, he had not said one word on the subject except the general surmise quoted above!!! A few years after the publication of Hamilton's last work, we find another Popish author writing in the following terms:—"Johne Kmnox your first apostel, quha caused ane young woman in my Lord Ochiltreis place fal almaist dead, becaus sche saw his maister Satthan in ane black mannis likenese with him, throuche ane bore of the dure: quha was also ane manifest adulterare, bringand furth of Inland baith the mother and the dochter, whom he persuadit that it was lesum to leve her housband, [See p. 156.] and adhere unto him, making ane fleshe of himself, the mother, and the dochter, as if he wald conjoyne in ane religione the auld synagogue of the Jeuis with the new fundat kirk of the Gentiles." In another place he introduces the account of his second marriage with these words:—"That renegat and perjurit priest schir Johane Kmnox, quha efter the death of his first harlot, quhilk he mareit incurring eternal damnation be breking his vou and promiss of chastitie, quhen his age requyrit rather that with tearis and lamentations he sould have chastised his flesh and bewailit the breaking of his vou, as also the horribil incest with his gudmother in ane *killologie* of Haddingtoun." Burne's Disputation concerning the Controversit Headdis of Religion, p. 102, 143. Parise, 1581. But the two former writers were outstripped in calumny by that most impudent of all liars, James Laing, who published in Latin, during the same year in which the last mentioned work appeared, an account of the lives and man-

ners of the heretics of his time. There are few pages of his book in which he does not rail against our Reformer; but in (what he calls) his Life, he may justly be said to have exceeded any thing which personal malice, or religious rancour, ever dictated. "Statim," says he, "ab initio suæ pueritiæ omni genere turpissimi facinoris infectus fuit. Vix excesserat jam ex ephebis, cum patris sui uxorem violarat, suam novercam vitiatat, et cum ea, cui reverentia potissimum adhibenda fuerat, nefarium stuprum fecerat." His bishop having, forsooth, called him to account for these crimes, he straightway became inflamed with the utmost hatred to the Catholic religion. "Deinde non modo cum profanis, sed etiam cum quibuscunque sceleratissimis, perditissimis, et potissimum omnium hæreticis est versatus, et quo quisque erat immanior, sceleratior, crudelior, eo ei carior et gratior fuit. Ne unum quidem diem sceleratissimus hæreticus sine una et item altera meretrice traducere potuit.—Continuo cum tribus meretricibus, quæ videbantur posse sufficere una sacerdoti, in Scotia convolat.—Ceterum hic lascivus caper, quem assidue sequebatur lasciva capella, partim perpetuis crapulis, partim vino, lustrisque ita confectus fuit, ut quotiescunq. conscenderet suggestum ad maledicendum, velim precandum suis, opus erat illi duobus aut tribus viris, a quibus elevandus atq. sustendendus erat." *De Vita et Moribus atque Rebus Gestit Hæreticorum nostri temporis. Authore Jacobo Laingæo Scoto Doctore Sorbonico*, fol. 113. b. 114, a, b. 115. a. *Parisiis*, 1581. *Cum Privilegio*. Nor were such accounts confined to that age. As late as 1628, we find Father Alexander Baillie repeating, in the English language, all the gross tales of his predecessors, with additions of his own, in which he shews a total disregard to the best known facts in the Reformer's life. "Jhon Knox," says he, "being chaplane to the Laird of Balvurie, and accused for his vices and lecherie, was found so guiltie and culpable, that to eschevie the just punishment prepared for him he presently fled away in to England." He afterwards says, that, after the death of his second wife [that is, twenty years at least after his own death,] Knox "shamefully fell in the abominable vice of incestuous adultery, as Archb. Hamilton and others doe witness;" and as a proof that Knox reckoned this vice no blot, he puts into his mouth a defence of it, in the very words which Sanders, in his book against the Anglican Schism, had represented Sir Francis Brian as using in a conversation with Henry VIII.—Baillie's *True Information of the unhallowed Offspring, Progress, and impoisoned Fruits of our Scottish-Calvinian Gospel and Gospellers*, p. 14, 41. Wirtsburgh, 1628.

It is evident that these outrageous and contradictory calumnies have been all grafted upon the convicted lie mentioned in the preceding note, and on the malignant surmise insinuated by Archibald Hamilton. The characters of the Foreign Reformers were traduced in the very same manner by the Popish writers. Those who have seen Bolsec's Lives of Calvin and Beza, or others of the same kidney, will be sufficiently convinced of this. Will it be believed that, in the middle of the seventeenth century, a book should have been published under the name of the *Cardinal de Richlieu*, in which it is asserted that "Calvin being condemned for acts of incontinency, which he had carried to the utmost extremity of vice, (ses incontinences qui le porterent jusques aux dernières extremités du vice,) retired from Noyon (his native city) and from the Roman Church, at the same time?" And that this should have been published after the cardinal himself had examined the registers of Noyon, which stated facts totally inconsistent with the charge? *La Defence de Calvin*, par Charles Drelincourt, p. 10, 11, 33. Genève, 1667. Our countrymen of the Popish persuasion were careful to retail all the calumnies against the Foreign Reformers, and they do so in a manner almost peculiar to themselves. Nicol Burne most seriously asserts that Luther was begotten of the Devil, as to his carnal as well as his spiritual generation; and in order to prove that this was not impossible, he advances the most profane argument that ever proceeded from the mouth or pen of a Christian. *Disputation*, ut supra, p. 141. The same thing is asserted by James Laing. *De Vita, &c. Hæretic.* ut supra, fol. 1. b. In a pretended translation into Scots of a poem written by Beza in his youth, (which the Roman Catholics, after he left their communion, were careful to preserve from oblivion,) Burne has unblushingly inserted some scandalous and disgraceful lines, for which he had not the slightest warrant from the original. *Disputation*, p. 103, 104. Laing, in his *Life of Calvin*, (of which Senebier has justly said, "that it would be impossible to believe that such a libel had been written, if it were not to be seen in print,") has raked together all the base aspersions which had been cast upon that reformer, and has spent a number of pages in endeavouring to

shew that he was guilty of *stealing* a sum of money. De Vita, &c. ut supra, fol. 76. b.—79. b. Of Buchanan, whom he calls “homo sacrarum literarum imperitissimus, simulque impudentissimus,” he relates a number of impieties, of which this is the last, “plurimi etiam narrant illum miserrimum hominem quondam in sacro fonte, quo infantes aqua benedicta ablui solent, adsit reverentia dictis, oletum fecisse.” Ibid. fol. 40. a. One example more may suffice. “Te admonerem de quodam impio hæretico sacerdote Davidson, quem audiavi his jam multis annis publice cum quadam meretrice scortatum esse, quam fertur peperisse prima nocte, qua cum illa dormivit, quod hic doctores medici pro magno miraculo habent; cum vix mulieres ante nonum mensem, vel octavum parere soleant.” Ibid. fol. 36. b. 37. a.

Persons must have had their foreheads, as well as their consciences, “seared with a hot iron,” before they could publish such things to the world as facts. Yet Laing’s book was approved, and declared worthy of publication, by two doctors of the University of Paris. Its grossest slanders against the Scottish Reformers were literally copied, and circulated through the Continent as undoubted truths, by Reginaldus, Spondanus, Julius Breigerus, and many other foreign Popish authors. Each of these added some fabrication of his own; and one of them is so grossly ignorant, as to rail against our Reformer by the name of *Noptz*. Bayle, Dictionnaire, art. Knox, Note G.

I do not wish to insinuate that all the Popish writers were of the above description, or that there were not many Roman Catholics, even at that time, who disapproved of the use of such dishonourable and empoisoned weapons: but the great number of such publications, the circulation which they obtained, and the length of time during which they continued to issue from the Popish presses, demonstrate the extent to which a spirit of lying and wanton defamation was carried in the Romish Church. And I may safely aver, that no honest and candid person, who is duly acquainted with the writings on both sides, will pretend that this can be accounted for from the hostility and asperity common to both parties.

PERIOD SEVENTH.

NOTE A. p. 242.—“Heaving laid aside al feir of the panis of hel, and regarding na thing the honestie of the warld, as ane bund sklave of the Devil, being kendillit with an unquenshible lust and ambition, he durst be sua bauld to interpryse the sute of marriage with the maist honorabil ladie, my laidie Fleming, my lord Duke’s eldest dochter, to the end that his seid being of the blude royal, and gydit be thair father’s spirit, might have aspyrit to the croun. And because he receavit ane refusal, it is notoriouslie knawin how deidlie he haited the hail hous of the Hamiltonis. And this maist honest refusal would nather stench his lust nor ambition; bot a lytel efter he did persew to have allyance with the honourabill hous of Ochiltrie of the Kyng’s M. awin blude; Rydand thair with ane gret court, on ane trim gelding, nocht lyk ane prophet or ane auld decrepit priest, as he was, bot lyk as he had bene ane of the blude royal, with his bendes of taffetie feschnit with golden ringis, and precious stanes: And as is plainlie reportit in the countrey, be sorcerie and witchcraft did sua allure that pur gentil woman, that scho could not leve wethout him: whilk appeiris to be of gret probabilitie, scho being ane damsel of nobel blud, and he ane auld decrepit creatur of maist bais degrie of onie that could be found in the countrey: Sua that sik ane nobil hous could not have degenerat sua far, except Johann kmnox had interposed the powar of his maister the Devil, quha as he transfiguris him self sumtymes in an angel of licht; sua he causit Johann kmnox appeir ane of the maist nobil and lustie men that could be found in the warld.” Nicol Burne’s Disputation, ut supra, p. 143, 144. But the Devil outwitted himself in his design of raising the progeny of the Reformer to the throne of Scotland, if we may believe another Popish writer. “For as the common and constant brute of the people reported, as writeth Reginaldus [a most competent witness!] and others, it chanced not long after the marriage, that she [Knox’s wife] lying in her bed, and perceiving a blak, uglie, il favoured man busily talking with him in the same chamber, was soudainely amazed, that she took seiknes and dyed” [nor does the author want honourable witnesses to support this fact, for he immediately adds:] “as she revealed to two of her friends, being ladyes, come thither to visite her a litle before her decease.” Father A. Baillie’s True Information, ut supra, p. 41. It is unfortunate, however, for the credit of this “true information,” that the Reformer’s wife not only lived to bear him several children, but survived

him many years. James owed the safety of his crown to another cause, which we have already had occasion to notice.

NOTE B. p. 246.—The following is a more full account of the continuation of the discussion between the Secretary and our Reformer. “The most part of this reasoning, Secretary Lethington leaned upon the Master of Maxwell’s breast, who said, ‘I am almost weary, I would some other would reason in the chief head, which is yet untouched.’ Then the Earl of Morton, Chancellor, commanded Mr. George Hay to reason against John Knox, in the head of obedience due to the magistrates, who began so to do: Unto whom John Knox said, ‘Brother, that ye shall reason in my contrary, I am well content, because I know you to be both a man of learning and of modesty; but that you shall oppose yourself unto the truth, whereof I suppose your own conscience is no less persuaded, than is mine, I cannot well approve; for, I would be sorry, that ye and I should be reputed to reason, as two schollars of Pythagoras, to shew the quickness of our wit, as it were to reason on both parts. I protest here before God, that whatsoever I sustain, I do the same in conscience; yea, I dare no more sustain a proposition, known to myself untrue, than I dare teach false doctrine in the public place; and therefore, brother, if conscience move you to oppose yourself to that doctrine, which ye have heard out of my mouth, in that matter, do it boldly, it shall never offend me; but that ye shall be found to oppose yourself unto me, ye being persuaded in the same truth; I say yet again, it pleaseth me not; for therein may be greater inconveniency, than either ye or I do consider, for the public.’ The said Mr. George answered, ‘that I will not oppose myself unto you, as one willing to impugn or confute that head of doctrine, which not only ye, but many others, yea, and myself have affirmed; far be it from me, for so should I be found contrarious to myself; for my Lord Secretary knows my judgment in that head.’ ‘Marry,’ said the Secretary, ‘you are, in my opinion, the worst of the two; for I remember that your reasoning, when the Queen was in Carrick.’” Knox’s History, p. 301.

None of the company being disposed to enter the lists with Knox, Maitland again resumed, and endeavoured to defend the absolute authority of rulers. “Well,” said he, “I am somewhat better provided in this last head, than I was in the other two. Mr. Knox, yesterday we heard your judgment upon the 13th to the Romans; we heard the mind of the apostle well opened; we heard the causes why God has established powers upon earth; we heard the necessity that mankind has of the same; and we heard the duty of magistrates sufficiently declared. But in two things I was offended, and I think some more of my lords that then were present: The one was, ye made difference betwixt the ordinance of God, and the persons that are placed in authority; and ye affirmed, that men might resist the persons, and yet not offend God’s ordinance: The other was, that subjects were not bound to obey their princes if they commanded unlawful things, but that they might resist their princes, and were not ever bound to suffer.” Knox said that the Secretary had given a correct statement of his sentiments. “How will you prove your division and difference,” said Maitland, “and that the person placed in authority may be resisted, and God’s ordinance not transgressed, seeing that the Apostle says, ‘He that resists the power, resists the ordinance of God?’” Knox replied, that the difference was evident from the words of the Apostle, and that his affirmative was supported by approved examples. For the Apostle asserts, that the powers ordained of God are for the preservation of quiet and peaceable men, and for the punishment of malefactors; whence it is plain, that God’s ordinance is wholly intended for the preservation of mankind, the punishment of vice, and the maintenance of virtue; but the persons placed in authority are often corrupt, unjust, and oppressive. Having referred to the conduct of the people of Israel in rescuing Jonathan from the hands of Saul, which is recorded with approbation, and to the conduct of Doeg, in putting to death the priests at the command of that monarch, which is recorded with disapprobation in Scripture, he proceeded thus: “And now, my lord, in answer to the place of the Apostle, I say, that ‘the power’ in that place is not to be understood of the unjust commandment of men, but of the just power wherewith God has armed his magistrates to punish sin and to maintain virtue. As if any man should enterprise to take from the hands of a lawful judge a murderer, an adulterer, or any other malefactor that by God’s law deserved the death, this same man resisted God’s ordinance, and procured to himself vengeance and damnation, because that he stayeth God’s sword to strike. But so it is not, if that men, in the fear of God, oppose themselves to the fury and

blind rage of princes; for so they resist not God, but the devil, who abuses the sword and authority of God."—"I understand sufficiently," said Maitland, "what you mean; and unto the one part I will not oppose myself, but I doubt of the other. For if the Queen would command me to slay John Knox, because she is offended at him, I would not obey her; but if she would command others to do it, or yet by a colour of justice take his life from him, I cannot tell if I be bound to defend him against the Queen, and against her officers."—"Under protestation," replied the Reformer, "that the auditory think not that I speak in favour of myself, I say, my lord, that if ye be persuaded of my innocence, and if God hath given you such power or credit as might deliver me, and yet ye suffer me to perish, that in so doing ye should be criminal, and guilty of my blood."—"Prove that, and win the plea," said Maitland. "Well, my lord," answered Knox, "remember your promise, and I shall be short in my probation." He then produced the example of Jeremiah, who, when accused by the priests and false prophets, said to the princes, "Know ye for certain, that if ye put me to death, ye shall surely bring innocent blood upon yourselves, and upon this city, and upon the inhabitants thereof."—"The cases are not like," said Maitland. "And I would learn," said Knox, "wherein the dissimilitude stands."—"First," replied Maitland, "the King had not condemned him to death. And next, the false prophets, the priests, and the people, accused him without a cause, and therefore they could not but be guilty of his blood."—"Neither of these fights with my argument," said Knox; "for, albeit neither the King was present, nor yet had condemned him, yet were the princes and chief counsellors there sitting in judgment, who represented the King's person and authority. And if ye think that they should all have been criminal only because they all accused him, the plain text witnesses the contrary; for the princes defended him, and so, no doubt, did a great part of the people, and yet he boldly affirms that they should be all guilty of his blood, if that he should be put to death."—"Then will ye," said the Secretary, "make subjects to control their princes and rulers?"—"And what harm," asked the Reformer, "should the commonwealth receive, if the corrupt affections of ignorant rulers were moderated, and so bridled, by the wisdom and discretion of godly subjects, that they should do wrong or violence to no man?"

The Secretary, finding himself hard pushed, said that they had wandered from the argument: and he professed that if the Queen should become a persecutor, he would be as ready as any within the realm to adopt the doctrine of the Reformer. "But our question," said he, "is, whether that we may, and ought, suppress the Queen's mass. Or, whether that her idolatry should be laid to our charge."—"Idolatry ought not only to be suppressed," said Knox, "but the idolater ought to die the death."—"I know," answered Maitland, "that the idolater ought to die the death; but by whom?"—"By the people," rejoined the Reformer; "for the commandment was made to Israel, as ye may read, 'Hear, O Israel, saith the Lord, the statutes and commandments of the Lord thy God.'"—"But there is no commandment given to the people to punish their king, if he be an idolater."—"I find no privilege granted unto kings," said Knox, "more than unto the people, to offend God's majesty."—"I grant," said the Secretary; "but yet the people may not be judge unto their king, to punish him, albeit he be an idolater. The people may not execute God's judgment, but must leave it unto himself, who will either punish it by death, by war, by imprisonment, or by some other kind of plagues."—"I know," replied Knox, "the last part of your reason to be true; but, for the first, I am assured ye have no other warrant except your own imagination, and the opinion of such as more fear to offend princes than God."

"Why say you so?" said Maitland. "I have the judgments of the most famous men within Europe, and of such as ye yourself will confess both godly and learned." Upon which he produced a bundle of papers, and read extracts from the writings of the principal reformed divines against resistance to rulers; adding that he had bestowed more labour on the collection of these authorities than on the reading of commentaries for seven years. Knox replied, that it was a pity he had given himself so much labour, for none of the extracts which he had read bore upon the question under discussion; some of them being directed against the Anabaptists, who denied that Christians should be subject to magistrates, or that it was lawful for them to hold the office of magistracy; and the rest referring to the case of a small number of Christians scattered through heathen and infidel countries, which was the situation of the primitive Church. In this last case, he said, he perfectly agreed with the

writers whom Maitland had quoted; but when the majority of a nation were professors of the true religion, the case was very different. While the posterity of Abraham were few in number, and while they sojourned in different countries, they were merely required to avoid all participation in the idolatrous rites of the heathen; but as soon as they "prospered into a kingdom," and obtained possession of Canaan, they were strictly charged to suppress idolatry, and to destroy all its monuments and incentives. The same duty was now incumbent on the professors of the true religion in Scotland, whose release from bondage, temporal and spiritual, was no less wonderful than the redemption of the Israelites from Egypt. Formerly, when not more than ten persons in a country were enlightened, and when these were called to seal their testimony to the truth by giving their bodies to the flames, it would have been foolishness to have demanded of the nobility the suppression of idolatry. But now, when knowledge had increased, and God had given such a signal victory to the truth, that it had been publicly embraced by the realm, if they suffered the land to be again defiled, both they and their Queen should drink of the cup of divine indignation. She, because, amidst the great light of the Gospel, she continued obstinately addicted to idolatry, and they, because they tolerated, and even countenanced her in such conduct.

Maitland challenged his opponent to prove that the apostles or prophets ever taught that subjects might suppress the idolatry of their rulers. Knox appealed to the conduct of the prophet Elisha in anointing Jehu, and giving him a charge to punish the idolatry and bloodshed of the royal family of Ahab. "Jehu was a king before he put any thing in execution," said the Secretary. "My lord, he was a mere subject, and no king, when the prophet's servant came to him; yea, and albeit that his fellow captains, hearing of the message, blew the trumpet, and said, 'Jehu is king,' yet I doubt not but Jezebel both thought and said he was a traitor, and so did many others in Israel and Samaria."—"Besides this," said Maitland, "the fact is extraordinary, and ought not to be imitated."—"It had the ground of God's ordinary judgment, which commands the idolater to die the death," answered Knox. "We are not bound to imitate extraordinary examples," rejoined Maitland, "unless we have like commandment and assurance." Knox granted that this was true when the example was repugnant to the ordinary precept of the law, as in the case of the Israelites borrowing from the Egyptians without repayment. But when the example agreed with the law, he insisted that it was imitable; and of this kind was the instances to which he had appealed. "But," said Maitland, "whatsoever they did, was done at God's commandment."—"That fortifies my argument," retorted the Reformer; "for God, by his commandment, has approved that subjects punish their princes for idolatry and wickedness by them committed."—"We have not the like commandment," said the Secretary. "That I deny; for the commandment, that the idolater shall die the death, is perpetual, as ye yourself have granted; ye doubted only who should be the executioner, and I have sufficiently proven that God has raised up the people, and by his prophet has anointed a king, to take vengeance upon the king and his posterity, which fact God since that time has never retracted."—"Ye have produced but one example," said Maitland. "One sufficeth; but yet, God be praised, we lack not others, for the whole people conspired against Amaziah, king of Judah, after he had turned away from the Lord."—"I doubt whether they did well, or not," said Maitland. "God gave sufficient approbation of their fact, for he blessed them with victory, peace, and prosperity, the space of fifty-two years after."—"But prosperity does not always prove that God approves the facts of men."—"Yes, when the facts of men agree with the law of God, and are rewarded according to his promise, I say that the prosperity succeeding the fact is a most infallible assurance that God has approved the fact. And now, my lord, I have but one example to produce, and then I will put an end to my reasoning, because I weary longer to stand." The lords desired him to take a chair; but he declined it, saying, "that melancholic reasons needed some mirth to be intermixed with them." After a short dispute on the resistance of the priests to Uzziah, the Reformer recapitulated the propositions which he thought had been established in the course of the debate. "Well," said Maitland, "I think ye shall not have many learned men of your opinion." Knox replied, that the truth ceased not to be the truth, because men misunderstood or opposed it, and yet he did not want the suffrages of learned men to his opinions. Upon which he presented a copy of the Apology of Magdeburgh, desiring the Secretary to look at the names of the ministers who had approved of the defence of that city against the emperor, and subscribed the proposition, that to resist a tyrant is

not to resist the ordinance of God. "Homines obscuri!" said Maitland, slightly, after perusing the list. "Dei tamen servi!" replied the Reformer.

And Lethington arose and said, "My lords, ye have heard the reasons upon both parts; it becomes you now to decide, and to put in order unto preachers, that they may be uniform in doctrine. May we, think ye, take the Queen's mass from her?" While some began to give, as it were, their votes (for some were appointed, as it were, leaders of the rest) John Knox said, "My lords, I suppose, ye will not do contrary to your lordships' promise made to the whole assembly, which was, That nothing should be voted in secret, till that first all matters should be debated in public, and that then the votes of the whole assembly should put an end to the controversy." Knox's *Historie*, p. 307.

NOTE C. p. 250.—Christopher Goodman was an Englishman, and belonged to a respectable family in Chester, but from the intimate and long friendship which subsisted between him and our Reformer, he deserves more particular notice than has yet been taken of him in this work. He had been a fellow student with Cranmer at Cambridge, and was one of those learned men who, about 1523, were chosen from that university to be removed to the new college erected by Cardinal Wolsey at Oxford. Soon after he was thrown into prison for heresy. He read lectures on Divinity in Oxford during the reign of Edward VI. Strype's *Cranmer*, p. 3. Strype's *Annals*, i. 124. At the accession of Queen Mary, he retired first to Strasburgh, and afterwards to Frankfort. When he was at Strasburgh, he joined in a common letter, advising the exiles of Frankfort to alter as little in the English service as possible; but he became afterwards so much convinced of the propriety of alterations, and was so much offended at the conduct of the Coxian party, that he removed from Frankfort to Geneva, along with those who were of the same sentiments with him, and was chosen by them joint minister with Knox. *Troubles at Franckford*, p. 22, 23, 54, 55, 59.

In 1558, he published the book which afterwards created him a good deal of trouble. Its title is: "How superior powers ought to be obeyd; of their subjects, and wherein they may lawfully by God's worde be disobeyed and resisted. Wherein also is declared the cause of all this present miserie in England, and the onely way to remedy the same. By Christopher Goodman. Printed at Geneva by John Crispin, MDLVIII." In this book he subscribed to the opinion respecting female government, which his colleague had published only a few months before. He pronounced the power of kings and magistrates to be limited, and that they might lawfully be resisted, deposed, and punished by their subjects, if they became tyrannical and wicked. These principles he particularly applied to the government of the English Mary. A copy of verses by William Kethe (who translated some of the Psalms into English metre) is added to the work, of which the following is a specimen:

Whom fury long fostered by suffrance and awe,
Have right rule subverted, and made will their law,
Whose pride how to temper, this truth will thee tell;
So as thou resist may'st, and yet not rebel.

Goodman returned to England in 1559; but he found Queen Elisabeth so much displeased at his publication, that he kept himself private. Burnet, iii. Append. 274. On this account, and in compliance with the urgent request of our Reformer, he came to Scotland. When the lords of the congregation chose him one of the council for matters of religion, the Earl of Arran endeavoured to appease the resentment which the English queen still entertained against him. Sadler, i. 510, 511, 532. In 1562, the Earl of Warwick repeatedly interceded for him, and for his being recalled from Scotland; "of whom (says he) I have heard suche good commendation both of the Lord James of Scotland and others, that it seemeth great pitie, that our countrie shuld want so worthie and learned an instrument." Forbes's *State Papers*, ii. 235. Calvin urged Goodman not to leave Scotland until the Reformation was completely established. Epist. 566. *Hannoviæ*, 1597. When he did return to his native country in 1565, it was with some difficulty that he was received into favour, notwithstanding the friends he had at court. He was obliged to make a retractation of the offensive doctrines in his publication. He protested and confessed that "good and godly women may lawfully govern whole realms and nations;" but he qualified and explained, rather than recanted, what he had taught respecting the punishment of tyrants. Strype has inserted the document, in his *Annals*, i. 126; but he has certainly placed it under the wrong

year. Collier thinks it "a lame recantation," Eccl. Hist. ii. 440. In 1571 he subscribed, in the presence of the queen's ecclesiastical commissioners, a more ample protestation of his obedience to Elizabeth. Strype's Annals, ii. 95, 96. He was also harassed on account of his non-conformity to the English ceremonies. Life of Grindal, 170. Life of Parker, 325, 326. Knox corresponded with his friend after he left Scotland, and Calderwood has preserved a letter which he wrote to him in 1571, in which he alludes to the troubles which he understood he was exposed to, MS. ii. 270. He was alive in 1580, and resided in Chester, from which he sent his salutations to Buchanan. Buchanani Epistolæ, 30, 31. Oper. Rud. Goodman's book was quoted, but for very different purposes, both by Bancroft (Dangerous Positions, B. ii. chap. i.), and by Milton (Tenure of Magistrates, apud Prose Works by Symmons, vol. iii. p. 196.)

Goodman was not the only person belonging to the English church who published free sentiments respecting civil government. About the same time with his book, there appeared another on the same subject, entitled, "A Short Treatise of Politique Pouuer, and of the true Obedience which Subjectes owe to Kynges." The author of it was Dr. John Ponet, bishop, first of Rochester, and afterwards of Winchester, under Edward VI. Ames, iii. 1594. He discusses the questions respecting the origin of political authority, its absolute or limited nature, the limits of obedience, and the deposition and punishment of tyrants. "This book," says Strype, "was not over-favourable to princes. Their rigors and persecutions, and the arbitrary proceedings with their peaceable subjects in these times, put them upon examining the extent of their power, which some were willing to curtail and straiten as much as they could. This book was printed again in the year 1642, to serve the turn of those times." Memorials of the Reformation, iii. 328, 329. Collier (who was a keen Tory) calls it "a most pestilent discourse." He wished to believe that Bishop Ponet was not the author; but it is evident from what he says, that he could see no reason for departing from the common opinion. History, ii. 363. Ponet was a superior scholar. He read the Greek lecture in the University of Cambridge about 1535, and was among the first who adopted the new method of pronouncing that language introduced by Sir Thomas Smith. He wrote several books on mathematics and other subjects, which were greatly esteemed. Life of Sir Thomas Smith, p. 26, 27. Ames, Typ. Antiq. i. 599. ii. 753, 1146, iii. 1587.

NOTE D. p. 261.—The proceedings of the committee are to be found in Robertson's Records of the Parliament of Scotland. Almost the only ecclesiastical propositions of the committee which were not adopted by the subsequent parliament were such as respected the patrimony of the church. I shall extract one or two respecting the commonwealth which did not obtain a parliamentary sanction. "Als it is thocht expedient, that in na tymes cuming ony women salbe admittit to the publict autoritie of ye realme, or function in publict government within ye same." On the margin, opposite to this, is written, "Fund gude;" which is expressive, as I understand it, of the committee's approbation of the motion. Ut supra, p. 795. As Knox, at a period subsequent to this, declared from the pulpit that he had never "entreated that argument in publict or in prevat" since his last arrival in Scotland (Bannatyne's Journal, p. 117), it appears that this motion had been made by some other member of the committee. The late misconduct of Queen Mary must have had a great effect in inclining them to give this advice. The 23d article does great honour to the enlightened views of the movers. It proposes that all hereditary jurisdictions throughout the kingdom should be abolished. On the margin is written, "Appreivit," and farther down, "Supercedis." Ibid. A long time elapsed before this measure, so necessary to the wise administration of justice, was adopted in Scotland. The following was a proposed sumptuary law: "Item, that it be lauchfull to na wemen to weir abone yair estait, except howris." On the margin of this is written: "This act is verray gude." Ut supra, p. 798.

The ministers appointed on this committee were "Maister Johne Spottiswood, Maister Johne Craig, Johne Knox, Maister John Row, and Maister David Lindesay." It will be observed that our Reformer is the only one who has not "Maister" prefixed to his name. This title was expressive of an academical degree. It was commonly given in that age to Masters of Arts as well as Doctors of Law, and in their subscriptions they often put the letter M, or "Maister," before their names.

NOTE E. p. 268.—I am not moved with the unfavourable representations which the partisans of Mary have given of the Regent Murray, nor am I surprised at the cold manner in which Mr. Hume has spoken of him; but I confess that it pains me to think of the manner in which Dr. Robertson has drawn his character. The faint praise which he has bestowed on him, the doubt which he has thrown over his moral qualities, and the unqualified censures which he has pronounced upon some parts of his conduct, have, I am afraid, done more injury to the Regent's memory, than the exaggerated accounts of his adversaries. History of Scotland, vol. ii. p. 315, 316. Lond. 1809. Having said this much, it will be expected that I shall be more particular. In addition to those qualities which "even his enemies allow him to have possessed in an eminent degree," Dr. R. mentions his humanity, and his distinguished patronage of learning, and impartial administration of justice. "Zealous for religion," he adds, "to a degree which distinguished him even at a time when professions of that kind were not uncommon." This is what every writer must have allowed, but it certainly is far from doing justice to this part of the Regent's character. His professions of religion were uniformly supported, in all the different situations in which he was placed; his strict regard to divine institutions was accompanied with the most correct and exemplary morals; his religious principle triumphed over a temptation which proved too powerful for almost all the Protestant nobility. (See above, p. 223.) When there exist such proofs of sincerity, to withhold the tribute due to it is injurious not only to the individual, but to the general interests of religion. After bearing a decided testimony to the "disinterested passion for the liberty of his country," which prompted Murray to oppose the pernicious system of the Princes of Lorraine, and the "zeal and affection" with which he served Mary on her return into Scotland, the historian adds: "But, on the other hand, his ambition was immoderate; and events happened that opened to him vast projects, which allured his enterprising genius, and led him to actions inconsistent with the duty of a subject." That his ambition was *immoderate* does not, I think, appear from any evidence which has been produced. Dr. R. has defended him from the charge as brought against him at an earlier period of his life, and we have met with facts that serve to corroborate the defence. (See above, p. 384.) The "vast projects" that opened to him must be limited to the attainment of the Regency; for I do not think that Dr. R. ever for a moment gave credit to the ridiculous tales as to his design of setting aside the young King, and seating himself upon the throne. His acceptance of the Regency cannot be pronounced "inconsistent with the duty of a subject," without determining the question, Whether the nation was warranted, by the misconduct and crimes of Mary, in removing her from the Government, and crowning her son. "Her boldest advocates," says Mr. Laing, "will not venture to assert, that, on the supposition of the fact being fully proved that she was notoriously guilty of her husband's murder, she was entitled to be restored." History of Scotland, i. 137. Second edition. Murray was fully satisfied of her guilt before he accepted the Regency. Never was any person raised to such a high station with less evidence of his having ambitiously courted the preferment. Instead of remaining in the country to turn the embroiled state of affairs to his personal advantage, he, within two months after the murder of the King, left Scotland, not clandestinely, but after having asked and obtained leave. And whither did he retire? Not into England, to concert measures with that Court, or the more easily to carry on a correspondence with the friends whom he had left behind him, but into France, where his motions could be watched by the friends of Mary. Ibid. p. 59-61. The association for revenging the King's murder, and for the safety of the young Prince, the surrender of Mary, and her imprisonment in Lochleven, followed so unexpectedly and rapidly, that they could not proceed from his direction. When he returned to Scotland, he found that the Queen had executed formal deeds resigning the Government to her son, and appointing him Regent during his minority, and that the young Prince was already crowned. Hume, vol. v. Note K.

"His treatment of the Queen, to whose bounty he was so much indebted, was unbrotherly and ungrateful." To the charge of ingratitude, I can only reply, by repeating what I have said in the text, that all the honours which she conferred upon him were not too great a reward for the important services which he had rendered to her. How many persons have been celebrated for sacrificing parental as well as brotherly affection to the public good! The probable reasons for Murray's interview with the Queen at Lochleven have been stated by Mr. Laing, i. 119-121. But "he deceived and betrayed Norfolk with a baseness unworthy of a man of honour." To this harsh censure I may

oppose the opinion of Mr. Hume, who will not be suspected of partiality to the Regent. "Particularly, (says he, in a letter to Dr. Robertson, written after the publication of his History of Scotland) I could almost undertake to convince you that the Earl of Murray's conduct with the Duke of Norfolk was *no way* dishonourable." Stewart's Life of Robertson, apud History, ut supra, i. 158. See also "Part of a Letter from the Earl of Murray to L. B." inserted in vol. ii. Append. No. xxxiii.—"His elevation to such *unexpected* dignity inspired him with new passions, with haughtiness and reserve; and, instead of his natural manner, which was blunt and open, he affected the arts of dissimulation and refinement. Fond, towards the end of his life, of flattery, and impatient of advice, his creatures, by soothing his vanity, led him astray, while his ancient friends stood at a distance, and predicted his approaching fall." Certainly the facts stated by Dr. R. in the preceding part of this narrative, do not prepare the mind of his reader for these charges. The severity of the Regent's virtues had, indeed, been mentioned, and it had been asserted that his deportment had become distant and haughty. The authority of Sir James Melvil was referred to in support of this statement; and I am satisfied that it was upon his testimony chiefly that the historian proceeded, when he gave the above account of Murray's conduct during the latter part of his life. I submit to the reader the following remarks as to the degree of credit which is due to the authority of Melvil.

In the *first* place, there is every reason to think, either that Melvil's Memoirs have been unfaithfully published by the editor, or that the author acted unfaithfully, in the narrative which he has given of affairs from the Queen's marriage with Bothwell to the death of the Earl of Murray. I shall not take upon me to determine which of these is the most probable supposition, but I am of opinion that either the one or the other must be admitted. The charge which was brought against Queen Mary, of participation in the murder of her husband, with all the proofs produced in support of it, is suppressed, and studiously kept out of view, in the Memoirs. There is not one word in them respecting the celebrated letters to Bothwell, although they formed the grand vindication of the Regent and his friends. The same inference may be drawn from the ridiculous account given of the appearance made by the Regent before the commissioners at York, when he presented the nameless accusation against Mary, (Memoirs, 96, 97. Lond. 1683;) an account which is completely discredited by the journals of both parties, and which neither Hume nor Robertson thought worthy of the slightest regard. It is observable, that Melvil could not be ignorant of the real transaction, as he was present at York; and that the design of this, as well as of the subsequent part of his narrative, is to represent the Regent as weakly suffering himself to be duped and misled by designing and violent counsellors. Mr. Laing has adverted to both of these things as discreditable to the Memoirs. History, ut supra, i. 118.—I shall produce only one other instance of the same kind. Speaking of the Queen's marriage with Bothwell, he says: "I cannot tell *how* or by *what law* he parted with his own wife, sister to the Earl of Huntly." Mem. 80. Is it credible that one who was in the midst of the scene, and acquainted even with the secrets of State at that time, could be ignorant of that which was proclaimed to all the world! If it should be alleged that Melvil, writing in his old age, might have forgotten this glaring fact, (the excuse commonly made for his inaccuracies,) I am afraid that the apology will detract as much from the credibility of his Memoirs as the charge which it is brought to repel.

2. In estimating the degree of regard due to the censures which Melvil has passed on the Regent's conduct, we must keep in view the political course which he himself steered. Sir James appears to have been a man of amiable dispositions, whose mind was cultivated by the study of letters; but those who have carefully read his Memoirs must, I think, be convinced that his penetration was not great, and that his politics were undecided, temporising, and inconsistent. He was always at Court, and always tampering with those who were out of Court. We find him exposing himself to danger by dissuading his mistress from marrying Bothwell, and yet countenancing the marriage by his presence; a little after acting as an agent for those who had imprisoned the Queen, and yet intriguing with those who wished to set her at liberty; carrying a common message from the King's lords to the Earl of Murray upon his return out of France, and yet secretly conveying another message tending to counteract the design of the former; supporting Murray in the Regency, and yet trafficking with those who wished to undermine his authority. I do not call in question the goodness of his intentions in all this; I am willing to believe that a desire for the peace of the country, or attachment to the Queen

induced him to go between, and labour to reconcile the contending parties; but when parties are discordant, when their interests, or the objects at which they shoot, are diametrically opposite, to persevere in such attempts is preposterous, and cannot fail to foster and increase confusions. Who believes that the Hamiltons were disposed to join with the King's party, or that the latter, when unassured of the assistance of England, were not extremely anxious for a junction with them? Yet Melvil asserts the contrary. Mem. 85, 86. 90. Who thinks that there was the smallest feasibility in what he proposed to the Regent as "a present remedy for his preservation," or believes that Maitland would have consented to go into France, and Kircaldy to deliver up the Castle of Edinburgh? The Regent heard him patiently; he respected the goodness of the man, but he saw that he was the dupe of Maitland's artifices, and he followed his own superior judgment. For rejecting such advices as this (and not the religious proverbs, and political aphorisms, which he quoted to him from Solomon, Augustine, Isocrates, Plutarch, and Theopompus) has Melvil charged him with refusing the counsel of his oldest and wisest friends. Mem. 102-104.

3. What were the errors committed by the Regent which precipitated his fall? There are two referred to by Melvil; the imprisonment of the Duke and Lord Herries, and the accusation of Maitland and Balfour. Mem. 100, 101. In vindication of the former step, I have only to appeal to the narrative which Dr. Robertson has given of that affair. Vol. ii. p. 296-299. Maitland was at that time deeply engaged in intrigues against the Regent (Ibid. p. 307;) there is not a doubt that both he and Balfour were accessory to the murder of Darnley, (Laing, i. 28, 135. ii. 22;) and they were arrested and accused at this time in consequence of the recent confession of one of Bothwell's servants. (Ibid. ii. 37.)

4. Who were the unworthy favourites by whose flattery, and evil counsel, the Regent was led astray? Dr. Robertson mentions "Captain Crawford, one of his *creatures*." This is the same person whom he afterwards calls "Captain Crawford of Jordan-hill, *a gallant* and enterprising officer," who distinguished himself so much by the surprise of the Castle of Dumbarton. History, ii. 307-331. comp. Laing, ii. 297, 298. Morton, Lindsay, Wishart of Pittarow, Macgill of Rankeillor, Pitcairn, Abbot of Dunfermline, Balnaves of Hallhill, and Wood of Tilliedavy, were among the Regent's Counsellors.

5. Who were his old friends who lost his favour? They could be no other than Sir James Balfour, Maitland, Kircaldy, and Melvil himself. Of the two former I need not say a word. Kircaldy of Grange was a brave man, and had long been the intimate friend of the Regent; but he was already corrupted by Maitland, and had secretly entered into his schemes for restoring the Queen. Robertson, ii. 307. Of Melvil I have already spoken; nay, he himself testifies that the Regent continued to the last to listen to his good advices. "The most part of these sentences," says he, "drawn out of the Bible, I used to rehearse to him at several occasions, and *he took better with these at my hands, who he knew had no by-end, than if they had proceeded from the most learned philosopher*. Therefore, *at his desire*, I promised to put them in writing, to give him them to keep in his pocket; but he was slain before I could meet with him." Mem. 104. How this is to be reconciled with other assertions in the Memoirs, I leave others to determine. It required no great sagacity in his ancient friends to "predict his approaching fall," by *assassination*; when repeated attempts had already been made on his life, and some of them were privy to the design then formed against it; and it says little for their ancient friendship, that they "stood at a distance," and allowed it to be carried into execution.

There are three honourable testimonies to the excellence of the Regent's character which must have weight with all candid persons. The first is that of the great historian Thauus. He not only examined the histories which both parties had published concerning the transactions in Scotland, which made so much noise through Europe, but he carefully conversed with the most intelligent Scotsmen, Papists and Protestants, whom he had the opportunity of seeing in France. When this part of his history was in the press, he applied to his friend Camden for advice, acquainting him how much he was embarrassed, and that he was apprehensive of displeasing King James, who, he understood, was very hostile to Buchanan. "I do not wish," says he, "to incur the charge of imprudence or malignity from a certain personage who has honoured me with his letters, and encouraged me to publish the rest of my history, with the same candour, and regard for truth." Camden, in reply, exhorted him to use moderation, and told him the story which he

had received from his master, imputing the disturbances in Scotland chiefly to the ambition of Murray. Durand, *Histoire du XVI. Siècle*, tom. vii. contenant la Vie de Monsieur De Thou, p. 226-231. But notwithstanding the respect which he entertained for Camden, and the desire which he felt to please James, Thuanus found himself obliged, by a sacred regard to truth, to reject the above imputation, and to adopt in the main the narrative of Buchanan. I shall merely quote, from his answer to Camden, the character which he draws of Murray. Having mentioned the accusation brought against him, he says: "This is constantly denied by all the credible Scotsmen with whom I have had opportunity to converse, *not even excepting those who otherwise were great enemies to Murray on a religious account*; for they affirm that, religion apart, HE WAS A MAN WITHOUT AMBITION, WITHOUT AVARICE, INCAPABLE OF DOING AN INJURY TO ANY ONE, DISTINGUISHED BY HIS VIRTUE, AFFABILITY, BENEFICENCE, AND INNOCENCE OF LIFE; and that, had it not been for him, those who tear his memory after his death would never have attained that authority which they now enjoy." Ut supra, p. 248. and Bulkley's Thuanus, apud Laing, ii. 92. A second testimony of a very strong kind in favour of the Regent is that of Archbishop Spotswood. He must have conversed with many who were personally acquainted with him; he knew the unfavourable sentiments which James entertained respecting him, which had been published in Camden's Annals, and he had long enjoyed the favour of that monarch; yet, in his history, he has drawn the character of Murray in as flattering colours as Buchanan himself has done. The last testimony to which I shall appeal is the *Vox Populi*, strongly expressed by the title of *The Good Regent*, which is imposed upon him, and by which his memory was handed down to posterity. Had he, elated by prosperity, become haughty and reserved, or, intoxicated with flattery, yielded himself up to unprincipled and avaricious favourites, the people must soon have felt the effects of the change, and would never have cherished his name with such enthusiastic gratitude and admiration.

NOTE F. p. 271.—The Regent's monument is yet entire and in good order. It stands in that part of St. Giles', now called the *Old Church*, (the former aisle being taken into the body of the church when it was lately fitted up,) at the back of the pulpit, on the east side. At the top is the figure of an eagle, and below it "1570," the date of the erection of the monument. In the middle is a brass plate, on which the following ornaments and inscriptions are engraved: The family arms, with the motto, "Salus per Christum" (Salvation through Christ). On the one side of the arms, is a female figure with a cross and Bible, the word "Religio" above, and below "Pietas sine vindice luget," (Piety mourns without a defender;) on the other side, another female figure, in a mourning posture, with the head reclining on the hand, the word "Justicia" above, and below "Jus exarmatum est" (Justice is disarmed.) Underneath is the following inscription or epitaph:

23 JANVARI 1569.

JACOBO • STOVARTO • MORAVIÆ • COMITI • SCOTIÆ •
 PROREGI • VIRO • ÆTATIS • SVÆ • LONGE • OPTIMO •
 AB • INIMICIS • OMNIS • MEMORIÆ • DETERRIMIS •
 EX • INSIDIIS • EXTINCTO • CERV • PATRI •
 COMMVNI • PATRIA • MOERENS • POSVIT .

To James Stuart, Earl of Murray, Regent of Scotland, by far the best man of his age, treacherously cut off by enemies of most detestable memory, his grieving country hath erected this monument, as to a common father.

Knox, among others, warned the Regent of the designs which his enemies had formed against his life. "When the Mr. of Grahame come and drew him to Dumbartane, he planelie said to the Regent then, that it was onlie done for a trane be that meanis to cut him off, as it come to pas; also when he was in Stirveling, being returned from Dumbartane, he sent me to my ladie the Regentis wyfe, tuo sundrie tymes, and desyrit her to signifie my lord her husband, that he suld not come to Lynlythgow. So that gif his counsall had bene followed, he had not died at that tyme. And my ladie the last tyme

sent Mr. Jhone Wood, to desyre him to avoid Lynlythgow. But God thocht vs not worthy of sic a rewlare above vs, and also he wald therby have the wickitnes of vtheris knawin, whilk then was hid; and therefore did God then tak him fra us. But lat the Hamiltonis, the Lard of Grange, with the rest of that factione, lay thair compt and reckon thair advantage and wining since." Bannatyne's Journal, p. 428, 429. The intrepidity of Murray prompted him to despise these prudential admonitions, and defeated the precaution of his friends.

Mr. Scott has, by a poetical license, introduced the Reformer as present at Linlithgow, to grace the Regent's fall.

From the wild Border's humbled side,
In haughty triumph marched he,
While Knox relaxed his bigot pride,
And smil'd the traitorous pomp to see.

Ballads and Lyrical Pieces, p. 32. Edin. 1810.

PERIOD EIGHTH.

NOTE A. p. 284.—The Scottish Reformers never ascribed or allowed to civil rulers the same authority in ecclesiastical matters which the English did. In particular, they resisted from the beginning the claim of ecclesiastical supremacy granted to the English monarchs. In the Booke of the Universall Kirk, we find that in Session 3d, July 7th, 1568, "It was declared and fund, that Thomas Bassendie, printer in Edinburgh, printed ane book, intituled the Fall of the Roman Kirk, nameing our King and Sovereigne supream Head of the primitive Kirk. Also, that he had printit ane Psalme Book, in the end whereof was fund printed ane baudy song callit Wellcome Fortune; whilk books he had printed without licence of the magistrat or revising of the Kirk: Therefore, the haill Assembly ordained the said Thomas, to call in againe all the forsaid books that he has sauld, and keep the rest unsauld untill he alter the foresaid title, and also that he delait the said baudy song out of the end of the Psalme Book; and farther, that he abstaine in all tyme coming from further printing any thing without licence of the supream magistrate, and revising of sic things as pertaine to religione be some of the Kirk appointit for that purpose. Attour, the Assemblie appointit Mr. Alexander Arbuthnot to revise the rest of the foresaid tractat, and report to the Kirk what doctrine he finds therein." Booke of the Universall Kirk, p. 100-101. The General Assembly were frequently occupied in settling the bounds between civil and ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and in March 1570-1, arranged the objects which pertained to the latter under six heads; including, among other things, the judgment of doctrine, administration of divine ordinances, the election, examination, admission, suspension, &c. of ministers, and all cases of discipline. The following is the concluding article: "And because the conjunction of marriages pertaineth to the ministrie, the causis of adherents and divorcements aucht also to pertaine to thame, as naturallie annexit thairto." Booke of the Universall Kirk, p. 51. Actes of the Generall Assemblies, prefixed to The First and Second Booke of Discipline, printed anno 1621, p. 3, 4.

On occasion of some encroachments made on the liberties of the church in 1571, John Erskine of Dun, superintendent of Angus and Mearns, addressed two letters to the Regent Mar. They are written in a very clear, spirited, and forcible style, contain an accurate statement of the essential distinction between civil and ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and should be read by all who wish to know the early sentiments of the Church of Scotland on this subject. See Bannatyne's Journal, p. 279-290.

From the earliest period, the Church of Scotland adhered to the principle that ministers of religion should not hold civil offices. The first General Assembly (Dec. 1560) agreed to petition the Estates, to "remove ministers from civil offices, according to the canon law." Buik of the Universall Kirk, p. 2. At the request of the Regent Mar, the assembly, or convention, which met at Leith in January, 1571-2, allowed Mr. Robert Pont, on account of his great knowledge of the laws, to act as a Lord of Session. Booke of the Universall Kirk, p. 54. But in March, 1572-3, the Regent Morton having laid before them a proposal for appointing some ministers Lords of Session, the Assembly "votit throughout, that naine was able nor apt to bear the saides twa charges." They therefore prohibited any minister from accepting the place

of a senator; from this inhibition they, however, excepted Pont. Ibid. p. 56. In 1584, Pont resigned his place as a Lord of Session, or rather was deprived of it, in consequence of the act of Parliament passed that year, declaring that none of the ministers of God's word and sacraments "in time cuming sall in ony waies accept, use, or administrat ony place of judicature, in quhatsumever civil or criminal causes, nocht to be of the Colledge of Justice, Commissioners, Advocates, court Clerkes or Notaris in ony matteris (the making of testaments onely excepted.)" Skene's Acts, fol. 59. b." Edinburgh, 1597. Lord Hailes' Catalogue of the Lords of Session, p. 5. and note 34.

NOTE B. p. 293.—The following particulars refer to the time of Knox's residence at St. Andrew's. "This yeir in the moneth of July, Mr. Jhone Davidsons, an of our regents, maid a pley at the marriage of Mr. Jhone Colvin, quhilk I saw playit in Mr. Knox presence, wharin, according to Mr. Knox doctrine, the Castle of Edinburgh was besieged, takin, and the captin, with ane or twa with him, hangit in effigie," p. 24. This seems to have been an exercise among the students at the University. The following extract shews that the fine arts were not uncultivated, and that the professors and students attended to them in their recreations: "I learnit singing and pleying on instrumentis passing weill, and wald gladlie spend tyme, whar the exercise thairof was within the collag; for twa or thrie of our condisciples pleyed fellin weill on the virginals, and another on the lut and githorn. Our Regent had also the pinalds in his chalmer, and lernit sum thing, and I efter him." Melville adds, that his fondness for music was, at one period, in danger of drawing away his attention from more important studies, but that he overcame the temptation, p. 25.

I may add an extract from the same Diary, relating an incident in the life of one who entertained a high respect for Knox, and afterwards became a distinguished minister in the church. "The ordor of four kirks to a minister, then maid be the Erle of Morton, now maid Regent, against the quilk Mr. Jhone Davidsons, an of the regents of our collag, maid a buik called *The Conference betwixt the Clark and the Courtier*; for the quhilk he was summoned befor the Justice Air at Haddinton this winter [1573] the lest of our course, and banished the countrey," p. 24. The General Assembly, in October 1577, presented a supplication to the Regent Morton, requesting him to allow Mr. Davidson to return home from England. Booke of the Universall Kirk, p. 70.

As the name of John Craig has been repeatedly introduced, and as he held the appointment of colleague to our Reformer, a short account of him will not be deemed uninteresting or out of place. He was born in the year 1512, and soon after lost his father in the battle of Flodden. After finishing his education at the University of St. Andrew's, he went to England, where he became tutor to the family of Lord Dacres; but war having broken out between the two kingdoms, he returned to his native country, and entered into the order of Dominican friars. The Scottish clergy being at that time making strict inquisition for Lutherans, Craig fell under the suspicion of heresy, and was thrown into prison; but the accusation was found to be groundless, and he was set at liberty. Although still attached to the Roman Catholic religion, the bigotry and licentiousness of the clergy so disgusted him at his native country, that he left it in 1537, and after remaining a short time in England, went to France, and from that to Italy. At the recommendation of Cardinal Pole, he was admitted among the Dominicans in the city of Bologna, and was soon raised to an honourable employment in that body. In the library of the Inquisition, attached to the monastery, he found a copy of Calvin's Institutions, which he read; and the consequence was, that he became a thorough convert to the reformed opinions. This change of sentiments, he could not refrain from imparting to his associates, and had not the friendship of a Father in the monastery saved him, he must have fallen a sacrifice to the vigilant guardians of the faith. The old man, who was a native of Scotland, advised him to retire immediately to some Protestant country, and with this prudent advice he complied so far as to procure his discharge from the monastery.

On leaving Bologna, Craig became tutor in the family of a neighbouring nobleman, who had embraced Protestant principles; but within a short time after, both he and his host were delated for heresy, seized by the officers of the Inquisition, and carried to Rome. After being confined nine months in a noisome dungeon, Craig was brought to trial, and, along with some others, condemned to be burnt, on the 20th of August, 1559. On the evening

preceding the day appointed for their execution, the reigning pontiff, Paul IV. died; and, according to an accustomed practice on such occasions, the prisons in Rome were all thrown open. While those who were confined for debt and civil offences were liberated, heretics, after being allowed to go without the walls of their prison, were conveyed back to their cells. A tumult, however, having been raised that night in the city, Craig and his companions effected their escape, and concealed themselves in a house at a small distance from Rome. They had not been long there when they were followed by a company of soldiers, sent to apprehend them. On entering the house, the captain, staring Craig in the face, took him aside, and asked him if he recollected of once relieving a poor wounded soldier in the vicinity of Bologna. Craig, in his confusion, admitted that he did not remember the circumstance. "But I remember it," replied the captain, "and I am the man whom you relieved, and Providence has now put it in my power to return the kindness which you shewed to a distressed stranger. You are at liberty; your companions I must take along with me, but, for your sake, shall shew them every favour in my power." He then gave him what money he had upon him, with directions how to make his escape.

These are not the only wonderful events in the life of Craig. "Another accident," says Archbishop Spotswood, "befell him, which I should scarcely relate, so incredible it seemeth, if to many of good place he himself had not often repeated it as a singular testimony of God's care of him." In the course of his journey through Italy, while he shunned the public roads, and took a circuitous route to escape from pursuit, the money which he had received from the grateful captain failed him, and having laid himself down by the side of a wood to ruminate on his forlorn condition, he perceived a dog approaching him with a purse in its teeth. It occurred to him that it had been sent by some evil-disposed person who was concealed in the wood, and wished to entrap him into a quarrel. He therefore endeavoured to drive the animal away, but as it continued to fawn upon him, he at last took the purse, and found in it a sum of money which enabled him to prosecute his journey. Having reached Vienna in safety, and announced himself as a Dominican, he was employed to preach before the Archduke of Austria, who afterwards wore the imperial crown, under the title of Maximilian II. That prince, who was not unfriendly to religious reform, was so much pleased with the sermon, that he was desirous of retaining Craig; but the new Pope, Pius IV. having heard of his reception in the Austrian capital, applied to have him sent back to Rome as a condemned heretic; whereupon the Archduke dismissed him with a safe conduct. When he arrived in England, in 1560, and was informed of the establishment of the Reformed religion in his native country, he immediately repaired to Edinburgh, and was admitted to the ministry. Having in a great measure forgotten his native language during an absence of twenty-four years, he preached for a short time in Latin to some of the learned in Magdalene chapel. He was afterwards appointed minister of the parish of Canongate, where he had not officiated long, till he was elected colleague to Knox, as has been already stated. Row, *MS. Historie of the Kirk*, p. 47. Spotswood, p. 463-4. Row mentions that he had his information from several persons who had heard Craig himself relate the story, and particularly from his widow, "dame Craig," who survived her husband, and lived in Edinburgh until 1630. Craig, upon his removal from Edinburgh, went to Montrose. After continuing there two years he was removed to Aberdeen, and had the inspection of the churches in Buchan and Mar committed to him. In 1579, he was called to be the King's minister, which situation he held until his death. Spotswood, 464. The General Assembly, July 1580, when informed of the choice which his Majesty had made, "blessed the Lord, and praised the King for his zeal." Row's *MS. Historie*, 47; of copy in the Divinity Library, Edinburgh. In a paper given in by the King to the Assembly, 27th June 1591, it is said that "Mr. John Craig is awayting quhat hour it sall please God to call him, and is altogether unhabile to serve any longer." *Booke of the Univ. Kirk*. Petrie, ii. 509. Spotswood says that he died at Edinburgh Dec. 12, 1600, in the 88th year of his age. A similar account is given by Row, who says that he received it "from the wife of Mr. Craig, who survived her husband a long time, living in Edinburgh until the year 1630, where she was well known under the name of Dame Craig." *MS. Historie*, ut supra, compared with a copy transcribed in 1726. Mr. Craig is well known as the person who drew up the *Catechism*, appointed by the General Assembly to be used in churches and families, and the *National Covenant*, so frequently sworn and renewed in Scotland.

NOTE C. p. 310.—Beza has inserted no verses to the memory of our Reformer, in the account which he has given of him in his *Icones, id est, Veræ Imagines Virorum Doctrina simul et Pietate Illustrium*, published by him in Latin, anno 1580. E e, iij. But “of this work, a French version was published under the title of *Les Vrais Pourtraits des Hommes Illustres en Pieté et Doctrine*. Geneve, 1581, 4to. In the translation are inserted original verses on Knox, &c.” Irving’s *Memoirs of Buchanan*, p. 234. Having never seen this translation, I cannot say whether the verses which it contains coincide with those which I am about to quote, or not.

Jacobus Verheiden published “*Præstantium aliquot Theologorum, qui Romæ Antichristum oppugnant, Effigies, quibus addita eorum Elogia, librorumque Catalogi*. Hag. Comit. 1602. A new edition of this was published by Fredericus Roth-Sholtz, under the title of “*Jacobi Verheidenii Haga-Comitis Imagines et Elogia, &c. Hagæ-Comitum, Aº. 1725.*” In this work the following lines are placed under the portrait of Knox:—

Scottorum primum te Ecclesia, CNOXE, docentem,
Audiit, auspiciis estque redacta tuis.
Nam te cælestis pietas super omnia traxit,
Atque Reformatæ Religionis amor.

To thee, Knox, the Scottish Church listened as her first instructor, and under thy auspices was restored. For celestial piety, and love of the Reformed religion, attracted thee above all things.

To the account of his life and writings, in the same work, is added an *epigram*, in Greek, and in Latin, which, according to a common custom in such compositions, consists of a play upon the sound of his name, and that of his country, in the way of contrast; representing Knox as driving the *nocturnal* crows, or Scotican sophists from Scotland. As the author informs us that the *Batavian youth* amused themselves in making these epigrams, and thinks that some of them will amuse the reader, I shall not withhold this specimen in both languages.

Νυκτερίδας, νυκτὸς κόρακας, καὶ νύκτα αφειγγῇ,
“Ἄλλα τε λυγρὸν Ἡὼς φεύγει ἀλεξίκακος.
Οὕτως μὲν ΚΝΟΞΟΣ Σκοτικὸὺς δυοφερούς πε σοφιστὰς
Εν Σκοτίῃ πάτερη ἐκβαλε λαμπόμενος.

Nocturnos corvos, noctem obscuramque, volantes
Mures, Aurora ut cetera dira fugat;
Sic Cnoxvs Scoticos simul obscurosque Sophistas
Ex Scotica lucens ejicit hic patria.

Verheidenii Imagines et Elogia, p. 69, 70. Hagæ-Comitum, 1725.

Davidson and Johnston both wrote verses to the memory of Knox; and in the Appendix will be found a long poem in the Scottish language, entitled, “Ane brief Commendatioun of Vprichtness,” also to the memory of our Reformer.

NOTES D. p. 311. and E. p. 316.—The slanders propagated by the Papists against our Reformer’s character have been stated in Note P. Period Sixth. After the specimen there given, it will not be expected that I shall dwell upon the equally extravagant and incredible accounts which they circulated concerning the manner of his death. I shall, however, abridge the account of Archibald Hamilton, the original picture from which so many copies were taken. “The opening of his mouth (he says) was drawn out to such a length of deformity, that his face resembled that of a dog, as his voice did the barking of that animal. The voice failed from that tongue, which had been the cause of so much mischief, and his death, most grateful to his country, soon followed. In his last sickness, he was occupied not so much in meditating upon death, as in thinking upon civil and worldly affairs. When a number of his friends, who held him in the greatest veneration, were assembled in his chamber, and anxious to hear from him something tending to the confirmation of his former doctrine, and their comfort, he perceived that his death approached, and that he could gain no more advance from the pretext of religion, disclosed to them the mysteries of that Savoyan art, (*Sabaudicæ disciplinæ*, magic,) which he

had hitherto kept secret; confessed the injustice of that authority which was then defended by arms against the exiled Queen, and declared many things concerning her return, and the restoration of religion after his death. One of the company who had taken the pen to record his dying sayings, thinking that he was in a delirium, desisted from writing, upon which Knox, with a stern countenance, and great asperity of language, began to upbraid him. "Thou good for nothing man! why dost thou leave off writing what my presaging mind foresees as about to happen in this kingdom! Dost thou distrust me? Dost thou not believe that all which I say shall most certainly happen? But that I may attest to thee and others how undoubted these things which I have just spoken are, Go out all of you from me, and I will in a moment confirm them all by a new and unheard-of proof.—They withdrew at length, though reluctantly, leaving only the lighted candles in the chamber, and soon returned, expecting to witness some prodigy: when they saw the lights extinguished, and his dead body lying prostrate on the ground." Hamilton adds, that the spectators, after recovering from their astonishment, replaced the dead body in the bed, and entered into an agreement to conceal what they had witnessed; but God, unwilling that such a document should be unknown, disclosed it, "both by the amanuensis himself, [Robertus Kambel a Pinkincleugh,] soon after taken off by a similar death, and by others, although unwillingly, making clear confessions." De Confusione Calvin. Sectæ apud Scotos, fol. 66, 67. Those who have not access to the work itself, will find the original words extracted, although with some slight inaccuracies, by Mackenzie. Lives of Scottish Writers, iii. 131, 132. "All the rest of the Romish writers (says Mackenzie) insist upon such like ridiculous stories that are altogether improbable." Hamilton's fabrications gave occasion, however, to the publication of that minute and satisfactory narrative of the last illness and death of Knox, drawn up by one who waited on him all the time, and added by Principal Smeton to the answer which he made to that virulent writer. See above, p. 297. Yet the Popish writers continued to retail Hamilton's story until a late period. It was published by Knot in his *Protestancy Condemned*, Douay, 1654; and in *The Politician's Catechism*, printed at Antwerp, 1658. *Permissu Superiorum*. Those who wish to see the variations which it had undergone by that time, may be satisfied by looking into Strype's Life of Archbishop Parker, p. 367.

"The miserable, horrible, detestable, and execrable deaths" of Luther, Calvin, and other heretics of that time, are particularly recorded by James Laing, in the work to which I have repeatedly referred.

NOTE F. p. 326.—The two sons of our Reformer, Nathanael and Eleazar, were enrolled in the matriculation-book of the University of Cambridge, December 2, 1572, eight days after their father's death. *Nathanael*, the eldest, was made Bachelor of Arts, anno 1576, admitted Fellow of St. John's College in 1577, made Master of Arts in 1580, and died the same year. *Eleazar*, the youngest son, was made Bachelor of Arts in 1577, admitted Fellow of St. John's College, March 22, 1579, made Master of Arts in 1581, was one of the preachers emitted by the University in 1587-8, made Vicar of *Clacton-Magna*, May, 1587, and created Bachelor of Divinity in 1588: he died in 1591, and was buried in the chapel of St. John's College, Cambridge. Newcourt's Repert. Lond. ii. 154. and Communications from Mr. Thomas Baker, apud Life of Knox, prefixed to his History of the Reformatioun, edit. anno 1732. p. xli. xlii.—The Assembly, considering that the traueills of umqwhill John Knox, merits fauourably to be remembrit in his posteritie, Giues to Margaret Stewart, his relict, and her three daughters of the said unquhill Johne, the pensione qwhilk he himself had in his tyme of the Kirk; and that for the year next approachand, and following his deceis of the year of God 1573, to their education and support, extending to ffyve hundred merks money, twa chalder wheat, sax chalder beir, four chalder eats.

The Kirk requestit the kirk of Edinburgh to provyde and appoint some learnit, to support Richard Bannatyne to put John Knox historie, that is now in scrolls and papers, in good forme; and because he is not able to await thereupone, upon his awne expenses, appoynts to him the soume of ffourty pound, to be payit of the 81 years cropt." Booke of the Univ. Kirk, p. 135. Peterkin's edition.

NOTE G. p. 327.—Mr. Matthew Crawford, in his Life of Knox, prefixed to the edition of his Historie, printed in 1732, thinks it improbable that Mrs. Pont was a daughter of Knox by his *second* marriage; "for no doubt," says

he, "Mr. Pont was an old man, before any of that marriage could be of age." P. xlii. It is now ascertained that it was Zachary Pont, one of Robert's sons, that married Knox's daughter. The following clause respecting his family appears in his answer to Tyrie: "Let thy mercyfull providence luke upon my desolate bed-fellow, the frute of hir bosome, and my two deir children, Nathanael and Eleezer." From this it appears that the two sons mentioned were the only children which he had, besides those who were born to him by his second wife. At the end of the volume of MS. Letters, in my possession, this prayer is inserted (but evidently by a different hand) under the title of "The last Will and Words of John Knox, at St. Andros, May 13, 1572." But in the preface to the publication above mentioned, he himself says—"I have added unto this preface a meditation or prayer throwin furth of my sorrowful heart, and pronounced be my half dead tounge, befor I was compelled to leave my flocke of Edinburgh, who now ar dispersed, suffering lytill les calamitie then did the faithfull efter the persecution of Stephen." After the prayer is this date, "At Edinburgh the 12 of March 1865, i. e. 1566, according to the modern reckoning; from which it appears that this prayer was composed by him when he left Edinburgh, as related in p. 253.

The name often occurs in the account of ecclesiastical transactions during the remainder of the sixteenth century. The writer of Additional Notes to Lord Hailes' Catalogue of the Lords of Session, calls him, by mistake, "the first presbyterian minister of the West Kirk, p. 8. Edinburgh, 1798." William Harlaw preceded him in that situation. Keith 498. At the request of the Regent Mar, the Assembly, or convention, which met at Leith in January 1571-2, allowed Mr. Robert Pont, on account of his great knowledge of the laws, to act as a Lord of Session. Buik of the Universal Kirk, p. 54. But in March 1572-3, the Regent Morton having laid before them a proposal for appointing some ministers Lords of Session, the Assembly "votit throughout that naine was able nor apt to bear the saides twa charges." They therefore inhibited any minister from accepting the place of a Senator; from this inhibition they however excepted Mr. Pont. Ibid. p. 56. He was commissioner of Murray, and provost of Trinity College, Edinburgh. Upon the death of the Earl of March, James VI. offered him the bishopric of Caithness, but he declined accepting it. Keith's Scottish Bishops, 129. He was the author of several publications, besides the Sermons "against Sacrilege" repeatedly mentioned.

The time of his death, and his age, appear from the following inscription on his tombstone, in St. Cuthbert's church-yard.

*Ille ego Robertus Pontanus, in hoc prope sacra
Christi qui fueram pastor gregis, auspice Christo,
Æternæ hic recubans exspecto resurgere vitæ.*

Obiit octavo die mensis Maii, Anno D. 1608. Ætatis 81.

Maitland's History of Edinburgh, 178, 179.

NOTE H. p. 328.—While in France, Mr. Welch applied himself with such industry to the acquisition of the language, that he was able, in the course of fourteen weeks, to preach in French, and was chosen minister to a Protestant congregation at Nerac, from which he was transferred to St. Jean d'Angely, a town in Lower Charente. War having broken out between Lewis XIII. and his Protestant subjects, St. Jean d'Angely was besieged by an army commanded by the King in person. Welch, whose courage seemed equal to his learning, not only animated the citizens to a vigorous resistance by his exhortations, but he took his post on the walls, and gave his assistance to the garrison. The town at length capitulated in consequence of a treaty, and the King being displeased that Welch preached during his residence in it, sent the Duke d'Espèrnon with a detachment of soldiers, to take him from the pulpit. When the preacher perceived the duke enter the church, he ordered his hearers to make room for the marshal of France, and desired him to sit down and hear the word of God, which his Grace did, and listened to the sermon with great attention. He then brought Welch before his Majesty, who asked him, how he durst preach there, since it was contrary to the laws of the kingdom for any Protestant to officiate in places where the Court resided. "Sir," replied Welch, "if your Majesty knew what I preached, you would not only come and hear it yourself, but make all France hear it; for I preach not as those men you use to hear. First, I preach that you must be saved by the merits of Jesus Christ, and not your own; and I am sure your conscience tells you that your good works will never merit heaven. Next, I preach, that, as

you are King of France, there is no man on earth above you ; but these men whom you hear, subject you to the Pope of Rome, which I will never do." Pleased with this reply, Lewis said to him, *He bien, vous seriez mon ministre* ; " Very well ; you shall be my minister ;" and addressing him by the title of Father, assured him of his protection. And he was as good as his word ; for St. Jean d'Angely being reduced by the Royal forces in 1621, the King gave directions to De Vitry, one of his generals, to take care of his minister ; in consequence of which Welch and his family were conveyed, at his Majesty's expense, to Rochelle. History of Mr. John Welch, p. 31-33. Edinburgh, 1703. Characteristics of Eminent Ministers, subjoined to Livingston's Life : Art. John Welch. Mr. Livingston received his account of the above transactions in France, from Lord Kenmure, who resided in Mr. Welch's house. The author of the History of Welch, says, that he received his information from the personal acquaintances of that minister. That work was drawn up by Mr. James Kirkton, who married a descendant of Knox, and consequently a relation of Mrs. Welch.

NOTE I. p. 331.—In the Preface to the Gentill Reidare prefixed to Knox's Historie, edit. 1732, we find that the Protestants were determined, for their own vindication, to publish a narrative of their proceedings, after they had come to an open breach with the Queen-Regent. The confusions produced by the civil war prevented them from executing this resolution at the time intended, and the object originally in view was in part answered by occasional proclamations which they had been obliged to make, and by answers which they had published to proclamations issued by the Regent. The design was not, however, laid aside ; and the person to whom the compilation was committed continued the narrative. The book which is placed second in the printed History was first composed. The third book was next composed, and contains a circumstantial account of the steps taken by the Congregation to obtain assistance from England, which it was judged imprudent to disclose when the former book was drawn up. It brings down the history to Queen Mary's arrival in Scotland. The book which occupies the first place in the printed History was composed after these, and intended as an introduction to them, bringing down the history from the first dawn of the Reformation in Scotland to 1558. See Preface to the Gentill Reidare, *ut supra*. The publication being still delayed, the fourth book was added, which contains the history of ecclesiastical transactions from the arrival of Mary to the end of 1564. The first and fourth books were composed during the years 1566, 1567, and 1568. Historie, pp. 86, 108, 282. Some additions were made to the fourth book so late as 1571. Ibid. p. 338. The fifth book in the printed history is not found in any of the ancient MSS. It was added by David Buchanan, but whether he published it from an old MS. or compiled it himself, cannot now be ascertained.

The History was composed by one person, (Preface, *ut supra*.) and there is no reason for doubting that Knox was the author. In a letter which he wrote on the 23d of October, 1559, he mentions the design of publishing it. Keith, Append. p. 30. The English ambassador, Randolph, says, in a letter to Cecil, dated Edinburgh, 23d September, 1560, " I have tawlked at large with Mr. Knox concernynge hys Historie. As mykle as ys wrytten thereof shall be sent to your honour, at the comynge of the Lord s embassadors, by Mr. John Woode : He hath wrytten only one booke. If yow lyke that, he shall contynue the same, or addie onie more. He sayethe, that he must have farther helpe than is to be had in this countrie, for more assured knouledge of thyngs passed, than he hath hymself, or can com bye here : yt is a worke not to be neglected, and greatly to be wyshed that yt sholde be well handled." Life of the Author, p. xliii. prefixed to Knox's Historie, edit. 1732. From a letter written by Knox to Mr. John Wood, and dated Feb. 14, 1568, it appears that he had come to the resolution of withholding the History from the public during his life. See Appendix. The important light in which he considered the work, appears from the way in which he expressed himself in April, 1571, when he found that the state of his health would not permit him to finish it. " Lord, provyde for thy flocks trew pastouris ; rease thou up the spretis of some to observe thy notable workis, faythfullie to commit the same to writ, that the prosperities [posterities] to come may praise thy holie name, for the great graces plentyfullie powred foorth upon this vnthankful generatione. Jhone Knox trusting end of trawell." Bannatyne's Journal, p. 129. He did not, however, desist altogether from the prosecution of the work. It appears from two letters of Alexander Hay, clerk to the privy council, written in December, 1571, that the Reformer had applied to him for papers to assist him in the continuation of his History. The papers which Hay proposed to

send him related to the years 1567—1571, a period which the printed history does not reach. Bannatyne, pp. 274—302.

The following petition, presented by Bannatyne to the first General Assembly which met after our Reformer's death, with the act of Assembly relating to it, gives the most satisfactory information respecting the History. "Unto your Wisdoms humbly means and shows, I, your servitor Richard Bannatyne, servant to your unquhill most dearest brother John Knox of worthy memory: That where it is not unknown to your Wisdoms, that he left to the kirk and town of Edinburgh his history, containing in effect the beginning and progress of Christ's true religion, now of God's great mercy established in this realm; wherein he hath continued and perfectly ended at the year of God 1564. So that of things done sinsyne, nothing be him is put in that form and order that he has put the former. Yet not the less there are certain scrolls and papers, and minuts of things, left to me by him, to use at my pleasure, whereof a part were written and subscribed by his own hand, and another be mine at his command, which if they were collected and gathered together, would make a sufficient declaration of the principal things that have occurred since the ending of his former history, at the year foresaid; and so should serve for stuff and matter, to any of understanding and ability in that kinde of exercise, that would apply themselves to make a history, even unto the day of his death. But for so meikle as the said scrolls are so intacked and mixed together, that if they should come in any hands not used nor accustomed with the same, as I have been, they should altogether lose and perish: And seeing also I am not able, on my own costs and expenses, to apply myself and spend my time to put them in order, which would consume a very long time; much less am I able to write them, and put them in register, as they require to be, without your wisdoms make some provision for the same: Wherefore I most humbly request your wisdoms, That I may have some reasonable pension appointed to me by your wisdoms discretion, that thereby I may be more able to await and attend upon the samine: lest these things, done by that servant of God dear to you all, should perish and decay, which they shall do indeed, if they be not put in register, which I will do willinglie, if your wisdoms would provide, as said is. And your wisdoms answer," &c. To this supplication the Assembly gave the following answer:—"The Assembly accepted the said Richard's offer, and request the kirk of Edinburgh, to provide and appoint some learned men, to support Richard Bannatyne, to put the said history, that is now in scrolls and papers, in good form, with aid of the said Richard. And because he is not able to await thereon, upon his own expences, appoints to him the sum of forty pounds, to be payd of the 1572 years crope, be the collectors under-written, viz. the collector of Lothian, Fife, Angus, and the West, Galloway, and Murray, every one of them to pay six pound thirteen shillings four pennies of the said crope; and it shall be allowed to them in count, they bringing the said Richard's acquittance thereupon." *Life of the Author*, p. xlv. xlv. prefixed to *Historie*, edit. 1732. *Booke of Univ. Kirk*, p. 56.

NOTE K. p. 331.—The following Catalogue of the Reformer's Works will, I trust, be found more correct and complete than any one which has hitherto appeared. The titles have been accurately copied from the books themselves, when I could possibly procure them, and at the end of each I have mentioned where a copy may be seen. For such as I could not get access to I have had recourse to the best authorities, as marked after each article. I have also noticed those of which there are copies in the MS. volume in my possession.

I. "An admonition, or warning, that the faithful Christians in London, Newcastle, Barwycke and others, may avoide God's vengeance both in thys life and in the life to come. Compyled by the servaunt of God, John Knokes." A cut of Truth, poor woman, handcuffed and fastened in the stocks, with a halter about her neck, held by Tyrannye, on the one hand; while Crueltye, with a cornered cap, is threatening hes with a rod, on the other. Beneath the cut, The persecuted speaketh—

"I fear not death, nor passe not for bands:
Only in God put I my whole trust,
For God will requyre my blod at your hands,
And this I know that once dye I must,
Only for Chryst, my lyfe if I give:
Death is no death, but a mean for to leyve."

Under these verses, in ancient writing, "John Frythe boke Red and send yt

agayne." E. in eights. "From Wittonburge by Nicholas Dorcastor. Anno M.D.LIIII. the viii of May. Cum Privilegio ad imprimendum solum." W. H. (Ames by Herbert, p. 1576.) sixteens. Comp. Tanneri Bibliotheca Britannico-Hibernica, p. 400. See Life, p. 79, note †.

2. "A faythfull admonition made by John Knox, unto the professours of God's truthe in England, whereby thou mayest learne howe God wyll have his churche exercised with troubles, and how he defendeth it in the same. Esaie ix. After all this shall not the Lordes wrath cease, but yet shall hys hande be stretched out styll. Ibidem. Take hede that the Lorde roote thee not out both heade and tayle in one daye."

On the back of title: "The epistle of a banyshed manne out of Leycestershire, sometime one of the preachers of Goddes worde there, to the Christen reader wyseth health, deliveraunce, and felicitie."

"Imprynted at Kalykow the 20 daye of Julii 1554. Cum gratia et privilegio ad Imprimendum solum." French black letter, extends to I. and makes 63 leaves. Advocates' Library. A copy of this in MS. Vol.

3. "A godly letter sent to the faythefull in London, Newcastle, Barwyke, and to all other within the realme of Englande, that love the coming of our Lorde Jesus by Jhon knox. Matth. x. He that continueth unto the ende shall be saved. Imprinted in Rome, before the Castel of S. Aungel, at the signe of Saint Peter. In the moneth of July, in the yeare of our Lord 1554." D. 28 leaves, Fr. bl. letter. Advocates' Library. A copy in MS. Vol.

4. "A confession and declaratiō of praiers added therunto, by Jhon Knox, minister of christes most sacred Evangely, upon the death of that moste famous King Edward the VI. kynge of Englande, Fraunce, and Ireland, in which confession, the sayde Jhon doth accuse no lesse hys owne offences, then the offences of others, to be the cause of the awaye takinge of that moste godly prince, nowe raigninge with Christ whyle we abyde plagues for our unthātfulnesse. Imprinted in Rome, before the Castel of S. Aungel, at the signe of Saint Peter. In the moneth of July, in the yeare of our Lorde, 1554." C. 19 leaves. Fr. black letter. Advocates' Library.

The "Confession" is inserted in Note G. Period Third. The "Declaration of Praiers" is in MS. Vol. see Note D. Period Second. Another edition was licensed 1580, see Ames, p. 1146.

5. "The Copie of a Letter sent to the ladye Mary Dowagire, Regent of Scotland, by John Knox, in the yeare 1556. Here is also a notable Sermon, made by the sayde John Knox; wherein is evidentlye proved that the masse is, and alwayes hath ben abhominable before God, and idolatrye. *Scrutumini Scripturas.*" (In sixty-four leaves, black letter,) 16mo.

"After that letter to Queen Mary, exhorting her to reform her church and prelates, follows the said Sermon, or Confession, which Knox, on the 4th of April 1550, made before the council, &c. among whom was present the Bishop of Durham, and his doctors; wherein our said author maintained the mass to be idolatry. And the whole concludes with his Declaration of the opinion we Christians have of the Lord's Supper." Catalogue of Pamphlets in the Harleian Library, Number iv. 105. Ames (p. 1587) introduces this book as printed in 1556, but without alleging any authority; and (p. 1834) he speaks of the Sermon against the Mass as printed in 1550, for which he quotes T. Baker's Maunsell, p. 101. All the tracts mentioned in this article are in MS. Vol.

6. "Ane exposition upon the syxth Psalme of David, wherein is declared hys crosse, complayntes, and prayers, moste necessarie too be red of all them, for their singular comforte, that vnder the banner of Christe are by Satan assaulted, and feel the heauye burthen of synne, with which they are oppressed. The paciente abydinge of the sore afflicted was neuer yet confounded," ends on the reverse of the last leaf of F. On G begins, "A comfortable Epistell sente to the afflicted church of Chryst, exhortynge thē to beare hys crosse with paciēce, lokyng euery houre for hys commynge agayne to the greate comfort and consolacion of hys chosen, with a prophecy of ye destruction of the wycked. Whereunto is joynd a most wholesome counsell, howe to behaue ourselues in the myddes of thys wycked generacion touching the daily exercise of God's most holy and sacred worde. Wrytten by the man of God, J. K." In the same volume, are two tracts by "Gracious Menewe," the first on "Auricular Confession," and the second, "Of the Communion in both kyndes." It has been conjectured that Knox wrote these under a fictitious name.

7. "The Copie of a Lettre delivered to the ladie Marie, Regent of Scotland, from Johne Knox, minister of Goddes worde, in the yeare of our Lord 1556,

and nowe augmented and explained by the author in the yeare of our Lord 1558." Device: two arches, one narrow, the other broad; over the narrow one is a crown of laurel, over the broad one flames of fire, with this motto about them, "Enter in at the streit gate: for wide is the gate, and brode is the waye, that leadeth to destruction, Matth. vii." Printed at Geneva, by James Pollain, and Antonie Rebul. M.D.LVIII. D, extends to 28 leaves. Rom. Letter, 16mo. Advocates' Library.

8. The First Blast of the Trumpet against the Monstruous Regiment of Wemen. *Veritas temporis filia*. M.D.LVIII. 56 leaves, Rom. Letter. Advocates' Library.

9. "The Appellation of John Knoxe from the cruell and most unjust sentence pronounced against him by the false bishoppes and clergie of Scotland, with his supplication and exhortation to the nobilitie, estates, and cōmunalitie of the same realme. Printed at Geneva M.D.LVIII." The Appellation is addressed "To the nobilitie and estates of Scotlād" only; the epistle "To his beloved brethren the cōmunalitie of Scotlād" annexed, begins at folio 47 and concludes at folio 59, "Be witness, to my Appellation.—From Geneva, the 14 of July, 1558. Your brother to commaunde in godlines, John Knoxe." On the back of which leaf begins: "An admonition to England and Scotland to call them to repentance, written by Antoni Gilby." On the back of leaf 78, Psalme of David xciii turned into metre by W. Kethe, ends on first page of folio 80—Rom. Letter, 16mo. Advocates' Library. It is a mistake to suppose that "Antoni Gilby" was a fictitious name assumed by Knox. Gilby was a member of the English church at Geneva. (See p. 107.) Ames mentions several publications by him. See also Tanneri Bibliotheca, p. 318.

10. "The copie of his (John Knox's) epistle, sent unto Newcastle and Barwick. (This was, perhaps, another edition of No. 3.) Also a brieve exhortation to Englande for the speedy embracing of Christes gospell, heretofore by the tyranny of Mary suppressed. Prin. at Geneva, 1559." Maunsell, p. 65. With a catalogue of Martyrs, 16mo. Ames, p. 1600. Comp. Tanner, p. 460.

11. "An Answer to a great number of blasphemous cauillations written by an Anabaptist, and adversarie to God's eternal Predestination; and confuted by Iohn Knox, minister of God's worde in Scotland: Wherein the Author so discouereth the craft and falshode of that sect, that the godly, knowing that error, may be confirmed in the treuth by the euident worde of God. Prov. xxx. There is a generatiō that are pure in their owne cōceit, and yet are not washed from their filthines. Printed by Iohn Crespin, M.D.LX." Rom. Letter, 454 pages. Advocates' Library. Another edition licensed 1580, and again printed in 1591. See Ames, p. 1196, 1254, 1263.

12. "Heir followeth the coppie of the ressoning which was betuix the Abbot of Crosraguell and John Knox in Mayboill concerning the Masse, in the yeare of God, a thousand five hundreth thre scoir and two yeares. Apocalips xxii. For I protest, &c. Imprinted at Edinburgh by Robert Lekpreuik, and are to be solde at his hous, at the nether bow. Cum privilegio, 1563." The running title is "The ressoning betwix Jo. Knox and the Abbote of Crossraguell." In the library of Alexander Boswell, Esq. of Auchinleck. See p. 219, 220.

13. "A Sermon preached by John Knox, minister of Christ Jesus, in the publique audience of the church of Edenbrough, within the realme of Scotland, upon Sondag the 19 of August, 1565. For the which the said John Knoxe was inhibite preaching for a season, 1 Tim. iv. The time is come that men cannot abyde the sermon of veritie, nor holsome doctrine. To this is adjoyned an exortation unto all the faithfull within the sayde realme, for the reliefe of such as faythfully trauayle in the preaching of Gods word. Written by the same John Knoxe, at the commandment of the ministrie aforesaid." 49 leaves; and 11 more, "Of the superintendents to the faithfull." No name of place, nor printer. Sixteens. Ames, p. 1488-89. Tanner, p. 460.

14. "To his loving brethren whome God ones gloriously gathered in the church of Edinburgh, and now are dispersed for tryall of our faith, &c. Johne Knox. Imprinted at Striviling be Robert Lekpreuik. Anno Do. M.D.LXXI." Rom. Letter, 4 leaves, 16mo. Advocates' Library.

15. "An Answer to a Letter of a Jesuit named Tyrie, be Johne Knox. Proverbs xxvi. Answer not a foole according to his foolishnes, least thou be lyke him: answer a foole according to his foolishness, least he be wise in his owē cōseat. The contrarietie appearing at the first sight betwix thir twa sentēcis, stayit, for a tyme, baith heart to meditate and hand to wryte any thing cōtrair that blasphemous letter. But when, with better mynd, God gave me

to consider, that whosoever opponis not him self bouldly to blasphemy and manifest leis, differis lytill fra traitouris: cloking and fostering, so far as in them ly, the treasoun of tratouris, and dampnable impietie of those, against whome Gods just vengeance mon burne without end, unless spedie repentance follow: To quyet therefore my owne conscience, I put hande to the pen as followeth:—Imprentit at Sanctandrois be Robert Lekpruik, Anno Do. 1572."—"Jhone Knox, the servand of Jesus Christ, now wearie of the world, and daylie luyking for the resolution of this my earthly tabernakle, to the faithful," &c. 3 pages. The Prayer, 3 pages, concludes, "Now, Lord, put an end to my miserie. At Edinburgh the 12 day of Marche 1565"—on next page begins "An Answer," &c. At the end "Of Edinburgh the 10 day of August, Anno Do. 1568." Next "To the Faithfull Reader"—ends "For as the worlde is wearie of me: so am I of it. Of Sanctandrois the 12 of Julii 1572. Johne Knox. Followeth the letter as it past from my hand at Diep the 20 Julii 1554. To his loving Mother, &c." (This letter is in MS. Vol.) In all 45 leaves. Rom. Letter. Advocates' Library.

16. "A Fort for the Afflicted. Wherein are ministred many notable and excellent remedies against the stormes of tribulation: Written chiefly for the comforte of Christes little flocke, which is the small number of the faithfull, by John Knoxe. John xvi. 23." This is an exposition upon the 6th Psalm. It has prefixed, an epistle "To the Religious Reader by Abr. Flemming."—"To his beloved mother J. K. sendeth greeting in the Lorde." At the end is "A comfortable epistle sent to the afflicted church of Christ, exhorting them to beare his crosse with patience, &c. Written at Deepe 31 May 1544." F 4, in eights. W. H. (Ames, p. 1118.) Tanner, (p. 460.) says it was printed "Lond. 1580." Both the Eposition and Epistle are in MS. Vol.

17. "Sermon on Ezekiel ix. 4. printed anno 1580." See a Catalogue of Writers on O. and N. Test. p. 107. Lond. 1663.

18. "A Notable and Comfortable exposition of M. John Knoxes upon the fourth of Matthew, concerning the tentations of Christ. First had in the public church, and *afterwards* written for the comfort of certaine private friends, and now published in print for the benefit of all that fear God. At London, printed by Robert Waldegrave for Thomas Man, dwelling in Pater-noster Row, at the signe of the Talbot." Advocates' Library. MS.

The words in Italics are supplied, the copy being torn in these places. The book is dedicated by "Johne Fielde," the publisher, to "the vertuous and my very godly friend Mres Anne Provze of Exeter," who was the widow of "M. Edward Derring," a celebrated non-conformist. Field was also a noted Puritan. See Bancroft's *Dangerous Positions*, b. iii. chap. 1-5. Field had received the MS. from Mrs. Prouze. At the end of the dedication is "London, the first day of the first moneth in the year 1583." The book consists of 24 leaves.

19. "The Historie of the Church of Scotland." Imperfect, beginning with p. 17. "BY THESE ARTICLES, which God of his merciful providence causeth the enemies of his truth to keep in their registers, &c." and ending with M m, p. 560. "For we judge it a thing most contrarious to reason, godlynes, and equitie, that the widow and the children of him who in;" being part of "the fift head" of the First Book of Discipline. 8vo. Advocates' Library. This edition is very rare, and none of the copies which have been seen are more complete than that which has been just described.

The following extracts give the best account which we have of the printing of this edition, and the cause of its imperfection. "February 1586, Vaultrollier the printer, took with him a copy of Mr. Knox's History to England, and printed twelve hundred of them; the stationers, at the Archbishop's command, seized them, the 18 of February." Calderwood's MS. apud Life of Knox, p. 45, prefixed to edition of Hist. Edin. 1732. "If you ever meet with the History of the Church of Scotland penned by Mr. Knox, and printed by Vaultrollier, read the pages quoted here in the margent." Bancroft's Survey, (originally printed about 1593,) republished 1663, p. 37.

In 1644, David Buchanan published his edition of Knox's History at London, in folio, which was reprinted the same year at Edinburgh in 4to. It would appear from Milton's words, formerly quoted, (p. 378,) that the publication of this edition had been opposed, and that it was in danger of being suppressed as well as the former. The editor prefixed a Preface concerning the antiquity of the Scots, and a Life of Knox, both of which were written by himself. He modernized the language of the History; but not satisfied with this, he also altered the narrative, by excluding some parts of it, and making interpolations of his own.

At length a genuine and complete edition of the History, as written by Knox, was published, under the following title: "The Historie of the Reformatioun of Religioun within the Realm of Scotland, conteining the Manner and be quhat Persons the Lycht of Chrystis Evangell has bein manifested unto this Realme, after that horribill and universal Defectioun from the Treuth, whiche has come by the Means of that Romane Antichryst. Together with the Life of Johne Knoxe the Author, (by Mr. Matthew Crawford) and several curious pieces wrote by him; particularly that most rare and scarce one entitled, *The First Blast of the Trumpet against the Monstruous Regiment of Women*, and a large Index and Glossary. Taken from the Original Manuscript in the University Library of Glasgow, and compared with other ancient Copies." Folio. Edinburgh, 1732.

The appearance of this edition removed all the doubts which had been entertained as to Knox having written the History of the Reformation. It is the only one which deserves to be consulted, if we except the imperfect edition. It has now become rare; and if another impression of it should be undertaken, I have no doubt that it might be made more correct, as several errors appear in it, which have arisen, most probably, from the transcriber being imperfectly acquainted with the old hand-writing. The reader should observe that the Fifth Book is not in the old MSS. but was added by the editors from D. Buchanan's edition; and there is no reason to think that it was composed by Knox. Those who wish a particular account of the variations between the edition of 1644, and that of 1732, are referred to Mr. Wodrow's Letter to Bishop Nicolson, a part of which is inserted by the latter, in his Scottish Hist. Library, p. 139-141. Lond. 1736, and the whole of it by Mr. Matthew Crawford, in his Life of Knox above mentioned.

Besides the above publications, which were all undoubtedly composed by our Reformer, there are others ascribed to him upon more dubious grounds. Bale, in his Scrip. Maj. Brit. post. pars. art. Knoxus, and Verheiden and Melchior Adam, upon his authority, appear, in several instances, to have given different names to the same tract. They mention among his printed works "In Genesen Consciones." We know that he preached sermons on Genesis at Franckfort, (p. 88.) and it is not unlikely that he continued to do so at Geneva. Bale, hearing of these, might think that they were published. Bishop Tanner has enumerated among his works, "Exposition on Daniel. Malburg. M.D.XXIX. 8vo." Bibliotheca, p. 460. As he mentions the place and year of printing, more credit is due to his account; but there is evidently a mistake in the year, for Knox had not at that time begun to write. It may however be an error of the press for a later year. We have seen (p. 280.) that he preached on Daniel, at St. Andrew's.

Another work, published during the reign of Queen Mary, entitled "The Huntynge of the Romish Woulfe," is alleged to have been ushered into the world with a preface written by Knox. Of this tract a new edition was printed in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, under the title of "The Hunting of the Fox and the Wolfe, because they make hauocke of the sheepe of Christ Jesus." This edition is introduced with a preface by an anonymous author, "To all my faithful Brethren in Christ Jesu, and to all other that labour to weede out the weeddes of poperie," &c. The writer of the preface is very severe against the relics of Popery retained in the worship of the Church of England by the Act of Uniformity. "My good fathers and deare Brethren, who are first called to ye battel to strive for God's glory and the edificatiō of his people, againste the Romish reliques, and rags of Antichriste, I doubt not but that you will courageously and constātly in Christ, rap at these rages of God's enemies, and that you will by this occasiō race vp many as great enormities, that we al know and labour to race out al the dregs and remnāts of transformed poperie, that are crept into England, by too much lenetie of the that will be named the Lords of the clergie," &c. This preface has been ascribed to our Reformer. "So far," says Herbert, "as one may be allowed to guess at the author by the style, &c. I am inclined to believe this address was written by John Knox, who for magnanimity, courage, and zeal for God's glory, was at least equal to any of our Reformers." This surmise is in some measure supported by the cut of Truth, &c. at the end of this tract; the same as prefixed to that author's Admonition or warning, &c. as p. 1576, except only the name of *Sutleti* being here given to the figure there inscribed *Crueltye*. Herbert's edition of Ames, pp. 1605, 1606.

I have not introduced into this catalogue the Form of Excommunication which was wholly, nor the Treatise of Fasting with the Letter added to it, which was chiefly, composed by Knox, nor any other of the public papers in

which he had a hand, but which were published in the name of the General Assembly.

In an epistle to the Reader contained in his Answer to Tyrie, Knox mentions that he had beside him a collection of letters which he had written to Mrs. Bowes, which he was prevented from publishing, merely by inability. It also appears from Field's Dedication prefixed to the Exposition of the Fourth of Matthew, (see p. 314.) that a number of our Reformer's manuscripts were in circulation both in England and Scotland. I have in my possession a manuscript volume, containing tracts and letters written by him between 1550 and 1558. This is unquestionably the identical volume which formerly belonged to the Rev. Mr. Wodrow, (author of the History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland), and described under the name of the *Quarto volume* of MSS. in Crawford's Life of Knox, p. 53, 54. prefixed to the edition of his Historie published in 1732. It consists of 518 pages, including the contents. On the leaf at the beginning of the volume is this title: "The Epistles of Mr. John Knox, worthy to be read because of the authority of the wryter, the solidity of the matter, and the comfortable Christian experience to be found therein. Edr. 22, feb. 1683. H. T. m. p." Below, in a hand considerably older, are these words: "This booke belong'd sometyme to Margaret Stewart, widow to Mr. Knox, afterward married to the knight of fawdone-syde. Sister shee was to James Earl of Arran." Then follow the six tracts described by Mr. Crawford, in the place above referred to. At the beginning of the Letters, in a hand older than the former, and the same with that in which the Letters themselves are written, is this title: "Certane epistillis and letters of ye servand of God, Johne Knox, send from dyvers places to his friendis and familiaris in Jesus Chryst." On the margin of the tracts are several short notes by the transcriber, referring to his own times, such as this, "our care at this day in Scotland, 1603." This ascertains the date of their transcription; and I think it highly probable that they were copied by Mr. John Welch, a son-in-law of the Reformer, one of whose letters is inserted on some blank leaves in the middle of the volume. The letters have evidently been written by the same person (although the hand appears older;) and on the margin of a treatise at the end of them, "1603" occurs. Margaret Stewart, the Reformer's relict, was alive about the end of the 16th century; but whether the manuscript in my possession belonged to her, or be considered as a transcript from hers, there can be no doubt of its antiquity and genuineness. I have found, upon examination, that all the six tracts in the beginning of the volume have been published; but as the manuscript is more correct than any of the printed editions which I have seen, have generally followed it in the extracts. The letters are forty-three in number, besides the letter to the Queen-Regent, the Discourse on the Temptation of Christ, and the Additions to the Apology of the Parisian Protestants, which are inserted among them. Two of the letters have also been published, and are noticed in Nos. 15 and 16 of this Catalogue: the remainder, as far as I can learn, never appeared in print. They consist chiefly of religious advices to the friends with whom he corresponded, but a number of facts, and allusions to his external circumstances, are interspersed. Mr. Wodrow possessed another volume of Knox's MSS. in folio, which is described by Crawford, p. 53, ut supra.

END OF THE NOTES.

APPENDIX,

CONSISTING OF

LETTERS OF THE REFORMER, AND OTHER PAPERS HITHERTO UNPUBLISHED.

No. I. [From MS. Letters, p. 243.] *

The firste letter to his mother in law, mestres Bowis.

Ryght deirlibelovit mother in oure saviour Jesus Chryst, when I call to mynd and revolve with my self the trubillis and afflictionis of Godis elect frome the begynning (in whiche I do not forget yow) thair is within my hart two extreme contrareis; a dolour almaist unspeakabill, and a joy and comfort whilk, be mannis sences, can not be comprehendit nor understand. The chief caussis of dolour be two; the ane is the remembrance of syn, whilk I daylie feill remanyng in this corrupt nature, whilk was and is sa odious and detestabill in the presence of oure hevenlie father, that be na uther sacrifice culd or myght the same be purgeit, except by the blude and deth of the onlie innocent sone of God. When I deiplie do consider the caus of Chrystis deth to have bene syn, and syn yit to dwell in all flesche, with Paule I am compellit to sob and grone as ane man under ane heavie burdene, ye, and sumtimes to cry, O wreachit and miserabill man that I am, wha sall delyver me fra this bodie of syn! The uther caus of my dolour is, that sic as maist gladlie wald remane togidder for mutuall comfort ane of another can not be sufferit sa to do. Since the first day that it pleasit the providence of God to bring yow and me in familiaritie, I have always delytit in your company, and when labours wald permit ye know I have not spairit houris to talk and commoun with yow, the frute whairof I did not than fullie understand nor perceave. But now absent, and so absent that by corporal presence nather of ws can resave comfort of uther, I call to mynd how that oftymes when with dolorous hartis we haif begun oure talking, God hath sent greit comfort unto baithe, whilk now for my awn part I commounlie want. The exposioun of your trubillis and acknowledging of your infirmitie war first unto me a verie mirrour and glas whairin I beheld my self so rychtly payntit furth that na-thing culd be mair evident to my awn eis. And, than, the searching of the scriptures for Godis sweit promissis, and for his mercies frelie givin unto miserable offenderis (for his nature delyteth to schew mercie whair maist miserie ringeth), the collec-tioun and applying of Godis mercies, I say, wer unto me as the breaking and handil-ling with my awn handis of the maist sweit and delectabill unguimentis, whairof I culd not but receave sum comfort be thair naturall sweit odouris. But now, albeit I never lack the presence and plane image of my awn wreachit infirmitie, yet seing syn sa manifestlie abound (in all estaitis) I am compellit to thounder out the threattnyngis of God aganis the obstinat rebellaris, in doing whairof (albeit as God knoweth I am no malicious nor obstinat synner) I sumtymes am woundit, knowing my self criminall and giltie in many, ye in all (malicious obstinacie laid asyd) thingis that in utheris I reprehend. Judge not, mother, that I wrait theis thingis debassing myself utherwayis than I am; na; I am wors than my pen can expres. In bodie ye think I am no adulterer; let sa be, but the hart is infectit with foull lustis and will lust albeit I lament never samekill. Externallie I commit na idolatrie; but my

* The first six Nos. are religious letters; the rest contain historical matter.

wickit hart luffeth the self, and cannot be refranit fra vane imaginatiounis, ye not fra sic as wer the fountane of all idolatrie. I am na mankiller with my handis; but I help not my nedic brother sa liberallie as I may and aucht. I steill not hors, money, nor claithis frae my nychbour; but that small portioun of warldlie substance I bestow not sa rychtly as his halie law requyreth. I beir na fals witnes aganis my nychbour in judgment or utherwayis befor men; but I speik not the treuth of God sa boldlie as it becumeth his trew messenger to do. And thus in conclusioun thair is na vyce repugnyng to Godis halie will expressit in his law whair-with my hart is not infectit.

This mekill writtin and dytit before the resait of your letteris, whilk I resavit the 21st of June. Thay war unto my hart some comfort for dyvers caussis not necessar to be rehersit, but maist (as knaweth God) for that I find ane congruence betwix ws in spreit being sa fer distant in bodie. ffor when that digestlie I did avys with your letter, I did considder that I my self was complenyng evin the self sam thingis at that verie instant moment that I resavit your letter. Be my pen ffrome a sorrowfull hart I culd not but brust furth and say, 'O Lord, how wonderfull ar thi workis! how dois thou try and prufe thi chosin children as gold by the fyre! how canest thou in maner hyd thi face fra thi awn spous, that thi presence efter may be mair delectabill! how canest thou bring thi sanctis lowe, that thou may carrie thame to glorie everlasting! how canis thou suffer thi strang faithfull messengeris in many thingis yit to wressil with wreachit infirmitie and febill weakness, ye and sumtymes permittis thou thame horribillie to fall, partlie that na flesche sall have whairof it may glorie befor the, and partlie that utheris of smaller estait and meaner giftis in thi kyrk myght resave sum consolatioun, albeit thay find in thame selves wicket motiouns whilk thay are not abill to expell!' My purpos was, befor I resavit your letter, to have exhortit you to pacience and to fast, adhering to Godis promisis albeit that your flesche, the divill, and uther your enemyis, wald persuad you to the contrare, for, by the artis and subteliteis that the adversarie useth aganis me, I not onlie do conjecture, but also plainelie dois sie your assaltis and trubil. And sa lykwys in the bowellis of Christis mercie maist ernistlie I beseik you by that infirmitie that ye knaw remaneth in me (wars I am than I can wryt) pacientlie to beir, albeit that ye haif not sic perfectioun as ye wald, and albeit also your motiounis be sic as be maist vyle and abominabill, yet not to sorrow abuf measure. Gif I, to whom God hes gevin greater giftis, (I wryt to his prais) be yit sa wrappit into miserie, that what I wald I can not do, and what I wald not that with sanct Paule, I say, daylie ye everie hour and moment I devys to do, and in my hart, ficht I never sa fast in the contrarie, I perform and do. Gif sic wreachit wickitnes remane in Godis cheif ministeris, what wonder albeit the same remane in yow. Gif Godis strangest men of war be beattin bak in thair face, that what thay wald thay can not destroy nor kill, is it any sic offence to yow to be tossit as ye compleane, that thairfoir ye suld distrust Godis frie promissis? God forbid, deir mother! the power of God is knawn be oure weaknes, and theis doloris and infirmiteis be maist profitabill to ws, for by the same is our pryde beattin down, whilk is not easie utherwayis to be done. By thame ar oure misereis knawin, sa that we acknowledging oure selves misterfull seikis the phesitioun. By thame cum we, be the operatioun of the halie spreit, to the hatred of syn, and by thame cum we to the hunger and thirst of justice, and to desyre to be desolued and sa to ring with oure Chryst Jesus, whilk without this battell and sorrow this flesche culd never do. And sa fra the doloris I proceid to the comfort.

As the caussis of dolour be two, whilk are present syn, and the lack of sic company as in whom we maist culd delyt, sa is the caussis of my comfort not ymaginit of my brane, but pronuncit first be God, and efter graffit in the hartis of Godis children by his halie spreit. Thay ar lykwys two; whilk is a justice inviolable offerit be our flesche befor the trone of oure heavinlie father, and ane assurit hoip of that generall assemblee and gathering together of Godis dispersit flok in that day when all teairis salbe wipit fra oure eis, when deth salbe vincuist, and may na mair dissever sic as feiring God this day in the flesche murnis under the burdene of syn. Off oure present justice, notwithstanding syn remane in oure mortall bodeis, ar we assurit by the faithfull witnes of Jesus Chryst, Johne the apostill, saying, "gif we confes oure synis, faithfull and just is God to remit and forgive our synnis." Mark the wordis of the apostill, gif we confes oure synnis God man forgive thame, becaus hie is faithfull and just. To confessioun of synnis ar theis thingis requisit, ffirst we man acknowledge the syn, and it is to be notit that sumtymes Godis verie elect, albeit they have synnit maist haynously, dois not acknowledge syn, and thairfoir can not at all tymes confes the same, for syn is not

knawin unto sictyme as the vale be takin fra the conscience of the offender, that hie may sie and behald the filthines of syn, what punisment be Godis just jugementis is dew for the sam. And then (whilk is the 2 thing requisit to confessione) begynnys the hatred of syn and of oure selves for contempnyng of God and of his halie law, whairof last springis that whilk we call hoip of mercie, whilk is nathing els but a sob fra a trubillit hart, confoundit and aschamit for syn, thristing remissioun and Godis frie mercie, whairupon of necessitie man follow this conclusioun, God has remittit and frielie forgevin the syn, and why? for "hie is faithfull and just," sayeth the apostill. Comfortabill and mervelous caussis! first, God is faithful, ergo hie man forgyve syn. A comfortable consequent upon a maist sure ground! for Godis fidelitie, can na mair faill nor can him self. Then lat this argument be gatherit for oure comfort; the office of the faithfull is to keip promeis; but God is faithfull, ergo he man keip promeis. That God hes promissit remissioun of synis to sic as be repentant, I neid not now to recit the places. But let this collectioun of the promissis be maid, God promissis remissioun of synis, to all that confessis the same; but I confes my synnis, for I sie the filthines thairof, and how justlie God may condemp me for my iniquities. I sob and lament for that I can not be quyt and red of syn, I desyre to leif a mair perfyt lyfe. Thir ar infallible signis, seillis, and takenis that God has remittit the syn, for God is faithfull that sa hes promissit, and can na mair deceave nor hie can ceis to be God. But what reasone is this, God is just, thairfoir he man forgyve syn? A wonderous caus and reasone in deid! ffor the flesche and naturall man can understand nathing but the contrar, for thus man it reasone: the justice of God is offendit be my synis, sa God man neidis have a satisfacioun, and requyre ane punisment. Gif we understand of whome God requyris satisfacioun, whether of ws, or of the handis of his onlie sone, and whais punisment is abill to recompens oure synnis, than sall we haif greit caus to reiose, remembering that God is a just God, for the office of the just man is to stand content when hie hes ressavit his dewtie. But God hes ressavit alredie at the handis of his onlie sone all that is dew for our synis, and sa can not his justice requyre nor craif any mair of ws ather satisfacioun or recompensatioun for our synnis. Advert, mother, the sure pilleris and fundatioun of oure salvation to be Godis faithfulness and justice. Hie that is faithful has promissit frie remissioun to all penitent synneris, and he that is just, hes ressavit alredie a full satisfacioun for the synis of all thais that imbrace Chryst Jesus to be the onlie saviour of the world. What restis than to ws to be done? nathing but to acknowledge oure miserie and wrechednes, whilk na flesche can do sa unfeinedlie as they that daylie feillis the wecht of syn. And uther, mother, caus haif we nane of desperatioun, albeit the divill rage never sa cruellie, and albeit the flesche be never sa fraill, daylie and hourlie lusting aganis Godis halie commandementis, ye, stryving aganis the same. This is not the tyme of justice befoir oure awn eis, we luke for that whilk is promissit, the kingdome everlasting, preparit to ws fra the begynning, whairof we are maid airis be Godis apoyntment, reabillit [*i.e. legitimated or restored*] thairto be Chrystis death, to whome we sall be gatherit, when efter we sall never depart, whilk to remember is my singular comfort, but thairof now I can not wryt. My commendationis to all whom effeiris. I commit you to the protectioun of the Omnipotent.

At Londoun the 23d of June, 1553, your sone unfeaned,

Johne Knox.

No. II. [MS. Letters, p. 333.]

To marjorie bowis wha was his first wyfe.

Deirlibelovit sister in the commoun faith of Jesus our saviour, the place of Johne forbidding ws to salut sic as bringeth not the hailsome doctrine, admonisseth ws what danger cumeth be fals teacheris, evin the destructioun of bodie and saule; whairfoir the spreit of God willeth ws to be sa cairfull to avoyd the company of all that teachis doctrine contrarie to the treuth of Chryst, that we communicat with thame in nathing that may appeir to manteane or defend them in thair corrupt opinioun, for hie that bidis thame Godspeid, communicatis with thair syn, that is, hie that apeiris be keeping thame company, or assisting unto thame in thair proceedingis to savour thair doctrine, is giltie befoir God of thair iniquitie, baith becaus hie doith confirme thame in thair error be his silence, and also confirmes utheris to credit thair doctrine, becaus hie opponis not himself thairto, and sa to bid thame Godspeid is not to speik unto thame commounlie as we for civill honestie to men

unknawn, but it is efter we have hard of their fals doctrine to be conversant with thame, and sa intreat thame as thay had not offendit in thair doctrine. The place of Jamis teachis ws, belovit sister, that in Jesus Chryst all that unfeandlie profes him ar equall befor him, and that ryches nor warldlie honouris ar nathing regairdit in his syght; and thairfoir wald the spreit of God, speiking in the apostill, that sic as ar trew christianis suld have mair respect to the spirituall giftis whairwith God had doteth his messingeris nor to externall ryches whilk oftymes the wicket possesis, the having whairof makis man nether nobill nor godlie, albeit sa judge the blind affectionis of men. The apostill dampneth sic as preferis a man with a golden chayne to the pure; but heirof will I speik no more. The spreit of God sall instruct your hart what is maist comfortable to the trubillit conscience of your mother, and pray ernistlie that sa may be. Whair the adversarie objectis, 'sche aucht not think wicket thoughts,' answer thairto that is trew; but seing this oure nature is corruptit with syn, whilk enterit be his suggestioun, it must think and wirk wicketlie be his assaltis, but hie sal beir the condigne punisment thairof, becaus be him syn first enterit, and also be him it doith continew whillis this karkais be resolved. And whair hie inquiryis what Chryst is, answer hie is the seid of the woman promissit be God to break downe the serpentis heid, whilk hie hath done alreadie in him self appeiring in this oure flesche, subject to all passionis that may fall in this oure nature onlie syn exceptit, and efter the death sufferit hie heth, be power of his godheid, rissin agane triumphant victour over death, hell and syn, not to him self, for thairto was hie na dettour, but for sic as thristis salvatioun be him onlie, whom he may na mair los, nor he may ceas to be the sone of God and the saviour of the world. And whair hie wald perswade that sche is contrarie the word thairunto, hie leis according to his nature, whairin thairin is na treuth; for gif sche wer contrarie the word, or denyit it, to what effect sa ernistlie suld sche desyre the company of sic as teacheth and professeth it. Thair is na dout but hie, as hie is the accusatour of all Godis elect, studieth to trubill her conscience, that according to hir desyre, sche may not rest in Jesus oure Lord. Be vigilant in prayer. I think this be the first letter that ever I wrait to you.

In great haist your brother,

Johne Knox.

No. III. [MS. Letters, p. 283.]

To his mother-in-law and his wife.

Fffrome the eis of his sanctis sal the Lord wype away all teiris and murnyng.

Dear mother and spous, unfeanidlie belovit in the bowellis of oure Saviour Chryst Jesus, with my very hartlie commendationis. I perusit baith your letteris, not only directit to me, but also it that sorrowfullie compleanis upon the unthankfulnes of your brother as also of myne, that ye suld not have bene equallie maid privie to my coming in the countrie with utheris, whairof the enemy wald perswad yow (ane argument maist fals and untrew) that we judge you not to be of our noumber. Deir mother, be not sa suddanlie moveit, hie is your enemy that sa wald perswad you. God I tak to recorde in my conscience, that nane is this day within the realme of England, with whome I wald mair gladlie speik (onlie sche whome God hath offerit unto me, and commandit me to lufe as my awn flesche, exceptit) than with you. For your causis principallie interprysit I this jurney; for hering my servand to be stayit, and his letteris to be takin, I culd na wys be pacifiet (for the maist part of my letteris was for your instructioun and comfort) till farther knowlege of your estait, and that ye wer na soner advertisit onlie want of a faithfull messinger was the caus; for my coming to the countrey, was sa sone noysit abroad, that with greit difficultie culd I be convoyit fra a place to another. I knew na sic danger as was suspectit be my brethrene; ffor as for my letteris in them is nathing conteanid, except exhortatioun to constancie in that treuth whilk God hes opinlie laid befor our eis, whilk I am not myndit to deny whenever sic questioun sal be demandit of me. But the caus moving me that ffor a tyme I wald have bene clos, was, that I purposit (gif sa had bene possible) to have spokin with my wyfe, whilk now I persave is nathing apeirand, whill God offer sum better occasioun. My brethren, partlie be admonitioun, and partlie by teiris, compellis me to obey sumwhat contrair to my awn mynd, for never can I die in a mair honest quarrell, nor to suffer as a witnes for that treuth whairof God hes maid me a messinger, whilk with hart I belive maist assur-

edlie, (the halie Gaist beiring witnes to my conscience) and with mouth I trust to God to confes in presence of the world the onlie doctrine of lyfe. Notwithstanding this my mynd, gif God sall prepair the way, I will obey the voce of my brethrene, and will gif place to the furie and rage of Sathan for a tyme. And sa can I not espy how that ether of yow baith I can speik at this tyme. But, gif God pleis preserve me at this tyme, whairof I am not yet resolved, then sal their lak in me na gud will, that ye may knaw the place of my residence, and farthir of my mynd. But now, dear mother, haif we caus to rejois, for oure heavenlie Father, wha callit us be grace to wryt in oure hartis the singis and seallis of our electioun in Chryst Jesus his sone, beginnis now to correct our cruikedness, and to mak us lyke in suffering afflictionis, schame and rebuke of the world, to the greit bischope of our saullis, wha by mekill tribulatioun did enter in his glorie, as of necessitie man everie ane to whome that kingdome is apoyntit. And thairfoir, mother, be nathing abasched of theis maist dolorous dayis, whilk schortlie sal have end to oure everlasting comfort. Thay ar not cropin upon ws without knowledge and foirsight; how oft have ye hard theis dayis foirspokin, thairfoir, now grudge not, but pacientlie abyde the Lords delivrance. Hie that foirspak the trubill, promissis everlasting pleasure by the same word; albeit the flesche complene, dispair nathing, for it must follow the awn nature, and it is not dampnabill in the syght of oure Father, albeit the corrupt fraill flesche draw bak and refuse the croce, for that is as naturall to the flesche, as in hunger and thirst to covet reasonable sustenance. Onlie follow not the affectionis to comit iniquytie; nether for feir of deth, nor for love of lyfe, comit ye idolatrie, nether yit gif your presence whair the same is committit, but hait it, avoid it, and fle frome it. But your leter makis mention that ye haif pleasure and delyt in it: na, mother, I espy the contrairie, for ye compleane and lament that sic motions ar within you; this is na sign that ye delyt in thame, for na man compleanis of that whairin hie delytis. Ye ar in na wors cas, tuiching that point, nor yet tuiching any uther whairof ye desyre to be red than was the apostill, when with gronyng and angusche of hart hie did cry, 'O unhappie man that I am, wha sal delyver me fra this bodie of syn:' reid the haill chapter, and gif glorie to God that lettis you knaw your awn infirmitie, that from Chryst allone ye may be content to ressave that whilk never remanit in corruptibill flesche, that is the justice whilk is acceptabill befoir God, the justice by faith and not by workis, that ye may glorie in him wha frelie gives that whilk we deserve not. And thus nether feir that, nor uther assaltis of the divill, sa lang as in bodie ye obey not his persuasionis. Schortnes of tyme, and multitude of cairis, will not let me wryt at this present sa plentifullie as I wald. Ye will me to charge you in suche thingis as I mister. God grant that ye may be abill to releif the nedic; ye may be sure that I wald be bold upon you, for of your gude hart I am persuadit, but of your power and abilitie I greitlie dout. I will not mak you privie how ryche I am, but off Loundoun I departit with les money than ten grottis, but God hes sence provydit, and will provyd I dout not heirefter abundantlie for this lyfe. Ather the quenis majestie or sum theasurer will be XL pounds rycher by me for samekill lack I of dewtie of my patentis. But that litill trubillis me. Rest in Chryst Jesus. your sone,

1553.

Johne Knox.

No. IV. [MS. Letters, p. 303.]

To his mother-in-law, Mrs Bowis.

Blissit be thais that mourne for ryghteousnes sake, &c.

Belovit mother, with my hartlie commendatioun in the Lord. Let not your present dulnes discourage yow above measure: the wisdom of our God knawis what is maist expedient for our fraill nature; Gif the bodie suld always be in travell it suld faynt and be unabill to continew in labour; the spreit hes his travell, whilk is a sobbing and mournyng for syn, fra whilk unles it sumtymes suld rest, it suddanlie suld be consumit. It doith na mair offend Godis maiestie that the spreit sumtyme ly as it were asleip, nether hauing sence of greit dolour nor greit comfort, mair than it doith offend him that the bodie use the naturall rest, ceassing fra all externall exercis. Ye sall consider, mother, that the eis of God dois pers mair deiplye than we be war of; we according to the blind ignorance whilk lurketh within ws, do judge

but as we feil for the present, but hie according to his eternall wisdome dois judge thingis lang befor thay cum to pas. We judge that caldnes and angusche of spreit ar hurtfull becaus we sie not the end whairfoir God dois suffer ws to be troubillit with sic temptationis, but his maiestie, wha onlie knawis the mass whairof man is maid, and causeth all thingis to work to the profit of his elect, knawis also how necessarie sic troubillis ar to dantoun the pryd of oure corrupt nature. Thair is a spirituall pryd whilk is not hastellie suppressit in Godis verie elect children, as witnesses Sanct Paule. God hath wroth greit thingis be yow in the syght of uthir men. With whilk (unles the mell of inward angusche did beat them doun) ye might be steirit up to sum vane glorie, whilk is a vennoume mair subtill than ony man do espy. I can wryt to yow by my awn experience. I have sumetymes bene in that securitie that I felt not dolour for syn, nether yit displeasure aganis my self for any iniquitie in whilk I did offend; but rather my vane hart did this flatter my self, (I wryt the treuth to my awn confusioun and to the glorie of my heavenlie father through Jesus Christ) "Thou hes sufferit great troubill for professing of Chrystis treuth, God hes done great thingis for the, delivering the fra that maist cruell bondage, [*galleis on the margin*], hie has placeit the in a maist honorabill vocation, and thy labours ar not without frute, thairfoir thow aucht rejos and gif prais unto God." O mother, this was a subtill serpent wha this culd pour in vennoume, I not perceaving it; but blissit be my God, wha permitteth me not to sleip lang in that estait. I drank schortlie efter this flatterie of myself a cupe of contra poysons, the bitternes whairof doith yit sa remane in my breist, that whatever I have sufferit or presentlie dois, I reput as doun, yea and myself worthie of dampnatioun for my ingratitude towardis my God. The lyke, mother, myt have cumin to yow, gif the secreit brydill of afflictioun did not refrane vane cogitationis; but of this I have written to yow mair planellie in my other letteris. And this I commit you to the protectioun of the Omnipotent for ever.

Yours at his power,

Johnne Knox.

No. V. [MS. Letters, p. 352.]

To his brethren in Scotland efter he had bene quyet amang thame.

The comfort of the halie Gaist for salutatioun. (See p. 110.)*

Not sa mekill to instruct yow as to leave with yow, dearlie belovit brethren, sum testimony of my love, I have thought gud to communicat with you, in theis few lynes, my weak consall, how I wald ye suld behalve yourselves in the middis of this wickit generatioun, tuiching the exercis of Godis maist halie and sacred word, without the whilk, nether sal knowlege increas, godlines apeir, nor fervencie continew amang yow. For as the word of God is the begynning of lyfe spirituall, without whilk all flesche is deid in Godis presence, and the lanterne to our feit, without the bryghtnes whairof all the posteritie of Adame doith walk in darknes. And as it is the fundament of faith without the whilk na man understandeth the gud will of God, sa is it also the onlie organe and instrument whilk God useth to strenthin the weak, to comfort the afflictit, to reduce to mercie be repentance sic as have sliddin, and finallie to preserve and keip the verie lyfe of the saule in all assaltis and temptationis, and thairfoir yf that ye desyr your knowlege to be incressit, your faith to be confirmit, your consciencis to be quyetit and comfortit, or finallie your saule to be preservit in lyfe, lat your exercis be frequent in the law of your Lord God; despis not that precept whilk Moses, (wha, be his awn experience, had learnit what comfort lyeth hid within the word of God) gave to the Israelitis in theis wordis: "Theis wordis whilk I command the this day salbe in thi hart, and thou sal exercis thi children in thame, thou sal talk of thame when thou art at home in thi hous, and as thou walkest be the way, and when thou lyes down, and when thou rysis up, and thou sal bind thame for a signe upon thi hand, and thay salbe paperis of remembrance betwene thi eis, and thou sal wryt thame upon the postis of thi hous and upon thi gatis." And Moses in another place commandis thame to remember the law of

* This is the Letter referred to as note D, Period Fourth, p. 110.

the Lord God, to do it, that it may be weill unto thame and with thair children in the land whilk the Lord sal gif thame; meanyng that, lyke as frequent memorie and repetitioun of Godis preceptis is the middis whairby the feir of God, whilk is the begynning of all wisdome and filicitie, is keipit recent in mynd, sa is negligence and obliuion of Godis benefitis ressavit the first grie of defectioun fra God; now yf the law whilk be reasone of our weaknes can work nathing but wraith, and anger was sa effectuall that, rememberit and rehersit of purpois to do it, brought to the pepill a corporall benedictioun, what sal we say that the glorious gospel of Chryst Jesus doth work, sa that it be with reverence intreatit? St Paule calleth [it] the sweit odour of lyfe unto thois that suld resaif lyfe, borrowing his similitude fra odoriferous herbis or precious unguimentis, whais nature is the mair thay be touchit or moveit to send furth thair odour mair pleasing and delectabill; even sic, deir brethren, is the blysit evangell of oure Lorde Jesus; for the mair that it be entreatit, the mair comfortable and mair plysant is it to sic as do heir read and exercis the sam. I am not ignorant that, as the Isralitis lothit manna becaus that everie day thay saw and eat but ane thing, so sum there be now a dayis (wha will not be halden of the worst sort) that efter anis reiding some parcellis of the scriptures do convert thame selves altogether to prophane autors and humane letteris, becaus that the varietie of materis thairin conteynit doith bring with it a daylie delectatioun, whair contrariways, within the simpill scriptures of God, the perpetuall repetitioun of a thing is fascheous and werisome. This temptation I confess may enter in Godis verie elect for a tyme, but impossibill is it that thairin thay continew to the end: for Godis electioun, besydis other evident signis, hath this ever joynit with it, that Godis elect ar callit frome ignorance; I speik of thois that ar cum to the yeiris of knowlege, to sum taist and feiling of Godis mercie, of whilk thay ar never satisfieit in this lyfe, but fra tyme to tyme thay hunger and thay thirst to eat the bread that descendit fra the heavin, and to drink the water that springeth unto lyfe everlasting, whilk thay cannot do but be the means of faith, and faith luketh ever to the will of God, reveallit be his word, sa that faith hath baith her begynning and continueance be the word of God; and sa I say that impossibill it is that Godis chosin children can despys or reject the word of thair salvatioun be any lang continewance, nether yit loth of it to the end. Often it is that Godis elect ar halden in sic bondage and thraldome that they cannot have the bread of lyfe brokin unto thame, nether yit libertie to exercis thame selves in Godis halie word, but then doith not Godis deir children loth, but maist gredilie do thay covet the fude of thair saullis; then do they accuse thair former negligence, then lament and bewaill thay the miserable afflictioun of thair brethren, and than cry and call thay in thair hartis (and openlie whair thay dar) for frie passage to the gospell, this hunger and thirst doith argue and prufe the lyfe of thair saullis. But gif sic men as having libertie to reid and exercis thameselves on Godis halie scripture, and yet do begin to wearie becaus fra tyme to tyme thay reid but a thing; I ask why wearie thay not also everie day to drink wyne, to eat bread, everie day to behald the bryghtnes of the sone, and sa to us the rest of Godis creatures whilk everie day do keip thair awn substance, cours and nature, they sal anser, I trust, becaus sic creatures have a strenth as oft as thay ar usit to expel hunger, and quenche thirst, to restoir strenth, and to preserve the lyfe. O miserable wreichis, wha dar attribut mair power and strength to the corruptible creatures, in nurisching and preserving the mortal karcas, than to the eternall word of God in nurrishment of the saul, whilk is immortall! To reasone with thair abominable unthankfulness at this present it is not my purpois. But to yow, deir brethrene, I wryt my knowledge, and do speik my conscience, that sa necessarie as meat and drink is to the preservation of lyfe corporall, and sa necessarie as the heit and bryghtnes of the sone is to the quicknyng of the herbis, and to expell darknes, sa necessarie is also to lyfe everlasting, and to the illumination and lyght of the saule, the perpetuall meditatioun, exercis, and use of Godis halie word.

And thairfoir, deir brethrene, yf that ye luke for a lyfe to come, of necessitie it is that ye exercise yourselves in the buke of the Lord your God. Lat na day slip over without sum comfort ressavit fra the mouth of God; opin your earis, and he will speak, evin pleasing thingis to your hart. Clois not your eis, but diligentlie lat thame behald what portioun of substance is left to yow within your fatheris testament. Let your touns learne to prais the gracious goodnes of him wha of his meir mercie hath callit you fra darknes to lyght, and fra deth to lyfe, nether yet may ye do this sa quyetlie that ye will admit na witnessis; nay brethren, ye ar ordeynit of God to reule and governe your awn housis in his trew feir, and according to his halie word, within your awn housis, I say, in sum cassis ye ar bischopis and kingis: your wyfis, children, and familie are your bischoprik and charge; of you it sal be

requyrit how cairfallie and diligently ye have instructit thame in Godis trew knowlege, how that ye have studeit in thame to plant vertew and repres vyce. And thairfoir, I say, ye must mak thame pertakeris in reading, exhortatioun, and in making commoun prayeris, whilk I wald in everie hous wer usit anis a day at leist. But above all thingis, deir brethren, studie to practis in lyfe that whilk the Lord commandis, and than be ye assurit that ye sal never heir nor reid the same without frute; and this mekill for the exercisis within your housis.

Considdering that St Paul callis the congregatioun the bodie of Chryst, whairfoir everie ane of us is a member, teaching us thairby that na member is of suffieience to susteine and feid the self without the help and support of any uther, I think it necessarie that for the conference of scriptures, assemblies of brether be had, the order thairin to be observit is expressit be sanct Paule, and thairfor I need not to use many wordis in that behalf, onlie willing that when ye convene (whilk I wald wer anis a weik) that your begynning suld be fra confessing of your offences, and invocation of the spreit of the Lord Jesus to assist you in all your godlie interpryssis, and than lat sum place of scripture be planelie and distinctlie red, samekill as sal be thocht sufficient for a day or tyme; whilk endit, if any brother have exhortatioun, interpretatioun, or dout, lat him not feir to speik and move the same, sa that he do it with moderatioun, ether to edifie or be edifiit, and heirof I dout not but great profit sal schortlie ensw, for first be heiring, reiding, and conferring the scriptures in the assemble, the haill bodie of the scriptures of God salbecum familiar, the judgement and spreitis of men salbe tryit, thair patience and modestie salbe knawn, and finallie, their giftis and utterance sal appeir. Multiplicatioun of wordis, perplexit interpretatioun, and wilfulnes in reasonyng, is to be avoydit at all tymes and in all places, but chieflie in the congregatioun, whair nathing aucht to be respectit except the glorie of God, and comfort or edificatioun of our brethrene. Yf any thing occur within the text, or yit arys in reasonyng, whilk your judgementis can not resolve, or capaciteis apprehend, let the same be notit and put in wryt befoir ye depart the congregatioun, that when God sal offer unto you any interpreter, your douts being notit and knawn, may have the mair expedit resolutioun, or els that when ye sal have occasioun to wryt to sic as with whome ye wald communicat your judgementis, your letteris may signifie and declair your unfeaned desyre that ye have of God, and of his trew knowlege, and thay, I dout not, according to thair talentis, will indeavour and bestow thair faithfull labours, [to] satisfie your godlie petitionis. Of myself I will speik as I think, I will moir glaidlie spend XV houris in communicatting my judgement with you, in explainyng as God pleassis to oppin to me any place of scripture, than half ane hour in any other matter besyd.

Farther, in reading the scriptures I wald ye suld joyne sum bukis of the ald, and sum of the new Testament together, as genesis and ane of the evangelistis, exodus with another, and sa furth, ever ending sic bukis as ye begyn (as the tyme will suffer), for it sal greitly comfort you to heir that harmony, and weilunit sang of the halie spreit speiking in oure fatheris from the begynning. It sal confirme yow in theis dangerous and perrellous dayis, to behald the face of Chryst Jesus, his loving spous and kirk, from eabell to him self, and frome him self to this day, in all ageis to be ane. Be frequent in the prophetis and in the epistellis of St Paule, for the multitude of matteris maist comfortable thairin containit requyreth exercis and gud memorie. Lyke as your assemblis aucht to begyn with confessioun and invocatioun of Godis halie spreit, sa wald I that thay wer never finissit without thanksgiving and commoun prayeris for princes, ruleris and majestratis, for the libertie and frie passage of Chrystis evangell, for the comfort and delyverance of oure afflictit brethrene in all places now persecutit, but maist cruellie now within the realme of France and Ingland, and for sic uther thingis as the spreit of the Lord Jesus sal teache unto you to be profitable ether to your selves or yit to your brethrene whairsoever thay be. If this, or better, deir brethrene, I sal heir that ye exercis your selves, than will I prais God for your great obedience, as for thame that not onlie have ressavit the word of grace with gladnes, but that also with cair and diligence do keip the same as a treasure and jewell maist precious. And becaus that I can not expect that ye will do the contrarie at the present, I will use na threatenyngis, for my gud hoip is, that ye sal walk as the sonis of lyght in the middis of this wicket generatioun, that ye sal be as starris in the nyght ceassone, wha yit ar not changeit into darknes, that ye salbe as wheit amangis the kokill, and yit that ye sall not change your nature whilk ye have ressavit be grace, through the fellowship and participatioun whilk we have with the Lord Jesus in his bodie and blude. And finallie, that ye salbe of the noumer of the prudent virginis, daylie re-

newing your lampis with oyle, as the that pacientlie abyd the glorious aparitioun and cuming of the Lord Jesus, whais omnipotent spreit rule and instruct, illuminat and comfort your hartis and myndis in all assaltis, now and ever. Amen.

The grace of the Lord Jesus rest with you. Remember my weaknes in your daylie prayeris.

the 7 of July, 1556.

your brother unfeaned,

Johne Knox.

No. VI. [MS. Letters, p. 335-6.]

To his Sister.

The spreit of God the father be Jesus Chryst, comfort and assist yow to the end. Amen.

Touching the sonis of Jacob, who cruellie, contrar to thair solempned promiseis and othe, did murther and slay the citisenis of Sicheim; whasa ryghtlie marketh the scriptures of God, sal easelie espy thame maist grevouslie to have offendit. Ffor albeit the transgressioun of the young man was haynous befor God, yit wer thay na civill majestratis, and thairfoir had na autoritie to punis. And farther, thay committit treasone, and in sa fer as in thame was, blasphemit God and his halie name, making it odius to the nationis about, seing thay under the pretence of religioun, and of ressaveng thame in leage with God and with the pepill, did disceatfullie as also cruellie destroy the haill citie, suspecting na danger. Albeit sum laboureth to excus thair syn be the zealle thay had that thay myght not suffer thair sister to be abusit lyke ane harlot, yit the spreit of God speiking in thair awn father, efter lang advyement in the extreamitie of his deth, utterlie dampneth thair wickit act, saying, "Semioun and Levi, brethren, &c. lat not my saule entir in thair consall, nor yit my glorie into thair company, for in thair furie thay killit a man, and for thair lust destroyit the citie; cursit is thair heit or rage for it is vehement, and thair indignation for it is untractable, I sall dispers thame in Jacob and scatter thame abroad in Israell." Heir may ye espy, sister, that God dampneth thair het displeasure and cruell act as maist wickit and worthie of punishment. But perchance it may be inquyrit, why did God suffer the men that had professit his name be ressaveng the sign of circumsicioun, sa unmercifullie to be intreatit? I myght answer, God sufferis his awn in all ageis be the ungodlie to be cruellie tormentit. But sic was not the case of thir men, whom na dout the justice of God faund cryminall and worthie the deth. Ffor thay did abus his sacramentall signe, receaving it nether at Godis commandement, nor having any respect to his honour, nor to the advancement of his name, nor yit trusting in his promissis, nor desyreing the increas or multiplicatioun of Godis pepill, but onlie for a warldlie purpois, thinking thairby to have attaynit ryches and ease, be joynyng thameselves to Godis pepill. And sa the justice of God faund thame worthie of punishment, and sa permittit thame justlie on his part to be afflictit and destroyit be the ungodlie, whilk is a terribil exempill to sic as in caus of religioun mair seikis the profit of the world nor eternall salvatioun. But heirof na mair. Thus brieflie and rudlie have I writtin unto yow, becaus I remember myself anis to have maid yow a promise sa to do, and everie word of the mouth of the faithfull (yf sa impeid not God) aught to be keipit. And now rest in Chryst. After this I think ye sall resave na mair of my handis. In haist with sair trubillit hart.

Yours as ever in godliness,

[Anno 1553.]

Johne Knox.

No. VII. Letter of John Knox to John Fox.

(See p. 127.)

(British Museum. Hal. MSS. 416, 34. § 70.) An Original.

Indorsed "To his louinge brother master fox be these delyuered at Basill."

The mightie comforth of the holie ghost for salutation.

Dearlie beloued brother, albeit at the dePtire of this our brother from whom I receaved yor loving and friendlie lre, my selue could writ nothing be reason of the

euill disposition of my bodie, yit becaus I could not suffer him to depert without som remembrance of my deutie to you, I vsed the help of my left hand, that is of my wief, in scribbling these fewe lynes vnto you, as touching my purpose and mynd in the publishing the first blast of the trompet.

When the secretes of all hartes shalbe disclosed, that shalbe knowe wch now by manye can not be perswaded, to wit, that therin I nether haue sought my selue, nether yit the vain prase of men. my rude vehemencie and inconsidered affirmations wch may appear rather to procead from coler then of zeal and reason, do not excuse, but to haue vsed anye other tittle more plausible therby to haue allured the world by any art as I never purposed so do I not yit purpose. to me it is ynewgh to say that black is not whit, and mans tyrannye and foolishnes is not godes perfite ordinance, wch thinge I do not so much to correct comon welthes as to delyuer my own conscience, and to instruct the consciences of some semple who yit I fear be ignorant in that matter, but ferther of this I delay to better opportunitie. Salut yor wief and dowghter hartlie in my nam. the grace of our lord Jesus Christ rest wt you now and euer. from geneva the 18th of May 1558.

Your brother to power,

Johne Knox.

I yor sister the writer hereof saluteth you and yor wief most hartlie thanking hir of hir loving tokens wch my mother and I recaued from Mrs Kent.

No. VIII. [Cald. MS. Vol. I. p. 247.] *

Extract of a Letter to Mrs Anne Locke. (See p. 150.)

—— The Queen and her counsell made promise that no person within Sanct Johnston, neither yet of these that assisted them, should be troubled for any thing done either in religion, either yet in down casting of places, till the sentence of the estates in Parliament had decided the controversie, and that no bands of French souldiers should be left behind the Queen and counsell in the town, and that no idolatrie should be erected nor alteration made within the town. But after she had obtained her desire, all godlie promises were forgotten, for the Sunday next after her entering, mess was said upon a *dyeing* table (for ye shall understand all the alters were prophaned); the poor professors were oppressed; when children were slain, she did but smile, excusing the fact be the chance of fortune; and at her departure she left 400 souldiers, Scottismen, but paid by France, to dantoun the town. She changed the provist and exiled all godlie men. This crueltie and deceit displeased many that before assisted her with their presence and counsell, and among others the earl of Argyle and the prior of Sanct Andrews left [her], and joyned themselves to the congregation openly, whilk as it was displeasing to her and to the shavellings, so it was most comfortable and joyfull to us, for by their presence were the hearts of many erected from desperation. At their commandment I repaired to them at St Andrewis, wher consultation being had, it was concluded that Christ Jesus should there be openlie preached, that the places and monuments of idolatrie should be removed, and superstitious habits changed. This reformation was begun the 14th of June. In the meantime came the bishop of St Andrewis to the towne, accompanied with a great band of warriours, and gave a strate commandement that no preaching should be made by me, who was both brunt in figure and horned, assuring the lords, that if they suffered me to preach, that twelve haquebuts should lyght upon my nose at once. O burning charitie of a bloodie bishop! But as that boast did little affray me, so did it more incense and inflamme with courage the harts of the godlie, who with one voyce proclaimed that Christ Jesus should be preached in despite of Sathan, and so that Sabbath and three dayes after I did occupy the publike place in the midst of the doctors, who this day are even as dumbe as their idols which wer brunt in their presence. The bishop departed to the Queene, frustrat of his intent, for he had promised to bring me to her either alyve or dead! and incontinent was a new army assembled, and forward they marched against St Andrews. It was not thought expedient that we should abide them lurking in a town, and so we past to the fields and met

* The following letters from Calderwood have been corrected by comparing different MSS.

them at Couper, where lodging was appointed for the camp, but we prevented them: where we remained upon their coming till the next day, when both armies were in sight of other within shot of cannon, and we looked for nothing but the extremitie of battle: not that we intended to pursue, but only to stand in camp where our field was pitched, for defence of ourselves. There came from our adversaries ane ambassadour, desiring speech and communing of the lords, which gladlie of us being granted, after long reasoning the queene offered a free remission of all crimes bypast, sua that they would no further proceed against friars and abbayes, and that no more preaching should be used publickly. But the lords and the brethren refused such appointment, declaring that the fear of no mortal creature should cause them betray the veritie known and professed, neither yet to suffer idolatrie to be maintained in the bounds committed to their charge. The adversaries, perceiving that neither threatening, flatterie, nor deceit, could break the bold constancie and godlie purpose of the lords, barons, gentlemen, and commons, who were there assembled to the number of 3000 in on days warning, they were content to take assurance for 8 days, permitting unto us freedom of religion in the meantime. In the whilk the abbay of Lindores, a place of black monkes, distant from St Andrewis twelve myles we reformed, their altars overthrew we, their idols, vestments of idolatrie, and mass books we burnt in their presence, and commanded them to cast away their monkish habits. Divers chanons of St Andrewis have given notable confessions, and have declared themselves manifest enemies to the pope, to the mass, and to all superstition. [*Then follows what is inserted, p. 155.*] We fear that the tyrannie of France shall, under the cloak of religion, seek a plain conquest of us; but potent is God to confound their counsell and to break their force. God move the hearts of such as profess Christ Jesus with us, to have respect to our infancie, and open their eyes to see that our ruin shall be their destruction. Communicat the contents hereof (which I write to you, least by divers rumours ye should be troubled and wee slandered) with all faithfull, but especiallie with the afflicted of that little flock, now dispersed and destitute of these pleasant pastures, in which some tyme they fed abundantlie. If any remain at Geneva, let either this same or the double of it be sent unto them, and likeways unto my dear brother Mr Goodman, whose presence I more thirst for than she that is my own flesh. Will him therefor in the name of the Lord Jesus (all delay and excuse set apart) to visit me; for the necessity is great here. If he come be sea, let him be addressed unto Dundie, and let him ask for George Levell, for George Rollock, or for Wm. Carmichael. If he come to Leith, let him repair to Edinburgh, and enquire for James Baron, Edward Hope, Adam Fullertoun, or for John Johnston writer, be whom he will get knowledge of me. If my mother and my wife come be you, will them to make the expedition that goodly they can to visit me, or at least to come to the north parts, where they shall know my mind, which now I can not write, being oppressed with hourly cares. This bearer is a poor man unknown in the country, to whom I beseech you shew reasonable favour and tenderness, touching his merchandise and the just selling thereof. Thus, with hearty commendatiouns to all faithfull, I heartily commit you to the protection of the Omnipotent. From Sanct Andrewes the 23d of June 1559.

No. IX. [Cald. MS. I. 380.]

Extract of a Letter from John Knox to Mrs Anne Locke, dated 6th of April 1559. (See p. 319.)

— Your letters, dear sister, dated at Geneva, the 17th of February, ceived I in Deepe the 17th of March. Touching my negligence in writing to you, at other times I fear it shall be little amended, except that better occasions than yet I know be offered. For oft to write when few messingers can be found is but foolishness. My remembrance of you is not yet so dead, but I trust it shall be fresh enough, albeit it be renewed be no outward token for one year. Of nature I am churlish, and in conditions different from many. Yet one thing I ashame not to affirme, that familiarity once thoroughly contracted was never yet broken be my default. The cause may be that I have rather need of all than that any have need of me.

No. X. [Cald. I. 522.]

To Mrs. Anne Locke. (See p. 171.)

Lest that the rumours of our troubles trouble you above measure, dear sister, I thought good in these few words to signifie unto you that our esperance is yet good in our God, that he, for his great names sake, will give such success to this enterprise, as nether shall these whom he hath appointed to sigh in this be utterlie confounded, neither yet that our enemies shall have occasion to blaspheme the verity, nor yet triumph over us in the end. We trusted too much, dear sister, in our owne strenth, and speciallie since the erle of Arran and his friends were joyned to our number. Amongst us also were such as more sought the purse than Christ's glory. Wee by this overthrow are brought to acknowledge, what is a multitude without the present help of God! and the hollow harts of many are now revealed. God make us humble in his eyes, and then I fear not the furie of the adversaries, who, be ye assured, doe sore rage, so as yet their crueltie must neids crave vengeance from him whose members they persecute. Our dear brethren and sisters in Edinburgh and Lothian, who lay nearest these bloode thirsty tyrants, are so troubled and vexed that it is a pity to remember their estate. Our God comfort them. We stand universally in great fear, and yet we hope deliverance. I wrote to you before to be suitor to some faithfull, that they would move such as have abundance to consider our estate, and to make for us some provision of money to keep soldiers and our company together. And herein yet again I cannot cease to move you. I can not well write to any other, because the action may seem to appertaine to my own country onlie. But because I trust ye, suspect me not of avarice: I am bold to say to you, that if we perish in this our enterprise, the limits of London will be straighter than they are now within few years. Many things I have which I would have required for myself, namely Calvin on Isaiah, and his Institutions revised. But common troubles cause me to neglect all private business. If ye can find the means to send me the books before written, or any other that be new and profitable, I will provide that ye shall receive the prices upon your advertisement. My wife saluteth you. Salute all faithfull heartlie in my name, especiallie those of familiar acquaintance, of whom I crave pardon that I write not, being not so quiet as ye would wish. My onlie comfort is that our troubles shall pass sooner, peradventure, than our enemies look. Grace be with you. From St Andrews in haste the 18th November 1559. Yours known.

John Knox.

Mr Gudeman is in the west country in Ayr, who willed me to salute you in his name so oft as I wrote you.

No. XI. [Cald. I. 524.]

To the same. (See p. 172.)

We shall meet when death shall not dissever.

Two letters I have received from you, dear sister, both almost at one time; the one is dated at London the 28th of November, the other of the same place the 2nd of December. The letter of the last date I first read, which made mention of your trouble be reason of a suddan fire in a lodging near to you; that you had sought all means for our support as well of those of high as of low degree; but that it was not needfull that any thing should be sent unto us, because it was supposed that the highest would support us; and last that ye had not received the answer of your doubts. In your other letters, after your most comfortable discourse of God's providence for his people in their greatest necessitie, ye godlie and trulie conclude that neither could their unworthiness, neither yet their want of things judged necessarie for their preservation, stop his majestie's mercy from them. Thereafter ye will me to avoid danger, and rather to fight by prayer in some place removed from danger, than expose my self to the hazard of battell, and so ye conclude by praising God's mercie, as did Jeremy in his greatest anguish, &c.

What support should come to us be consent of counsell and authoritie I am uncertain. But suppose it shall be greater than yet is bruted, that ought not

to stay the liberall hands of the godlie to support us privatelie. For the publick support of an army shall not make such as now be superexpended able to serve without private support. I will make the matter more plain be one example. I know one man that since the 10th of May hath spent in this action thirteen thousand crowns of the summe [sonne], besydes his victuals and other fruits of the ground. His treasure being now consumed, he cannot without support susteine the number which before he brought to the field. If he and such others that are in lyke condition with him shall be absent, or yet if numbers shall decay, our enemies shall seem to prevaill in the field, and therfor desired I some collection to be made, to the end that the present necessitie of some might have been relieved. If the matter pertained not to my native countrie I would be more vehement in persuasion, but God shall support even how, when, and by whom it shall please his blessed majestie. Sorry I am that ye have not received my answer unto your doubts, not so much that I think that ye greatlie need them, as that I would not put you in suspicion that I contemned your requests. The rest of my wife hath been so unrestful since her arrival here, that scarcelie could she tell upon the morrow what she wrote at night. She cannot find my first extract. And therfor if any scruple remaine in your conscience, put pen again to paper, and look for ane answer as God shall give opportunitie. God make yourself participant of the same comfort which you wrote unto me; and in very deed, dear sister, I have no less need of comfort, notwithstanding that I am not altogether ignorant, than hath the bound man to be fed, albeit in store he hath great substance. I have read the cares and tentations of Moses, and sometymes I have supposed myself to be well practised in such dangerous battells. But, alace! I now perceive that all my practice before was but mere speculation, for one day of troubles since my last arrival in Scotland hath more pierced my heart than all the torment of the galleys did the space of 19 months. For that torment for the most part did touch the bodie, but this pierceth the soul and inward affections. Then was I assuredlie persuaded that I should not die untill I had preached Christ Jesus even where I now am, and yet having now my heart's desyre, I am nothing satisfied, neither yet rejoice. My God remove my unthankfulness. From Sanct Andrews the last of December 1559.

Yours known in Christ.

John Knox.

No. XII. [Cald. I. p. 533.]

To the same. (See p. 173.)

The eternal our God shall shortly put an end to all our troubles.

Lest that sinister rumours should trouble you above measure, dear sister, I can not but certify you of our estate as often as convenient messengers occur. The French, as before I wrote unto you, have pursued us with great furie, but God hath so bridled them, that since the 5th day when they put to flight the men of Kinghorn, Kircaldy, and Dysart, they have had of us (all praise be to our God) no advantage. They lost in a morning a lieutenant, the boldest of their company, and fourty of their bravest soldiers, diverse of them having been taken and diverse slain in skirmishing. They have done greatest harm to such as did best entertain them; for from them they have taken sheep, horse, and plenishing. Our friends, and foes to them, did continually remove from their way all moveables that to them appertained. They have casten down to the ground the laird of Grange's principal house, called the Grange, and have spoiled his other places. God will recompense him, I doubt not, for in this cause and since the beginning of this last trouble espeecially, he hath behaved himself so boldly as never man of our realm hath deserved more praise. He hath been in many dangers, and yet God hath delivered him above mens expectation. He was shot at Lundie right under the left pape, thorow the jacket, doublet, and shirt, and the bullet did stick in one of his ribs. Mr. Whitelaw hath gotten a fall, by which he is unable to bear arms. But God be praised both their lives be saved. I remained all this time in St Andrews with sorrowful heart, and yet as God did minister his spirit comforting the afflicted, who, albeit they quaked for a time, yet do now praise God, who suddenly averted from them that terrible plague devised for them by the ungodly. The French men approached within 6 miles, yet at the sight of certain of your ships, they retired more in one day than they advanced in ten. We have had wonderful experience of God's merciful providence, and for my own part I were more than unthankful if I should

not confess that God hath heard the sobs of my wretched heart, and hath not deceived me of that little spark of hope which his holy spirit did kindle and foster in my heart. God give me grace to acknowledge his benefit received, and to make such fruit of it as becometh his servant. If ye can find a messenger, I heartily pray you to send me the books for which I wrote before. I must be bold over your liberality, not only in that, but in greater things as I shall need. Please you cause this other letter inclosed be surely conveyed to Miles Coverdale. Salute all faithful acquaintance, Mr Hickman and his bedfellow, your husband, Mr Michael and his spouse as unacquainted, specially remembered. I know not what of our brethren at Geneva be with you. But to such as be there I beseech you to say that I think that I myself do now find the truth of that which oft I have said in their audience, to wit, that after our departure from Geneva should our dolour beginne. But my good hope is in God, that it shall end to his glory and our comfort. Rest in Christ Jesus. From Sanct Andrews the 4th of February 1559.

Your brother.

John Knox

No. XIII. [Cald. II. p. 89.]

From John Knox to Mr John Wood, Secretary to the Regent. 14th Feb. 1568.

My purpose, beloved in the Lord, concerning that which oft, and now last ye crave, I wrote to you before, from which I can not be moved, and, therefore, of my friends I will ask pardon, howbeit on that one head I play the churle, retaining to myself that which will rather hurt me than profit them, during my days, which I hope in God shall not be long, and then it shall be in the opinion of others whether it shall be suppressed, or come to light.* God, for his great mercies sake, put such end to the troubles of France, as the purity of his evangell may have free passage within that realme; and idolatry, with the maintainers of the same, may once be overthrown be order of justice, or otherways as his godly wisdom hath appointed. In my opinion England and Scotland have both no less cause to fear than the faithful in France, for what they suffer in present action is laid up in store, let us be assured, for both countries. The ground of my assurance is not the determination of the council of Trent, for that decree is but the utterance of their own malice; but the justice of God is my assurance, for it cannot spare to punish all realmes and nations that is or shall be like to Jerusalem, against whose iniquity God long cried be his servants the prophets, but found no repentance. The truth of God hath been now of some years manifested to both, but what obedience, the words, works, and behaviour of men give sufficient testimony. God grant Mr Gudman a prosperous and happy success in the acceptation of his charge, and in all his other enterprises to God's glory and the comfort of his kirk; and so will I the more patiently bear his absence, weaning myself from all comfort that I looked to have received be his presence and familiarity. Because I have the testimony of a good conscience, that in writing of that treatise against which so many worldly men have stormed, and yet storm, I neither sought myself nor worldly promotion, and because as yet I have neither heard nor seen law nor scripture to overthrow my ground,† I may appeal to a more indifferent judge than Dr. Jewel. I would most gladly pass through the course that God hath appointed to my labours, in meditation with my God and giving thanks to his holy name, for that it hath pleased his mercy to make me not a lord bishop, but a painful preacher of his blessed evangell, in the function whereof it hath pleased his majesty for Christ his son's sake to deliver me from the contradiction of moe enemies than one or two, which maketh me the more slow and less careful to revenge be word or writ whatever injury hath been done against me in my own particular. But if that men will not cease to impugne the truth, the faithfull will pardon me if I offend such as for pleasure of flesh fear not to offend God. The defence and maintenance of superstitious trifles produced never better fruit in the end than I perceive is budding amongst you, schisme, which no doubt is a forerunner of greater desolation unless there be speedy repentance.—[The reader will find what follows already quoted in a note at the foot of p. 263.] The faithfull of your acquaintance here salute you. The grace of the Lord rest with you.

* He seems to refer here to his History of the Reformation.

† Referring, most probably, to his Treatise against Female Government.

No. XIV. [Cald. II. 107.]

The same to the same. (See p. 245.)

I thank you heartily, dearly beloved in the Lord Jesus, that ye had such remembrance of me as to certify of that part which not a little troubled and yet troubleth me. What I have done or am able to do in that behalf I will not trouble you at this present, this only excepted, that it will please you to travel as in the end of your letter ye write ye would do, to wit, that my sons might be Denezans there. I am informed, both be letter and be tongue, besides conjectures that probably may be gathered, that the Duke and his friends are inflamed against me. Ofter than once I have called to mind your words to me that day that I had been more than vehement, as some men thought, in the end of the — chapter of John's Evangell concerning the treasonable departure of Judas from Christ, and of the causes thereof. Before that I came forth of the preaching place ye said, Before my God, I think your eyes shall see performed that which your mouth hath pronounced. My words were these, I fear that such as have entered with us in professing of the Evangell, as Judas did with Christ, shall depart and follow Judas, how soon the expectation of gain and worldly promotion faileth them. Time will try farther, and we shall see overmuch. We look daily for the arrival of the duke and his Frenchmen, sent to restore Satan to his kingdome, in the person of his dearest lieutenant, sent, I say, to repress religion, not from the king of France, but from the Cardinall of Lorrane in favour of his dearest nice. Lett England take heed, for surely their neighbours houses are on fire. I would, dear brother, that ye should travell with zealous men, that they may consider our estate. What I would say, ye may easily conjecture. Without support we are not able to resist the force of the domesticall enemies (unless God work miraculously) much less are we able to stand against the puissance of France, the substance of the Pope, and the malice of the house of Guise, unless we be comforted by others than by ourselves. Ye know our estate, and therefore I will not insist to deplore our poverty. The whole comfort of the enemies is this, that be treason or other means they may cutt off the Regent, and then cutt the throat of the innocent king. How narrowly hath the regent escaped once, I suppose ye have heard. As their malice is not quenched, so ceaseth not the practice of the wicked, to put in execution the cruelty devised. I live as a man already dead from all affairs civil, and therefore I praise my God; for so I have some quietness in spirit, and time to meditate on death, and upon the troubles I have long feared and foreseeeth. The Lord assist you with his holy spirit, and put an end to my travells, to his own glory, and to the comfort of his kirk; for assuredly, brother, this miserable life is bitter unto me. Salute your bedfellow in my name, and the rest in Christ Jesus. The faithfull here salute you. The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ rest with you for ever.

Of Edinburgh the 10 of September 1568.

No. XV. [Cald. II. p. 144.]

Extract of a Letter from John Knox "To a friend in England." (See p. 319.)

Of Edinburgh, 19th August, 1569.

— If from day to day thir seven years bypast, I had not looked for ane end of my travells, I could have no excuse of my obstinate fault toward you, beloved in the Lord, be whom I have received, beside commendations and letters, diverse tokens of your unfained friendship, yet have negligently pretermitted all office of humanity toward you, whereinto I acknowledge my offence; for albeit I have been tossed with many storms all the time before expressed, yet might I have gratified you and others faithful, with some remembrance of my estate, if that this my churlish nature, for the most part oppressed with melancholy, had not stayed tongue and pen from doing of their duty. Yea, even now, when that I could somewhat satisfy your desire, I find within myself no small repugnance, for this I find objected to my wretched heart, "Foolish man! what seeks thou in writing of missives in this corruptible age? Hath thou not a full satiety of all the vanities under the sun

Hath not thy eldest and stoutest acquaintance buried thee in oblivion, and are not thou in that estate be age, that nature itself calleth thee from the pleasures of things temporall? Is it not then more than foolishness unto thee to hunt for acquaintance on the earth, of what estate or condition whatsoever the persons be?" To these objections I could answer nothing (much more I think than is written), but that I would write with what imperfections I little regard.—

No. XVI. [Cald. II. p. 269.]

John Knox to the Laird of Pittarrow. (See p. 286.)

The end of all worldly trouble and pleasure both approacheth. Blessed are they that patiently abide in the truth, not joining hands nor hearts with impiety, how that ever it triumph.

Right worshipfull, after heartly commendations, your letter, dated at Pittarrow, the 14th of July, received I in Sanct Andrews, the 15th of the same. The brute and armour of Adam Gordon and his doings, and preparations made to resist him was diverse, but nothing that I heard moved me, for I perceive the cup of iniquity is not yet full. Of one thing I am assured, that God of his mercy will not suffer his own to be tempted above measure, neither will he suffer iniquity to be ever unpunished. From me can come no other counsel than ye have heard from the beginning of our acquaintance, to wit, that not only action defileth and maketh guilty before God, but also consent of heart, and all paction with the wicked. Out of bed, and from my book, I come not but once in the week, and so few tidings come to me. What order God shall put into the mind of the authority to take for staying of thair present troubles, I know not, but ever still my dull heart feareth the worst, and that because no appearance of right conversion unto God, but both the parties stand as it were fighting against God himself in justification of their wickedness. * * * Dayly looking for an end of my battel, I have set forth an answer to a Jesuit who long hath railed against our religion, as the reading of this tractat will more plainly let you understand. The letter in the end of it, if it serve not for this estate of Scotland, yet it will serve a troubled conscience, so long as the kirk of God remaineth in either realm. With my hearty commendations to your bedfellow, and to my Lord Marshall, the Master, and to the faithful in your company. Deliver to them the book according to their directions, and pray the faithful in my name to recommend me to God in their prayers, for my battel is strong, and yet without great corporal pain. The Lord Jesus, who hath once redeemed us, who hath also of his mercy given unto us the light of his blessed countenance, continue us in that light that once we have received externally, and at his good pleasure putt an end to all the troubles of his own spouse, the kirk, which now sobbeth and crieth, Come, Lord Jesus, come Lord Jesus; whose omnipotent Spirit conduct you to the end. Amen.

At Sanct Andrews, 19 of July. [1572.]

No. XVII. [Cald. II. 270.]

John Knox to Mr Goodman.

Written about the same time with the preceding.

Beloved brother, I can not praise God of your trouble, but that of his mercie he hath made you one against whom Satan bendeth all his engines, thereof unfainedlie I praise my God, beseeching him to strengthen you to fight your battell lawfully to the end. That we shall meet in this life there is no hope; for to my bodie it is impossible to be carried from countrie to countrie, and of your comfortable presence where I am I have small, yea no esperance. The name of God be praised, who of his mercie hath left me so great comfort of you in this life. That ye may understand that my heart is pierced with the present troubles; from the castle of Edinburgh hath sprung all the murthers first and last committed in this realme, yea, and all the troubles and treasons conspired in England. God confound the wicked devisers with their wicked devises. So long as it pleased God to continue unto me any strength,

I ceased not to forewarn these dayes publickly, as Edinburgh can witness, and secretlie, as Mr. Randolph and others of that nation with whom I secretlie conferred, can testifie. Remedy now on earth resteth none, but onlie that both England and Scotland humbly submit themselves to the correcting hand of God, with humble confession of their former inobedience, that blood was not punished, when he be his servants publickly craved justice according to his law; in which head your realme is no less guilty than we, who now drink the bitter part of the cup, which God of his mercie avert from you. And thus weary of the world, with my hearty commendations to all faithfull acquaintance, Mr. Bodlih and his bed-fellow especially remembered, I commit you to the protection of the omnipotent. Off Sanct Andrews.

No. XVIII. [Calderwood's MS. apud an. 1570. Advocates' Library.]
(See above, p. 269.)

Prayer used by John Knox, after the Regent's death.

O Lord, what shall we add to the former petitions we know not; yea, alace, O Lord, our owne consciences bear us record that we are unworthie that thou should either encrease or yet continue thy graces with us, be reason of our horrible ingratitude. In our extreame miseries we called, and thou in the multitude of thy mercies heard us, and first thou delivered us from the tyrannie of merciless strangers, next from the bondage of idolatry, and last from the yoke of that wretched woman, the mother of all mischife, and in her place thou didst erect her sonne, and to supply his infancie thou didst appoynt a Regent endued with such graces as the divell himself cannot accuse or justly convict him, this only excepted, that foolish pity did so farre prevail in him, concerning execution and punishment which thou commanded to have been execute upon her, and upon her complices, the murtherers of her husband. O Lord, in what miserie and confusion found he this realme! To what rest and quietnesse now, be his labours, sudanlie he brought the same, all estates, but speciallie the poor commons, can witness. Thy image, Lord, did so clearlie shyne in that personage, that the divell, and the wicked to whom he is prince, could not abyde it. And so to punish our sinnes and ingratitude, who did not ryghtlie esteem so pretious a gift, thou hes permitted him to fall, to our great grieve, in the hands of cruell and traterous murtherers. He is at rest, O Lord, and we are left in extreame miserie. Be mercifull to us, and suffer not Satan to prevail against thy little flocke within this realme, neither yet, O Lord, let bloode thirsty men come to the end of their wicked enterprises. Preserve, O Lord, our young king, although he be ane infant; give unto him the spirit of sanctification, with encrease of the same as he groweth in yeares. Let his raigne, O Lord, be such as thou may be glorified, and thy little flock comforted by it. Seeing that we are now left as a flock without a pastor, in civill policie, and as a shippe without a rudder in the middst of the storm, let thy providence watch, Lord, and defend us in these dangerous dayes, that the wicked of the world may see, that as weill without the help of man, as with it, thou art able to rule, maintain, and defend the little flock that dependeth upon thee. And because, O Lord, the shedding of innocent bloode hes ever been, and yet is odious in thy presence, yea, that it defyleth the whole land where it is shed and not punished, we crave of thee, for Christ thy sonnes sake, that thou wilt so try and punish the two treasonable and cruell murthers latelie committed, that the inventars, devysers, authors, and maintainers of treasonable crueltie, may be either thoroughlie converted or confounded. O Lord, if thy mercie prevent us not, we cannot escape just condemnation, for that Scotland hath spared, and England hath maintained the lyfe of that most wicked woman. Oppose thy power, O Lord, to the pryde of that cruell murtherer of her owne husband; confound her faction and their subtile enterprises, of what estate and condition soever they be; and let them and the world know, that thou art a God that can deprehend the wise in their own wisdom, and the proude in the imagination of their wicked hearts, to their everlasting confusioun. Lord, retain us that call upon thee in thy true fear. Let us grow in the same. Give thou strength to us to fight our battell, yea, Lord, to fight it lawfullie, and to end our lives in the sanctification of thy holie name.

No. XIX. [Cald. MS. apud an. 1572. Advocates' Library.]

The last will and words of John Knox, minister of the Evangell of Jesus Christ,
put in order at St. Andrew's, the 13th May, 1572.

Lord Jesus, I commend my troubled spirit in thy protection and defence, and thy troubled kirk to thy mercie.

Because I have had to doe with diverse personages of the ministrie wherunto God of his mercie directit me within this Realme, my duty craveth that I shall leave unto them now a testimonie of my mynd. And first to the Papists, and to the unthankful world, I say, that although my lyfe hath beene unto them odious, and that often they have sought my destruction, and the destruction of the kirk which God of his great mercie planted within this Realme, and hath alwayse preserved and kepted the same from their cruell interpryses, yet to them I am compelled to say, that unlesse they speedilie repent, my departing of this life shall be to them the greatest calamitie that ever yet hath apprehended them. Some small appearance they may have yet in my life, if they had grace to see. A dead man I have beene now almost these two years bypast, and yet I would that they should rypelie consider in what better estate they and their maters stand than they have done before, and they have heard of long tyme before threatned. But because they will not admit me for admonisher, I give them over to the judgement of him who knoweth the hearts of all, and will disclose the secreets thereof in due time. And this farre to the Papists. To the faithfull: Before God, before his Sone Jesus Christ, and before his holy angels, I protest that God, be my mouth, (be I ever so abject,) hath shewed to you his truth in all simplicitie. None I have corrupted, none I have defrauded, merchandise I have not made (to God's glorie I write) of the glorious evangell of Jesus Christ, but according to the measure of grace granted unto me, I have devyded the sermon of truth in just parts, beating down the rebellion of the proud in all who did declare their rebellion against God, according as God in his law giveth to me yet testimonie, and raising up the consciences troubled with the knowledge of their sinne, be declaring of Jesus Christ, the strenth of his death, and mighty operation of his resurrection, in the hearts of the faithfull. Of this, I say, I have a testimonie this day in my conscience before God, however the world rage. Be constant therfor in the doctrine which once publicklye you have professed. Let not thir scandalous dayes draw you away from Jesus Christ, neither let the prosperitie of the wicked move you to follow it or them. For howsoever that God appeareth to neglect his owne for a season, yet his majesty remaineth a just God, who neither can nor will justifie the wicked. I am not ignorant that many would that I should enter in particular determination of thir present troubles, to whom I plainlie and simplie answer, that, as I never exceeded the bounds of God's scriptures, so will I not doe in this part be God's grace. But hereof I am assured by him, who neither can deceave nor be deceived, that the castell of Edinburgh, in which all the murther, all the trouble, and the whole destruction of this poore commonwealth was invented, and, as our owne eyes may witnesse, be them and their maintainers were put in execution, shall come to destruction, maintain it whosoever, the destruction I say of bodie and soule, except they repent. I looke not to the momentarie prosperitie of the wicked, yea, although they should remaine conquerours to the coming of our Lord Jesus, but I look to this sentence, that whosoever sheddeth innocent bloode, defyleth the land, and provoketh God's wraith against himself and the land, till his bloode be shedd againe be order of law to satisfie God's anger. This is not the first tyme that yee have heard this sentence, although many at all tymes have sturred at such severity. I yet affirme the same, being readie to enter to give an account before his majestie of the stewardship that he committed to me. I know in my death, the rumours shall be strange. But, beloved in the Lord Jesus, be yee not troubled above measure, but remaine constant in the truth, and he who of his mercie sent me, conducted me, and prospered the work in my hand against Satan, will provide for you abundantlie, when either my bloode shall water the doctrine taught be me, or he of his mercie otherwise provide to put an end to this my battel.

SUPPLEMENT.

[THE following Poem, in memory of Knox, is exceedingly rare. I had in vain made inquiries after a copy of it, and was obliged to signify my despair of finding one; but I unexpectedly obtained a copy. As the tract, besides its connection with this work, is a curious specimen of the old Scottish language and versification, it is here exactly and entirely reprinted.]

A N E B R E I F C O M- M E N D A T I O V N O F V P R I C H T-

nes, in respect of the surenes of the same, to all that walk in it, amplifyit cheifly be that notabill document of Goddis michtie protection, in preseruing his maist vpright seruand, and feruent Messinger of Christis Euangell, Iohne Knox. Set furth in Inglis meter be M. Iohne Daudsone, Regent in S. Leonards College.

¶ Quhairunto is addit in the end ane schort discurs of the Estaitis quha hes caus to deploir the deith of this Excellent seruand of God.

¶ PSALME. XXXVII.

¶ Mark the vpright man, and behauld the Iust, for the end of that man is peace.

¶ IMPRENTIT AT SANCTAN-
drois be Robert Lekpreuik. Anno. 1573.

TO THE MAIST GODLIE, ANCIENT, AND WORTHIE

Schir Iohne Wischart of Pittarow Knight, M. Iohne Daudsone
wisses the continuall assistance of the Spreit of God,
to the end, and in the end.

CONSIDERING with myself (maist worthie Knight) the greit frailtie and vnsure-
ness of all strenthis eirthly quhatsœuer, quharin mā leifing god, vsis to put his
traist on the ane part, and the sure fortres and saifgaird of vprichtnes, howbeit
destitute of all aide warldly on the vther part: I culd not withhald my pen frō
vtering of that praise and commendatioun of vprichtnes, quhilk in my mynde I had
consault of the same. Being chiefly mouit heirunto be the Miraculous (as I may
weill call it) and maist wonderfull preseruatioun of that maist notabill seruand of
God, and sincer Preicheour of Christis Euangell, Iohne Knox. Quha being bot of
small estimatioun befor the eyis of the world (zit greit befor God) was hatit vnto

the deith. And that euin be Kingis, Queenis, Princes, and greit men of the warld, and finally be all the rabill of Sathanis suddartis (a), in Scotland, Ingland, and France. Zea, not only was he hatit, and railit on, bot also persecutit maist scharply, and huntit from place to place as ane vnworthie of ony societie with man. And althocht thay wer michtie and potent, zea, and wantit na euill will, and he on the vther syde ane pure man, alane, and oft tymes without help, or assistance of ye warld, zit was he michtely preseruit, and as in a maist sure saifgard (all the wickits attentis quha thristit nathing mair nor his blude being frustrat) conducted to ane maist quyet, peaciabill and happy end, to the greit aduancement of Goddis glorie, and singulare comfort of his Kirk, and to the confusioun of Sathan and discōfort of all his wickit instrumētis. Thairfoir that this sa notabil and euidēt ane documēt of the louing cair of our god towardis his seruāds suld not with him be buryit bot abyde recent in memorie till all the inhabitantis of this Realme in all ages to cum. I haue preissit (b) schortly in this lytill paper to mak, as it wer, ane memoriall of the same, and yat in that lāguage quhilk is maist cōmoun to this hail Realme, to the intent that asweill vnleirnit as learnit may be pertakeris of the same. Not that I think my self abill to handill sa worthie ane mater worthelie in ony tounge, bot that partly I may schaw my gude will in this mater, and partly to gif occasion to vtheris, that baith hes mair dexteritie in sic thingis, and greiter opportunitie of tyme, to intreit the same at greiter lenth. That be calling to mynd this notabill exēpill of Godis louing cair towardis vs, we all in thir feirfull dayis (quhairin he that seis not tryall approaching neir is destitute of Iudgement) may be strenthnit and incourageit to ga fordwart vprichtly, euerie ane in our awin vocation, without declyning outhir to the richt hand or to the left. And principally that our watche men faint not, nor begin to iouk (c), or flatter with the world for feir of Tyrānis, bot that thay may haue brasin faces, and fairheides of Iron aganis the threitnings of the wickit, cōdempning impietie of all persounis in plane termis, following the ensāpill of this maist zelous seruād of God, of quhōe heirtofoir we haue maid mentioun, and that being assurit gif sa thay walk vprichtly in dischargeing of thair office, that thay ar in ye protectioun of the Almichtie.

¶ And this small frute of my sober trauellis, I haue thoct gude to offer and present to zow (maist worthie Knicht) not sa mekill for that, that I thoct it worthie to be presentit till ony: as that I wald let my gude will and grate (d) mynd, be the same appeir towardis zow, throw quhais procurement I obtenit the benefite of that godly and faithfull (thocht mockit and falsely traducit of the warld) societie, quhair of presently I am participant. For the quhilk I acknowledge me, and my humbill seruice alwayis addettit to zour honour. And howbeit (as I mon confes) nathing can proceid of me that may in ony wayis correspond to zour meritis towardis me: zit sal the thankfulnes of mynd at na tyme (God willing) be deficient. Quhilk is to be acceptit, quhair vther thingis are lacking, in place of greit rewaird. And the rather haue I takin bauldness to dedicat this lytill Treatise vnto zour honour, baith becaus I vnderstude zow euer to haue bene sen zour Chyldheid, ane vnfenzit fauourar, and mantenar to zour power of vprichtnes, quhais praise in this lytill Volume is intreatit. And also, that this notabill seruand of God (quhais michtie preseruatioun, notwithstanding the wickitis rage, to ane quyet end, chiefly muist me to this busines) was maist beluifit of zow quhile he leuit, and yat for yat greit vprichtnes quhilk ze saw from tyme to tyme maist viuely expresse the self in him. And finally, that your honour may be muist heirby, as ze haue begunne and continewit to this day ane zelous professour of Goddis word, mantenar of the samin, and lufer of his seruandis: sa ze may perseueir to the end of zour lyfe, without sclander to zour professioun, euer approuing the treuth, and haitting impietie in all persounis, not leaning to warldly wisdom, nor louking for the plesure of greit men in the warld: Sen nane of thir thingis, bot only vprichtnes can outhir mak ane plesand to God, or zit sure in this warld. And sa traisting that zour honour will accept this my sober offer (till God grant better occasioun of greter) intill gude

part. I commit zow to the protectioun of the Almichtie, that quhen it sall

pleis God to tak zow furth of this miserie, ze may end zour lyfe in the

sanctificatioun of his haly name. To quhome be praise and

Glorie, for euer. Amen. From Sanctandrois

the XVIII. of February.

(a) soldiers.

(b) pressed, endeavoured.

(c) shift.

(d) grateful.

ANE BRIEF COMMENDATIOVN OF VPRICHTNES.

SEN that we se men till haue studyit ay
 Into this eirth sic strenthis to prepair,
 As micht be saifgaird to thame nicht and day,
 Quhen ony danger dang thame in dispair,
 Wald thow gude Reider haue ane strenth preclair, (e) Prouer. 10.
 Maist strang and stark to rin to in distres, 12, 13, 18.
 This lytill schedull schortly sall declair Ecclesi. 9.
 How that the surest Towre is vprichtnes. Ps. 25, 27, 91.

Quhilk vprichtnes we may descriue to be :
 Ane traid of lyfe conforme to Godds command. Iob. 31.
 Without all poysoun of Hypocrisie,
 Or turning to and fra, from hand to hand.
 Bot stoutly at the word of God to stand, Prouer. 5.
 Eschewing alwayis it for to transgres, Psalm 18.
 Not bowing back for thame that contramand.
 This wayis we may descriue this vprichtnes.

For first thair is na Castell, Towre, nor Toun,
 Nor naturall strenth, as Alexander sayis, Q. Curt. li. 7.
 Bot mānis Ingyne may vincous and ding doun,
 As that he had experience in his dayis,
 Na strenth was sure to theme that was his fais :
 The Craig in Asia did beir witnes, Q. Curt. li. 7.
 Howbeit in hicht vnto the sky it rais,
 It was ouercum for laik of vprichtnes.

Euin sa that bailful Bour of Babilone, Q. Curt li. 5.
 Na saifgaird was to Darius we reid, Jeremi. 51.
 Suppois it was ane maist strang Dongeone,
 And mony ma I micht declair in deid
 Bot sic exempellis Foraine nane we neid ;
 Quhat surenes fand the Bischopis halynes,
 Into Dumbartane quhair he pat his Creid ?
 It was not half so sure as vprichtnes.

The force of men gif ony will obtend, Ps. 33. 40. 60.
 Kinred, or friends to be ane gaird maist strang, Esai. 31.
 All is bot vane, they can not man defend, Jeremi. 17.
 For quha mair surely into Royat (f) rang,
 Nor the greit Conquerour his freindis amang
 Zit was he poysonit, as sum dois express, Q. Curt. lib. 10.
 Intill his Camp quhilk he had led sa lang :
 Than quhat is force of man till vprichtnes.

Riches and rent we ken dois not abyde, Prouer. 11.
 Bot flitts and fochis (g) euer to and fra ; Eccles. 5.
 Than vane it is in thame for to confyde, Job. 11.
 Sen that we se thame asweill cum as ga : Psalm. 49.
 Thairfoir my friendis sen that the case is sa, 1. Timot. 6.
 That warldly strength can haue na sickernes, Zephan. 1.
 Sum vther saifgaird surely we mon ha, Ecclesi. 2.
 Quhilk is nocht ellis bot only vprichtnes. Nahum. 3.

Bot sum perchance that winks mair wylelie,
 Will say thay wait ane wyle (h) that I na wist,
 With iouking thay will jangil (i) craftelie,
 And on thair feit will ay licht quhen thay list,
 Thinking all surenes thairin to consist :
 Hypocrisie is quent (k) with quyeines,
 Bot all begylit thay ar into the mist,
 For nathing can be sure but vprichtnes.

For quhat become of fals Achitophell,
 For als far as he saw befoir his neis, 2. Sam. 17

(e) excellent.

(f) royalty.

(g) changes situation.

(h) know a trick.

(i) juggle.

(k) acquainted, or (perhaps) crafty.

The Scriptures schawis I neid not heir to tell.
The lyke of this in mony Historeis,
I micht bring furth that to my purpois greis,
How Hypocrites into their craftynes,
Thame selfis hes trappit with greit misereis,
Becaus thay did eschew all vprichtnes.

Psalm. 7.
Ester. 7.

Bot quha sa euar on the vther syde
Hes preissit peirtly to leif vprichtlie.
And be the treuth bound bauldly till abyde,
Hes euer had the maist securitie.
For thay had God thair buckler for to be,
Quhome we mon grant to be ane strang fortres,
Of quhome the Deuill can not get victorie,
Nor all the enemies of vprichtnes.

Ester. 6.
Dani. 6.

Psalm. 76.
Psalm. 89.

Think weill my freindis this is na fenzeit fair, (*l*)
For quha sa list of Daudid for to reid,
May se quhat enemies he had alquhair,
And zit how surely he did ay proceid;
Becaus he walkit vprichtly in deid.
He was mair sure from Saulis cruelnes,
Nor gif ten thousand men intill his neid,
Had with him bene syne lackit vprichtnes.

1 Sam. 17. 18.
19. 20. 21. 22.
29. 33.
2 Sam. 2. 3. 5.
8. 15. 16. 18.
20.
1 Sam. 23.

Of sic exempills we micht bring anew,
Bot ane thair is that preifis our purpois plane,
Of Daniell that Propheit wyse and trew,
How oft was he in danger to be slane!
Into the Lyonis Den he fond na pane:
The three Children the fyre did not oppres.
I think this only Historie might gane,
To preif how sure a Towre is vprichtnes.

Dani. 6.

Dani. 3.

Bot zit becaus exempills fetchit far,
Mufis not so muche as thay thingis quhilk we se,
I purpois schortly now for to cum nar,
Vnto the but (*m*) quhair chiefly I wald be:
That is to schaw the prufe befor zour ee
Of thir premissis, as al mon confes
That hes sene God wirking in this countrie,
How ane hes bene perseruit in vprichtnes.

It is Iohne Knox in deid quhome of I mene,
That feruent faithfull seruand of the Lord,
Quhome I dar bauldly byde at till haue bene,
Ane maist trew Preichour of the Lordis word.
I rak nathing quhat Rebaldis (*n*) heir record,
Quha neuer culd speik gude of godlynes.
This man I say eschaipit fyre and sword,
And deit in peace, in praise of vprichtnes.

Bot that this may be maid mair manifest:
I will discurs sum thing in speciall,
Tuiching this Lamp, on lyfe quhill he did lest.
First he descendit bot of linage small;
As commaunly God vsis for to call
The sempil sort his summoundis til expres.
Sa calling him, he gaue him giftis with all
Maist excellent, beside his vprichtnes.

Amos, i. 7.
Mark. 1.
1. Cor. 1.
Iaco. 2.

For weill I wait that Scotland neuer bure,
In Scottis leid (*o*) ane man mair Eloquent.
Into perswading also I am sure,
Was nane in Europe that was more potent.
In Greik and Hebrew he was excellent,
And als in Latine tounge his propernes,
Was tryit trym quhen scollers wer present.
Bot thir wer nathing till his vprichtnes.

(*l*) feigned affair.

(*n*) I regard nothing what worthless fellows, &c.

(*m*) butt, or mark.

(*o*) language.

For fra the tyme that God anis did him call,
To bring thay joyfull newis vnto this land,
Quhilk hes illuminat baith greit and small,
He maid na stop but passit to fra hand,
Idolatrie maist stoutly to ganestand:
And chiefly that great Idoll of the Mes.
Howbeit maist michtie enemies he fand,
Zit schrinkit he na quhit from vprichtnes.

The greuous Galayis maid him not agast,
Althocht the Prelats gold in greit did geif,
Ouir schipburd in the sey him for to cast,
He fand sic grace they sufferit him to leif.
Zea, mairatour thay did him not mischief,
As thay did his Companzeounis mair and les,
With pynefull panis quhen thay thair pythis did preif,
God sa prouydit for his vprichtnes.

In Ingland syne he did eschaip the Ire
Of Iesabell, that Monstour of Mahoun, (*p*)
In Scotland nixt with terroure him to tyre,
Thay brint his picture in Edinburgh Toun.
Bot sen to Scotland last he maid him boun, (*q*)
Quhat battel he hes bidden ze may ges,
Sen Dagon and thay Deullis he gart ding down,
In spite of thame that hatit vprichtnes.

Thay that hes bene cheif in Authoritie,
For the maist part had him at deidly feid,
Zit he eschaipit all their crueltie,
Howbeit oftymes thay did deuyse his deid,
Zea, sum were knawin perfitley be the heid
Quha vndertuke his Dirige for to dres,
Zit bauldiy be hes baner he abaid,
And did not iouk ane ioit from vprichtnes.

Bot chiefly anis he was put to ane preace, (*r*)
Quhen that the Quene of tressoun did accuse him
Befoir hir Lords in haly Rudehous place.
Quhair clawbacks of the Court thocht till abuse him
Sa prudētly this Propheit yair did vse him,
Into refuting of thair fulischenes,
That all the haill Nobilitie did ruse (*s*) him,
And praisit God for his greit vprichtnes.

Quhen Quene and Court could not get him cōuict,
Bot sa wer disappointit of thair pray,
Thay fryit in furie that he schaipit quick,
Zit at the leist to get thair wills sum way,
Thay wald haue had him wardit for ane day,
In Dauois Towre, zea, for ane hour or les,
It was denyit for ocht the Quene culd say,
Thair micht be sene how sure was vprichtnes.

Bot in quhat perrell trow ze he was last,
Quhen Edinburgh he left with hart full sair,
Doubtles na les nor ony that hes past,
In spyte thay spak that him thay suld not spair
Thay suld him schuit into the pulpit thair
Becaus he did rebuke thair fylthenes,
And mischant (*t*) murther that infects the air,
Zit God preseruit him in vprichtnes.

Mony ma dangers nor I can declair,
Be sey and land this Propheit did sustene,
In France and Ingland, Scotland, heir and thair,
Quhilk I refer to thame that mair hes bene
Intill his company and sic things sene,
Bot this far schortly I haue maid progress,
To preif how God maist surely dois mantene,
Sic as continew intil vprichtnes.

(*p*) the devil,(*s*) extol.(*q*) ready.(*t*) wicked,(*r*) press, difficulty.

For this Excellent seruand of the Lord,
Vnto the deith was hatit as we knaw,
For sinceir preiching of the Lordis word
With Kingis, Princes, hie estait and law,
Zit in thair Ire him nicht thay not ouirthraw,
He did depart in peace and plesandnes:
For all the troublis that ze hard vs schaw
That he sustenit for lufe of vprichtnes.

And this is merwell gif we will consider,
Ane sempill man but (*u*) warldly force or aide,
Aganis quhome Kings and Princes did confidder, (*v*)
How he suld fend (*w*) from furie and thair fead, (*x*)
Syne leaue this lyfe with list for all thair plaid, (*y*)
He had ane surer gaird we mon confes,
Nor ony warldly strength that can be maid,
Quhilk was nathing but only of vprichtnes.

Bot sum may say quhairto suld thow prefer
This vprichtnes quhilk thow extolls sa hie
Vntil all warldly strenthis that euer wer?
Sen that the contrair daylie we may se,
How upricht men ar murtherit mischantlie,
As first was Abell with greit cruelnes,
Gude Iohne the Baptist, and als Zacharie,
Zea, Christ him self for all his vprichtnes.

Peter and Paull with mony may sensyne.
And of lait zeiris in Ingland as we knaw,
How mony piteously was put to pyne.
And now in France that schame is for to schaw.
Iames our gude Regent rakkin in that raw, (*z*)
Quha had rung zit wer not his richteousnes.
Sa, I can se nathing sa sone ouirthraw
Man in this irth as dois this vprichtnes.

To this I answer into termis schort,
Quhen warldly strenth is vincust and maid waist,
With it man tynis baith courage and comfort,
Quhen it is tynt quhairin he pat his traist:
Bot quho that deith in vprichtnes dois taist,
Sall haue the lyfe that lests with joyfulness,
Sa they ar sure, becaus they ar imbraist
Be the Eternall for thair vprichtnes.

Bot this sa lichtly we may not pass by:
I grant indeed quha preissis vprichtlie
To serue the Lord mon first themselfis deny,
And na wayis dres to daut (*a*) thame daintelie
Bot thame prepair for troublis Identlie (*b*),
For troublis ar the bage they mon posses,
Sen Sathan ceisis not continuallie
To troubill thame that followis vprichtnes.

Quhylis harling (*c*) thame befor Princes and Kings,
As rauing Rebalds rudelie to be rent,
Accusing thame of troubling of all things,
As cankerit Carlis that can not be content,
Except all things be done be thair consent:
Now scornit, now scourgeit, now bād with bitternes,
Imprissonit, and sindrie fassiounis schent (*d*),
And sum tymes dreuin to deith for vprichtnes.

This is thair lote oftymes I will not lane (*e*)
Into this irth that vse to be vpricht,
Bot quhat of this? my purpois zit is plane:
That is, that thay are surer, day and nicht,

Gene. 4.
Matth. 14.
2 Chro. 24.
Matth. 27.
Euseb. To. 4.
fol. 7.
Vide Sleida-
num.

Prouer. 11.

Prouer. 11.
Matth. 16.

Matth. 16.

2 Timo. 3.
Psalm. 34.
1 Pet. 5.
Iob. 1.

Luc. 21.
1. Reg. 10.
1. Reg. 17.

Matth. 27.
Ieremi. 38.
Act. 12.

Psalm. 91.

(*u*) without.

(*v*) confederate.

(*w*) defend.

(*x*) enmity.

(*y*) plea, controversy.

(*z*) reckon in that rank.

(*a*) cherish.

(*b*) diligently.

(*c*) dragging.

(*d*) maimed, or disgraced.

(*e*) conceal.

For all this wo, nor ony warldly wicht :
 For in thair conscience is mair quyetnes
 In greitest troublis, nor the men of micht
 Hes in thair Castells, without vprichtnes.

Psalm. 118.

For quhen Belshazzer greit King of the Eist,
 Ane thousand of his Princes had gart call,
 Drinkand the wyne befor thame at the Feist,
 Intill his prydefull Pomp Imperiall:
 Euin in the middis of this his mirrie hall
 He saw ane sicht that sank him in sadnes,
 Quhen he persauit the fingers on the wall,
 Wrying his wrak for his vnvprichtnes.

Dani. 5.

Quhat sall I say ? I neid not till insist,
 To schaw how thay to God that dois Rebell,
 In thair maist micht can not be haldin blist,
 For in this warld thay do begin thair hell,
 As Cain did that slew the iust Abell :
 Within thair breist thay beir sic bailfulnes,
 That tounge of men can not the teynd part tell,
 Of inwart torments for vnvprichtnes.

Gene. 4.
 Esai. 66.
 Prouer. 15.

Bot thay that walks vprichtly with the Lord,
 In greitest troublis wantis not inwart rest,
 As the Apostillis douning (f) for Godds word,
 Reioysit that for Christ sa thay wer drest ;
 Peter in prisone sleipit but molest ;
 Paull in the stocks and Sylas with glaidnes,
 Did sing ane Psalme at midnicht, sa the best
 Surenes that man can haue, is vprichtnes.

Prouer 14.

Act. 5.

Act. 12.
 Act. 16.

Sa be this surenes now I do not mene,
 That Godds seruands ar neuer tane away,
 Be cruell men, for the contrair is sene,
 For God oftymes of his Iudgements I say,
 Letts thame so fall, as thocht befor the day :
 To plague the warld for thair vnthankfulnes,
 Quhilk is not worthie of sic men as thay.
 Bot I mene this be strenth of vprichtnes.

Esai. 3.
 Heb. 11.

That quhen it plesis God to let thame fall,
 Thay haue sic inwart comfort without cair,
 That thay depart with ioy Angelicall,
 Of lyfe assurit that lestit for euer mair.
 And zit sum tyme he dois his seruands spair,
 To let the Tyrannis se his michtines,
 In spyte of thame, that he can his alquhair,
 Preserue maist surely intill vprichtnes.

Acts. 7.
 2. Timot. 4.

Esai. 41.
 Ierem. 1. 5

Quhilk we haue sene as we can not deny,
 Into lohne Knoxis michtie preservation,
 Quhilk till our comfort we suld all apply,
 I mene that ar the Faithfull Congregatioun.
 Sen he departit with sic consolatioun
 Euin as he leuit, he deit in Faithfulnes,
 Being assurit in Christ of his Saluatioun,
 As in the end he schew with vprichtnes.

Sa is he past from pane to pleasure ay,
 And till greit eis doutles vntill him sell,
 Bot for ane plague till vs I daar weill say,
 As sair I feir we sall heir schortly tell,
 Schir wink at vice (g) beginnis to tune his bell.
 Bot on this heid na mair I will digres,
 That gude men hes mair rest in all perrell
 Nor wickit in thair welth bot vprichtnes.

Psalm. 37.

Then sen alwayis we se that men ar sure
 Throw vprichtnes quhiddir thay liue or die,
 Let all gude Cristianes Imploy thair cure,
 In thair vocation to leif vprichtlie ;

(f) beat, or scourged.

(g) Sir Wink-at-vice, an allegorical character.

And chiefly let all preicheouris warnit be,
That this day God and the gude caus profes,
Na wayis to wink at sic Impietie
And chiefly dois withstand all vprichtnes.

Tit. 1.

Taking exempill of this Propheite plane,
Quhome heir befor we breuit in this bill, (*h*)
Quha Godds reuelit will wald neuer lane,
Quhen men begouth for to delyte in ill,
He wald not wane ane wy (*i*) for na mānis will
For to rebuke Erle, Barrone, or Burges,
Quhen in thair wickit wayis thay walkit still.
Follow this Lamp I say of vprichtnes.

Let nouthur lufe of friend, nor feir of fais,
Mufe zow to mank (*k*) zour Message, or hald bak
Ane iot of zour Commission ony wayis :
Call ay quhite, quhite, and blak, that quhilk is blak,
Ane Gallimafray (*l*) neuer of them mak :
Bot ane gud caus distingue from wicketnes,
This kynd of phrais sumtymes this Propheite spak,
Quhen he saw sum not vsing vprichtnes.

Psalm. 40.

Esai. 5.

2 Timot. 2.

In generall do not all things inuolue,
Thinking zour selfis dischargeit than to be,
Thocht na mānis mynd in maters ze resolute :
For (zit till vse this same mānis Elogie)
To speik the treuth, and speik the treuth trewlie,
Is not a thing (*m*) (said he) brethren doutles.
Thairfoir speik trewly but Hypocrisie,
Gif ze wald haue the praise of vprichtnes.

2 Timot. 2.

Num. 23. 24.

Let vice ay in the awin cullouris be kend,
But beiring with, or zit extenuatioun,
Schawing how heichly God it dois offend,
Spairing na stait maks preuaricatioun,
Let it be sene till all the Congregatioun,
That ze sic haitrent haue at wicketnes,
That ze mon dampne their greit abhominatioun,
Quha planely fechtis aganis all vprichtnes.

2 Timot. 4.

Act. 17.

Esai. 58.

1 Timot. 5.

Quhilk tred of doctrine gif ze anis begin
I grant the Deuill and warld will be agane zow ;
The feid of fremmit, and craibing of zour kin, (*n*)
First ze sall find, syne terroure to constraine zow
To syle the suith (*o*) and sunze (*p*) I will plane (*q*) zow,
The Zock is not sa licht as sum dois ges ;
Bot zit haue ze na dreid quha do disdane zow,
Sen that zour fortres sure is vprichtnes.

Psalm. 38.

Psalm. 41.

Nahum. 1.

Psalm. 31.

Psalm. 34.

For pleis it God zour lyfe to lenthen heir,
Thocht all the warld aganis zow wald conspyre,
Thay sall not haue the power zow to deir, (*r*)
Albeit thay rage and rin wod (*s*) in thair Ire,
And gif that God thinks gude be sword or fyre
To let zow fall, be ay in reddyne :
Being assurit that heuin salbe zour hyre,
Because ze endit sa in vprichtnes.

2 Timot. 4.

Let not the lufe of this lyfe temporall,
Quhilk ze mon lose, but let quhen ze leist wene, (*t*)
Stay zow to cois (*u*) with lyfe Celestiall.
Quhen euer that the chois cumis thame betwene,
Christis sentence in zour gardene keip ay grene,
Quha sauis his lyfe sall loise it not the les.
Quhilk euin into this warld hes oft bene sene,
Quhat gaine is than to deny vprichtnes ?

Math. 16.

- (*h*) described in this work. (*i*) probably *waynd ane wee*, i e. swerve a little.
(*k*) curtain. (*l*) a hotch-potch. (*m*) one thing.
(*n*) the nostility of strangers, and anger of relations. (*o*) conceal the truth.
(*p*) anxiety. (*q*) plainly tell. (*r*) injure. (*s*) mad.
(*t*) without hindrance, when ye least think. (*u*) barter.

Than to conclude, sen in thir dangerous dayis
 Sa mony terroures Tyranis casts befoir zow,
 Call vpon God to strenthen zow alwayis,
 That with his haly Spreit he will decoir zow,
 As he hes done his seruands ay befoir zow,
 That ze may neuer wink at wickitnes,
 With Gun & Gainze thocht thay boist to gor zow,
 Sen that zour Towre sa sure is vprichtnes.

Esai. 51.

¶ F I N I S. M. I. D.

HISTORICAL REMARKS ON KNOX'S IMPLICATION IN RIZZIO'S MURDER.

By PATRICK FRASER TYTLER, Esq.

Appended to the Seventh Volume of his History of Scotland.

It has long been known that some of the principal supporters of the Protestant cause in Scotland were implicated in the assassination of Rizzio; but it has hitherto been believed that their great ecclesiastical leader, Knox, was not privy to this murder. From the language in which the event is told in his history, it might be inferred, indeed, that he did not condemn the assassination of one whom he regarded as a bitter enemy to the truth. "After this manner above specified," says he, "to wit, by the death of David Rizzio, the noblemen were relieved of their trouble, and restored to their places, and rowmes (*offices*), and likewise the Church reformed, and all that professed the Evangel within this realm, after fasting and prayer, were delivered;" but in weighing this passage, it is to be remembered, that although the Fifth Book of Knox's History was probably composed from notes and collections left by the Reformer, it was not written by him. The late Dr. M'Crie, his excellent biographer, has this sentence upon the subject, which, from the authority deservedly attached to his life of Knox, may be taken as the present popular belief upon the point. "There is no reason to think that he (Knox) was privy to the conspiracy which proved fatal to Rizzio; but it is probable that he had expressed his satisfaction at an event which contributed to the safety of religion and of the commonwealth, if not also his approbation of the conduct of the conspirators."

As Dr. M'Crie had not the advantage of consulting those letters upon this subject, which I have found in the State Paper Office, and by which the whole secret history of the conspiracy against Rizzio has been developed, we are not to wonder that he should have spoken so decisively of Knox's innocence of any previous knowledge of the plot. I shall now state, as clearly as I can, the evidence upon which I have affirmed in the text, that he was precognizant of the intended murder — adding, at the same time, some letters which may be quoted in his defence.

The reader is already aware that Rizzio was assassinated on the 9th of March 1565-6; that Ruthven, Morton, Lethington, fled on the Queen's escape and meditated advance to Edinburgh (March 18th), and that while other accomplices secreted themselves in Scotland, Morton and Ruthven took refuge in England. Such being the state of things, on the 21st of March, the Earl of Bedford, then at Berwick, of which he was governor, thus wrote to Cecil — [This letter merely mentions that Ruthven had arrived at Berwick, that Morton was soon expected, and that Argyle, Glencairn, and Rothes, had received their pardon. It then concludes with this following passage:] — "Their King remaineth utter enemy to these lords now abroad, notwithstanding his former doings with them. Hereof, and for that Mr. Randolph writeth also more at large of the names of such as now be gone abroad, I shall not trouble you therewith." * * *

This letter was written from Berwick eleven days after the murder, and about a week after the flight of the conspirators, here called "those that be gone abroad;" and we see that in the last sentence, Bedford mentions to Cecil, that he will not trouble him with any farther details, as Mr. Randolph was at that very time writing to him, and would send in his letter the names of the conspirators who had gone abroad.

This letter of Randolph is accordingly in the State Paper Office, and

pinned to it I found the promised List of Names. I shall first give the letter, and then the "list." The letter, which is addressed to Cecil, is wholly in Randolph's hand — the list is in the hands of a clerk, who I find at that time was employed in his confidential correspondence by Bedford. The letter, which is addressed to Cecil, is as follows: —

RANDOLPH TO CECIL.

" May it please your Honor, Berwick, 21st March 1565-6.

" Since Mr. Carew's departure hence, this hath happened. The Queen, to be revenged upon the lords that gave the last attemptate, and slew David, is content to remit unto the former lords, with whom she was so grievously offended, all that they had done at any time against her, who, seeing now their liberty and restitution offered unto them, were all content, saving my Lord of Murray, to leave the other lords that were the occasion of their return, and took several appointment as they could get it, of which the first was the Earl of Glencairn, next Rothes, Argile, and so every one after other, saving, as I said, my Lord of Murray, with him Patarro and Grayne [Grange], who, standing so much upon their honours and promise, will not leave the other without some likelihood to do them good.

" The lords of the last attemptate, which were these: Morton, Ruthven, Lindsay, and Liddington, finding these men fall from them whom they trusted so much in, and for whose cause they had so far ventured themselves, found it best to save themselves in time, and therefore upon Sunday last, every one of the four above-named, departed their several way, my Lord of Morton towards the West Borders, my Lord Ruthven through Tividale, and so came to Wark, and yesterday to this town. The Lord Lindsay into Fife, Liddington to Athol, to my L. there, either to be saved by him, or to purchase his pardon of the Q., which is thought will be so hard as may be, and therefore is he looked for very shortly to be in this country, if he can escape.

" Besides these that were the principal takers in hand of this matter, there are also these: — the Laird of Ormiston; Hawton, his son-in-law; Cawder, his nephew; Brunston, Whyttingham, Andrew Car of Fawlside, Justice-Clerk, brother, George Douglas, and some other. Of the town of Edinburgh, divers; so that as I judge, there are as many like to take hurt in this action as were in the former. What is become of any of these, I know not as yet, saving Andrew Car, that came to this town with the L. Ruthven and his son.

" The Q., upon Monday last, returned to Edinburgh. In her company the Earls Bothwell, Huntly, Marshall, Hume, Seton, with as many as there [they] were able to bring with them " * * * At Berwick, the 21st March, 1565.

This letter explains itself, and needs no comment. The list of the names which was pinned to it is as follows. It bears this indorsement in the hand of Cecil's clerk.

Martii, 1565.

" Names of such as were consenting to the death of David.

" THE EARL MORTON.	LOCHLEVEN.
THE L. RUTHVEN.	ELPHINSTON.
THE L. LINDSAY.	PATRICK MURRAY.
THE SECRETARY.	PATRICK BALLANTYNE.
THE MR. OF RUTHVEN.	GEORGE DOUGLAS.
LAIRDS.	ANDREW KAR, of FAWDONSIDE.
ORMISTON.	JOHN KNOX, } <i>Preachers.</i>
BRUNSTON.	JOHN CRAG, }
HAUGHTON.	

" All these were at the death of Davy, and privy thereunto, and are now in displeasure with the Q., and their houses taken and spoiled.*

The inference from all this seems to me inevitable; namely, that in an authentic list sent to Secretary Cecil by Bedford and Randolph, the name of John Knox is given as one of those who were privy and consenting to the death of David Rizzio. Now, that these two persons, the Earl of Bedford and Randolph, were intimately acquainted with the whole details of the conspiracy, has been proved in the text. * * *

* It is certain that this cannot mean that all whose names are to be found in this list were personally present at the act of the murder; it should be understood to mean that "all these were at the murder of Davy, or privy thereto."

The evidence, therefore, is direct and clear, and comes from those who must be esteemed the best witnesses in such a case. But there are other circumstances which strongly corroborate it, as far as Knox is concerned. The Reformer was then the great leader and adviser of the party of the Kirk; Rizzio was regarded as its bitter enemy, an opponent of God, an oppressor and tyrant over God's people; and we know that Knox conceived it lawful for private individuals to put such persons to death, provided all redress in the ordinary course of justice was rendered impossible. "The truth is," says Dr. M'Crie, in his reflections upon the death of Beaton, "he (Knox) held the opinion that persons who, by the commission of flagrant crimes, had forfeited their lives, according to the law of God and the just laws of society, such as notorious murderers and tyrants, might warrantably be put to death by private individuals, provided all redress in the ordinary course of justice was rendered impossible, in consequence of the offenders having usurped the executive authority, or being systematically protected by oppressive rulers." Now, keeping this in mind, we find Morton and Ruthven, the leading conspirators, informing Cecil, in a letter from Berwick, written on the 27th March, that the great end proposed by them in the murder of Rizzio was, to prevent the universal subversion of religion within Scotland; and they add this remarkable sentence—"And to the execution of the said enterprise the most honest and most worthy were easily induced to approve, and fortify the king's deliberation in the premises; howbeit, in action and manner of execution more were followed of the king's advice, kindled by an extreme choler, than we deliberated to have done." Who, then, were these persons named here—"the most honest and most worthy?" Evidently none else than the heads of the Protestant party, Morton, and Ruthven, Lethington, Lindsay, and Ochiltree; the Barons of Ormiston, Brunston, Calder, Hatton, Lochleven, and others in Scotland; with Cecil himself, and Bedford, and Randolph, the great supporters of the Protestant cause in England. And here it is to be noted, that these Barons of Ormiston, Brunston, Calder, and Hatton, were dear and intimate personal friends of Knox, whilst Ochiltree was his father-in-law. The Reformer also, as we have seen, was the confidential correspondent of Bedford and Cecil, the associate in the common cause for the support of religion, with Morton and Lethington, and undoubtedly the most powerful and influential of all the ministers or leaders of the Kirk. If called upon, therefore, to believe that the list which implicates him is a forged document, and that he had no foreknowledge of the murder of Rizzio, we are to believe that in a plot formed by the party of which he was the leader, in which all his friends were implicated, the object of which was to support that form of faith which was dearer to him than life, by the commission of an act of which, from his avowed principles, they knew that he would not disapprove; they studiously declined his assistance, concealed all that was to happen, and preferred for the first time in their lives to act without him. This supposition seems to me, I confess, untenable; and when I find Bedford and Randolph transmitting his name as one of the conspirators to Cecil, I cannot escape from giving credit to their assertion.

Another corroboration of his accession to this conspiracy was his precipitate flight from Edinburgh with the rest of the conspirators, upon the threatened advance of the Queen to the city. His colleague Craig, it is to be observed, who was afterwards accused by his parishioners as having been too much a favourer of the Queen, remained in the city; but Knox fled precipitately, and in extreme agony of spirit, to Kyle, and, as we have already seen, did not venture to return till the noblemen rose against the Queen, after the death of Darnley. If he was not implicated, why did he take guilt to himself by flight?

There is a passage to be found in the manuscript history of Calderwood which is worth noticing upon this point. It has been quoted by Dr. M'Crie, and is as follows:—"King James the VI. having found great fault with Knox for approving of the assassination of Rizzio, one of the ministers said, that the slaughter of David, as far as it was the work of God, *was allowed by Mr. Knox*, and not otherwise."—*Calderwood M. S. ad annum* 1591. "Knox himself," adds Dr. M'Crie, "does not make this qualification when he mentions the subject incidentally." It is not clear, however, whether this sentence refers to Knox's allowance or approval of the murder, before or after the deed. It is, lastly, to be remembered, that Rizzio was a Roman Catholic, consequently, in Knox's eyes, an

idolater; and that the Reformer and his party held that idolatry might justly be punishable by death. "Into this sentiment they were led," says Dr. M'Crie, "in consequence of their having adopted the untenable opinion, that the judicial laws given to the Jewish nation were binding upon Christian nations, as to all offences against the moral law."

Such is the evidence which appears to me conclusive in support of the fact stated in the text. Let me now mention two circumstances which may be quoted in defence of Knox, and in proof of his innocence of this charge. The first list, including Knox's name as one privy to Rizzio's death, is, as we have seen, preserved in the State Paper Office, attached to a letter dated 21st March. But there is another list in the British Museum, dated the 27th of March, which does not include the Reformer's name, or that of Craig his colleague. It is in the handwriting of Randolph, and is entitled, "The names of such as were doers, and of council, in the late attempt for the killing of the Secretary David, at Edinburgh, 9th March 1566, as contained in the account sent to the council of England, by the Earl of Bedford, Lieutenant of the North, and Sir Thomas Randolph, ambassador from England to Scotland at the time, dated at Berwick, 27th March 1566." This account or letter of the 27th of March has been printed from the original in the Cotton Collection, by Sir Henry Ellis, Vol. II. p. 207, along with the list of the names.

The second circumstance is this — when Morton and Ruthven fled to Berwick, and sent to Bedford a vindication of their proceedings, with the intent that he should communicate it to Cecil and Elizabeth, they positively denied that any of the ministers of Scotland were art and part in the conspiracy, and accused the Papists of having raised the Report. "It is come to our knowledge (they say) that some Papists have bruited that these our proceedings have been at the instigation of the ministers of Scotland. We assure your Lordship upon our honour, that there were none of them art nor part of that deed, nor were participate thereof."

And now it may be asked, why do you reject the evidence of this second list, and why are we not to believe this solemn declaration, absolving the ministers of Scotland, and of course Knox with them, from all participation in the murder. To this I answer, that there is no evidence to raise doubt, that the list given on the 21st March was written in good faith, while the event was yet new, after the arrival of Lord Ruthven, and without any object but that of transmitting information to Cecil; while that of the 27th March, sent to the council of England, was carefully prepared after the failure of the conspiracy, by the escape of the Queen, and when the cautious and politic Morton had reached Berwick; that these lords would have an especial object in keeping the names of Knox and Craig out of the list, is evidenced by the above extract, and that they would have little scruple to such an suppression is clear, from the manner in which they submit their narrative to Cecil, to be amended and qualified at his pleasure. * * *

So far then as to the preference given of the first list to the second; but then comes the question — Why not believe Morton, when he states upon his word of honour, that none of the ministers of Scotland were art and part of that deed? I answer, because, according to Morton's notions, being art and part, or participate in any action or crime, was a totally different thing from being privy to it, or cognizant of it before it was committed. Morton, according to the distinction which he made on his own trial, might have asserted, with perfect honour, that neither Knox nor any of the ministers were participate in Rizzio's murder, and yet he may have been perfectly aware that Knox was privy to the murder, knew that it was about to be committed, and, according to the expression used to the king by one of their number, allowed of it, that is, gave a silent consent to it, so far as he considered it to be the work of God, for the destruction of an enemy of the truth and an idolater. I say confidently, Morton made this distinction, because he tells us so himself in his own trial and subsequent confession. * * *

It is perfectly clear, therefore, that Morton's declaration, that none of the ministers of Scotland were art and part of Rizzio's murder, does not necessarily imply any declaration that Knox had not a fore-knowledge of the murder; on the contrary, it is quite consistent with his having known it, and, according to the term used by one of his brethren to James, allowed of it.

VINDICATION OF JOHN KNOX,

FROM A

CHARGE OF IMPLICATION IN RIZZIO'S MURDER.

IN the Seventh Volume of the History of Scotland, by Mr. PATRICK FRASER TYTLER, (which comprises the period of our national annals between Mary's marriage with Darnley, July 1565, and the conclusion of the Civil War in 1572), certain grave charges are brought against our Reformer, which, if substantiated, or borne out by the evidence adduced in proof, would utterly destroy his character as a man and a Christian minister, by fixing upon him the stigma of participation in treason and murder, and making him an associate in guilt with the plotters and assassins of that barbarous age. This is a question deserving of serious consideration; one in which every Scotchman must feel that the reputation of our illustrious countryman, as well as the credit of the Reformed religion itself, are deeply implicated.

Of the value of Mr. Tytler's historical researches, and of the important services he has rendered to the cause of public truth, by the accessions which he has made to our knowledge of those dark and turbulent times, there can be but one opinion. With the use of such extensive and important materials at his command, as he found in the State-Paper Office and other repositories, it was to be expected that he would be put in a condition to discover many new facts, as well as to elucidate others where truth had been mixed with fiction, or sacrificed amidst the contentions of antagonist writers.

It is not the object of this Dissertation to enumerate the various elucidations which Mr. Tytler has made to this portion of Scottish history. The pains which he has bestowed in collecting and bringing to light new details, are mentioned here chiefly to show, that if evidence did anywhere exist that could implicate our Reformer as an accessory in any of the plots or conspiracies of his time, it was not likely to escape so laborious and successful an inquirer. It is not meant to be denied, that amongst other discoveries, now for the first time made in the State-Paper Office, circumstances have been elicited that throw a darker shade over some of the proceedings of the Reformers, in their connexion with the conspiracies and assassinations that followed the unhappy marriages of the Queen, first with Darnley, and afterwards

with Bothwell. But whether any of these discoveries tend to implicate John Knox as precognizant of, or connected with any of these foul transactions, is a point which we think will require more evidence to establish than Mr. Tytler has yet produced.

Dr. M'Crie, when adverting to the subject, says, (p. 253,) "There is no reason to think that he (Knox) was privy to the conspiracy which proved fatal to Rizzio;" and that this opinion is correct, we hope to make appear in the course of a few observations. "But it is probable," continues Dr. M'Crie, "that he had expressed his satisfaction at an event which contributed to the safety of religion and the commonwealth, if not also his approbation of the conduct of the conspirators." Admitting all this to be true, it affords no evidence that our Reformer was "privy to the murder;" the approval of an act being a matter entirely different from a foreknowledge of it, and inferring no necessary implication, direct or indirect, in the commission of it.

In the text of his History, (vol. vii. p. 25.) Mr Tytler asserts, that "Knox and Craig, the Ministers of Edinburgh, were made acquainted with the conspiracy;" and in an Appendix of "Proofs and Illustrations," he states at length the facts and inferences by which this grave accusation is attempted to be established. The evidence on which he has founded his charge, is partly direct and partly constructive: These allegations it is the object of this Vindication to examine. Of proofs direct, there is but one; and that is contained in a certain letter, which professes to give "the names of such as were consenting to the death of David;" amongst which names appear those of "John Knox and John Craig, preachers." Mr. Tytler's presumptive proofs are: 1st, From Knox's principles, that idolators were punishable with death; and from the language in which he is alleged to have spoken of the murder, it is probable he approved of it, and might therefore have been admitted into the secret. 2d, That as Knox fled precipitately from Edinburgh immediately after the assassination, his flight must be held as an evidence of his guilt. 3d, That it is hardly credible Knox would have been left out of a plot, formed by the party of which he was the leader, and in which all his friends were implicated. 4th, That the language of the prayers and sermons during the Fast immediately preceding the murder, was such as to show that the preachers were apprised of it; their exhortations tending to excite violence and bloodshed, and inculcating the duty of inflicting vengeance on the persecutors of God's people. These are the proofs direct and presumptive, on which Mr. Tytler has charged Knox with being privy to the Rizzio conspiracy. We shall now proceed

briefly to examine them ; leaving, for subsequent consideration, the "two circumstances," which, he says, may be quoted "in defence" of the Reformer.

It may be necessary to bear in mind that Rizzio was assassinated on the evening of Saturday the 9th of March, 1566. The letter containing the names of Knox and Craig, was written from Berwick on the 21st of March, "eleven days after the murder, and about a week after the flight of the conspirators." It was addressed from Randolph to Cecil, then in London ; for the purpose of communicating to him the details of the assassination, and the names of "the principal takers in hand of that matter." It is clear that the question of Knox's participation in, or foreknowledge of the affair, depends on the credit to be attached to this list of conspirators ; for there is nothing in the letter itself, nor in any other contemporary document, that in the remotest degree implicates the Reformer in that act.

It may be stated *in limine*, and independently of this List, as throwing doubt on the supposed connexion of Knox with this plot, that it was originally concocted by persons with whom he was not in confidence, and from motives in which he was not likely to participate. The prime instigator of the murder was Darnley himself ; and as he was then "understood to be inclined to Popery," it is not the least probable he would make a confidant of John Knox ; nor does it appear there was ever any intercourse or intimacy between them. The motive that suggested to Darnley this atrocious deed, was twofold,—jealousy that Rizzio had criminally supplanted him in the Queen's affections, and been the main cause of her refusing him the crown-matrimonial ; and wounded pride, that a foreign upstart should be treated with such marked familiarity, and even invested with some of the Royal prerogatives, by having "a cachet to be used in the signing of letters, committed to his custody." The princely state which he affected in his apparel, furniture and equipage, increased the King's feelings of hatred, and his desire for revenge.

Darnley communicated his grievances, first to George Douglas, and then to Lord Ruthven, "who saw no other means to remedy the King's grief and suspicions, than that David should be taken out of the way." The next to whom the plot was communicated were Morton and Lindsay. To these noblemen nothing could be more acceptable than this proposal, as they saw in it the advantages of having the King, who had now lost Mary's affections, placed entirely under their management ; and the hope of obtaining the restoration of their banished friends, Murray

Glencairn, Argyle, Rothes, Ochiltree, Boyd, &c. who had fled to England, having been denounced rebels for having opposed the Queen's marriage, and her conferring on Darnley the title of King without the advice and consent of the States.

So far, the plot against Rizzio appears to have been of a private and political nature, prompted by causes in which Knox could have no direct interest, and by motives which he was not likely either to sanction or approve. Mr. Tytler says, the consent of the Protestant barons, and of the ministers, was easily obtained; but of this he produces no evidence, as the letter to which he refers as his authority, merely states that care was taken to have their friends at hand if need required, "which caused them to assemble so many as they thought sufficient, against the time that this determination of theirs should be put in execution." The same letter adds, that the King was so eager to have the deed done, that he agreed to be at the doing of it himself. There is nothing in these facts to establish the probability, but the reverse, that Knox was admitted an accomplice in the conspiracy. It is true, the security of the Protestant religion was held out as one of the benefits to accrue from the destruction of Rizzio, who was regarded as a bitter enemy to the truth, and understood to be the pensioned agent of Rome. But this was a subsequent stipulation, exacted by Morton and his associates as part of the price for which they were willing to lend their aid in accomplishing the primary objects which the King had so deeply at heart. Let us now turn to the direct proof,—the List containing the names of the two ministers.

And here it may perhaps appear suspicious, that, while the letter is wholly in Randolph's hand, the List is not, but pinned to it as a separate document, said to be "written by a clerk, who was at that time employed in his confidential correspondence by Bedford." Now, allowing with Mr. Tytler, that both Randolph and Bedford "were intimately acquainted with the whole details of the conspiracy," this fact does not satisfactorily account for the peculiarity in question. In writing on the subject to Cecil, on the 21st of March, Bedford informed him that Randolph "would write also more at large of the names of such (conspirators) as now be gone abroad." This, accordingly, he did on the same day, as the date bears; and having given the promised information in the body of the letter, it must appear singular, to say the least, that he should have appended another catalogue, on a detached slip of paper, differing from his own, and not professing to be the "Names of such as *now be gone abroad*," but indorsed, in the hand of Cecil's clerk, "Names of such as were *consenting to the*

death of David." This discrepancy is rather remarkable, and throws great doubt on the trust-worthiness of the appended document. It does not appear, moreover, whether the list was pinned to the letter originally, or afterwards; nor is there any proof when or by whom it was so attached. It is not improbable, that the information promised by Bedford, was not the "names" given in the letter of the 21st, but in the letter of the 27th, which contains a totally different list of thirty-one conspirators; in which, however, the name of Knox does not appear.

After the pinned list, is the following note—"All these were at the death of Davy, and privy thereunto, and are now in displeasure with the Queen, and their houses taken and spoiled." This remark, it is obvious, cannot apply to Knox, who was not personally present at the murder; and, therefore, Mr. Tytler suggests that it should be understood to mean, "*or* privy thereto." But even giving him the benefit of this amendment, (although it might be objected to as purely gratuitous,) still the application would be irrelevant to our Reformer, as it is nowhere stated that his house was "taken and spoiled." Violence was done by the military, within ten days after the murder, (March 19,) to many houses in Edinburgh, and "all who had absented themselves" were denounced rebels, and had their effects confiscated. If Knox had been among the number, his name was too notorious not to have caused the fact to become publicly known; and his enemies, the Papists, would have been delighted to receive so authentic a corroboration of the report which they were endeavouring to propagate, that the deed was committed at the instigation of the Protestant clergy. On the other hand, in the month of December, immediately after the baptism of the young Prince, when Mary's enmity towards the conspirators had abated, she consented, at the earnest entreaty of Murray, to pardon those who had been banished for the murder of Rizzio. The list included Morton, Ruthven, Lindsay, and seventy-six other persons. From this act of grace only two marked delinquents were excepted—George Douglas, who had stabbed the Secretary over her shoulder, and Andrew Car of Fawdonside, who had presented a pistol to her breast. If Knox's name had been among the seventy-six to whom the Royal mercy was extended, we may rest assured that the Protestant party would have hailed the circumstance as a complete and triumphant exoneration of their great champion. This silence of friends and foes may be taken as an undeniable proof of our Reformer's innocence.

The only natural conclusion from all this is, that the list in question was a hurried scroll, either drawn up from the oral

statements of some of the conspirators who fled to Berwick, or from the malicious report of the Papists, who, as has just been stated, endeavoured to propagate the belief, that the foul deed had been committed "at the instigation of the ministers of Scotland." It is known that various rumours were spread abroad at the time. "In the first accounts of the murder sent to England (says Robertson) there seems to have been mingled (as is usual in relating extraordinary events) some circumstances which afterwards appeared to be false ; among others, that a friar, named Black, had been slain at the same time with Rizzio."

In the List, certainly, the names of Knox and Craig appear, but it contains not the names of Lennox, Darnley, Murray, Argyll, Rothes, Glencairn, Magill, Calder, Grange, Ochiltree, and others, who were either present at the catastrophe, or had foreknowledge of it. So far, therefore, the accuracy of the list may be fairly disputed. Or if any trust is to be reposed in this document at all, it might be a list of those who were willing that Rizzio should be brought to a public trial ; for this alternative was proposed by some of his enemies, as a means by which he might be removed, and the cause of the Reformation promoted.

It is alleged, though not correctly, that Knox fled, and absented himself from Edinburgh until after the death of Darnley, when the Protestant nobles rose against the Queen. This precipitate retreat, Mr. Tytler construes into another corroboration of his accession to the conspiracy ; and concludes—"If he was not implicated, why did he take guilt to himself by flight ?" This argument cuts double-edged ; for if Knox was guilty, so was Craig. Yet the latter did not flee, but remained in the capital unmolested. So far from betraying any consciousness of guilt, he boldly continued to preach the Reformed doctrines ; and when commanded by the Queen herself, (another presumption of his innocence,) a short time afterwards, (May 1567,) to proclaim her banns with Bothwell, her husband's murderer, from the pulpit of St. Giles' Church, he uttered the following most solemn and appalling protest : "I take heaven and earth to witness, that I abhor and detest this marriage, as odious and slanderous to the world ; and I would exhort the faithful to pray earnestly that a union against all reason and good conscience, may yet be overruled by God, to the comfort of this unhappy realm." This certainly was not the conduct of a man whose conscience told him he had participated in an act which exposed him to the peculiar vengeance of the Queen.

Knox's flight from Edinburgh is easily accounted for on other grounds than his assumed implication in the Rizzio conspiracy.

He had been especially obnoxious to Mary from the moment she landed in Scotland. Before leaving France, the Popish clergy who visited that kingdom, had represented him as the ringleader of her factious subjects ; and even then she had determined he should be punished. His book against Female Government was another cause of her hatred ; and this feeling was still more exasperated by the different interviews he had held with her, at one of which his sharp reproof had drawn from her "a flood of tears," and "a vow to God that she would be revenged." Nor is this all. In 1563, he had been tried on a charge of treason by the Privy Council ; and though acquitted, this only embittered the resentment of the Queen, whose indignation at his escape extended to the noblemen that had taken part in his trial.

Besides, in the month of August 1565, he was again dragged before the Privy Council, on the charge of having attacked their Majesties from the pulpit, and suspended from preaching. The inhibition was of short duration, not however from an abatement of the Royal displeasure, but because the Town-Council had requested its removal, as they could "in no manner of way consent that his mouth be closed," and because "Mr. John Craig refused to do any service there, which put the people in a stir."

It was at this period, when Knox was under the deep resentment of the Court, had alienated many of his friends, and lost the confidence of the principal leaders in the Reformation, that the catastrophe occurred of which he is accused of having been a secret accomplice. It is evident that, independently of the murder, he had at that time abundant reasons of apprehension for his personal safety ; and this danger would have been greatly increased after the flight of the conspirators, when the Queen, had he remained behind, must have had him completely in her power, and would doubtless have gratified her revenge, as she took instant steps to punish the accomplices, and advanced to the capital, (March 18th,) at the head of a force of 8000 men, threatening to inflict the most exemplary vengeance on all who had been accessory to the murder of her secretary. Great outrages were committed by the military "in breaking up doors, and thrusting themselves into every house." Two men were condemned to death, but reprieved ; and the sheriff-depute of Perth was hanged and quartered. The laird of Drumlanrig and his son were imprisoned, merely for coming into the town two days after the murder. Happily Knox was beyond her reach ; but being determined to get quit of one who had been long so troublesome to her, she wrote to the nobleman in the west country, with whom he resided, to banish him from his house.

One cause of his flight was, no doubt, the "bond" or engagement which the Queen proclaimed, "ordering all men that were friends to any of those privy to David's death, to subscribe it, and assist in pursuing them." In this order Knox would have found himself directly implicated, for his father-in-law, Ochiltree, was one of the conspirators. He had no resource, therefore, but to withdraw, as he could not in conscience comply with the terms of the bond.

The causes of our Reformer's precipitate retreat from Edinburgh, are thus easily accounted for; and as for "the extreme agony of spirit in which he fled to Kyle," that proceeded from no remorse for having been cognizant of or implicated in the assassination. The reason of his anguish he has himself explained: it was, he says, because "I was compelled to leave my flocke at Edinburgh, who are now dispersed, &c. and my desolate bed-fellow, the partner of her bosom, and my two dear children, Nathaniel and Eleazer." The different circumstances in which Knox and Craig were thus placed, sufficiently explain why the one fled in agony of spirit, while the other continued to expound the oracles of truth, and to reprimand boldly from the pulpit the faults and vices of the highest personages in the realm.

It is not correct, however, as Mr. Tytler asserts, that Knox did not venture to return to the capital till after the death of Darnley, which took place in February, 1567. He was present at the General Assembly which met in Edinburgh on the 25th of December, 1566; and on him devolved the principal share of the business, much of which, as condemning idolatry and the usurped tyranny of the Roman Catholic Antichrist, must have been peculiarly offensive to the Queen. Had the Reformer's flight been the effect of conscious guilt, he would scarcely have ventured thus boldly and publicly to denounce the Court religion, almost in the hearing of the palace, and within a few months after the murder.*

But there is another part of the proceedings of that Assembly still more important, as bearing testimony indirectly to Knox's innocence, and expounding the reason of his absence from Edinburgh. He had applied, it appears, to that venerable Court for permission "To passe to the realme of England," and the cause assigned was, that he might visit his sons, whom he had sent to Cambridge to be educated, and to arrange some other "lawfull business" in which he was interested. This permission the Assembly not only granted, but they furnished him with a letter in

* We learn from Calderwood, (p. 40.) that, in May 1566, (two months after the murder), Knox was engaged in writing the Fourth Book of his History.

which they expressed their high sense of his merit, recommending him to the favour of learned men, and to all lovers of truth. They certified that he had been a faithful and successful minister of the Gospel, and that in life and conversation he was without blame. It appears, moreover, that he had obtained "the Queen's Majestie's conduct," or passport, for the undertaking of this journey; and that it was expressly stipulated "he should returne to this realme of Scotland before the 25th of the month of June next ensuing, to continue in his former vocatione." Here then are distinctly explained, not only the cause of Knox's absence from Edinburgh, and the time when he was to return; but we have what may be considered presumptive evidence, that neither by the Queen, who granted him her safe conduct, nor by the General Assembly, was he either understood or suspected to be implicated in the crime of Rizzio's murder. The testimony of his brethren may perhaps be regarded as the opinion of friends who were partial to him, and had long held him in veneration; but it warrants the conclusion that no stigma of his being the associate of conspirators attached to his name, and that his private character was unexceptionable.

From all these circumstances,—from the suspicious nature of the List pinned to Randolph's letter,—from its not being in Randolph's hand, and differing materially from Randolph's statement,—from the total silence of all other contemporary documents hitherto brought to light,—from the satisfactory explanation of Knox's mental anxiety, and the causes of his retirement from Edinburgh,—and from the unblemished reputation, on that point, which he continued to maintain, even among his enemies; it may fairly be concluded, that some stronger proofs are required to convince the world of Knox's implication in Rizzio's murder, than this anonymous fragment of stray paper, which however forms the basis of the whole structure of Mr. Tytler's charge. Except this pinned List, there is not another particle of direct evidence within the whole compass of Scottish history, or in the State-Paper Office, or in any other repositories hitherto discovered. All the other proofs consist of mere assumptions and inferences, drawn from our Reformer's actions, or from obscure and figurative expressions in his writings. A few of these it may be proper to dispose of, before proceeding to notice the evidence which we think fully establishes his innocence.

Mr. Tytler deems it improbable, and hardly credible, that the conspirators should have left Knox out of a plot "formed by the party of which he was the leader, in which all his friends were implicated, the object of which was to support that form of faith

which was dearer to him than life." In this there is not so much incredibility as might be supposed. We have stated already, that shortly before the plot was concocted, Knox was not in the confidence of the Protestant leaders, nor does it appear that he ever held intercourse with Lennox or Darnley, by whom Mr. Tytler has discovered that "the first plot for Rizzio's death was formed." The individual most likely to impart the secret to Knox was Ochiltree, but he had fled to England with the rest of the Reformer's intimate friends, before the plot was concocted or thought of, and must have been made acquainted with it during his exile.

In the accession of the leading Protestant barons to the conspiracy, there is nothing to warrant Mr. Tytler's averment, that the two ministers of Edinburgh were admitted into the secret. The alleged improbability of their "concealing what was to happen from the most powerful and influential of all the leaders of the Kirk, and studiously declining his assistance," is mere gratuitous hypothesis; and one very natural reason why they would so conceal the plot, and decline the assistance of Knox, is, that when, shortly before, he had been solicited to join the insurrection under Murray and other Lords (amongst whom was his father-in-law), the professed object of which was the security of the Protestant religion, he refused; and whatever might be his attachment to them as his friends, "he kept himself clear from any engagement." Goodall, no doubt, says, that Knox joined the Earl of Murray in a plot for seizing Darnley; but for this assertion he has produced no evidence. Indeed, to suppose that his friends would have implicated him in so dangerous and criminal an act, is to believe them insensible to all regard for his life and character. His fore-knowledge of their design, could in no way aid them in the execution of it. To have imparted to him the secret, therefore, was not only an unnecessary disclosure, but one that would have brought in peril the whole Protestant cause, by needlessly implicating in their guilt the man without whose influence and advice, it is admitted, the glorious hopes of the Reformation must have speedily withered and perished. It is no doubt *possible* that Knox and Craig were made aware of what was to happen, and that, from their avowed principles, the conspirators knew they would *not* disapprove. But this is nothing more than supposition; and while there is no good evidence to support it, there are strong presumptions against it.

Another of Mr. Tytler's "corroborations," is founded on the language employed by the ministers and friends of the Reformed Church, assembled at Edinburgh for the week of fasting and

humiliation, which commenced on Sunday the 3d of March. The subjects chosen, he alleges, "were such as seemed calculated to prepare the public mind for resistance, violence, and bloodshed ; such, for example, as the slaying of Oreb and Zeeb, —the cutting off the Benjamites,—the hanging of Haman," &c.

In reply to this insinuation, for it is no more, it were perhaps enough to remark, that these were the common themes of pulpit discussion, arising out of the peculiar situation of the oppressed Church, and adapted to the circumstances of the times. It happens, however, that the "subjects" of the sanguinary discourses on that occasion, were not left to the choice of the preachers, but had been prescribed by the Church, so that if they had any special reference to Rizzio's assassination, the plot must have been revealed to the whole General Assembly, as it was by their instructions that "Knox at this time was required to compose a Treatise of Fasting." Nay more ; for as this duty was imposed upon him in June, 1563, though not finished till the Assembly 1566, he must have been cognizant of the murder nearly three years before it was planned or dreamed of ! It is quite clear, therefore, that if there was aught of a violent or blood-thirsty tendency in the Fast-day Prayers and Sermons of March 3d, it must be ascribed to some other cause than the meditated slaughter of the Queen's foreign Secretary.

Happily we are not left in ignorance of the special reasons that led to the appointment of a week of fasting and humiliation. The Assembly tells us that it was in consideration of the troubles of the country, and the dangers which threatened the whole Protestant interest, particularly the "critical state of all the Reformed Churches—the late decree of the Council of Trent for the extermination of the Protestant name—the combination of the Popish princes for carrying this into execution—and the barbarities exercised towards the brethren in different countries." The allusions to Oreb and Zeeb, and the hanging of Haman, are thus shown to admit of an application quite apart from any reference to the dark tragedy that was so soon to be enacted within the supper chamber in Holyrood.

That they were equally applicable to dangers from Romish violence nearer home, is proved from the attempts at that moment hatching in Scotland for the overthrow of Protestantism, and the restoration of the Popish worship. Mary, as is well known, had joined the Roman Catholic League, and become a party to the coalition with France, Spain, and the Emperor, for the extermination of the Reformed doctrines. That she intended to restore "the auld religion" in Scotland, and to proceed against

the rebels (Protestant Lords), is asserted in her own letter (2d April, 1566,) to the Archbishop of Glasgow. Friars had been employed to preach at Holyrood; the altars of idolatry were ready to be erected in St. Giles' Church; and the Popish ecclesiastics were restored to their places in Parliament. No means were left untried for gaining over the nobility to the Court religion. Darnley avowed himself a Papist, and openly officiated in some of their most superstitious rites. The Earls of Cassils, Caithness, and Lennox, with the Lords Montgomery and Seton, did the same. All this was going on between the months of January and March, 1566.

It only wanted one decisive blow to be struck, for carrying this diabolical plot against the Reformation in Scotland into execution, and that was the sanction of the Legislature. Parliament had been summoned to meet on Tuesday March 12th. Sentence of forfeiture was then to be pronounced against Murray, and the other noblemen and barons then in England, who had been denounced as rebels. The better to ensure a favourable issue to the process, the Lords of the Articles were chosen according to the Queen's pleasure, and it was intended that Rizzio, the chief promoter of the League, was to exercise the office of chancellor.

Such was the perilous crisis in which matters stood with the Reformers at the beginning of March, and on the eve of the opening of Parliament. If the Estates were allowed to meet, the consequence to them was ruin; and it was certain they would meet, unless Mary was put into the hands of other advisers than her Italian Secretary. As the danger was imminent, the remedy behoved to be expeditious; and hence, to arrest the proceedings in Parliament, it was determined to assassinate Rizzio, which was effected on the previous Saturday night.

This view of the affair not only justifies the appointment of a week of fasting and humiliation at Edinburgh, and the alarm which was sounded from the pulpits, by means of texts selected from the Old Testament, "to prepare the public mind for resistance;" but it affords new presumption of the innocence of Knox and Craig. For if the general danger to Protestantism was sufficient to arouse the public mind, it was surely unnecessary and unwise to single out an individual plot, the success of which depended entirely on secrecy; when by doing so the chance of discovery, and therefore of defeat, would be obviously increased. Knox and Craig were already enlisted in the common cause; and if the conspirators had the advantage of the eloquence and the texts of the preachers on their side, without making any such

revelation, why should they have imparted to them the secret of the murder? It is clear they could derive no benefit from the disclosure, except by the effect of their oratory, and by their inculcating the general duty of inflicting summary vengeance on tyrants, and idolaters, and oppressors of God's people. And if they had secured these advantages by means palpable to all, and liable to no suspicion, it would have been folly and madness to run the hazard of bringing their project into jeopardy, by communicating the plot to those whose services could be as effectual, and their lives far more safe, were they kept in profound ignorance of it. This inference, we think at once rational and conclusive.

Having thus disposed of Mr. Tytler's evidence, both direct and constructive, in support of his charge against Knox as privy to the murder; and shown, we trust, to the reader's satisfaction, that so far from being "conclusive of the fact," it rather strengthens the presumption of his innocence; we shall next advert to Mr. Tytler's "two circumstances," which, he says, "may be quoted in defence of Knox."

Besides the List of names pinned to Randolph's letter of the 21st March, there is another List in the British Museum, dated 27th of March, which does not include the Reformer's name, or that of Craig his colleague. The question is, therefore, whether ought the first or second List to be adopted as the more correct and authentic account of the affair? We have no hesitation in deciding in favour of the latter. For while it is uncertain by whose information, or on what authority, the first was drawn up, the second is in the hand-writing of Randolph himself, and is expressly declared to be "the names of such as were doers and of council in the late attempt for the killing of the Secretary David, &c. as contained in the account sent to the Council of England, by the Earl of Bedford and Sir Thomas Randolph." The difference in the mere presumptive authenticity of the two Lists is obvious,—the one being official, and in Randolph's hand; while the other is private, anonymous, and written by a clerk.

But this is not all. It might be supposed, naturally, that the second was the more correct; more time being allowed for examining into the various rumours on the subject, and to weigh the credibility of conflicting statements; for that "false and untrue reports" were put in circulation, is declared in a joint letter to Cecil from Morton and Ruthven, who are admitted to be the chief authorities consulted, both for the List and the account of the murder. Now this appears to have been actually the fact. In their letter of March 27th, containing the names, Bedford

and Randolph say, "having compared the reports from abroad, which came to our knowledge, with the sayings of those noblemen, the Lords Morton and Ruthven, that are present (at Berwick) ; and of these, all that which *we have found nearest to the truth, or as we believe the truth itself*, have here put them in writing." Now this, we think, may convince any unprejudiced mind, that the second List must be taken as the corrected and revised one, being so pronounced by the two most competent judges in the matter ; for Mr. Tytler himself says that " Randolph and Bedford were intimately acquainted with the whole details of the conspiracy." We cannot see how it is possible to evade this conclusion.

But there is another and a more explicit corroboration of Knox's innocence, which we hold to be equally conclusive. Both Morton and Ruthven, "in the vindication of their proceedings which they sent to Bedford, with the intent that he should communicate it to Cecil and Elizabeth," positively denied that any of the Ministers of Scotland were art and part in the conspiracy ; and accused the Papists of having raised the report. They say in that document, "It is come to our knowledge that some Papists have bruited that these our proceedings have been at the instigation of the Ministers of Scotland. We assure your Lordship, upon our honour, that there were none of them art nor part of that deed, nor were participate thereof." It is impossible, we should think, after this declaration, to doubt of Knox's innocence.

Mr. Tytler, however, tries to evade the force of all these combined testimonies. He maintains, that Morton and Ruthven ought not to be believed on their honour ; and that their denial is a mere equivocation, founded on a quibble, namely, that "being art and part, or participate in any action or crime, was a totally different thing from being privy to it, or cognizant of it, before it was committed."* This distinction, he shows, that Morton made on his own trial, when he denied he was art and part in the King's murder, though he confesses "I foreknew it, indeed, and concealed it, because I durst not reveal it to any creature for my life." This, in the first place, may be set down as a very lame and far-fetched attempt to get out of a difficulty. It may be very natural that Morton should be anxious, in the case

* If character is to be taken into account, it could easily be shown that Randolph is as little entitled to credit as Morton and Ruthven. Lodge says (Illustrations, vol. i. p. 431.) "he was of a dark intriguing spirit, full of cunning, and void of conscience. There is little doubt that the unhappy divisions in Scotland were chiefly fomented by this man's artifices for more than twenty years together." Might not the pinned list have been one of those "artifices?"

of his own trial, to split hairs about the meaning of words and phrases, or resort to any other subterfuge that could offer a hope of saving his neck from the block. But these subtleties could have been of no avail in the case of Knox ; for why try to conceal truth by evasive or double-meaning language, when, by Mr. Tytler's own admission, Bedford was just as intimately acquainted with the details of the conspiracy as Morton or Ruthven ? The hypothesis is therefore the more probable that their denial was given in good faith, for the purpose of silencing the calumnies of the Papists, and absolving the ministers of Scotland, and of course Knox with them, from all implication in the murder.

Mr. Tytler alleges, as objections to the trust-worthiness of this hypothesis, that whereas the first List was given while the event was yet new, and without any object but that of transmitting information to *Cecil* ; the second was sent to *the Council of England*, carefully prepared, with the names of Knox and Craig omitted, and the whole account altered and modified by the express instructions of Morton and Ruthven. To this, as to some other of Mr. Tytler's "corroborations," we may reply that it is merely conjectural. There is no evidence whatever, in the letters of Morton and Ruthven, to countenance any belief in the suppression of names ; or to lead to the supposition that any alterations or modifications in the story were made, beyond the softening of violent expressions. This is the utmost length to which permission is given to alter or modify. As for the argument, that the first List is the more credible, because it was transmitted to Cecil, while the second was sent to the Council of England, it appears to us to be a distinction without a difference. Cecil was Elizabeth's Secretary of State : whatever therefore was transmitted for his information, may be regarded as official, and equally patent to the Queen and the Council. What motive then could suggest alterations and amendments, or the cancelling of names, (if such were really the case), except that the first accounts were erroneous, hastily adopted on false or calumnious rumours, which subsequent facts had dissipated and corrected. This, we think, is the more probable, and the only natural solution of the discrepancy between the two Lists. It is worthy of remark, too, that in Morton's Confession, which was made with all the solemnity of a man on the point of execution, there is not a word to criminate Knox, although the plot of "Davie's slaughter" is more than once referred to.

There are some other surmises and inferences by which Mr. Tytler supports his theory of Knox's implication, but they are so

unimportant as scarcely to deserve notice. The argument, founded on the opinion adopted by the Reformers, that idolaters and oppressive rulers might be justly punishable by death, proves nothing in any particular case, by proving too much.

The same remark is true of Mr. Tytler's inference, that because "the execution of the said enterprise" was approved "by the most honest and most worthy," therefore the name of Knox must necessarily be included. This is rather a sweeping conclusion, but Mr. Tytler has himself demolished it, having recorded by name the "most honest and most worthy" heads of the Protestant party, in which association the Reformer does not appear.

Such are the "Proofs and Illustrations" which Mr. Tytler has advanced to support his charge of Knox's implication in Rizzio's murder. That they are wholly insufficient to warrant his conclusions, or to silence the unanimous voice of history, or even to counterbalance the facts in extenuation which he has himself adduced, is the conviction to which, we think, after a deliberate perusal of the case, every candid and unbiassed mind must arrive at. No man suffered more injustice in his own time, from the calumnies and misrepresentations of his detractors, than John Knox. Yet, when the real facts of his life were examined and brought to light, the public discovered with surprise how little ground there was for the railing accusations of his bitterest enemies. In this new attempt to cast a shade over his memory, the delusion will be less injurious, and more short lived, as the facts are better known; and we have no doubt, when the single adverse testimony which Mr. Tytler has produced from the State-Paper Office, is duly weighed, and impartially compared with the mass of Historical evidence on the other side, that the character of our Reformer will emerge from this temporary cloud without spot or blemish. We are far from saying that this brief Vindication is complete: it might, had space allowed, have been greatly extended, and fortified with more convincing arguments; but if it should in any degree satisfy the reader, or lead other and abler defenders to take up the cause, the object for which this Dissertation was undertaken will have been accomplished.

INDEX.

- Aberdeen*, a celebrated grammar-school, and Greek early taught in the University of, 334.
- Adamson*, Patrick, appointed successor to Buchanan, as Principal of St. Leonard's College, 335.
- Aless*, Alexander, embraces the reformed doctrine, and is obliged to leave Scotland, 20, 341. Made Professor at Leipsic, 342.
- Alexander*, Robert, advocate, an early favourer of the Reformation, 21. Writes the testament of Lord Errol in Scots metre, 343.
- Anabaptists*, Knox's warning against the dangerous principles of, 120-22.
- Andrews*, St. Knox teaches philosophy at, 8. Reformed opinions spread privately in University of, 22. Knox retires from, 23. Knox's first sermon at, 37. Knox expresses his confident hope of again preaching in, 41. Opposition to Knox's preaching at, 148. Knox preaches at, 149. Demolition of monasteries at, 434-5. Petition for Knox's translation to, 251. Knox retires to, 279. Meets with opposition at, 280. His preaching and exhortations to the students at, 287-8, 413. Knox leaves, 293.
- Castle of, seized by the conspirators against Cardinal Beaton, 25. Retained by them, 26. Knox takes refuge in, *ib.* Sacrament of the Supper first dispensed in the Protestant form in, 37. Besieged and taken, *ib.*
- Angus*, Earl of, Knox employed in his affairs, 206.
- Annand*, Dean John, his dispute with Knox and Rough, 32.
- Arbugkill*, a friar, his attempt to defend the Popish ceremonies against Knox, 35.
- Arbuthnot*, Alexander, appointed by the General Assembly to revise a suspicious book, 412.
- Argyle*, Countess of, conversation between Knox and the Queen respecting her, 224. Her public repentance, 397.
- old Earl of, Knox preaches in the house of, 107. John Douglas taken under the protection of, 133. Correspondence between Archbishop Hamilton and, *ib.*
- young Earl of, attends Knox's sermons at Calder-house, 102. Joins the Congregation, 146.
- Arran*, Earl of, is suspected by the Popish Clergy, 22. Made Regent of Scotland, 24. The Regency wrested from him by the Queen-Dowager, 97. See *Chastelherault*.
- Earl of, son to the former, comes to Scotland, and persuades his father, now Earl of Chastelherault, to join the Congregation, 163, 172. English ministers wish him raised to the Scottish throne, and married to Elizabeth, 376. Knox employed in removing a feud between Bothwell and, 207. Lunacy of, *ib.*
- Articles* of Church of England, Knox employed in revising, 51.
- Assembly*, General, what, 185. The first, 187. Moderator of, when introduced, 188. Approve of Knox's conduct, after his trial before the Privy Council, 241. Employ him in drawing up public papers, 262. Their recommendation of Knox, 254. Give a commission to him, 259. Order the murderer of the Regent Murray to be excommunicated in all the churches of the kingdom, 272. Their protestation against hierarchical titles, 283. His letter to, 276. Their attention to the widow and daughters of Knox, 416. Order of procedure in, 380. Petition of Bannatyne to, 419.
- Augustine*, influence of his writings on Knox, 9.
- Aylmer*, John, answers Knox's Blast, 128. Character of his work, 129. His address to the bishops, 356. His invective against the French king, 362. His sentiments respecting the English constitution, 363. His commendation of Knox, 313.
- Balcanquhal*, Walter, defends Knox, 315.
- Bale*, Bishop, dedicates a book to Knox, 134.
- Balfour*, Sir James, his remarkable conversation with Knox in the French galleys, 39. Accessory to the murder of Darnley, 410.
- Ballates*, Gude and godlie, 344. Similar compositions in other countries, *ib.*
- Balnaves*, Sir Henry, of Halhill, converted to the Reformed doctrine, 21, 159, 348. His learning and reputation, 28. Takes refuge in the Castle of St. Andrew's, *ib.* Urges Knox to become a preacher, *ib.*

INDEX.

- composes a book on justification in the French prison, 41. Extracts from Knox's dedication to it, 42. Extracts from the book, 348-9.
- Bancroft*, Dr. the first Episcopalian who wrote disrespectfully of Knox, 314. Davidson's answer to, *ib.*
- Bannatyne*, Richard, Secretary to Knox, discovers a MS. of Balnaves, 41. Knox's request to, in his last illness, 304. His character of Knox, 312, 313. His petition to the General Assembly, 419.
- Barons* and Gentry punished for holding Reformed doctrines, 96, 141.
- Barron*, James, 113, 435.
- Bassinden*, Thomas, General Assembly order an improper book, printed by him, to be called in, 412.
- Beatoun*, Cardinal David, archbishop of St. Andrew's, employs assassins to kill Knox, 23. His cruelties to the Reformers, 25. His assassination, *ib.* Knox's opinion of the assassination, 27, 346-7.
- , James, archbishop of St. Andrew's, puts Patrick Hamilton to death, 19.
- , James, archbishop of Glasgow, his character of Knox, 103.
- Berwick*, Knox preaches at, 46. Knox visits, 99, 158.
- Beza* congratulates Knox on the abolition of Episcopacy, 285. Correspondence between Knox and, 388.
- Bible*, English, imported into Scotland, 20. Authorized by the Scottish Parliament, 23. Circulation of, *ib.*
- , Geneva, Knox one of the translators of, 124.
- Blast*, First, of the Trumpet, 125-6, 135-6, 157. Knox's explanation to Queen Mary respecting, 196, 178. See *Aylmer*, and *Government*, Female.
- Bodlih*, Mr. 441.
- Boece*, Hector, principal of the University of Aberdeen, 334.
- Bonner*, Bishop, John Rough put to death by, 38. Barbarity of, 81. Lenity with which Bonner was treated by Elizabeth, 136.
- Bothwell*, Earl of, Knox employed to remove a feud between him and young Earl of Arran, 207. The murderer of Darnley, 257. Marries the Queen, 258.
- Borthwick*, Sir John, his opinion of the Reformation of Henry VIII. 26.
- Bowes*, of *Streatlam*, Elizabeth, encourages the marriage between Knox and her daughter, 51. Letters from Knox to, 101, 104, 425, 428-9. Loses her husband, 107, 156. Further particulars of, 156, 290.
- , Marjory, Knox married to, 51, 69. Knox's letters to intercepted, 70. Accompanies her husband to Geneva, 107. Joins her husband in Scotland, 156. Her death, 188. Knox's letters to, 427-8.
- Richard, father of Mrs. Knox, 51.
- , Sir Robert, brother to the former, painful interview of Knox with, 67.
- Boyd*, Lord, 188. Craves Knox's forgiveness on his death-bed, 304.
- Bradford*, John, 50, 65.
- Braid*. See *Fairley*.
- Buchanan*, George, studies under Major about same time with Knox, 5. Similarity of their sentiments, 6, 7. Knox's commendation of him, *ib.* Embraces the Reformed doctrine, and leaves the kingdom, 20. His tribute to the Regent Murray's memory, 271. Sits in the General Assembly as a doctor, 380. Calumnies of Popish writers against, 402.
- Bucer*, Martin, 45.
- Burne*, Nicol, his calumnies against Knox, 400. Against the foreign Reformers, 401.
- Cairns*, John, a Reader or Assistant to Knox in Edinburgh, 210, 254, 390.
- Caithness*, Robert Stewart, Bishop of, visits Knox on his death-bed, 305.
- Calvin*, John, high reputation of, 78. Respect of English Reformers for, *ib.* Friendship between Knox and, 78, 79. Character of the English Liturgy by, 86. Is dissatisfied with Knox's treatment at Frankfort, 95. Advises Knox to return to Scotland, 113. Correspondence with Knox, 189, 387.
- Campbell*, of Kineancleugh, accompanies Knox to Ayrshire, 102. And to Castle Campbell, 107. Is surety for Willock, 151. Attends Knox in his last illness, who commits his wife and children to his care, 307.
- of Loudon, Sir Hugh, 141.
- Castle Campbell*, Knox preaches at, 107.
- Cassillis*, Earl of, suspected by the clergy, 22.
- Catalogue* of Knox's works, 419.
- Cecil*, correspondence between Knox and, 138, 157, 158, 203.
- Chastelherault*, Duke of, Knox warns against his ambition, 123. He joins the Congregation, 163. And commands the Protestant army, 173. Knox's freedom in pointing out his faults, 172. His design of excluding Mary from the throne opposed by Knox, 196. He is offended at the Regency being conferred on Murray, 264. Joins the Queen, *ib.* See *Arran*, Earl of.

INDEX.

- Chisholm*, Bishop of Brechin, persecutes Wishart for teaching the Greek New Testament, 334.
- Church*, Romish, in Scotland, before the Reformation, 10-13. Protestant Church of Scotland, sketch of its form of government and worship, 184-6. Danger to which it was exposed from Mary, 192. Inadequate provision for the ministers of, 204-5. Critical state of, 251-2. Improved state of, under Murray's Regency, 263-4. Sentiments of, respecting the difference between civil and ecclesiastical authority, 412.
- Clergy*, Popish, of Scotland, Knox ordained by, 8. Their character before the Reformation, 10, 16. Persecute the Reformers, 15, 20. Instigate James V. to proscribe the Protestant nobles and gentry, 22. Suspect Knox of heresy, 23. Degrade him from the priesthood, *ib.* Their politic plan to counteract his preaching at St. Andrew's, 36. Summon Knox before them, 103. Condemn him as a heretic, and burn his effigy, 108. Knox's appellation from their sentence, *ib.* Their feeble exertions to counteract the Reformation, 174. Their pretended miracle at Musselburgh, 175, 379. Their ignorance of Greek, 334. Their representations of Knox's character, 232-3, 272, 400-2. And concerning his second marriage, 242, 401. See *Council*, Provincial, and *Popery*.
- Cockburn*, John, of Ormiston, places his son under Knox's care, 26, 28. Is outlawed, 96. Robbed on the Borders by the Earl of Bothwell, 171.
- Colville*, Robert, of Cleish, his detection of the pretended miracle at Musselburgh, 379.
- Congregation*, The, their pacific intentions, 146. Deceived by Queen Regent, 147. First Lords of, 148. Obtain assistance against the Regent from Elizabeth, 158. Unfavourable turn in their affairs, 171, 434, 487. Knox reanimates them, 171. English army arrives to assist them, 473. Their loyalty, 375.
- Cook*, Rev. Dr. George, his reflections on Knox's interview with Queen Mary, 202.
- Corpse-present*, 15, 338.
- Council*, Provincial, of Scottish clergy, acknowledge the corruptions of the Popish Church, 97. Their canons for Reformation, 97, 362. Application of the Protestants to, 141.
- Privy, of Scotland. Knox an extraordinary member of, 173. Knox tried before, 236, 240. Suspend Knox from preaching for a time, 349.
- Covenant*, Religious, the first in Scotland entered into by Protestants of Mearns, 102. Another subscribed by the Lords, 131. Another by the Protestants of Edinburgh, 333.
- Coverdale*, Miles, Bishop of Exeter, 342, 438.
- Cox*, Dr. Richard, 87, 92. His sentiments concerning ceremonies, 356.
- Craig*, John, account of, 210, 390. His account of a dispute on resistance at Bologna, 246. His spirited behaviour at the Queen's marriage with Bothwell, 258. Further curious particulars of, 413-14.
- Crail*, Knox preaches in, 150. Demolition of the monasteries at, *ib.*
- Cranmer*, Archbishop of Canterbury, his zeal in advancing the Reformation, 46. Employs Knox to preach at Berwick, *ib.* Disposed to carry the Reformation of the English Church farther, 356, 358.
- Croft*, Sir James, Knox's interview with, at Berwick, 158. Employed by Elizabeth to correspond with the Congregation, *ib.* His reprimand of Knox's proposal, 160.
- Cupar*, the forces of the Queen Regent and Congregation meet at, 150, 154, 435. Demolition of the Monasteries at, 150.
- Darnley*, Lord, is married to Queen Mary, 247. Displeased at a sermon of Knox, 249. Professes himself a Papist, 252. Is murdered, 257. Alleged plot against his life at Perth, 281.
- Davidson*, John, Account of Scottish Martyrs by, 387. His answers to Bancroft, 314. His Latin verses, 386. Banished by Morton, 439. His poem on Knox, 415.
- Deacons* appointed at an early period of the Reformation, 132. In the foreign churches at London, 359. Number of, in Edinburgh, 210.
- Delaporte*, Mons. Knox acts as colleague to, at Dieppe, 117.
- Dieppe*, in France, Knox on leaving England lands at, 71. He re-visits, 77, 79, 107.
- Discipline*, Ecclesiastical, Scottish Reformers sensible of its importance, 183. Strictness of, 221.
- , First Book of, Knox one of its compilers, 183. Approbation of, 184. Its plan, 185-6. Reasons of the nobility's aversion to, 187.
- Douglas*, Bishop Gawin, opposed in his attempt to be made Archbishop of St. Andrew's, 10. Takes by force the Cathedral of Dunkeld, *ib.*
- , Hugh, of Langniddrie, Knox tutor to the family of, 23, 25, 26, 28.
- , John, presented to the Arch-

INDEX.

- bishopric of St. Andrew's, 286. Knox refuses to inaugurate him, *ib.*
- Dundas*, Euphemia, slanders Knox, 233.
- Dundee*, the first town in which a Protestant congregation was organized, 132.
- Durie*, John, visits Knox in his last illness, 208.
- Edinburgh*, Knox preaches privately in, 100. Publicly in, 104. He is burned in effigy at the cross of, 108. A Protestant Church formed in, 132. Demolition of the monasteries at, 150. Knox chosen minister of, 154. Leaves it, *ib.* Resumes his ministry in, 183. Knox retires from, 253. Returns to, 259. Knox forced again to leave, 279. Knox arrives at, 293.
- , Kirk-Session of, number of, 210. Provide a smaller place of worship for Knox, 293. Knox's interview with, on his death-bed, 298-9.
- , Town Council of, their attention to the support of Knox, 210, 389. Provide him with a colleague, 210, 390. Their proceedings respecting a slander against Knox, 232. Remonstrance against the suspension of Knox, 250.
- Edward VI.* of England, Knox made a chaplain to, 49. Offers Knox a bishopric, 58. His plan for improving the English Church, 63, 356. State of his court, 64. Spirited conduct of his chaplains, *ib.* Last sermon of Knox before him, 65. Distress of Knox at his death, *ib.* Knox's prayer after his death, 360.
- Elders*, Ruling, appointed at an early period of the Reformation, 132. In the foreign churches in London, 358. Their office in the Church of Scotland, 184.
- Elgin*, Latin and Greek early taught there, 336.
- Elizabeth*, Queen of England, refuses to allow Knox to pass through England, 135. Her impolitic severity to the English exiles at Geneva, *ib.* Her lenity to the Papists, 136. Grants a safe-conduct to Knox's wife, 156. Knox apologizes to her for his Blast, 157. She resolves to assist the Congregation, 162. Sends an army to their assistance, 173. Obtains advantageous terms of peace for them, 174. Her personal aversion to the Scottish war, 374. Knox's opinion of her religious principles, 255.
- England*, Knox arrives in, 44. State of religion in under Edward VI. 45. Popery restored in, 70. Knox leaves, *ib.* Persecution in, *ib.* Exiles from, 71. Knox visits his sons in, 254. Carries a letter to the bishops of, 255.
- England*, Church of, Knox's reasons for refusing a fixed charge in, 61. Refuses the bishopric of Rochester, 354. His sentiments respecting the government and worship of, 61. Private opinions of the Reformers of, similar to Knox's, 62, 356.
- , Privy Council of, employ Knox to preach, 46. Offer Knox the living of All Hallows, 57.
- Erskine*, Lord, attends Knox's sermons, 100. Invites him to return to Scotland, 113. See *Mar.*
- , John, of Dun, Greek language first patronized by, 4. Reformed sentiments embraced by, 21. He attends Knox's sermons at Edinburgh, 100. Takes him to Dun, 101. Made superintendent of Angus and Mearns, 185, 206. Soothes Queen Mary, 230. Her good opinion of him, 248. His letters to Regent Mar, 412.
- Exercise*, Weekly, what, 185, 381. Practised in England, 382.
- Exhorters*, 184.
- Exiles*, Scottish, 341.
- Fairley*, of Braid, his attention to Knox during his last illness, 298, 305.
- Ferguson*, David, improves the Scottish language, 386. Knox's recommendation to his sermon, 292. Extracts from it, 383. His character, 386.
- Field*, John, his commendation of Knox, 314.
- Fleming*, James, marries one of Knox's daughters, 327.
- Forman*, Bishop of Murray, says grace before the Pope, 12.
- Forrest*, David, Knox lodges with, 204.
- , Thomas, vicar of Dollar, suffers martyrdom, 339-40.
- Forrester*, Robert, suffers martyrdom, 339.
- Fox*, John, the martyrologist, 93. Disapproves of Knox's Blast, 127. Knox's letter to, 433.
- France*, Knox carried prisoner to, 38. His apology for the persecuted Protestants in, 116. Knox preaches in, 125. Designs of, against Scotland and England, 117. Sends troops to the assistance of the Queen Regent, 157. Persecution against the Protestants in, 207. Bartholomew massacre in, 294. Distress of Knox at this, 295. His denunciation against the King of, *ib.*
- Frankfort* on the Maine, English exiles obtain a place of worship at, 83. Knox called to be minister at, 84. Dissensions about the English

INDEX.

- Liturgy at, 85. Moderation of Knox in these, 86-7. Knox accused of treason to Magistrates of, 90. Knox leaves, 92.
- French galleys*, Knox liberated from, 44.
- Galloway*, Patrick, defends the Scottish Reformers, 315.
- Gardiner*, Bishop of Winchester, cruelty of, 81.
- Geneva*, Knox visits and studies at, 70. Is invited to be pastor to the English Church in, 107. Leaves it for Scotland, 114. Returns to, 124. Knox obtains the freedom of the city, and leaves it finally, 135.
- , Church of, differed in some points from the Scottish Reformed Church, 59.
- , Its introduction into Scotland, 367. Difference between it and English Liturgy, *ib.* Worship generally conducted according to it in Scotland, 186.
- Gifford*, Knox supposed to have been born at, 1, 333.
- Glasgow*, University of, Knox studies at, 2.
- Glencairn*, Alexander, Earl of, an early friend of the Reformation, 21. Knox preaches at his house, 102. Visits Knox on his death-bed, 305.
- Glenorchy*, laird of, a hearer of Knox, 107.
- Goodman*, Christopher, colleague to Knox at Geneva, 107, 111, 127, 142, 162. Comes to Scotland, 156, 436. An extraordinary member of Privy Council, 164. Returns to England, 231. Farther account of, 406-7. Knox's letter to, 440.
- Gordon*, Bishop of Galloway, embraces the Reformation, 164. Disappointed being made superintendent, 223. Occupies Knox's pulpit, 279.
- Gourlay*, Norman, suffers martyrdom, 339.
- Government*, Female, its incongruity when joined with ecclesiastical supremacy, 364. See *Blast*.
- , Political, influence of the Reformation on, 165-6.
- Greek* language, its introduction into Scotland and progress, 4, 334-7, 395.
- Guillaume*, Thomas, chaplain to the Regent Arran. Instructs Knox in the Reformed doctrine, 23.
- Haddington*, Knox said to have been born in Giffordgate of, 1, 333. Educated at grammar school of, 2.
- Hamilton*, Archibald, his opposition to Knox, 281. His apostacy, *ib.* His calumnies against Knox, 400. His account of Knox's death, 415.
- , Gavin, Abbot of Kilwinning, intercourse between Knox and, 269.
- Hamilton*, James, of Bothwellhaugh, assassinates the Regent Murray, 264-5.
- , John, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, persecutes Knox, 26. His Catechism, 391. His correspondence with the Earl of Argyle, 133. Puts Walter Mill to death, *ib.* Reconciliation between him and the Queen Regent, 140. Opposes Knox's preaching at St. Andrew's, 148. His sermon, 149. Accessory to the Regent Murray's murder, 266. Is executed, 282.
- , Robert, his calumny against Knox, 281.
- , Patrick, reproves the corruptions of the clergy, 18. Travels to Germany, *ib.* Suffers Martyrdom in Scotland, 19.
- Harlow*, William, preaches in England, 95. Preaches in Scotland, *ib.* 132. Becomes minister of the West Kirk, 210.
- Harrison*, James, embraces the Reformed doctrine, and leaves Scotland, 20. Account of, 342.
- Hay*, George, his answer to the Abbot of Crossraguell's mass, 213, 394-5.
- Hebrew* language, Knox acquires the knowledge of, 4, 81. Studied in Scotland, 187, 384-5.
- Henry VIII.* his partial Reformation disliked by the Scottish Reformers, 26.
- Hepburn*, John, prior, storms the episcopal Castle of St. Andrew's, 10.
- Heretical* Books suppressed, 97.
- Hume*, Mr. his remarks on Knox's account of the assassination of Beaton, 346. His misrepresentations of Scottish Reformers, 398. His account of the conduct of Knox to Mary, 399.
- Huntly*, Earl of, his insurrection, 211.
- James V.* refuses to proscribe the Protestants, 22. Persecution during the reign of, 339.
- James VI.* Knox preaches at the coronation of, 259. His prejudices against the Scottish Reformers, 315. Curious conversation of with one of Knox's daughters, 328.
- Jerome*, influence of his writings on Knox, 9.
- Jewel*, Bishop, his opinion of episcopacy and ceremonies, 357. Disapproves of Knox's book on female government, 438.
- Johnston* of Elphinston, 306.
- Kennedy*, Quintin, his answer to Knox's defence before Tonsal, 352-3. His Compendious Tractate, 212. Challenges Willock to a dispute on the Mass, *ib.* Dispute be-

INDEX.

- tween Knox and, 213-19. Further account of his writings, 393-4.
- Ker*, Sir Andrew, of Fadounside, marries Knox's widow, 326, 416.
- Kethe*, William, 406.
- Kircaldy*, William, of Grange, an active agent of the Congregation, 157. Governor of the Castle of Edinburgh, 273. His defection, *ib.* Knox involved in a personal quarrel with, 274. Offers Knox a guard, 278. Knox's dying message to, 302.
- Knollys*, Sir Francis, his account of the Protestant worship in Scotland, 367.
- Knox*, —, father of the Reformer, his parentage, and situation in life, 1, 323.
- , Eleazer, son to the Reformer, account of, 326.
- , Elizabeth, the Reformer's daughter, her courage at her husband's trial, 327-8. Conversation between James VI. and, *ib.* See *Welch*.
- , Margaret, the Reformer's daughter, 327.
- , Martha, the Reformer's daughter, 327.
- , Nathanael, son to the Reformer, account of, 326.
- , William, brother to the Reformer, and minister of Cockpen, 52.
- , of Ranferly, 1, 333.
- Laing*, James, his calumnies against Knox, 401-2. And against other Reformers, *ib.*
- Lambert*, of Avignon. Patrick Hamilton studies under him at Marburg, 18.
- Langniddrie*, chapel at, called Knox's Kirk, 25. See *Douglas*, Hugh.
- Lasco*, John A. character of, 358. His account of the foreign churches in London, *ib.* His account of Edward VI's. plan for the gradual reformation of the Church of England, 359.
- Latin schools in Scotland, 3.
- Lawson*, James, sub-principal of the University of Aberdeen, chosen colleague to Knox, 294. Knox's letter of invitation to, 21. Knox preaches for the last time at the admission of, 296. Teaches Hebrew at St. Andrew's, 386. His exertions in establishing the High School of Edinburgh, *ib.*
- Leith*, convention at, 283.
- Lennox*, Earl of, made Regent, 273.
- Leslie*, Normand, 96.
- Lewis XIII.* of France, interview between John Welch and, 417.
- Liberty*, civil, Popery unfriendly to, 166. Influence of the Reformation on, 165. Knox attached to, 168.
- Lindores*, Abbey of, 150, 435.
- Lindsay*, Sir David, of the Mount, favours the Reformation, 21. Urges Knox to become a preacher, 28, 343-4. Influence of his poems on the Reformation, 28, 127.
- , David, one of the ministers of Leith, addressed by Knox on his death-bed, 298, 300.
- Literature*, State of, in Scotland, 3-4. Influence of the Reformation on, 186, 187. See *Greek* and *Hebrew*.
- Liturgy*, English, Knox employed in the revisal of, 50, 353. Opinion of early bishops concerning, 353. Whether used in Scotland at the beginning of the Reformation, 367.
- Locke*, Mrs. Anne, Knox's letters to, 434-7.
- Logie*, Gawin, principal of St. Leonard's college, an early Reformer, 19, 341.
- London*, Knox summoned to, 54. Preaches in, 55.
- Luther*, Anecdote of, 13. Comparison between Knox and, 322.
- Macbee*, (*Maccabæus*) John, embraces the Reformed doctrine, and leaves the kingdom, 20. Made professor at Copenhagen, 342. His proper name M' Alpine, *ib.*
- Macbray*, (*Macbraire*,) John, an early Reformer, 20, 342.
- Macdowal*, John, an early Reformer, 20, 342.
- Maitland*, Thomas, author of a fabricated conference between Knox and Regent Murray, 270. Exults over the Regent's death, 271.
- , William of Lethington, attends Knox's sermons at Edinburgh, 100. Disputation between Knox and, 204. His conduct at Knox's trial, 235-9. His defection from the Regent Murray, 300.
- Major*, John, Knox's education under, 4. Political and religious sentiments of, 5, 6.
- Mar*, Earl of, made Regent, 282. His death, 304. See *Erskine*, Lord.
- Marischal*, Earl, suspected by the clergy, 22. Favours Knox, 104. Knox sends salutations to him, 440.
- Marsiliers*, Pierre de, teaches Greek at Montrose, 335.
- Martyrs*, Scottish, 339.
- Mary*, Queen of England, proclaimed, 66. Knox's prayer for, 67, 360. Her cruelty, 81. This encourages the Reformation in Scotland, 97.
- of Guise, Queen Dowager of Scotland, made Regent, 97. Favours the Reformers, *ib.* Her dissimulation, 134, 368. Prohibits the Protestant preachers, 140. Summons them to Stirling, 148. Proclaims Knox an outlaw, 143. Advances with an army to Perth, 145. Violates the treaty of Perth, 147. Offers a reward for Knox's

INDEX.

- head, 162. Is suspended from the Regency, 164. Reflections on this, 165. Her death, 174. Remarks on Dr. Robertson's account of her conduct, 368.
- Mary*, Queen of Scots, married to the Dauphin, 46. Refuses to ratify the acts of Scots Parliament, 189. Arrives in Scotland, 191. Her education and prejudices against the Protestant religion, *ib.* Alarm at her setting up mass, 192. Interview between Knox and, 196, 201. Second interview between Knox and, 208-9. Third interview between Knox and, 222-4. Her artifice, 225. Prevails on the Parliament not to ratify the Reformed religion, 226. Fourth interview between Knox and, 229, 231. Her conduct at Knox's trial by the Council, 236-40. Writes to the Pope, and Council of Trent, 243. Knox's form of prayer for, 244-5. Marries Lord Darnley, 247. Resolves on restoring the Popish worship, 252, 389. Banishes Knox from Edinburgh, 254. Her alienation from her husband, 257. Her participation in his murder, *ib.* Her marriage with Bothwell, 258. Her imprisonment and resignation of the Government, 258. Knox vindicates his not praying for her, 275.
- Mass*, 14. Performed at Holyrood, by order of Queen Mary, 192. Produces a tumult, *ib.* Abhorred by the Protestants, 194.
- Maxwell*, Master of, 235, 367.
- Melville*, Andrew, 315, 335, 386.
- , Sir James, strictures on his memoirs, 369. On his account of Regent Murray, 409-10.
- , James, his account of Knox at St. Andrew's, 287, 290.
- , Sir John, of Raith, an early favourer of the Reformation, 21. Is executed, 96.
- Methven*, Paul, one of the Protestant ministers, 132, 141. Excommunicated, 220-1.
- Mill*, Walter, his martyrdom, 133.
- Moderator*, first appointed, 188.
- Monasteries*, Scottish, their number and degeneracy, 10, 337. Causes of their demolition at Perth, 144-5. Apology for this measure, *ib.* Lamentation over, 370. Loss sustained by their demolition, 371-4.
- Montrose*, Greek early taught in, 4, 334. Early provided with a minister, 155.
- Morton*, Earl of, accused of simony, 282. His interview with Knox on his death-bed, 304. Elected Regent, *ib.* His eulogium on Knox, 310.
- Murray*, Earl of, favoured by Mary, 211. Variance between Knox and, 227. Endeavours to intimidate Knox, 235. Defends Knox, 241. Flies to England, 248. Returns from banishment, 259. Appointed Regent, 261. His favour to the Protestant Church, 262. Is assassinated, 265. His character, 267-8. Distress of Knox at his death, 268. Fabricated conference between Knox and, 270. Knox's sermon before his funeral, 271. Remarks on Dr. Robertson's character of, 410. Epitaph, and verses on, 411. Knox's warning to, *ib.* Prayer used by Knox after the death of, 441.
- Musselburgh*, pretended miracle at Loretto chapel, 175, 379.
- Newcastle upon Tyne*, Knox preaches at, 49, 52. Knox offered the bishopric of, 59.
- Northumberland*, Duke of, recommends Knox to the bishopric of Rochester, 53, 354-5.
- Ochiltree*, Lord, Knox marries the daughter of, 242.
- Parliament*, Scottish, establishes the Reformation, 176. Protestant confession sanctioned by, 181. Their indifference about the security of the Protestant religion, 226. Knox prepares overtures for, 407. One of the commissioners from, 261.
- Perth*, Demolition of monasteries at, 144. Queen Regent threatens, 145. Violates the treaty of, 147, 434. A minister settled in, 157. Hebrew first taught at, 187, 385. Verses on the grammar school of, *ib.*
- Poetry*, its influence in promoting the Reformation, 20-21, 343-4.
- Pont*, Robert, 327, 384. Extracts from his sermons, *ib.* Account of, 412, 417.
- Popery*, state of, in Scotland, 10. Sanguinary spirit of, 194, 388. Preparations for its restoration in Scotland, 252.
- Presbytery*, early state of, 185.
- Preston*, Dr. attends Knox in his last illness, 307.
- Protestants*, English, their sufferings under Mary, 82.
- Protestant Lords* invite Knox from Geneva, 113. Repent of this, 114. Knox animates them by his letters, 119. Renew their invitation to Knox, 131. Petition the Queen Regent, 134. Resolve on decisive measures, 146. Their aversion to the Book of Discipline, 187.
- Preachers summoned to Stirling, 141. Knox resolves to accompany them, 143. Outlawed, 144.
- Randolph*, the English ambassador, his account of the Scottish Parliament, 177. Of Knox's preaching, 195. His letter respecting Knox's

INDEX.

- History**, 418. Knox's confidential communications with, 440.
- Reformation** in Scotland, urgent necessity of, 14, 15. Causes of its progress, 20. Early embraced by nobles and gentry, 21. Embraced by Knox, 23. Progress of, 109, 130. Established by Parliament, 181. Knox's History of, 416.
- Rizzio**, David, assassination of, 253.
- Robertson**, Dr. remarks on the Queen Regent's conduct to the Protestants, 369. His character of Queen Mary, 316. His character of Regent Murray, 408.
- Rough**, John, a friar, embraces the Reformation, 28. His solemn charge to Knox to undertake the ministry, 29. Knox assists him in a dispute, 32. Summoned before the clergy, *ib.* Is martyred in England, 38.
- Row**, John, teaches Hebrew at Perth, 187. Farther account of, 384-5-6.
- Sadler**, Sir Ralph, ambassador from Henry VIII. 26. Carries on the correspondence with the Congregation, 158. Greek motto of, 335.
- Sandilands**, Sir James, an early favourer of the Reformation; Knox dispenses the sacrament in the house of, 101.
- Seatoun**, Alexander, embraces the Reformed sentiments, and is obliged to leave Scotland, 20, 341.
- Simson**, Andrew, master of the grammar school of Perth, 334, 342. Anecdote respecting the scholars of, 342.
- Sinclair**, the name of Knox's mother, 2.
- , Bishop of Ross, informs against Knox, 235. Votes for his acquittal, 240.
- Smeton**, Thomas, his account of Knox's last illness and character, 313. His Hebrew literature, 386.
- Spotswood**, John, favours the Reformation, 102. Made superintendent of Lothian, 185.
- , Archbishop, his commendation of Knox, 315.
- Steward**, Archibald, visits Knox on his death-bed, 298.
- Stewart**, Lord James, Prior of St. Andrew's. See *Murray*, Earl of.
- , Margaret, daughter of Lord Ochiltree, married to Knox, 242, 297, 326. Married to Sir A. Ker of Fadounside, 326. Copy of Knox's letters in her possession, 424.
- Stirling**, demolition of the monasteries at, 150. A minister early settled in, 155.
- Straiton**, of Lauriston, an early friend of the Reformation, 21.
- Superintendents**, bishops so called in England, 356, 357-8.
- Syme**, James, 99, 113.
- Synods**, Provincial, what, 185.
- Testament** of Knox, 442.
- Throckmorton**, Sir Nicholas, 156, 374.
- Thou**, De, his character of Regent Murray, 44.
- Tonstal**, Bishop of Durham, character of, 47. Knox's defence before, 48, 351-2.
- Tyrie**, John, Knox's answer to, 290.
- Vaus**, John, rector of the school of Aberdeen, 3.
- Visitors** of churches, what, 185.
- Wedderburn**, John and Robert, authors of Psalms and Godly Ballads, 344.
- Welch**, John, marries one of Knox's daughters, 327. Is found guilty of treason, *ib.* Interview between Lewis XIII. and, 317.
- Whitlaw**, Alexander, of Greenrig, 156, 436.
- Whittingham**, Dean of Durham, ordained at Geneva, and a friend of Knox, 87, 91. Successor to Knox at Geneva, 113.
- Willock**, John, returns to Scotland, 98, 99. Leaves Scotland, 100. Returns and joins the Protestant preachers, 132. Officiates for Knox in Edinburgh, 164. His advice respecting the suspension of the Queen Regent, *ib.* His stipend, 390. Made superintendent of Glasgow, 185. Goes to England, 272. Calumny against, *ib.* Pretended conversation between Knox and, 395.
- Wingate**, (Winzet,) Ninian, Knox's controversy with, 219.
- Winram**, John, Sub-prior of St. Andrew's, connives at the Reformed opinions, 19. His cautious behaviour, 34. Made superintendent of Fife, 188.
- Wishart**, George, whom Knox early studied under, 24, 25. Banished for teaching the Greek New Testament at Montrose, *ib.* Returns to Scotland, *ib.* Interesting account of him by one of his pupils, 345. His martyrdom, *ib.*
- , Sir John, of Pittarrow. Knox corresponds with, 116. His letter to, 440. Davidson's Dedication of his poem on Knox to, 443.
- Wood**, John, Secretary to the Regent Murray, is assassinated, 265. Knox's letters to, 438-9.

THE END.

BOUND BY
BURN,
HATTON GARDEN



M'Crie, Thom.

The life of John Knox: containing illustrations of the history of the reformation in Scotland With biographical notices of the principal reformers and sketches of the progress of literature in Scotland. With numerous and a memoir of Dr. Andr. Crichton

London 1847

Biogr. 581 nc

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10064305-1